THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA,

WRITTEN BY SIR PHILIPPE SIDNEI.



LONDON
Printed for William Ponſonbie.
Anno Domini, 1590.

TO MY DEARE LADIE AND SISTER, THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKE.

HEre now haue you (moſt deare, and moſt worthy to be moſt deare Lady) this idle worke of mine: which I fear (like the Spiders webbe) will be thought fitter to be ſwept away, then worn to any other purpoſe. For my part, in very trueth (as the cruell fathers among the Greekes, were woont to doo to the babes they would not foſter) I could well find in my harte, to caſt out in ſome deſert of forgetfulnes this child, which I am loath to

father. But you desired me to doo it, and your desire, to my hart is an absolute commandement. Now, it is done onelie for you, onely to you: if you keepe it to your selfe, or to such friendes, who will weigh errors in the ballaunce of good will, I hope, for the fathers sake, it will be pardoned, perchance made much of, though in it selfe it haue deformities. For indeede, for seuerer eyes it is not, being but a trifle, and that triflinglie handled. Your deare selfe can best witnes the maner, being done in loose sheetes of paper, most of it in your presence, the rest, by sheetes, sent vnto you, as fast as they were done. In summe, a young head, not so well stayed as I would it were, (and shall be when God will) hauing many many fancies begotten in it, if it had not ben in some way deliuered, would haue growen a monster, & more sorie might I be that they came in, then

then that they gat out. But his chiefe ſafetie, ſhalbe the not walking abroad; & his chiefe protection, the bearing the liuerye of your name; which (if much much good will do not deceaue me) is worthy to be a ſactuary for a greater offender. This ſay I, becauſe I knowe the vertue ſo; and this ſay I, becauſe it may be euer ſo; or to ſay better, becauſe it will be euer ſo. Read it then at your idle tymes, and the follyes your good iudgement wil finde in it, blame not, but laugh at. And ſo, looking for no better ſtuffe, then, as in an Haberdaſhers ſhoppe, glaſſes, or feathers, you will continue to loue the writer, who doth excedinglie loue you; and moſt moſt hartelie praies you may long liue, to be a principall ornament to the familie of the Sidneis.

Your loüing Brother

Philip Sidnei.

THe *diuiſion and ſumming of the Chapters was not of Sir* Philip Sidneis *dooing, but aduentured by the ouer-ſeer of the print, for the more eaſe of the Readers. He therfore ſubmits himſelfe to their iudgement, and if his labour anſwere not the worthines of the booke, deſireth pardon for it. As alſo if any defect be found in the Eclogues, which although they were of Sir* Phillip Sidneis *writing, yet were they not peruſed by him, but left till the worke had bene finiſhed, that then choiſe ſhould haue bene made, which ſhould haue bene taken, and in what manner brought in. At this time they haue bene choſen and diſpoſed as the ouer-ſeer thought beſt.*

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA WRITTEN BY SIR PHILIP SIDNEI.

THE FIRST BOOKE.

CHAP. 1.

The ſheperdiſh complaints of the abſented louers Strephon *and* Claius. *The ſecond ſhipwrack of* Pyrocles *and* Muſidorus. *Their ſtrange ſauing, enterview, and parting.*



IT *was in the time* that the earth begins to put on her new aparrel againſt the approch of her louer, and that the Sun rũning a moſt euẽ courſe becums an indifferent arbiter betweene the night and the day; when the hopeleſſe ſhepheard *Strephon* was come to the ſandes, which lie againſt the Iſland of Cithera; where viewing the place with a heauy kinde

of delight, and ſometimes caſting his eyes to the Ile-ward, he called his friendly riuall, the paſtor *Claius* vnto him, and ſetting firſt downe in his darkened countenance a dolefull copie of what he would ſpeake: O my *Claius*, ſaid he, hether we are now come to pay the rent, for which we are ſo called vnto by ouer-buſie Remembrance, Remembrance, reſtleſſe Remembrance, which claymes not onely this dutie of vs, but for it will haue vs forget our ſelues. I pray you when wee were amid our flocke, and that of other ſhepeheardes ſome were running after their ſheep ſtrayed beyond their bounds, ſome delighting their eyes with ſeeing them nibble vpon the ſhort and ſweete graſſe, ſome medicining their ſicke ewes, ſome ſetting a bell for an enſigne of a ſheepiſh ſquadron, ſome with more leaſure inuenting new games of exerciſing their bodies & ſporting their wits: did Remembrance graunt vs any holiday, eyther for paſtime or deuotion, nay either for neceſſary foode or naturall reſt? but that ſtill it forced our thoughts to worke vpō this place, where we laſt (alas that the word laſt ſhould ſo long laſt) did gaze our eyes vpon her euer floriſhing beautie: did it not ſtill crie within vs? Ah you baſe minded wretches, are your thoughts ſo deeply bemired in the trade of ordinary worldlings, as for reſpect of gaine ſome paultry wooll may yeeld you, to let ſo much time paſſe without knowing perfectly her eſtate, eſpecially in ſo troubleſome a ſeaſon? to leaue that ſhore vnſaluted, from whence you may ſee to the Iſland where ſhe dwelleth? to leaue thoſe ſteps vnkiſſed wherein *Vrania* printed the farewell of all beautie? Wel then, Remembraunce commaunded, we obeyed, and here we finde, that as our remembrance came euer

cloathed

cloathed vnto vs in the forme of this place, ſo this place giues newe heate to the feauer of our languiſhing remembrance. Yonder my *Claius*, *Vrania* lighted, the verie horſe (me thought) bewayled to be ſo disburdned: and as for thee, poore *Claius*, when thou wentſt to help her downe, I ſaw reuerence and deſire ſo deuide thee, that thou didſt at one inſtant both bluſhe and quake, and in ſtead of bearing her, weart ready to fall downe thy ſelfe. There ſhee ſate, vouchſafing my cloake (then moſt gorgeous) vnder her: at yonder riſing of the ground ſhe turned her ſelfe, looking backe toward her woonted abode, and becauſe of her parting bearing much ſorrow in hir eyes, the lightſomnes whereof had yet ſo naturall a cherefulneſſe, as it made euen ſorrow ſeeme to ſmile; at that turning ſhe ſpake vnto vs all, opening the cherrie of hir lips, & Lord how greedily mine eares did feed vpon the ſweete words ſhe vttered? And here ſhe laide her hand ouer thine eyes, when ſhee ſaw the teares ſpringing in them, as if ſhe would conceale them from other, and yet her ſelfe feele ſome of thy ſorrow: But woe is me, yonder, yonder, did ſhe put her foote into the boate, at that inſtant as it were deuiding her heauenly beautie, betweene the Earth and the Sea. But when ſhe was imbarked, did you not marke how the windes whiſtled, & the ſeas daunſt for ioy, how the ſailes did ſwel with pride, and all becauſe they had *Vrania*? O *Vrania*, bleſſed be thou *Vrania*, the ſweeteſt faireneſſe and faireſt ſweetneſſe: with that worde his voice brake ſo with ſobbing, that he could ſay no further; and *Claius* thus anſwered. Alas my *Strephon* (ſaid he) what needes this skore to recken vp onely our loſſes? What doubt is there, but that the light of this place doth call

our thoughtes to appeare at the court of affection, held by that racking ſteward, Remembraunce? Aſwell may ſheepe forget to feare when they ſpie woolues, as wee can miſſe ſuch fancies, when wee ſee any place made happie by her treading. Who can chooſe that ſaw her but thinke where ſhe ſtayed, where ſhe walkt, where ſhe turned, where ſhe ſpoke? But what is all this? truely no more, but as this place ſerued vs to thinke of thoſe thinges, ſo thoſe thinges ſerue as places to call to memorie more excellent matters. No, no, let vs thinke with conſideration, and conſider with acknowledging, and acknowledge with admiration, and admire with loue, and loue with ioy in the midſt of all woes: let vs in ſuch ſorte thinke, I ſay, that our poore eyes were ſo inriched as to behold, and our low hearts ſo exalted as to loue, a maide, who is ſuch, that as the greateſt thing the world can ſhewe, is her beautie, ſo the leaſt thing that may be prayſed in her, is her beautie. Certainely as her eye-lids are more pleaſant to behold, then two white kiddes climing vp a faire tree, and browſing on his tendreſt braunches, and yet are nothing, compared to the day-ſhining ſtarres contayned in them; and as her breath is more ſweete then a gentle South-weſt wind, which comes creeping ouer flowrie fieldes and ſhaddowed waters in the extreeme heate of ſummer, and yet is nothing, compared to the hony flowing ſpeach that breath doth carrie: no more all that our eyes can ſee of her (though when they haue ſeene her, what elſe they ſhall euer ſee is but drie ſtuble after clouers graſſe) is to bee matched with the flocke of vnſpeakeable vertues laid vp delightfully in that beſt builded folde. But in deede as wee can better conſider the

ſunnes

ſunnes beautie, by marking how he guildes theſe waters, and mountaines, then by looking vpon his owne face, too glorious for our weake eyes: ſo it may be our conceits (not able to beare her ſun-ſtayning excellencie) will better way it by her workes vpon ſome meaner ſubiect employed. And alas, who can better witneſſe that then we, whoſe experience is grounded vpon feeling? hath not the onely loue of her made vs (being ſilly ignorant ſhepeheards) raiſe vp our thoughts aboue the ordinary leuell of the worlde, ſo as great clearkes do not diſdaine our conference? hath not the deſire to ſeeme worthie in her eyes made vs when others were ſleeping, to ſit vewing the courſe of heauens? when others were running at baſe, to runne ouer learned writings? When other marke their ſheepe, we to marke our ſelues? hath not ſhee throwne reaſon vpon our deſirs, and, as it were giuen eyes vnto *Cupid?* hath in any, but in her, loue-fellowſhipe maintained friendſhip betwene riuals, and beautie taught the beholders chaſtitie? He was going one with his praiſes, but *Strephon* bad him ſtay, & looke: & ſo the both perceaued a thing which floted, drawing nearer & nearer to the banke; but rather by the fauorable workinge of the Sea, then by any ſelfe-induſtrie. They douted a while what it ſhould be; till it was caſt vp euen hard before thē: at which time they fully ſaw that it was a man: Whereupon running for pity ſake vnto him, they foūd his hands (as it ſhould appeare, conſtanter frends to his life then his memorie) faſt griping vpon the edge of a ſquare ſmall coffer, which lay all vnder the breſt: elſe in himſelfe no ſhew of life, ſo as the boord ſeemed to be but a beere to cary him aland to his Sepulchre. So

drew they vp a young man of ſo goodly ſhape, & well pleaſing fauour, that one would think death had in him a louely countenance; and that though he were naked, nakednes was to him an apparell. That ſight increaſed their compaſſion, and there compaſion called vp there care; ſo that lifting his feete aboue his head, making a great deal of ſalt water to come out of his mouth, they layd him vpon ſome of their garments, and fell to rub and chafe him, till they brought him to recouer both breath the ſeruant, & warmth the compãion of liuing. At length opening his eyes, he gaue a great groane, (a dolefull note but a pleaſant dittie) for by that, they found not onely life, but ſtrength of life in him. They therefore continued on there charitable office, vntill (his ſpirits being wel returned,) hee (without ſo much as thanking them for there paines) gat vp, and looking round about to the vtermoſt limites of his ſight, and crying vpon the name of *Pyrocles*, nor ſeeing nor hearing cauſe of comfort: what (ſaid he) and ſhal *Muſidorus* liue after *Pyrocles*? therewithall he offered willfully to caſt diſtruction & himſelfe againe into the ſea: a ſtrang ſight to the ſhepheards, to whom it ſemed, that before being in apparance dead had yet ſaued his life, & now comming to his life, ſhould be a cauſe to procure his death; but they ranne vnto him, and pulling him back, (then too feeble for them) by force ſtickled that vnnaturall fray. I pray you (ſaid he) honeſt men, what ſuch right haue you in me, as not to ſuffer me to do with my ſelf what I liſt? & what pollicie haue you to beſtow a benifit where it is counted an iniury? The hearing him ſpeak in Greek (which was thier natural language) became the more tender hearted to wards him; & conſi-

dering

dering by his calling and looking, that the loſſe of ſõe dearefriend was great cauſe of his ſorow; told him the were poorcmen that weare bound by courſe of humanitie to preuent ſo great a miſchiefe; and that the wiſht him, if opinion of ſome bodies periſhing bred ſuch deſperate anguiſh in him, that he ſhouldbe comfortedby his owne proofe, who had lately eſcaped as apparant danger as any might be. No, no (ſaid hee) it is not for me to attend ſo high a bliſſefulnes: but ſince you take care of mee, I pray you finde meanes that ſome Barke may be prouided that wil goe out of the hauen, that if it be poſible we may find the bodie farre farre too precious a foode for fiſhes: & for the hire (ſaide he) I haue within this casket, of value ſuficient to content them. *Claius* preſently went vnto a Fiſhermã, & hauing agred with him, and prouided ſome apparell for the naked ſtranger, he imbarked, and the Shepeheards with him: & weare no ſooner gone beyond the mouth of the hauen, but that ſome way into the ſea theymight diſcerne (as it were) aſtayne of the waters colour, and by times ſome ſparkes and ſmoke mounting thereout. But the youngman no ſooner ſawe it, but that beating hisbreſt he cried, that there was the beginning of his ruine, intreating them to bend their courſe as neare vnto it as they could: telling, how that ſmoke was but a ſmall relique of a great fire, which had driuẽ both him & his friend rather to committe themſelues to the cold mercie of the ſea, then to abide the hote crueltie of the fire: and that therefore, though they both had abandoned the ſhipe, that he was (if anywhere) in that courſe tobe met withall. They ſteared therefore as neere thetherward as they could: but when they came ſo nerre as

ther eies were ful maſters of the obiect, they ſaw a ſight full of pitious ſtrangenes: a ſhip, or rather the carkas of the ſhippe, or rather ſome few bones of the carkas, hullinge there, part broken, part burned, part drwoned: death hauing vſed more thē one dart to that deſtruction. About it floted great ſtore of very rich things, and many cheſtes which might promiſe no leſſe. And amidſt the precious things were a number of deade bodies, which likewiſe did not only teſtifie both elemēts violence, but that the chife violence was growne of humaine inhumāitie: for there bodies were fulof griſly wounds, &theire bloud had (as it were) filled the wrīckels of the ſeas viſage: which it ſeemed the ſea woulde not waſh away, that it might witnes, it is not alwais his fault, when we candemne his crueltie: : in ſume, a defeate, where the conquered kept both field and ſpoile: a ſhipwracke without ſtorme or ill footing: and a waſt of fire in the midſt of water.

But alitle way of they ſaw the maſt, whoſe proude
3 height now lay along; like awiddow hauing loſt her make of whom ſhe held her honor: but vpon the maſt they ſaw a yong man (at leaſt if he weare aman) bearīg ſhew of about 18. yeares of age, who ſate (as on horſback) hauing nothing vpō him but his ſhirt, which being wraught with blewſilk &gold; had akind of reſemblance to the ſea: on which the ſun (thē neare his Weſterne home) did ſhout ſome of his beames. His haire (which the young men of Greece vſed to weare very long) was ſtirred vp&downe with the wind, which ſemed tohaue aſport to play with it, as the ſea had to kiſſe his feet; him ſelfe full of admirable beautie, ſet forth by the ſtrangenes both of his ſeat & geſture: for, holding his

his head vp full of vnmoued maieſtie, he held aſworde aloft with his faire arme, which often he waued about his crowne, as though he would threaten the world in that extremitie. But the fiſhermen, when they came ſo neere him, that it was time to throwe out a rope, by which hold they might draw him, their ſimplicity bred ſuch amaſement, & their amaſemēt ſuch a ſuperſtition, that (aſſuredly thinking it was ſome God begotten betweene *neptune* and *venus*, that had made all this terrible ſlaughter) as they went vnder ſayle by him, held vp their hands, & made theire prayers. Which when *Muſidorus* ſawe, though he were almoſt as much rauiſhed with ioy, as they with aſtoniſhment, he lept to the Mariner, and tooke the rope out of his hand and (ſaying, doeſt thou liue, and arte well? who anſwered, thou canſt tell beſt, ſince moſt of my well beyng ſtandes in thee.) threw it out, but alreadie the ſhippe was paſt beyond *Pyrocles:* and therefore *Muſidorus* could doo no more but perſwade the Mariners to caſt about againe, aſſuring them that he was but a man, although of moſt diuine excellencies, and promiſing greate rewardes for theire paine.

And now they were alreadie come vpon the ſtaies; when one of the ſaylers diſcried a Galley which came with ſayles and oares directlie in the chaſe of them; and ſtreight perceaued it was a well knowne Pirate, who hunted not onely for goodes but for bodies of menne, which he imployed eyther to be his Galley ſlaues, or to ſell at the beſt market. Which when the Maiſter vnderſtood, he commaunded forth with to ſet one al the canuaſſe they could, aud flie homeward, leauing in that ſort pore *Pyrocles* ſo neare to be reskewed. 4

But what did not *Muſidorus* ſay? what did he not offer to perſwade them to venture the fighte? But feare ſtanding at the gates of their eares, put backe all perſwations: ſo that hee had nothinge to accompanie *Pyrocles*, but his eyes; nor to ſuccour him, but his wiſhes. Therefore praying for him, and caſting a long looke that way he ſaw the Galley leaue the purſuite of them, & turne to take vp the ſpoils of the other wrack: and laſtly he might wel ſee them lift vp the yong man; and alas (ſaide he to himſelfe) deare *Pyrocles* ſhall that bodie of thine be enchayned? ſhall thoſe victorious handes of thine be commaunded to baſe offices? ſhall vertue become a ſlaue to thoſe that be ſlaues to viciouſnes? Alas, better had it bene thou hadſt ended nobly thy noble dayes: what death is ſo euil as vnworthy ſeruitude? But that opinion ſoone ceaſed when he ſaw the gallie ſetting vpon an other ſhip, which held long and ſtrong fight with her: for then he began a freſh to feare the life of his friend, and to wiſh well to the Pirates whom before he hated, leaſt in their ruyne hee might periſh. But the fiſhermen made ſuch ſpeed into the hauen, that they abſented his eyes from beholding the iſſue: where being entred, he could procure neither them nor any other as then to put themſelues into the ſea: ſo that beyng as full of ſorrow for being vnable to doe any thing, as voide of counſell how to doe any thing, beſides, that ſickneſſe grew ſomthing vpon him, the honeſt ſhepheards *Strephon* and *Claius* (who being themſelues true friends, did the more perfectly iudge the iuſtneſſe of his ſorow) aduiſe him, that he ſhould mitigate ſomwhat of his woe, ſince he had gotten an amendment in fortune, being come from aſſu-

red

red perſwation of his death, to haue no cauſe to diſpaire of his life: as one that had lamented the death of his ſheepe, ſhould after know they were but ſtrayed, would receiue pleaſure though redely hee knew not where to finde them.

CHAP. 2.

1 *The paſtors comfortes to the wracked* Muſidorus. 2 *His paſſage into arcadia. The diſſcriptions of* 3 *Laconia,* 4 *Arcadia,* Kalanders 5 *parſon,* 6 *houſe, and* 7 *entertainement to* Muſidorus, *now called* Palladius. *His* 8 *ſicknes recouery,* 9 *and perfections.*

NOw ſir (ſaide they) thus for our 1
ſelues it is. Wee are in profeſſion but ſhepheards, and in this countrie of Laconia little better then ſtrangers, and therfore neither in skill, nor abilitie of power greatly to ſtead you. But what we can preſent vnto you is this: Arcadia, of which countrye wee are, is but alittle way hence, and euen vpon the next confines.

Ther dwelleth a Gentleman, by name *Kalander,* 5
who vouchſafeth much fauor vnto vs: A man who for his hoſpitalitie is ſo much haunted, that no newes ſturre, but comes to his eares; for his vpright dealing ſo beloued of his neighbours, that he hath many euer readie to doe him ther vtermoſt ſeruice, and by the great good will our Prince beares him, may ſoone obtaine the vſe of his name and credit, which hath a principall ſwaie,

ſway, not only in his owne Arcadia, but in al theſe coũtries of *Peloponneſus*: and (which is worth all) all theſe things giue him not ſo much power, as his nature giues him will to benefit: ſo that it ſeemes no Muſicke is ſo ſwete to his eare as deſerued thankes. To him we will bring you, & there you may recouer againe your helth, without which you cãnot be able to make any diligẽt ſearch for your friend: & therefore but in that reſpect, you muſt labour for it. Beſides, we are ſure the cõfort of curteſie, & eaſe of wiſe counſell ſhall not be wãting.

2 *Muſidorus* (who beſides he was meerly vnacquainted in the contrie had his wits aſtõiſhed with ſorow) gaue eaſie conſent to that, from which he ſaw no reaſon to diſagree: & therefore defrayig the Mariners with a ring beſtowed vpon thẽ, they tooke their iourney together through *Laconia*; *Claius* & *Strephon* by courſe cariing his cheſt for him, *Muſidorus* only bearing in his coũtenãce euidẽt marks of a ſoroful mind ſupported with a weak body, which they perceiuing, & knowing that the violence of ſorow is not at the firſt to be ſtriuẽ withal: (being like a mighty beaſt, ſoner tamed with folowing, thẽ ouerthrowẽ by withſtandig) they gaue way vnto it for that day and the next; neuer trobling him, either with asking queſtions, or finding fault with his melãcholie, but rather fitting to his dolor dolorus diſcourſes of there own & other folks misfortunes. which ſpeeches, thoghthey had not aliuely entrance to his ſẽces ſhut vp in ſorow, yet like one halfe aſlep, he toke hold of much of the matters ſpokẽ vnto him, ſo as a man may ſay, ere ſorow was aware, they made his thoughts beare away ſomthing elſe beſide his own ſorow, which wraught ſo in him, that at lẽgth he grewe cõtent to mark their ſpeches, then to maruel at ſuch wit in ſhepheards, after to

like

like their company,& laſtly to vouchſafe conferẽce: ſo that the 3. day after, in the time that the morning did ſtrow roſes & violets in the heauenly floore againſt the cõming of the Sun,the nightingales (ſtriuing one with the other which coulde in moſt dainty variety recount their wrong-cauſed ſorow) made thẽ put of their ſleep, & riſing frõ vnder a tree(which that night had bin their pauiliõ)they went on their iorney,which by & by welcomed *Muſidorus* eyes(wearied with the waſted ſoile of Laconia)with delightfull proſpects. There were hilles which garniſhed their proud heights with ſtately trees: 4
hũble valleis,whoſe baſe eſtate ſemed cõforted with refreſhing of ſiluer riuers: medows,enameld with al ſorts of ey-pleaſing floures: thickets, which being lined with moſt pleaſãt ſhade,were witneſſed ſo to by the chereful depoſitiõ of many wel-tuned birds: each paſture ſtored with ſheep feeding with ſober ſecurity, while the prety lãbs with bleting oratory craued the dams cõfort: here a ſhepheards boy piping, as though he ſhould neuer be old: there a yong ſhepherdeſſe knitting,and withall ſinging, & it ſeemed that her voice cõforted her hands to work,& her hãds kept time to her voices muſick. As for the houſes of the coũtry (for many houſes came vnder their eye)they were all ſcattered, no two being one by th'other,& yet not ſo far off as that it barred mutual ſuccour: a ſhew, as it were,of an accõpanable ſolitarines,& of a ciuil wildnes. I pray you(ſaid *Muſidorus*, then firſt vnſealing his long ſilent lips)what coũtries be theſe we paſſe through,which are ſo diuers in ſhew, the one wãting no ſtore,th'other hauing no ſtore but of want.

The country(anſwered *Claius*)where you were caſt a 3
ſhore, & now are paſt through,is Laconia,not ſo poore by the barrennes of the ſoyle (though in it ſelfe not paſſing

paſſing fertill) as by a ciuill warre, which being theſe two yeares within the bowels of that eſtate, betweene the gentlemen & the peaſants (by them named *Helots*) hath in this ſorte as it were diſſiguredthe face of nature, and made it ſo vnhoſpitall as now you haue found it: the townes neither of the one ſide nor the other, willingly opening their gates to ſtrangers, nor ſtrangers willingly entring for feare of being miſtaken.

4 But this countrie (where now you ſet your foote) is Arcadia: and euen harde by is the houſe of *Kalander* whether we lead you: this countrie being thus decked with peace, and (the childe of peace) good husbandrie. Theſe houſes you ſee ſo ſcattered are of men, as we two are, that liue vpon the commoditie of their ſheepe: and therefore in the diuiſion of the Arcadian eſtate are termed ſhepheards; a happie people, wanting litle, becauſe they deſire not much. What cauſe then, ſaid *Muſidorus*, made you venter to leaue this ſweete life, and put your ſelfe in yonder vnpleaſant and dangerous realme? Garded with pouertie (anſwered *Strephon*) & guided with loue: But now (ſaid *Claius*) ſince it hath pleaſed you to aske any thing of vs whoſe baſenes is ſuch as the very knowledge is darknes: geue vs leaue to know ſomthing of you, & of the young man you ſo much lament, that at leaſt we may be the better inſtructed to enforme *Kalander*, and he the better know how to proportion his entertainment. *Muſidorus* (according to the agreement betweene *Pyrocles* and him to alter their names) anſwered, that he called himſelf *Palladius*, and his friend *Daiphantus*; but till I haue him againe (ſaid he) I am in deed nothing: and therefore my ſtorie is of nothing, his entertainement (ſince ſo good a man he is) cannot be ſo

lowe

lowe as I account my eſtate: and in ſumme, the ſumme of all his curteſie may be to helpe me by ſome meanes to ſeeke my frend.

They perceiued he was not willing to open himſelfe further, and therefore without further queſtioning 6
brought him to the houſe: about which they might ſee (with fitte conſideration both of the ayre, the proſpect, and the nature of the ground) all ſuch neceſſarie additions to a great houſe, as might well ſhewe, *Kalander* knew that prouiſion is the foundation of hoſpitalitie, and thrift the fewell of magnificence. The houſe it ſelfe was built of faire and ſtrong ſtone, not affecting ſo much any extraordinarie kinde of finenes, as an honorable repreſenting of a firme ſtatelines. The lightes, doores and ſtaires, rather directed to the vſe of the gueſt, then to the eye of the Artificer: and yet as the one cheefly heeded, ſo the other not neglected; each place handſome without curioſitie, and homely without lothſomnes: not ſo daintie as not to be trode on, nor yet ſlubberd vp with good felowſhippe: all more laſting then beautifull, but that the conſideration of the exceeding laſtingneſſe made the eye beleeue it was exceeding beautifull. The ſeruants not ſo many in number, as cleanlie in apparell, and ſeruiceable in behauiour, teſtifying euen in their countenaunces, that their maiſter tooke aſwell care to be ſerued, as of thē that did ſerue. One of them was forth-with readie to welcome the ſhepheards, as men, who though they were poore, their maiſter greatly fauoured: and vnderſtanding by them, that the young man with them was to be much accounted of, for that they had ſeene tokens of more then common greatnes, how ſo euer now eclipſed with

fortune,

fortune: He ranne to his maſter, who came preſentlie foorth, and pleaſantly welcomming the ſhepheardes, but eſpecially applying him to *Muſidorus*, *Strephon* priuately told him all what he knew of him, and particularly that hee found this ſtranger was loath to be knowen.

No ſaid *Kalander* (ſpeaking alowd) I am no herald
7 to enquire of mens pedegrees, it ſufficeth me if I know their vertues: which (if this young mans face be not a falſe witnes) doe better apparrell his minde, then you haue done his body. While hee was ſpeaking, there came a boy in ſhew like a Merchants prentice, who taking *Strephon* by the ſleeue, deliuered him a letter, written ioyntly both to him and *Claius* from *Vrania:* which they no ſooner had read, but that with ſhort leaue-taking of *Kalander* (who quickly gheſt and ſmiled at the matter) and once againe (though haſtely) recommending the yong man vnto him, they went away, leauing *Muſidorus* euen lothe to part with them, for the good conuerſation he had of them, & obligation he accounted himſelfe tied in vnto them: and therefore, they deliuering his cheſt vnto him, he opened it, and would haue preſented thē with two very rich iewels, but they abſolutelie refuſed them, telling him they were more then enough rewarded in the knowing of him, and without herkening vnto a replie (like men whoſe harts diſdained all deſires but one) gate ſpeedely away, as if the letter had brought wings to make them flie. But by that ſight *Kalander* ſoone iudged that his gueſt was of no meane calling; and therefore the more reſpectfullie entertaining him, *Muſidorus* found his ſicknes (which the fight, the ſea, and late trauell had layd vpon him)

growe

grow greatly: ſo that fearing ſome ſuddaine accident, he deliuered the cheſt to *Kalander*; which was full of moſt pretious ſtones, gorgeouſly & cunningly ſet in diuerſe māners, deſiring him he would keep thoſe trifles, and if he died, he would beſtow ſo much of it as was needfull, to finde out and redeeme a young man, naming himſelfe *Daiphantus*, as then in the handes of Laconia pirates.

But *Kalander* ſeeing him faint more and more, with 8
carefull ſpeede conueyed him to the moſt cōmodious lodging in his houſe: where being poſſeſt with an extreeme burning feuer, he cōtinued ſome while with no great hope of life: but youth at length got the victorie of ſickneſſe, ſo that in ſix weekes the excellencie of his returned beautie was a credible embaſſadour of his health; to the great ioy of *Kalander*: who, as in this time he had by certaine friendes of his that dwelt neare the Sea in Meſſenia, ſet foorth a ſhippe and a galley to ſeeke and ſuccour *Daiphantus*: ſo at home did hee omit nothing which he thought might eyther profite or gratifie *Palladius*.

For hauing found in him (beſides his bodily giftes 9
beyond the degree of Admiration) by dayly diſcourſes which he delighted him ſelfe to haue with him, a mind of moſt excellent compoſition (a pearcing witte quite voide of oſtentation, high erected thoughts ſeated in a harte of courteſie, an eloquence as ſweete in the vttering, as ſlowe to come to the vttering, a behauiour ſo noble, as gaue a maieſtie to aduerſitie: and all in a man whoſe age could not be aboue one & twenty yeares,) the good old man was euen enamoured with a fatherly loue towards him; or rather became his ſeruaunt by

the bondes ſuch vertue laid vpon him; once hee acknowledged him ſelfe ſo to be, by the badge of diligent attendance.

CHAP. 3.

The [1] pictures of Kalanders dainty garden-houſe. His narration of the [2] Arcadian eſtate, [3] the King, [4] the Queene, [5] their two daughters, and [6] their gardians, with their qualities, which is the ground of all this ſtorie.

BVt *Palladius* hauing gotten his health, and onely ſtaying there to be in place, where he might heare anſwere of the ſhippes ſet foorth, *Kalander* one afternoone led him abroad to a wel arayed ground he had behind his houſe, which hee thought to ſhewe him before his going, as the place him ſelfe more then in any other delighted: the backeſide of the houſe was neyther field, garden, nor orchard; or rather it was both fielde, garden, and orcharde: for as ſoone as the deſcending of the ſtayres had deliuered them downe, they came into a place cunninglie ſet with trees of the moſte taſt-pleaſing fruites: but ſcarcelie they had taken that into their conſideration, but that they were ſuddainely ſtept into a delicate greene, of each ſide of the greene a thicket bend, behinde the thickets againe newe beddes of flowers, which being vnder the trees, the trees were to them a Pauilion, and they to the trees a moſaical floore: ſo that it ſeemed that arte therein would needes be delightfull

lightfull by counterfaiting his enemie error, and making order in confuſion.

In the middeſt of all the place, was a faire ponde, 1
whoſe ſhaking chriſtall was a perfect mirrour to all the other beauties, ſo that it bare ſhewe of two gardens; one in deede, the other in ſhaddowes: and in one of the thickets was a fine fountaine made thus. A naked *Venus* of white marble, wherein the grauer had vſed ſuch cunning, that the naturall blew veines of the marble were framed in fitte places, to ſet foorth the beautifull veines of her bodie. At her breſt ſhe had her babe *Æneas*, who ſeemed (hauing begun to ſucke) to leaue that, to looke vpon her fayre eyes, which ſmiled at the babes follie, the meane while the breaſt running. Hard by was a houſe of pleaſure builte for a Sommer retiring place, whether *Kalander* leading him, he found a ſquare roome full of delightfull pictures, made by the moſt excellent workeman of Greece. There was *Diana* when *Actæon* ſawe her bathing, in whoſe cheekes the painter had ſet ſuch a colour, as was mixt betweene ſhame & diſdaine: & one of her fooliſh Nymphes, who weeping, and withal lowring, one might ſee the workman meant to ſet forth teares of anger. In another table was *Atalanta*; the poſture of whoſe lims was ſo liuelie expreſſed, that if the eyes were the only iudges, as they be the onely ſeers, one would haue ſworne the very picture had runne. Beſides many mo, as of *Helena*, *Omphale*, *Iole*: but in none of them all beautie ſeemed to ſpeake ſo much as in a large table, which contained a comely old man, with a lady of midle age, but of excellēt beautie; & more excellēt would haue bene deemed, but that there ſtood betweene thē a yong maid, whoſe

wonderfulneſſe tooke away all beautie from her, but that, which it might ſeeme ſhee gaue her backe againe by her very ſhadow. And ſuch differẽce, being knowne that it did in deed counterfeit a perſon liuing, was there betweene her and al the other, though Goddeſſes, that it ſeemd the skill of the painter beſtowed on the other new beautie, but that the beautie of her beſtowed new skill of the painter. Though he thought inquiſitiuenes an vncomely gueſt, he could not chooſe but aske who ſhe was, that bearing ſhew of one being in deed, could with natural gifts go beyond the reach of inuentiõ. *Kalander* anſwered, that it was made by *Philoclea*, the yonger daughter of his prince, who alſo with his wife were conteined in that Table: the painter meaning to repreſent the preſent condition of the young Ladie, who ſtood watched by an ouer-curious eye of her parents: & that he would alſo haue drawne her eldeſt ſiſter, eſtemed her match for beautie, in her ſhepheardiſh attire; but that the rude clown her gardiã would not ſuffer it: nether durſt he aske leaue of the Prince for feare of ſuſpitiõ. *Palladius* perceaued that the matter was wrapt vp in ſome ſecreſie, and therefore would for modeſtie demaund no further: but yet his countenance could not but with dumme Eloquence deſire it: Which *Kalander* perceauing, well ſaid he, my deere gueſt, I know your minde, and I will ſatisfie it: neyther will I doo it like a niggardly anſwerer, going no further then the boundes of the queſtion, but I will diſcouer vnto you, aſwell that wherein my knowledge is common with others, as that which by extraordinarie means is deliuered vnto me: knowing ſo much in you, though not long acquainted, that I ſhall find your eares faithfull treaſurers.

So

So then ſitting downe in two chaires, and ſometimes caſting his eye to the picture, he thus ſpake.

This countrie Arcadia among all the prouinces of 2
Greece, hath euer beene had in ſingular reputation: partly for the ſweetneſſe of the ayre, and other natural benefites, but principally for the well tempered minds of the people, who (finding that the ſhining title of glorie ſo much affected by other nations, doth in deed helpe little to the happineſſe of life) are the onely people, which as by their Iuſtice and prouidence geue neither cauſe nor hope to their neyghbours to annoy them, ſo are they not ſturred with falſe praiſe to trouble others quiet, thinking it a ſmall reward for the waſting of their owne liues in rauening, that their poſteritie ſhould long after ſaie, they had done ſo. Euen the Muſes ſeeme to approue their good determinatiō, by choſing this countrie for their chiefe repairing place, & by beſtowing their perfections ſo largely here, that the very ſhepheards haue their fancies lifted to ſo high conceits, as the learned of other nations are content both to borrow their names, and imitate their cunning.

Here dwelleth, and raigneth this Prince (whoſe pi- 3
cture you ſee) by name *Baſilius*, a Prince of ſufficient skill to gouerne ſo quiet a countrie, where the good minds of the former princes had ſet down good lawes, and the well bringing vp of the people doth ſerue as a moſt ſure bond to hold thē. But to be plaine with you, he excels in nothing ſo much, as in the zealous loue of his people, wherein he doth not only paſſe al his owne fore-goers, but as I thinke al the princes liuing. Wherof the cauſe is, that though he exceed not in the vertues which get admiration; as depth of wiſdome, height of

courage and largeneſſe of magnificence, yet is hee notable in thoſe whiche ſtirre affection, as trueth of worde, meekeneſſe, courteſie, mercifulneſſe, and liberalitie.

4 He being already well ſtriken in yeares, maried a young princes, named *Gynecia*, daughter to the king of Cyprus, of notable beautie, as by her picture you ſee: a woman of great wit, and in truth of more princely vertues, then her husband: of moſt vnſpotted chaſtitie, but of ſo working a minde, and ſo vehement ſpirits, as a man may ſay, it was happie ſhee tooke a good courſe: for otherwiſe it would haue beene terrible.

5 Of theſe two are brought to the worlde two daughters, ſo beyonde meaſure excellent in all the gifts allotted to reaſonable creatures, that wee may thinke they were borne to ſhewe, that Nature is no ſtepmother to that ſex, how much ſo euer ſome men (ſharpe witted onely in euill ſpeaking) haue ſought to diſgrace them. The elder is named *Pamela*; by many men not deemed inferiour to her ſiſter: for my part, when I marked them both, me thought there was (if at leaſt ſuch perfections may receyue the worde of more) more ſweetneſſe in *Philoclea*, but more maieſtie in *Pamela*: mee thought loue plaide in *Philocleas* eyes, and threatned in *Pamelas*: me thought *Philocleas* beautie onely perſwaded, but ſo perſwaded as all harts muſt yeelde: *Pamelas* beautie vſed violence, and ſuch violence as no hart could reſiſt: and it ſeemes that ſuch proportion is betweene their mindes; *Philoclea* ſo baſhfull as though her excellencies had ſtolne into her before ſhee was aware: ſo humble, that ſhe will put all pride out of countenance: in ſumme, ſuch proceeding as will ſtirre hope,

but

but teach hope good māners. *Pamela* of high thoughts, who auoides not pride with not knowing her excellencies, but by making that one of her excellencies to be voide of pride; her mothers wiſdome, greatneſſe, nobilitie, but (if I can gheſſe aright) knit with a more conſtant temper. Now then, our *Baſilius* being ſo publickly happie as to be a Prince, and ſo happie in that happineſſe as to be a beloued Prince, and ſo in his priuate bleſſed as to haue ſo excellent a wife, and ſo ouerexcellent children, hath of late taken a courſe which yet makes him more ſpoken of then all theſe bleſſings. For, hauing made a iourney to Delphos, and ſafely returned, within ſhort ſpace hee brake vp his court, and retired himſelfe, his wife, and children into a certaine Forreſt hereby, which hee calleth his deſert, where in (beſides a houſe appointed for ſtables and lodgings for certaine perſons of meane calling, who do all houſhold ſeruices,) hee hath builded two fine lodges. In the one of them him ſelfe remaines with his younger daughter *Philoclea*, which was the cauſe they three were matched together in this picture, without hauing any other creature liuing in that lodge with him.

Which though it bee ſtraunge, yet not ſo ſtraunge, 6
as the courſe he hath taken with the princeſſe *Pamela*, whom hee hath placed in the other lodge: but how thinke you accõpanied? truly with none other, but one *Dametas*, the moſt arrant doltiſh clowne, that I thinke euer was without the priuiledge of a bable, with his wife *Miſo*, and daughter *Mopſa*, in whome no witt can deuiſe anie thing wherein they maie pleaſure her, but to exerciſe her patience, and to ſerue for a foile of her perfections. This loutiſh clowne is ſuch, that

you neuer ſaw ſo ill fauourd a viſar; his behauiour ſuch, that he is beyond the degree of ridiculous; and for his apparrel, euen as I would wiſh him: *Miſo* his wife, ſo handſome a beldame, that onely her face and her ſplay-foote haue made her accuſed for a witch; onely one good point ſhe hath, that ſhe obſerues *decorũ*, hauing a froward mind in a wretched body. Betweene theſe two perſonages (who neuer agreed in any humor, but in diſagreeing) is iſſued forth miſtreſſe *Mopſa*, a fitte woman to participate of both their perfections: but becauſe a pleaſant fellow of my acquaintance ſet forth her praiſes in verſe, I will only repeate them, and ſpare mine owne tongue, ſince ſhe goes for a woman. The verſes are theſe, which I haue ſo often cauſed to be ſong, that I haue them without booke.

What length of verſe can ſerue braue Mopſas *good to ſhow?*
Whoſe vertues ſtrange, & beuties ſuch, as no mã thẽ may know
Thus ſhrewdly burdned thẽ, how cã my Muſe eſcape? (*ſhape.*
The gods muſt help, and pretious things muſt ſerue to ſhew her
Like great god Saturn *faire, and like faire* Venus *chaſte:*
As ſmooth as Pan, *as* Iuno *milde, like goddeſſe* Iris *faſte.*
With Cupid *ſhe fore-ſees, and goes god* Vulcans *pace:*
And for a taſt of all theſe gifts, ſhe ſteales god Momus *grace.*
Her forhead iacinth like, her cheekes of opall hue,
Her twinkling eies bedeckt with pearle, her lips as Saphir blew:
Her haire like Crapal-ſtone; her mouth O heauenly wyde;
Her skin like burniſht gold, her hands like ſiluer vre vntryde.
As for her parts vnknowne, which hidden ſure are beſt:
Happie be they which well beleeue, & neuer ſeeke the reſt.

Now

Now truely hauing made theſe deſcriptions vnto you, me thinkes you ſhould imagine that I rather faine ſome pleaſant deuiſe, then recount a truth, that a Prince (not baniſhed from his own wits) could poſſibly make ſo vnworthie a choiſe. But truely (deare gueſt) ſo it is, that Princes (whoſe doings haue beene often ſoothed with good ſucceſſe) thinke nothing ſo abſurde, which they cannot make honourable. The beginning of his credite was by the Princes ſtraying out of the way, one time he hunted, where meeting this fellow, and asking him the way; & ſo falling into other queſtiõs, he found ſome of his aunſwers (as a dog ſure if he could ſpeake, had wit enough to deſcribe his kennell) not vnſenſible, & all vttered with ſuch rudenes, which he enterpreted plainneſſe (though there be great difference betweene them) that *Baſilius* conceauing a ſodaine delight, tooke him to his Court, with apparant ſhew of his good opinion: where the flattering courtier had no ſooner takẽ the Princes minde, but that there were ſtraight reaſons to confirme the Princes doing, & ſhadowes of vertues found for *Dametas*. His ſilence grew wit, his bluntneſſe integritie, his beaſtly ignorance vertuous ſimplicitie: & the Prince (according to the nature of great perſons, in loue with that he had done himſelfe) fancied, that his weakneſſe with his preſence would much be mended. And ſo like a creature of his owne making, he liked him more and more, and thus hauing firſt giuen him the office of principall heardman, laſtly, ſince he tooke this ſtrange determination, he hath in a manner put the life of himſelfe and his children into his hands. Which authoritie (like too great a ſayle for ſo ſmall a bõate) doth ſo ouer-ſway poore *Dametas*, that if before he were a

good

good foole in a chamber, he might be allowed it now in a comedie: So as I doubt me (I feare mee in deede) my maſter will in the end (with his coſt) finde, that his office is not to make men, but to vſe men as men are; no more then a horſe will be taught to hunt, or an aſſe to mannage. But in ſooth I am afraide I haue geuen your eares too great a ſurfette, with the groſſe diſcourſes of that heauie peece of fleſh. But the zealous greefe I conceue to ſee ſo great an error in my Lord, hath made me beſtow more words, then I confeſſe ſo baſe a ſubiect deſerueth.

CHAP. 4.

The cauſe of Baſilius *his diſcourting.* Philanax *his diſſwaſiue letter.* Baſilius *his priuiledged companie.* *Foure cauſes why old men are diſcourſers.* *The ſtate, the skil, and exerciſe of the Arcadian ſhepheards.*

THus much now that I haue tolde you, is nothing more then in effect any Arcadian knowes. But what moued him to this ſtrange ſolitarines hath bin imparted (as I thinke) but to one perſon liuing. My ſelfe cā cōiecture, & in deed more then coniecture, by this accident that I will tell you: I haue an onely ſonne, by name *Clitophon*, who is now abſent, preparing for his owne mariage, which I meane ſhortly ſhalbe here celebrated. This ſonne of mine (while the Prince kept his Court) was of his bed-chamber; now ſince the breaking vp thereof, returned home, and ſhewed me (among other things he had gathered) the coppy

coppy which he had taken of a letter: which when the prince had read, he hadlaid in a window, presuming no body durst looke in his writings: but my sonne not only tooke a time to read it, but to copie it. In trueth I blamed *Clitophon* for the curiositie, which made him break his duetie in such a kind, whereby kings secrets are subiect to be reucaled: but since it was done, I was content to take so much profite, as to know it. Now here is the letter, that I euer since for my good liking, haue caried about me: which before I read vnto you, I must tell you from whom it came. It is a noble-man of this countrie, named *Philanax*, appointed by the Prince, Regent in this time of his retiring, and most worthie so to be: for, there liues no man, whose excellent witte more simplie imbraseth integritie, besides his vnfained loue to his master, wherein neuer yet any could make question, saying, whether he loued *Basilius* or the Prince better: a rare temper, while most men either seruile-ly yeeld to al appetites, or with an obstinate austeritie looking to that they fansie good, in effect neglect the Princes person. This then being the man, whom of all other (and most worthie) the Prince cheefly loues, it should seeme (for more then the letter I haue not to ghesse by) that the Prince vpon his returne from Delphos, (*Philanax* then lying sick) had written vnto him his determination, rising (as euidently appeares) vpon some Oracle he had there receaued: whereunto he wrote this answere.

Philanax his letter to Basilius.

MOst redouted & beloued prince, if aswel it had pleased you at your going to Delphos as now, to haue 2

vsed

vſed my humble ſeruice, both I ſhould in better ſeaſon, and to better purpoſe haue ſpoken: and you (if my ſpeech had preuayled) ſhould haue beene at this time, as no way more in danger, ſo much more in quietnes; I would then haue ſaid, that wiſdome and vertue be the only deſtinies appointed to mã to follow, whẽce we ought to ſeeke al our knowledge, ſince they be ſuch guydes as cannot faile; which, beſides their inward cõfort, doo lead ſo direct a way of proceeding, as either proſperitie muſt enſue; or, if the wickednes of the world ſhould oppreſſe it, it can neuer be ſaid, that euil hapneth to him, who falles accompanied with vertue: I would then haue ſaid, the heauenly powers to be reuerenced, and not ſearched into; & their mercies rather by prayers to be ſought, then their hidden councels by curioſitie. Theſe kind of ſoothſayers (ſince they haue left vs in our ſelúes ſufficient guides) to be nothing but fanſie, wherein there muſt either be vanitie, or infalliblenes, & ſo, either not to be reſpected, or not to be preuented. But ſince it is weakenes too much to remember what ſhould haue beene done, and that your commandemẽt ſtretcheth to know what is to be done, I do (moſt deare Lord) with humble boldnes ſay, that the maner of your determination dooth in no ſort better pleaſe me, then the cauſe of your going. Theſe thirtie yeares you haue ſo gouerned this Region, that neither your Subiectes haue wanted iuſtice in you, nor you obediẽce in them; & your neighbors haue found you ſo hurtleſly ſtrong, that they thought it better to reſt in your friendſhippe, then make newe triall of your enmitie. If this then haue proceeded out of the good conſtitution of your ſtate, and out of a wiſe prouidence, generally to preuent

all

all thoſe things, which might encõber your happines: why ſhould you now ſeeke newe courſes, ſince your owne enſample comforts you to continue, and that it is to me moſt certaine (though it pleaſe you not to tell me the very words of the Oracle) that yet no deſtinie, nor influence whatſoeuer, can bring mans witte to a higher point, then wiſdome and goodnes? Why ſhould you depriue your ſelfe of gouernment, for feare of looſing your gouernment? like one that ſhould kill himſelfe for feare of death? nay rather, if this Oracle be to be accoũted of, arme vp your courage the more againſt it: for who wil ſtick to him that abandones himſelfe? Let your ſubiects haue you in their eyes; let them ſee the benefites of your iuſtice dayly more and more; and ſo muſt they needes rather like of preſent ſureties, then vncertaine changes. Laſtly, whether your time call you to liue or die, doo both like a prince. Now for your ſecond reſolution; which is, to ſuffer no worthie prince to be a ſuiter to either of your daughters, but while you liue to keep thẽ both vnmaried; &, as it were, to kill the ioy of poſteritie, which in your time you may enioy: moued perchance by a miſ-underſtoode Oracle: what ſhall I ſay, if the affection of a father to his owne children, cannot plead ſufficiẽtly againſt ſuch fancies? once certaine it is, the God, which is God of nature, doth neuer teach vnnaturalnes: and euen the ſame minde hold I touching your baniſhing them from companie, leaſt, I know not what ſtrange loues ſhould follow. Certainly Sir, in my ladies, your daughters, nature promiſeth nothing but goodnes, and their education by your fatherly care, hath beene hetherto ſuch, as hath beene moſt fit to reſtraine all euill: geuing their mindes vertuous delights,

lights, and not greeuing them for want of wel-ruled libertie. Now to fall to a ſodain ſtraightning them, what can it doo but argue ſuſpition, a thing no more vnpleaſant, then vnſure, for the preſeruing of vertue? Leaue womens minds, the moſt vntamed that way of any: ſee whether any cage can pleaſe a bird? or whether a dogge growe not fiercer with tying? what dooth ielouſie, but ſtirre vp the mind to thinke, what it is from which they are reſtrayned? for they are treaſures, or things of great delight, which men vſe to hide, for the aptneſſe they haue to catch mens fancies: and the thoughtes once awaked to that, harder ſure it is to keepe thoſe thoughts from accompliſhment, then it had been before to haue kept the minde (which being the chiefe part, by this meanes is defiled) from thinking. Laſtly, for the recommending ſo principall a charge of the Princeſſe *Pamela*, (whoſe minde goes beyond the gouerning of many thouſands ſuch) to ſuch a perſon as *Dametas* is (beſides that the thing in it ſelf is ſtrange) it comes of a very euil ground, that ignorance ſhould be the mother of faithfulnes. O no; he cannot be good, that knowes not why he is good, but ſtands ſo farre good, as his fortune may keepe him vnaſſaied: but comming once to that, his rude ſimplicitie is either eaſily changed, or eaſily decciued: & ſo growes that to be the laſt excuſe of his fault, which ſeemed to haue been the firſt foundation of his faith. Thus farre hath your commaundement and my zeale drawn me; which I, like a man in a valley that may diſcern hilles, or like a poore paſſenger that may ſpie a rock, ſo humbly ſubmit to your gracious conſideration, beſeeching you againe, to ſtand wholy vpon your own vertue, as the ſureſt way to maintaine you in that you are, and to auoyd any euill which may be imagined.

By

By the contents of this letter you may perceiue, that the cauſe of all, hath beene the vanitie which poſſeſſeth many, who (making a perpetuall manſion of this poore baiting place of mans life) are deſirous to know the certaintie of things to come; wherein there is nothing ſo certaine, as our continual vncertaintie. But what in particular points the oracle was, in faith I know not: nether (as you may ſee by one place of *Philanax* letter) he himſelfe diſtinctly knew. But this experience ſhewes vs, that *Baſilius* iudgement, corrupted with a Princes fortune, hath rather heard then followed the wiſe (as I take it) counſell of *Philanax*. For, hauing loſt the ſterne of his gouernment, with much amazement to the people, among whom many ſtrange bruits are receiued for currant, and with ſome apparance of daunger in reſpect of the valiant *Amphalus* his nephew, & much enuy in the ambitious number of the Nobilitie againſt *Philanax*, to ſee *Philanax* ſo aduaunced, though (to ſpeake ſimply) he deſerue more thē as many of vs as there be in Arcadia: the prince himſelf hath hidden his head, in ſuch ſort as I told you, not ſticking plainly to cōfeſſe, that he means not (while he breathes) that his daughters ſhal haue any huſbād, but keep thē thus ſolitary with him: wher he 3
giues no other body leue to viſit him at any time, but a certain prieſt, who being excellent in poetrie, he makes him write out ſuch thinges as he beſt likes, he being no les delightful in cōuerſatiō, thē needfull for deuotiō, & about twēty ſpecified ſhepheards, in whō (ſome for exerciſes, & ſome for Eglogs) he taketh greater recreatiō.

And now you know as much as my ſelf: wherin if I 4
haue held you ouer long, lay hardly the fault vpon my old e age, which in the very diſpoſition of it is talkatiue: whether it be (ſaid he ſmiling) that nature loues to exer-

exerciſe that part moſt, which is leaſt decayed, and that is our tongue: or, that knowledge being the only thing whereof we poore old men can brag, we cannot make it knowen but by vtterance: or, that mankinde by all meanes ſeeking to eternize himſelfe ſo much the more, as he is neere his end, dooth it not only by the children that come of him, but by ſpeeches and writings recommended to the memorie of hearers and readers. And yet thus much I wil ſay for my ſelfe, that I haue not laid theſe matters, either ſo openly, or largely to any as your ſelfe: ſo much (if I much fayle not) doo I ſee in you, which makes me both loue and truſt you. Neuer may he be old, anſwered *Palladius*, that dooth not reuerence that age, whoſe heauines, if it waie downe the frayl and fleſhly ballance, it as much lifts vp the noble and ſpirituall part: and well might you haue alledged another reaſon, that their wiſdome makes them willing to profite others. And that haue I receiued of you, neuer to be forgotten, but with vngratefulnes. But among many ſtrange conceits you tolde me, which haue ſhewed effects in your Prince, truly euen the laſt, that he ſhould conceiue ſuch pleaſure in ſhepheards diſcourſes, would not ſeeme the leaſt vnto me, ſauing that you told me at the firſt, that this countrie is notable in thoſe wits, and that in deed my ſelfe hauing beene brought not onely to this place, but to my life, by *Strephon* and *Claius*, in their conference found wits as might better become ſuch ſhepheards as *Homer* ſpeakes of, that be gouernors of peoples, then ſuch ſenatours who hold their councell in a ſhepecoate: for them two (ſaid *Kalander*) eſpecially *Claius*, they are beyond the reſt by ſo much, as learning commonlie doth adde to nature: for, hauing neglected

neglected their wealth in reſpect of their knowledge, they haue not ſo much empayred the meaner, as they bettered the better. Which all notwithſtanding, it is a ſporte to heare howe they impute to loue, whiche hath indewed their thoughts (ſaie they) with ſuche a ſtrength.

But certainely, all the people of this countrie from high to lowe, is giuen to thoſe ſportes of the witte, ſo as you would wonder to heare how ſoone euen children will beginne to verſifie. Once, ordinary it is among the meaneſt ſorte, to make Songes and Dialogues in meeter, either loue whetting their braine, or long peace hauing begun it, example and emulation amending it. Not ſo much, but the clowne *Dametas* will ſtumble ſometimes vpon ſome Songs that might become a better brayne: but no ſorte of people ſo excellent in that kinde as the paſtors; for their liuing ſtanding but vpon the looking to their beaſtes, they haue eaſe, the Nurſe of Poetrie. Neither are our ſhepheards ſuch, as (I heare) they be in other countries; but they are the verie owners of the ſheepe, to which eyther themſelues looke, or their children giue daylie attendaunce. And then truely, it would delight you vnder ſome tree, or by ſome riuers ſide (when two or three of them meet together) to heare their rurall muſe, how pretely it will deliuer out, ſometimes ioyes, ſometimes lamentations, ſometimes chalengings one of the other, ſometimes vnder hidden formes vttering ſuch matters, as otherwiſe they durſt not deale with. Then they haue moſt commonly one, who iudgeth the price to the beſt doer, of which they are no leſſe gladde, then great Princes are of triumphes: and his parte is to ſette

downe in writing all that is ſaide, ſaue that it may be, his pen with more leaſure doth poliſh the rudeneſſe of an vnthought-on ſonge. Now the choiſe of all (as you may well thinke) either for goodneſſe of voice, or pleaſantneſſe of wit, the Prince hath: among whom alſo there are two or three ſtraungers, whom inwarde melancholies hauing made weery of the worldes eyes, haue come to ſpende their liues among the countrie people of *Arcadia*; & their conuerſation being well approued, the prince vouchſafeth them his preſence, and not onely by looking on, but by great courteſie and liberalitie, animates the Shepheardes the more exquiſitely to labour for his good liking. So that there is no cauſe to blame the Prince for ſomtimes hearing them; the blame-worthineſſe is, that to heare them, he rather goes to ſolitarineſſe, then makes them come to companie. Neyther doo I accuſe my maiſter for aduauncing a countriman, as *Dametas* is, ſince God forbid, but where worthineſſe is (as truely it is among diuers of that fellowſhip) any outward lowneſſe ſhould hinder the hieſt rayſing, but that he would needes make election of one, the baſeneſſe of whoſe minde is ſuch, that it ſinckes a thouſand degrees lower, then the baſeſt bodie could carrie the moſt baſe fortune: Which although it might bee aunſwered for the Prince, that it is rather a truſt hee hath in his ſimple plainneſſe, then any great aduauncement, beyng but chiefe heardman: yet all honeſt hartes feele, that the truſt of their Lord goes beyond all aduauncement. But I am euer too long vppon him, when hee croſſeth the waie of my ſpeache, and by the ſhaddowe of yonder Tower, I ſee it is a fitter time, with our ſupper to pay the duties we

owe

owe to our ſtomacks, thē to break the aire with my idle diſcourſes: And more witte I might haue learned of *Homer* (whome euen now you mentioned) who neuer entertayned eyther gueſtes or hoſtes with long ſpeaches, till the mouth of hunger be throughly ſtopped. So withall he roſe, leading *Palladius* through the gardeine againe to the parler, where they vſed to ſuppe; *Palladius* aſſuring him, that he had alreadie bene more fed to his liking, then hee could bee by the skilfulleſt trencher-men of *Media.*

CHAP. 5.

The [1] *ſorow of* Kalander *for his ſonne* Clitophon. *The* [2] *ſtorie of* Argalus *and* Parthenia, *their* [3] *perfections, their* [4] *loue, their* [5] *troubles, her* [6] *impoyſoning,* [7] *his rare conſtancie,* [8] *her ſtraunge refuſall,* [9] *their pathologies, her* [10] *flight, his* [11] *reuenge on his riuall the miſchieſe-worker* Demagoras, *then Captaine of the rebell* Helots, *who* [12] *take him, and* [13] Clitophon *that ſought to helpe him: but* [14] *both are kept aliue by their new captaine.*

BVt beeing come to the ſupping place, one of *Kalanders* ſeruaunts rounded in his eare; at which (his collour chaungyng) hee retired him ſelfe into his chamber; commaunding his men diligentlie to waite and attend vpon *Palladius*, and to excuſe his abſence with ſome neceſſarie buſines he had preſentlie to diſpatch. 1

Which they accordinglie did, for ſome fewe dayes forcing thẽſelues to let no change appeare: but though they framed their countenaunces neuer ſo cunningly, *Palladius* perceaued there was ſome il-pleaſing accident fallen out. Whereupon, being againe ſet alone at ſupper, he called to the Steward, and deſired him to tell him the matter of his ſuddaine alteration: who after ſome trifling excuſes, in the ende confeſſed vnto him, that his maiſter had receiued newes, that his ſonne before the daie of his neere marriage, chaunſt to be at a battaile, which was to be fought betweene the Gentlemenne of Lacedæmon and the *Helots*: who winning the victorie, hee was there made priſoner, going to deliuer a friend of his taken pryſoner by the *Helots*; that the poore young Gentleman had offered great raunſome for his life: but that the hate thoſe payſaunts conceaued againſt all Gentlemen was ſuche, that euerie houre hee was to looke for nothing, but ſome cruell death: which hether-vnto had onely beene delayed by the Captaines vehement dealing for him, who ſeemed to haue a hart of more manlie pittie then the reſt. Which loſſe had ſtricken the old Gentleman with ſuch ſorrowe, as if aboundance of teares did not ſeeme ſufficiently to witneſſe it, he was alone retyred, tearing his beard and hayre, and curſing his old age, that had not made his graue to ſtoppe his eares from ſuch aduertiſements: but that his faithfull ſeruaunts had written in his name to all his friends, followers, and tenants (*Philanax* the gouernour refuſing to deale in it, as a priuate cauſe, but yet giuing leaue to ſeeke their beſt redreſſe, ſo as they wronged not the ſtate of Lacedæmon) of whom there were now gathered

vpon

vpon the frontiers good forces, that he was ſure would ſpende their liues by any way, to redeeme or reuenge *Clitophon*. Now ſir (ſaid he) this is my maiſters nature, though his grief be ſuch, as to liue is a griefe vnto him, & that euen his reaſon is darkened with ſorrow; yet the lawes of hoſpitality (long and holily obſerued by him) giue ſtill ſuch a ſway to his proceeding, that he will no waie ſuffer the ſtraunger lodged vnder his roofe, to receyue (as it were) any infection of his anguiſh, eſpecially you, toward whom I know not whether his loue, or admiration bee greater. But *Palladius* could ſcarce heare out his tale with patience: ſo was his hart torne in peeces with compaſſion of the caſe, liking of *Kalanders* noble behauiour, kindneſſe for his reſpect to himwarde, and deſire to finde ſome remedie, beſides the image of his deereſt friend *Daiphantus*, whom he iudged to ſuffer eyther a like or a worſe fortune: therefore riſing from the boorde, he deſired the ſteward to tell him particularly, the ground, and euent of this accident, becauſe by knowledge of many circumſtaunces, there might perhaps ſome waie of helpe be opened. Whereunto the Steward eaſilie in this ſorte condiſcended.

My Lord (ſaid he) when our good king *Baſilius*, with 2
better ſucceſſe then expectation, tooke to wife (euen in his more then decaying yeares) the faire yong princes *Gynecia*; there came with her a young Lord, couſin german to her ſelfe, named *Argalus*, led hether, partly with the loue & honour of his noble kinſwomã, partly with the humour of youth, which euer thinkes that good, whoſe goodnes he ſees not: & in this court he receiued ſo good encreaſe of knowledge, that after ſome yeares

ſpent, he ſo manifeſted a moſt vertuous mind in all his
3 actions, that *Arcadia* gloried ſuch a plant was tranſ-
ported vnto them, being a Gentleman in deede moſt
rarely accompliſhed, excellentlie learned, but with-
out all vayne glory: friendly, without factiouſnes: va-
liaunt, ſo as for my part I thinke the earth hath no man
that hath done more heroicall actes then hee; how ſo-
euer now of late the fame flies of the two princes of
Theſſalia and *Macedon*, and hath long done of our no-
ble prince *Amphialus*: who in deede, in our partes is
onely accounted likely to match him: but I ſay for my
part, I thinke no man for valour of minde, and habili-
tie of bodie to bee preferred, if equalled to *Argalus*;
and yet ſo valiant as he neuer durſt doo any bodie in-
iurie: in behauiour ſome will ſay euer ſadde, ſurely ſo-
ber, and ſomewhat giuen to muſing, but neuer vncour-
teous; his worde euer ledde by his thought, and fol-
lowed by his deede; rather liberall then magnificent,
though the one wanted not, and the other had euer
good choiſe of the receiuer: in ſumme (for I perceiue
I ſhall eaſily take a great draught of his praiſes, whom
both I and all this countrie loue ſo well) ſuch a man
was (and I hope is) *Argalus*, as hardly the niceſt eye
can finde a ſpot in, if the ouer-vehement conſtancie of
yet ſpotles affection, may not in harde wreſted conſtru-
ctions be counted a ſpot: which in this manner began
that worke in him, which hath made bothe him, and it
ſelfe in him, ouer all this country famous. My maiſters
ſonne *Clitophon* (whoſe loſſe giues the cauſe to this diſ-
courſe, and yet giues me cauſe to beginne with *Arga-
lus*, ſince his loſſe proceedes from *Argalus*) beyng a
young Gentleman, as of great birth (being our kings

ſiſters

ſiſters ſonne) ſo truely of good nature, and one that can ſee good and loue it, haunted more the companie of this worthie *Argalus*, then of any other: ſo as if there were not a friendſhip (which is ſo rare, as it is to bee doubted whether it bee a thing in deede, or but a worde) at leaſt there was ſuch a liking and friendlines, as hath brought foorth the effectes which you ſhall heare. About two yeares ſince, it ſo fell out, that hee brought him to a great Ladies houſe, ſiſter to my maiſter, who had with her, her onely daughter, the faire *Parthenia*; faire in deede (fame I thinke it ſelfe daring not to call any fayrer, if it be not *Helena* queene of *Corinth*, and the two incomparable ſiſters of *Arcadia*) and that which made her faireneſſe much the fayrer, was, that it was but a faire embaſſadour of a moſt faire minde, full of wit, and a wit which delighted more to iudge it ſelfe, then to ſhowe it ſelfe: her ſpeach being as rare as pretious; her ſilence without ſullennеſſe; her modeſtie without affectation; her ſhamefaſtnes without ignorance: in ſumme, one, that to praiſe well, one muſt firſt ſet downe with himſelfe, what it is to be excellent: for ſo ſhe is.

I thinke you thinke, that theſe perfections meeting, 4
could not chooſe but find one another, and delight in that they found; for likenes of manners is likely in reaſon to drawe liking with affection: mens actions doo not alwaies croſſe with reaſon: to be ſhort, it did ſo in deed. They loued, although for a while the fire therof (hopes winges being cut of) were blowen by the bellowes of diſpaire, vpon this occaſion.

There had beene a good while before, and ſo conti- 5
nued, a ſuter to this ſame lady, a great noble mã, though

of Laconia, yet neere neighbour to *Parthenias* mother, named *Demagoras*: A man mightie in riches & power, and proude thereof, ſtubbornly ſtout, louing no bodie but him ſelfe, and for his owne delights ſake *Parthenia*: and purſuing vehemently his deſire, his riches had ſo guilded ouer all his other imperfections, that the olde Ladie (though contrarie to my Lord her brothers minde) had giuen her conſent; and vſing a mothers authoritie vpon her faire daughter, had made her yeeld thereunto, not becauſe ſhee liked her choiſe, but becauſe her obedient minde had not yet taken vppon it to make choyſe; and the daie of their aſſurance drew neere, when my young Lord *Clitophon* brought this noble *Argalus*, perchaunce principallie to ſee ſo rare a ſight, as *Parthenia* by all well iudging eyes was iudged.

But though fewe dayes were before the time of aſſurance appointed, yet loue that ſawe hee had a great iourney to make in ſhorte time, haſted ſo him ſelfe, that before her worde could tie her to *Demagoras*, her harte hath vowed her to *Argalus*, with ſo gratefull a receipte in mutuall affection, that if ſhee deſired aboue all thinges to haue *Argalus*, *Argalus* feared nothing but to miſſe *Parthenia*. And now *Parthenia* had learned both liking and miſliking, louing and lothing, and out of paſſion began to take the authoritie of iudgement; in ſo much, that when the time came that *Demagoras* (full of proude ioy) thought to receaue the gifte of her ſelfe, ſhee with woordes of reſolute refuſall (though with teares ſhewing ſhe was ſorie ſhe muſt refuſe) aſſured her mother, ſhe would firſt be bedded in her graue, then wedded to *Demagoras*. The chaunge was no

more

more ſtraunge, then vnpleaſant to the mother: who beyng determinately (leaſt I ſhoulde ſay of a great Lady, wilfully) bent to marrie her to *Demagoras*, tryed all wayes which a wittie and hard-harted mother could vſe, vpon ſo humble a daughter: in whome the onely reſiſting power was loue. But the more ſhee aſſaulted, the more ſhee taught *Parthenia* to defende: and the more *Parthenia* defended, the more ſhe made her mother obſtinate in the aſſault: who at length finding, that *Argalus* ſtanding betweene them, was it that moſt eclipſed her affection from ſhining vpon *Demagoras*, ſhe ſought all meanes how to remoue him, ſo much the more, as he manifeſted himſelf an vnremoueable ſuiter to her daughter: firſt, by imploying him in as many dãgerous enterpriſes, as euer the cuill ſtepmother *Iuno* recommended to the famous *Hercules*: but the more his vertue was tried, the more pure it grew, while all the things ſhe did to ouerthrow him, did ſet him vp vpon the height of honor; inough to haue moued her harte, eſpecially to a man euery way ſo worthy as *Argalus*: but ſhe ſtrugling againſt all reaſon, becauſe ſhe would haue her will, and ſhew her authoritie in matching her with *Demagoras*, the more vertuous *Argalus* was, the more ſhe hated him: thinking her ſelfe conquered in his cõqueſts, and therefore ſtill imploying him in more and more dangerous attempts: meane while, ſhe vſed all extremities poſſible vpon her faire daughter, to make her geue ouer her ſelfe to her direction. But it was hard to iudge, whether he in doing, or ſhe in ſuffering, ſhewed greater conſtancie of affection: for, as to *Argalus* the world ſooner wanted occaſions, then he valour to goe thorow them; ſo to *Parthenia*, malice ſooner ceaſed, thẽ her

her vnchanged patience. Laſtly, by treaſons, *Demagoras* and ſhe would haue made away *Argalus*: but hee with prouidence & courage ſo paſt ouer all, that the mother tooke ſuch a ſpiteſull griefe at it, that her hart brake withall, and ſhe died.

6 But then, *Demagoras* aſſuring himſelfe, that now *Parthenia* was her owne, ſhe would neuer be his, and receiuing as much by her owne determinate anſwere, not more deſiring his owne happines, then enuying *Argalus*, whom he ſaw with narrow eyes, euen ready to enioy the perfection of his deſires; ſtrengthning his conceite with all the miſchieuous counſels which diſdayned loue, and enuious pride could geue vnto him; the wicked wretch (taking a time that *Argalus* was gone to his countrie, to fetch ſome of his principall frendes to honour the mariage, which *Parthenia* had moſt ioyfully conſented vnto,) the wicked *Demagoras* (I ſay) deſiring to ſpeake with her, with vnmercifull force, (her weake armes in vaine reſiſting) rubd all ouer her face a moſt horrible poyſon: the effect whereof was ſuch, that neuer leaper lookt more vgly thē ſhe did: which done, hauing his men & horſes ready, departed away in ſpite of her ſeruāts, as redy to reuenge as they could be, in ſuch an vnexpected miſchiefe. But the abhominablenes of this fact being come to my L. *Kalander*, he made ſuch meanes, both by our kings interceſſion, & his own, that by the king, & Senat of Lacedæmō, *Demagoras* was vpon paine of death, baniſhed the countrie: who hating the puniſhment, where he ſhould haue hated the fault, ioynde himſelfe, with al the powers he could make, vnto the *Helots*, lately in rebellion againſt that ſtate: and they (glad to haue a man of ſuch authority among thē)

made

made him their general: & vnder him haue committed diuers the moſt outragious villanies, that a baſe multitude (full of deſperate reuenge) can imagine.

But within a while after this pitifull fact committed 7
vpon *Parthenia*, *Argalus* returned (poore gentleman) hauing her faire image in his heart, and alredy promiſing his eies the vttermoſt of his felicitie, when they (no bodie els daring to tell it him) were the firſt meſſengers to themſelues of their owne misfortune. I meane not to moue paſſions with telling you the griefe of both, when he knew her, for at firſt he did not, nor at firſt knowledge could poſſibly haue Vertues aide ſo ready, as not euen weakly to lament the loſſe of ſuch a iewell, ſo much the more, as that skilful men in that arte aſſured it was vnrecouerable: but within a while, trueth of loue (which ſtill held the firſt face in his memorie) a vertuous conſtancie, and euen a delight to be conſtant, faith geuen, and inward worthines ſhining through the fouleſt miſtes, tooke ſo full holde of the noble *Argalus*, that not onely in ſuch comfort which witty arguments may beſtow vpon aduerſitie, but euen with the moſt aboundant kindneſſe that an eye-rauiſhed louer can expreſſe, he laboured both to driue the extremity of ſorow from her, & to haſten the celebration of their mariage: wherunto he vnfainedly ſhewed himſelf no leſſe cherefully earneſt, then if ſhe had neuer been diſinherited of that goodly portion, which nature had ſo liberally bequeathed vnto her: and for that cauſe deferred his intẽded reuenge vpon *Demagoras*, becauſe he might continually be in her preſence; ſhewing more hũble ſeruiceablenes, and ioy to content her, then euer before.

But as he gaue this rare enſãple, not to be hoped for of 8
any

any other,but of an other *Argalus:* ſo of the other ſide, ſhe tooke as ſtrange a courſe in affection:for, where ſhe deſired to enioy him, more then to liue; yet did ſhe ouerthrow both her owne deſire,and his,and in no ſorte would yeeld to marry him; with a ſtrange encounter of loues affects,and effects: that he by an affection ſprong from exceſſiue beautie, ſhould delight in horrible foulneſſe; and ſhe,of a vehement deſire to haue him,ſhould kindly buyld a reſolution neuer to haue him:for trueth is,that ſo in heart ſhe loued him, as ſhe could not finde in her heart he ſhould be tied to what was vnworthy of his preſence.

9 Truely Sir, a very good Orator might haue a fayre field to vſe eloquence in,if he did but onely repeate the lamentable,and truely affectionated ſpeeches,while he coniured her by remembrance of her affection, & true oathes of his owne affection, not to make him ſo vnhappy,as to think he had not only loſt her face,but her hart;that her face,when it was fayreſt,had been but as a marſhall, to lodge the loue of her in his minde; which now was ſo well placed, as it needed no further help of any outward harbinger: beſeeching her, euen with teares,to know,that his loue was not ſo ſuperficial,as to go no further then the skin;which yet now to him was moſt faire, ſince it was hers: how could hee be ſo vngratefull,as to loue her the leſſe for that, which ſhe had onely receiued for his ſake: that he neuer beheld it,but therein he ſaw the louelines of her loue towarde him: proteſting vnto her,that he would neuer take ioy of his life,if he might not enioy her,for whom principally he was glad he had life. But (as I heard by one that ouerheard them) ſhe(wringing him by the hand)made no other

other anſwere but this: my Lord (ſaid ſhe) God knowes I loue you: if I were Princeſſe of the whole world, and had withal, al the bleſſings that euer the world brought forth, I ſhould not make delay, to lay my ſelfe, & them, vnder your feete: or if I had continued but as I was, though (I muſt cõfeſſe) far vnworthy of you, yet would I, (with too great a ioy for my hart to think of) haue accepted your vouchſafing me to be yours, & with faith and obedience would haue ſupplied all other defects. But firſt let me be much more miſerable then I am, ere I match *Argalus* to ſuch a *Parthenia*: Liue happy, deare *Argalus*, I geue you full libertie, and I beſeech you take it; and I aſſure you I ſhall reioyce (whatſoeuer become of me) to ſee you ſo coupled, as may be fitte, both for your honor, and ſatisfaction. With that ſhe burſt out in crying and weeping, not able longer to conteine her ſelfe from blaming her fortune, and wiſhing her owne death.

But *Argalus* with a moſt heauie heart ſtill purſuing his deſire, ſhe fixt of mind to auoid further intreatie, & to flie all companie; which (euen of him) grew vnpleaſant vnto her; one night ſhe ſtole away: but whether, as yet is vnknowen, or in deede what is become of her. 10

Argalus fought her long, and in many places: at length (deſpairing to finde her, and the more he deſpaired, the more enraged) weerie of his life, but firſt determining to be reuenged of *Demagoras*, hee went alone diſguyſed into the chiefe towne held by the *Helots*: where comming into his preſence, garded about by many of his ſouldiers, he could delay his fury no lõger for a fitter time: but ſetting vpon him, in deſpight of a great many that helped him, gaue him diuers mortall wounds, 11

wounds,and himſelf (no queſtion) had been there pre-
12 ſently murthered, but that *Demagoras* himſelfe deſired he might be kept aliue; perchaunce with intention to feed his owne eyes with ſome cruell execution to bee layd vpon him,but death came ſoner then he lookt for; yet hauing had leiſure to appoint his ſucceſſor,a young man,not long before deliuered out of the priſon of the King of *Lacedæmon*, where hee ſhould haue ſuffered death for hauing ſlaine the kings Nephew: but him he named,who at that time was abſent,making roades vpon the *Lacedemonians*, but being returned, the reſt of the *Helots*, for the great liking they conceiued of that yong man, (eſpecially becauſe they had none among themſelues to whom the others would yeeld) were cõtent to follow *Demagoras* appointment. And well hath it ſucceded with them,he hauing ſince done things beyond the hope of the yongeſt heads; of whom I ſpeak the rather, becauſe he hath hetherto preſerued *Argalus* aliue,vnder pretence to haue him publiquely,and with exquiſite tormentes executed, after the ende of theſe warres,of which they hope for a ſoone and proſperous iſſue.

And he hath likewiſe hetherto kept my young Lord
13 *Clitophon* aliue, who (to redeme his friend) went with certaine other noble-men of *Laconia*,and forces gathered by them,to beſiege this young and new ſucceſſor: but he iſſuing out (to the wonder of all men) defeated
14 the *Laconians*, ſlew many of the noble-men, & tooke *Clitophon* priſoner,whom with much a doo he keepeth aliue: the *Helots* being villanouſly cruell; but he tempereth thē ſo,ſometimes by folowing their humor, ſometimes by ſtriuing with it, that hetherto hee hath ſaued both

both their liues, but in different eſtates; *Argalus* being kept in a cloſe & hard priſon, *Clitophon* at ſome libertie. And now Sir, though (to ſay the truth) we can promiſe our ſelues litle of their ſafeties, while they are in the *Helots* hands, I haue deliuered all I vnderſtande touching the loſſe of my Lords ſonne, & the cauſe therof: which, though it was not neceſsarie to *Clitophons* caſe, to be ſo particularly told, yet the ſtrãgenes of it, made me think it would not be vnpleſant vnto you.

CHAP. 6.

[1] Kalanders *expedition againſt the* Helots. [2] *Their eſtate.* [3] Palladius *his ſtratageme againſt them:* [4] *which preuayleth.* [5] *The* Helots *reſiſtance, diſcomfiture, and* [6] *reenforce by the returne of their new captaine* [7] *The combat and* [8] *enterknowledge of* Daiphantus *&* Palladius, *and by their* [9] *meanes a peace, with* [10] *the releaſe of* Kalander *and* Clitophon.

PAlladius thanked him greatly for it, being euen paſſionatly delighted with hearing ſo ſtraunge an accidẽt of a knight ſo famous ouer the world, as *Argalus*, with whome he had himſelfe a long deſire to meet: ſo had fame poured a noble emulation in him, towards him.

But thẽ (wel bethinking himſelf) he called for armour, deſiring them to prouide him of horſe & guide, and armed al ſauing the head, he wẽt vp to *Kalãder*, whom he found lying vpõ the groũd, hauing euer ſince baniſhed both

both ſleepe and foode, as enemies to the mourning which paſſion perſwaded him was reaſonable. But *Palladius* rayſed him vp, ſaying vnto him: No more, no more of this, my Lord *Kalander*; let vs labour to finde, before wee lament the loſſe: you know my ſelfe miſſe one, who, though he be not my ſonne, I would diſdayn the fauour of life after him: but while there is hope left, let not the weaknes of ſorow, make the ſtrength of it languiſh: take comfort, and good ſucceſſe will folow. And with thoſe wordes, comfort ſeemed to lighten in his eyes, and that in his face and geſture was painted victorie. Once, *Kalanders* ſpirits were ſo reuiued withal, that (receiuing ſome ſuſtenance, and taking a litle reſt) he armed himſelfe, and thoſe few of his ſeruants he had left vnſent, and ſo himſelf guyded *Palladius* to the place vpon the frontiers: where alredy there were aſſembled betwene three and four thouſand men, all wel diſpoſed (for *Kalanders* ſake) to abide any perill: but like men diſuſed with a long peace, more determinate to doo, then skilfull how to doo: luſty bodies, and braue armours: with ſuch courage, as rather grew of deſpiſing their enimies, whom they knew not, then of any confidence for any thing, which in them ſelues they knew; but neither cunning vſe of their weapons, nor arte ſhewed in their marching, or incamping. Which *Palladius* ſoone perceiuing, he deſired to vnderſtand (as much as could be deliuered vnto him) the eſtate of the *Helots*.

2 And he was anſwered by a man well acquainted with the affaires of Laconia, that they were a kinde of people, who hauing been of old, freemen and poſſeſſioners, the Lacedemonians had conquered them, and layd, not onely tribute, but bondage vpon them: which they

they had long borne ; till of late the *Lacedæmonians* through greedineſſe growing more heauie then they could beare, and through contempt leſſe carefull how to make them beare, they had with a generall conſent (rather ſpringing by the generalnes of the cauſe, then of any artificiall practiſe) ſet themſelues in armes, and whetting their courage with reuenge, and grounding their reſolutiõ vpon deſpaire, they had proceeded with vnloked-for ſucces: hauing already takẽ diuers Towns and Caſtels, with the ſlaughter of many of the gentrie; for whom no ſex nor age could be accepted for an excuſe. And that although at the firſt they had fought rather with beaſtly furie, then any ſouldierly diſcipline, practiſe had now made then comparable to the beſt of the *Lacedæmonians*; & more of late then euer; by reaſon, firſt of *Demagoras* a great Lord, who had made him ſelf of their partie, and ſince his death, of an other Captaine they had gotten, who had brought vp their ignorance, and brought downe their furie, to ſuch a meane of good gouernment, and withall led them ſo valouruſlie, that (beſides the time wherein *Clitophon* was taken) they had the better in ſome other great cõflicts: in ſuch wiſe, that the eſtate of *Lacedæmon* had ſent vnto them, offering peace with moſt reaſonable and honorable conditions. *Palladius* hauing gotten this generall knowledge of the partie againſt whom, as hee had already of the party for whom he was to fight, he went to *Kalander*, and told him plainlie, that by playne force there was ſmall apparaunce of helping *Clitophon*: but ſome deuice was to be taken in hand, wherein no leſſe diſcretion then valour was to be vſed.

Whereupon, the councel of the chiefe men was cal- 3

led, and at laſt, this way *Palladius* (who by ſome experience, but eſpeciallie by reading Hiſtories, was acquainted with ſtratagemes) inuented, and was by all the reſt approoued: that all the men there ſhoulde dreſſe themſelues like the pooreſt ſorte of the people in *Arcadia*, hauing no banners, but bloudie ſhirtes hanged vpon long ſtaues, with ſome bad bagge pipes in ſtead of drumme and fife, their armour they ſhould aſwell as might be, couer, or at leaſt make them looke ſo ruſtilie, and ill-fauouredly as might well become ſuch wearers; and this the whole number ſhould doo, ſauing two hundred of the beſt choſen Gentlemen, for courage and ſtrength, whereof *Palladius* him ſelfe would be one, who ſhould haue their armes chayned, and be put in cartes like priſoners. This being performed according to the agreement, they marched on towards the towne of *Cardamila* where *Clitophon* was captiue; and being come two houres before Sunne-ſet within vewe of the walles, the *Helots* alreadie deſcrying their number, and beginning to ſound the Alkarum, they ſent a cunning fellow, (ſo much the cunninger as that he could maske it vnder rudenes) who with ſuch a kind of Rhetorike, as weeded out all flowers of Rhetorike, deliuered vnto the *Helots* aſſembled together, that they were countrie people of *Arcadia*, no leſſe oppreſſed by their Lords, & no leſſe deſirous of liberty then they, & therfore had put themſelues in the field, & had alreadie (beſides a great number ſlaine) taken nine or ten skore Gentlemen priſoners, whō they had there well & faſt chained. Now becauſe they had no ſtrong retiring place in *Arcadia*, & were not yet of number enough to keepe the fielde againſt their Princes forces,

they

they were come to them for ſuccor; knowing, that daily more & more of their qualitie would flock vnto thē, but that in the mean time, leſt their Prince ſhould purſue thē, or the *Lacedæmonian* King & Nobilitie (for the likenes of the cauſe) fall vpon them, they deſired that if there were not roome enough for them in the towne, that yet they might encampe vnder the walles, and for ſurety haue their priſoners (who were ſuch mē as were euer able to make their peace) kept within the towne.

The *Helots* made but a ſhort conſultatiō, being glad 4
that their contagion had ſpread it ſelfe into *Arcadia*, and making account that if the peace did not fall out betweene them and their King, that it was the beſt way to ſet fire in all the parts of *Greece*; beſides their greedineſſe to haue ſo many Gentlemen in their handes, in whoſe raunſoms they already meant to haue a ſhare; to which haſt of concluding, two thinges wel helped; the one, that their Captaine with the wiſeſt of them, was at that time abſent about confirming or breaking the peace, with the ſtate of *Lacedæmon*: the ſecond, that ouer-many good fortunes began to breed a proude reckleſneſſe in them: therefore ſending to view the campe, and finding that by their ſpeach they were *Arcadians*, with whom they had had no warre, neuer ſuſpecting a priuate mans credite could haue gathered ſuch a force, and that all other tokens witneſſed them to be of the loweſt calling (beſides the chaines vpon the Gentlemen) they graunted not onely leaue for the priſoners, but for ſome others of the companie, and to all, that they might harbour vnder the walles. So opened they the gates, and receiued in the carts; which being done, and *Palladius* ſeing fit time, he gaue the ſigne, and ſha-

king of their chaynes, (which were made with ſuch arte, that though they ſeemed moſt ſtrong and faſt, he that ware them might eaſily looſe them) drew their ſwordes hidden in the cartes, and ſo ſetting vpon the ward, made them to flie eyther from the place, or from their bodies, and ſo giue entrie to all the force of the *Arcadians*, before the *Helots* could make any head to reſiſt them.

5 But the *Helots* being men hardened againſt daungers, gathered as (well as they could) together in the market place, and thence would haue giuen a ſhrewd welcome to the *Arcadians*, but that *Palladius* (blaming thoſe that were ſlow, hartning thē that were forward, but eſpecially with his owne enſample leading them) made ſuch an impreſſion into the ſquadron of the *Helots*, that at firſt the great bodie of them beginning to ſhake, and ſtagger; at length, euery particular bodie recommended the protection of his life to his feet. Then *Kalander* cried to go to the priſon, where he thought his ſonne was, but *Palladius* wiſht him (firſt ſcouring the ſtreates) to houſe all the *Helots*, and make themſelues maiſters of the gates.

6 But ere that could be accompliſhed, the *Helots* had gotten new hart, and with diuers ſortes of ſhot from corners of ſtreats, and houſe windowes, galled them; which courage was come vnto them by the returne of their Captain; who though he brought not many with him (hauing diſperſt moſt of his companies to other of his holds) yet meeting a great nūber rūning out of the gate, not yet poſſeſt by the *Arcadians*, he made them turne face, & with banners diſplayed, his Trumpet giue the lowdeſt teſtimonie he could of his returne, which

once

once heard, the reſt of the *Helots* which were otherwiſe ſcattered, bent thetherward, with a new life of reſolution: as if their Captaine had beene a roote, out of which (as into braunches) their courage had ſprong. Then began the fight to grow moſt ſharpe, and the encounters of more cruell obſtinacie. The *Arcadians* fighting to keepe that they had wonne, the *Helots* to recouer what they had loſt. The *Arcadians*, as in an vnknowne place, hauing no ſuccour but in their handes; the *Helots*, as in their own place, fighting for their liuings, wiues, & children. There was victory & courage againſt reuenge and deſpaire: ſafety of both ſides being no otherwiſe to be gotten, but by deſtruction.

At length, the left winge of the *Arcadians* began to 7
looſe ground; which *Palladius* ſeeing, he ſtreight thruſt himſelfe with his choiſe bande againſt the throng that oppreſſed thē, with ſuch an ouerflowing of valour, that the Captaine of the *Helots* (whoſe eies ſoone iudged of that wherwith thēſelues were gouerned) ſaw that he alone was worth al the reſt of the *Arcadians*. Which he ſo wondred at, that it was hard to ſay, whether he more liked his doings, or miſliked the effects of his doings: but determining that vpon that caſt the game lay, and diſdaining to fight with any other, ſought onely to ioine with him: which minde was no leſſe in *Palladius*, hauing eaſily marked, that he was as the firſt mouer of al the other handes. And ſo their thoughts meeting in one point, they conſented (though not agreed) to trie each others fortune: & ſo drawing themſelues to be the vttermoſt of the one ſide, they began a combat, which was ſo much inferior to the battaile in noiſe and number, as it was ſurpaſſing it in brauery of fighting, & (as it

were) delightful terriblenes. Their courage was guided with skill, and their skill was armed with courage; neither did their hardineſſe darken their witte, nor their witte coole their hardines: both valiant, as men deſpiſing death; both confident, as vnwonted to be ouercome; yet doutefull by their preſent feeling, and reſpectfull by what they had already ſeene. Their feete ſtedy, their hands diligent, their eyes watchfull, & their harts reſolute. The partes either not armed, or weakly armed, were well knowen, and according to the knowledge ſhould haue bene ſharpely viſited, but that the aunſwere was as quicke as the obiection. Yet ſome lighting; the ſmarte bred rage, and the rage bred ſmarte againe: till both ſides beginning to waxe faint, and rather deſirous to die accompanied, then hopeful to liue victorious, the Captaine of the *Helots* with a blow, whoſe violence grew of furie, not of ſtrength, or of ſtrength proceeding of furie, ſtrake *Palladius* vpon the ſide of the head, that he reelde aſtonied: and withall the helmet fell of, he remayning bare headed: but other of the *Arcadians* were redie to ſhield him from any harme might riſe of that nakednes.

8 But little needed it, for his chiefe enemie in ſteed of purſuing that aduauntage, kneeled downe, offering to deliuer the pommell of his ſworde, in token of yeelding, with all ſpeaking aloud vnto him, that he thought it more libertie to be his priſoner, then any others generall. *Palladius* ſtanding vppon him ſelfe, and miſdoubting ſome craft, and the *Helots* (that were next their captaine) wauering betweene looking for ſome ſtratageme, or fearing treaſon, What, ſaide the captaine, hath *Palladius* forgotten the voice of *Daiphantus*?

By

By that watche worde *Palladius* knew that it was his onely friende *Pyrocles*, whome he had loſt vpon the Sea, and therefore both moſt full of wonder, ſo to be mett, if they had not bene fuller of ioye then wonder, cauſed the retraite to be ſounded, *Daiphantus* by authoritie, and *Palladius* by perſuaſion; to which helped well the little aduauntage that was of eyther ſide: and that of the *Helots* partie their Captaines behauiour had made as many amazed as ſawe or heard of it: and of the *Arcadian* ſide the good olde *Kalander* ſtriuing more then his old age could atchieue, was newly taken priſoner. But in deede, the chiefe parter of the fraye was the night, which with her blacke armes pulled their malicious ſightes one from the other. But he that tooke *Kalander*, meant nothing leſſe then to ſaue him, but onelie ſo long, as the Captaine might learne the enemies ſecrets: towardes whom he led the old Gentleman, when he cauſed the retreit to be ſounded: looking for no other deliuerie from that captiuitie, but by the painfull taking away of all paine: when whome ſhould he ſee nexte to the Captaine (with good tokens how valiantly he had fought that daie againſt the *Arcadians*) but his ſonne *Clitophon*? But nowe the Captaine had cauſed all the principall *Helots* to be aſſembled, as well to deliberate what they had to do, as to receiue a meſſage from the *Arcadians*; Amõg whom *Palladius* vertue (beſides the loue *Kalander* bare him) hauing gottẽ principall authoritie, he had perſuaded them to ſeeke rather by parley to recouer the Father and the Sonne, then by the ſword: ſince the goodnes of the Captain aſſured him that way to ſpeed, and his value (wherewith he was of old acquainted)

made him thinke any other way dangerous. This therfore was donne in orderly manner, giuing them to vnderſtand, that as they came but to deliuer *Clitophon*, ſo offering to leaue the footing they already had in the towne, to goe away without any further hurte, ſo as they might haue the father, & the ſonne without raunſome deliuered. Which conditions beyng heard and conceaued by the *Helots*, *Daiphantus* perſwaded them without delay to accept them. For firſt (ſayd he) ſince the ſtrife is within our owne home, if you looſe, you looſe all that in this life can bee deare vnto you: if you winne, it will be a blouddy victorie with no profite, but the flattering in our ſelues that ſame badde humour of reuenge. Beſides, it is like to ſtirre *Arcadia* vppon vs, which nowe, by vſing theſe perſons well, maie bee brought to ſome amitie. Laſtly, but eſpecially, leaſt the king and nobility of *Laconia* (with whom now we haue made a perfect peace) ſhould hope, by occaſion of this quarrell to ioyne the *Arcadians* with them, & ſo breake of the profitable agreement alreadie concluded. In ſumme, as in al deliberations (waying the profite of the good ſucceſſe with the harme of the euill ſucceſſe) you ſhall find this way moſt ſafe and honorable.

10 The *Helots* aſmuch moued by his authoritie, as perſwaded by his reaſons, were content therewith. Whervpon, *Palladius* tooke order that the *Arcadians* ſhould preſently march out of the towne, taking with them their priſoners, while the night with mutual diffidence might keepe them quiet, and ere day came they might be well on of their way, and ſo auoid thoſe accidents which in late enemies, a looke, a word, or a particular mans quarel might engēder. This being on both ſides concluded

concluded on, *Kalander* and *Clitophon*, who now (with infinite ioy did knowe each other) came to kisse the hands and feet of *Daiphantus*: *Clitophon* telling his father, how *Daiphantus* (not without danger to himselfe) had preserued him from the furious malice of the *Helots*: & euen that day going to conclude the peace (least in his absence he might receiue some hurt) he had taken him in his companie, and geuen him armour, vpon promise he should take the parte of the *Helots*; which he had in this fight perfourmed, little knowing that it was against his father: but (said *Clitophon*) here is he, who (as a father) hath new-begotten me, and (as a God) hath saued me from many deaths, which already laid hold on me: which *Kalander* with teares of ioy acknowledged (besides his owne deliuerance) onely his benefite. But *Daiphantus*, who loued doing well for it selfe, and not for thanks, brake of those ceremonies, desiring to know how *Palladius* (for so he called *Musidorus*) was come into that companie, & what his present estate was: whereof receiuing a brief declaration of *Kalander*, he sent him word by *Clitophon*, that he should not as now come vnto him, because he held himselfe not so sure a master of the *Helots* minds, that he would aduenture him in their power, who was so well knowen with an vnfriendly acquaintance; but that he desired him to return with *Kalander*, whether also he within few daies (hauing dispatched himselfe of the *Helots*) would repaire. *Kalander* would needes kisse his hande againe for that promise, protesting, he would esteme his house more blessed thē a temple of the gods, if it had once receiued him. And then desiring pardon for *Argalus*, *Daiphantus* assured them that hee woulde die, but hee woulde bring him,

(though

(though till then kept in cloſe priſon, indeed for his ſafetie, the *Helots* being ſo animated againſt him as els hee could not haue liued) and ſo taking their leaue of him, *Kalander*, *Clitophon*, *Palladius* and the reſt of the *Arcadians* ſwearing that they would no further in any ſorte moleſt the *Helots*, they ſtraight way marched out of the towne, carying both their dead and wounded bodies with them; and by morning were alreadie within the limits of *Arcadia*.

CHAP. 7,

[1]The articles of peace betwene the Lacedæmonians *&* Helots, *[2]*Daiphãtus *his departure frõ the* Helots *with* Argalus *to* Kalanders *houſe. [3] The offer of a ſtraunge Lady to* Argalus *[4] his refuſal, and [5] who ſhe was.*

THe *Helots* of the other ſide ſhutting their gates, gaue them ſelues to burye their dead, to cure their woundes, and reſt their weeried bodies: till (the next day beſtowing the chereful vſe of the light vpon them) *Daiphantus* making a generall conuocation ſpake vnto them in this manner. We are firſt (ſaid he) to thanke the Gods, that (further then wee had either cauſe to hope; or reaſon to imagine) haue deliuered vs out of this gulfe of daunger, wherein we were alredie ſwallowed. For all being loſt, (had they had not directed, my

my return ſo iuſt as they did) it had bene too late to recouer that, which being had, we could not keep. And had I not happened to know one of the principall men among them, by which meanes the truce beganne betweene vs, you may eaſily conceiue, what little reaſon we haue to think, but that either by ſome ſupplie out of *Arcadia*, or from the Nobilitie of this Country (who would haue made fruites of wiſdome grow out of this occaſion,) wee ſhould haue had our power turned to ruine, our pride to repentance and ſorow. But now the ſtorme, as it fell out, ſo it ceaſed: and the error committed, in retaining *Clitophon* more hardly then his age or quarrell deſerued, becomes a ſharply learned experience, to vſe in other times more moderation.

Now haue I to deliuer vnto you the concluſion be- 1
tween the Kings with the Nobilitie of *Lacedæmon*, and you; which is in all points as your ſelues deſired: aſwell for that you would haue graunted, as for the aſſurance of what is graunted. The Townes and Fortes you preſently haue, are ſtill left vnto you, to be kept either with or without garriſon, ſo as you alter not the lawes of the Countrie, and pay ſuch dueties as the reſt of the *Laconians* doo. Your ſelues are made by publique decree, free men, and ſo capable both to giue and receiue voice in election of Magiſtrates. The diſtinction of names betweene *Helots* and *Lacedæmonians* to bee quite taken away, and all indifferently to enioy both names and priuiledges of *Laconians*. Your children to be brought vp with theirs in *Spartane* diſcipline: and ſo you (framing your ſelues to be good members of that eſtate) to bee hereafter fellowes, and no longer ſeruaunts.

Which

which conditions you ſee, cary in themſelues no more contentation then aſſuraunce. For this is not a peace which is made with them, but this is a peace by which you are made of them. Laſtly, a forgetfulnes decreed of of all what is paſt, they ſhewing thēſelues glad to haue ſo valiant men as you are, ioyned with them: ſo that you are to take mindes of peace, ſince the cauſe of war is finiſhed; and as you hated them before like oppreſſours, ſo now to loue them as brothers; to take care of their eſtate becauſe it is yours, and to labour by vertuous doing, that the poſteritie may not repent your ioyning. But now one Article onely they ſtood vpon, which in the end I with your commiſſioners haue agreed vnto, that I ſhould no more tarry here, miſtaking perchaunce my humor, and thinking me as ſedicious as I am young, or els it is the king *Amiclas* procuring, in reſpect that it was my il hap to kil his nephew *Eurileon*; but how ſoeuer it be, I haue condiſcended. But ſo will not wee cryed almoſt the whole aſſemblie, coūcelling one an other, rather to trye the vttermoſt euent, then to looſe him by whō they had beene victorious. But he as well with generall orations, as particular dealing with the men of moſt credit, made them throughly ſee how neceſsary it was to preferree ſuch an opportunity before a vaine affection; but yet could not preuaile, til openly he ſware, that he would (if at any time the *Lacedæmonians* brake this treatie) come back againe, and be their captaine.

2 So then after a few dayes, ſetling them in perfect order, hee tooke his leaue of them, whoſe eyes bad him farwell with teares, & mouthes with kiſsing the places where he ſtept, and after making temples vnto him as

to

to a demi-God: thinking it beyond the degree of humanitie to haue a witt ſo farre ouergoing his age, and ſuch dreadful terror proceed from ſo excellent beutie. But he for his ſake obtayned free pardon for *Argalus*, whom alſo (vppon oath neuer to beare armes againſt the *Helots*) he deliuered: and taking onely with him certaine principall Iewells of his owne, he would haue parted alone with *Argalus*, (whoſe countenaunce well ſhewed, while *Parthenia* was loſt he counted not himſelfe deliuered) but that the whole multitude would needs gard him into *Arcadia*. Where again leauing thē all to lament his departure, he by enquirie gotte to the wel-knowne houſe of *Kalander*: There was he receiued with louing ioye of *Kalander*, with ioyfull loue of *Palladius*, with humble (though doulful) demeanor of *Argalus* (whom ſpecially both he and *Palladius* regarded) with gratefull ſeruiſablenes of *Clitophon*, and honourable admiration of all. For being now well veiwed to haue no haire of his face, to witnes him a man, who had done acts beyond the degree of a man, and to looke with a certaine almoſt baſhefull kinde of modeſtie, as if hee feared the eyes of men, who was vnmooued with ſight of the moſt horrible countenaunces of death; and as if nature had miſtaken her woorke to haue a *Marſes* heart in a *Cupides* bodye: All that beheld him (and al that might behold him, did behold him) made their eyes quicke meſsengers to their minds, that there they had ſeene the vttermoſt that in mankind might be ſeene. The like wonder *Palladius* had before ſtirred, but that *Daiphantus*, as younger and newer come, had gotten now the aduantage in the moyſt & fickle impreſsion of eye-ſight. But while all

men

men (ſauing poore *Argalus*) made the ioy of their eyes ſpeake for their harts towards *Daiphantus*: Fortune (that belike was bid to that banket, & ment then to play the good fellow) brought a pleaſaũt aduenture among thẽ.

3 It was that as they had newly dined, there came in to *Kalander* a meſſenger, that brought him word, a young noble Lady, neere kinſwoman to the fair *Helen* Queene of *Corinth*; was come thether, and deſired to be lodged in his houſe. *Kalander* (moſt glad of ſuch an occaſion) went out, and all his other worthie gueſts with him, ſauing onely *Argalus*, who remained in his chamber, deſirous that this company were once broken vp, that he might goe in his ſolitarie queſt after *Parthenia*. But when they met this Lady; *Kalander* ſtreight thought he ſawe his neece *Parthenia*, and was about in ſuch familiar ſorte to haue ſpoken vnto her: But ſhe in graue and honorable manner giuing him to vnderſtand that he was miſtaken, he halfe aſhamed, excuſed himſelfe with the exceeding likenes was betwene them, though indeede it ſeemed that his Lady was of the more pure and daintie complexion; ſhee ſaid, it might very well be, hauing bene many times taken one for an other. But aſſoone as ſhe was brought into the houſe, before ſhe would reſt her, ſhe deſired to ſpeake with *Argalus* publickly, who ſhe heard was in the houſe. *Argalus* came in haſtely, and as haſtelie thought as *Kalander* had done, with ſodaine chaunges of ioye into ſorrow. But ſhe whẽ ſhe had ſtayd their thoughts with telling them her name, and qualitie in this ſort ſpake vnto him. My Lord *Argalus*, ſayd ſhe, being of late left in the court of Queene *Helen* of *Corinth*, as chiefe in her abſence (ſhe being vpõ ſome occaſion gone thẽce) there

there came vnto me the Lady *Parthenia*, ſo diſguyſed, as I thinke Greece hath nothing ſo ougly to behold. For my part, it was many dayes, before with vehement oathes, and ſome good prooſes, ſhe could make me thinke that ſhe was *Parthenia*. Yet at laſt finding certenly it was ſhe, and greatly pitying her misfortune, ſo much the more, as that all men had euer told me, (as now you doo) of the great likenes betweene vs, I tooke the beſt care I could of her: and of her vnderſtood the whole tragicall hiſtorie of her vndeſerued aduenture: and therewithall, of that moſt noble conſtancie in you my Lord *Argalus*: which whoſoeuer loues not, ſhewes himſelfe to be a hater of vertue, and vnworthie to liue in the ſocietie of mankind. But no outward cheriſhing could ſalue the inward ſore of her minde, but a fewe dayes ſince ſhee died: before her death earneſtly deſiring, and perſwading me, to thinke of no husbande but of you; as of the onely man in the world worthie to be loued; with-all, ſhe gaue me this Ring to deliuer you; deſiring you, & by the authoritie of loue cõmaunding you, that the affection you bare her you ſhould turne to me: aſſuring you, that nothing can pleaſe her ſoule more, then to ſee you and me matched together. Now my L. though this office be not (perchance) ſutable to my eſtate nor ſex, who ſhuld rather looke to be deſired; yet, an extraordinarie deſert requires an extraordinarie proceding: and therfore I am come (with faithfull loue built vpõ your worthines) to offer my ſelf, & to beſeech you to accept the offer: & if theſe noble gẽtlemẽ preſẽt will ſay it is great folly, let thẽ withal, ſay it is great loue. And then ſhe ſtaid, earneſtly attending *Argalus* his anſwere, who (firſt making moſt hartie ſighes do ſuch obſequies as he could, to *Parthenia*) thus anſwered her.

Ma-

4 Madame (ſaid he) infinitely bound am I vnto you, for this, no more rare, then noble courteſie; but moſt bound for the goodnes I perceiue you ſhewed to the lady *Parthenia*, (with that the teares ranne downe his eyes; but he followed on) and as much as ſo vnfortunat a man, fitte to be the ſpectacle of miſerie, can doo you ſeruice; determine you haue made a purchaſe of a ſlaue (while I liue) neuer to fayle you. But this great matter you propoſe vnto me, wherein I am not ſo blind, as not to ſee what happines it ſhould be vnto mee; Excellent Ladie, know, that if my hart were mine to giue, you before al other, ſhould haue it; but *Parthenias* it is, though dead: there I began, there I end all matter of affection: I hope I ſhall not long tarry after her, with whoſe beautie if I had onely been in loue, I ſhould be ſo with you, who haue the ſame beautie: but it was *Parthenias* ſelfe I loued, and loue; which no likenes can make one, no cõmaundement diſſolue, no foulnes defile, nor no death finiſh. And ſhall I receiue (ſaid ſhe) ſuch diſgrace, as to be refuſed? Noble Ladie (ſaid he) let not that harde word be vſed; who know your exceeding worthineſse farre beyond my deſert: but it is onely happineſse I refuſe, ſince of the on ely happines I could and can deſire, I am refuſed.

5 He had ſcarce ſpoken thoſe words, when ſhe ranne to him, and imbraſing him, Why then *Argalus* (ſaide ſhe) take thy *Parthenia*; and *Parthenia* it was in deede. But becauſe ſorow forbad him too ſoon to beleeue, ſhe told him the trueth, with all circumſtances; how being parted alone, meaning to die in ſome ſolitarie place, as ſhe hapned to make her complaint, the Queen *Helen* of *Corinth* (who likewiſe felt her part of miſeries) being then

then walking alſo alone in that louely place, heard her,and neuer left, till ſhe had knowen the whole diſcourſe. Which the noble Queene greatly pittying, ſhe ſent her to a Phiſition of hers, the moſt excellent man in the worlde, in hope he could helpe her: which in ſuch ſorte as they ſaw perfourmed, and ſhe taking with her of the Queenes ſeruaunts, thought yet to make this triall, whether he would quickly forget his true *Parthenia*, or no. Her ſpeach was confirmed by the *Corinthian* Gentlemen, who before had kept her counſell, and *Argalus* eaſily perſwaded to what more then ten thouſand yeares of life he deſired: and *Kalander* would needes haue the mariage celebrated in his houſe, principallie the longer to hold his deare gueſtes, towardes whom he was now (beſides his owne habite of hoſpitalitie) carried with loue and dutie: & therfore omitted no ſeruice that his wit could inuent, and his power miniſter.

CHAP. 8.

The aduentures' firſt of Muſidorus,' *then of* Pyrocles *ſince their ſhipwracke, to their meeting.' The mariage of* Argalus *and* Parthenia.

BVt no waie he ſawe he could ſo much pleaſure them, as by leauing the two friends alone, who being ſhruncke aſide to the banqueting houſe where the pictures were; there *Palladius* recounted vnto him, that after they had both abãdoned the burning ſhip (& either 1

of them taken ſome thing vnder him the better to ſupporte him to the ſhore) he knew not how, but either with ouer-labouring in the fight and ſodaine colde, or the too much receauing of ſalt water, he was paſt himſelfe: but yet holding faſt (as the nature of dying men is to doo) the cheſt that was vnder him, he was caſt on the ſandes, where he was taken vp by a couple of Shepherds, and by them brought to life againe, and kept from drowning him ſelfe, when he deſpaired of his ſafetie. How after hauing failed to take him into the fiſher boate, he had by the Shepheards perſuaſion come to this Gentlemans houſe; where being daungerouſlie ſicke, he had yeelded to ſeeke the recouery of health, onely for that he might the ſooner go ſeeke the deliuerie of *Pyrocles*: to which purpoſe *Kalander* by ſome friends of his in *Meſſenia*, had alreadie ſet a ſhip or two abroad, when this accident of *Clitophons* taking had ſo bleſſedly procured their meeting. Thē did he ſet foorth vnto him the noble entertainement and careful cheriſhing of *Kalander* towards him, & ſo vpon occaſiō of the pictures preſent deliuered with the frankneſſe of a friends tongue, as neere as he could, word by word what *Kalander* had told him touching the ſtrange ſtorie (with al the particularities belonging) of *Arcadia*, which did in many ſortes ſo delight *Pyrocles* to heare; that he would needs haue much of it againe repeated, and was not contented till *Kalander* him ſelfe had anſwered him diuers queſtions.

2 But firſt at *Muſidorus* requeſt, though in brief māner, his mind much running vpō the ſtrange ſtorie of *Arcadia*, he did declare by what courſe of aduētures he was come to make vp their mutuall happineſſe in meeting.

When

When (coſin, ſaid he) we had ſtript our ſelues, and were both leapt into the Sea, and ſwom a little toward the ſhoare, I found by reaſon of ſome wounds I had, that I ſhould not be able to get the lande, and therefore turned backe againe to the maſt of the ſhippe, where you found me, aſſuring my ſelfe, that if you came aliue to the ſhore, you would ſeeke me; if you were loſt, as I thought it as good to periſhe as to liue, ſo that place as good to periſh in as an other. There I found my ſworde among ſome of the ſhrowds, wiſhing (I muſt confeſſe) if I died, to be found with that in my hand, and withall wauing it about my head, that ſaylers by it might haue the better glimpſe of me. There you miſſing me, I was taken vp by Pyrates, who putting me vnder boorde priſoner, preſentlie ſett vppon another ſhippe, and mainteining a long fight, in the ende, put them all to the ſworde. Amongſt whom I might heare them greatlie prayſe one younge man, who fought moſt valiantlie, whom (as loue is carefull, and misfortune ſubiect to doubtfulnes) I thought certainely to be you. And ſo holding you as dead, from that time till the time I ſawe you, in trueth I ſought nothing more then a noble ende, which perchance made me more hardie then otherwiſe I would haue bene. Triall whereof came within two dayes after: for the Kinges of *Lacedæmon* hauing ſett out ſome Galleys, vnder the charge of one of their Nephews to skowre the Sea of the Pyrates, they met with vs, where our Captaine wanting men, was driuen to arme ſome of his priſoners, with promiſe of libertie for well fighting: among whom I was one, and being boorded by the Admirall, it was my fortune to

kil *Eurileon* the Kings nephew: but in the end they preuailed,& we were all take priſoners: I not caring much what became of me (onely keeping the name of *Daiphantus*, according to the reſolution you know is betweene vs,) but beyng laid in the iayle of *Tenaria*, with ſpeciall hate to me for the death of *Eurileon*, the popular ſort of that towne conſpired with the *Helots*, and ſo by night opened them the gates; where entring and killing all of the gentle and riche faction, for honeſtie ſake brake open all priſons, and ſo deliuered me; and I mooued with gratefulneſſe, and encouraged with careleſneſſe of life, ſo behaued my ſelfe in ſome conflictes they had in fewe dayes, that they barbarouſlie thinking vnſenſible wonders of mee, and withall ſo much the better truſting mee, as they heard I was hated of the Kinge of *Lacedæmon*, (their chiefe Captayne beyng ſlaine as you knowe by the noble *Argalus*, who helped therevnto by his perſwaſion) hauing borne a great affection vnto me, and to auoyde the daungerous emulation whiche grewe among the chiefe, who ſhould haue the place, and all ſo affected, as rather to haue a ſtraunger then a competitour, they elected mee, (God wotte little prowde of that dignitie,) reſtoring vnto mee ſuch thinges of mine as being taken firſt by the pyrates, and then by the *Lacedæmonians*, they had gotten in the ſacke of the towne. Now being in it, ſo good was my ſucceſſe with manie victories, that I made a peace for them to their owne liking, the verie daie that you deliuered *Clitophon*, whom I with much adoo had preſerued. And in my peace the King *Amiclas* of *Lacedæmon* would needes haue mee banniſhed, and depriued of the dignitie where-

whereunto I was exalted: which (and you may ſee howe much you are bounde to mee) for your ſake I was content to ſuffer, a newe hope riſing in mee, that you were not dead: and ſo meaning to trauaile ouer the worlde to ſeeke you; and now (here my deere *Muſidorus*) you haue mee. And with that (embracing and kiſſinge each other) they called *Kalander*, of whom *Daiphantus* deſired to heare the full ſtorie, which before hee had recounted to *Palladius*, and to ſee the letter of *Philanax*, which hee read and well marked.

But within ſome daies after, the marriage betweene 3
Argalus and the faire *Parthenia* beyng to be celebrated, *Daiphantus* and *Palladius* ſelling ſome of their iewels, furniſhed themſelues of very faire apparell, meaning to doo honour to their louing hoſte; who as much for their ſakes, as for the marriage, ſet foorth each thing in moſt gorgeous manner. But all the coſt beſtowed did not ſo much enrich, nor all the fine deckinges ſo much beautifie, nor all the daintie deuiſes ſo much delight, as the faireneſſe of *Parthenia*, the pearle of all the maydes of *Mantinæa*: who as ſhee went to the Temple to bee maried, her eyes themſelues ſeemed a temple, wherein loue and beautie were married: her lippes, although they were kepte cloſe with modeſt ſilence, yet with a pretie kinde of naturall ſwelling, they ſeemed to inuite the gueſtes that lookt on them; her cheekes bluſhing, and withal when ſhee was ſpoken vnto, a little ſmilyng, were like roſes, when their leaues are with a little breath ſtirred: her hayre being layed at the full length downe her backe, bare ſhewe as if the voward fayled, yet that would

conquere. *Daiphantus* marking her, O *Iupiter* (ſaid he ſpeaking to *Palladius*) how happens it, that Beautie is onely confined to *Arcadia?* But *Palladius* not greatly attending his ſpeach, ſome daies were continued in the ſolemniſing the marriage, with al conceipts that might deliuer delight to mens fancies.

CHAP. 9.

¹ Pyrocles *his inclination to loue.* ² *His, and* Muſidorus *diſputation thereabouts* ³ *broken of by* Kalander.

1 BVt ſuch a chaunge was growen in *Daiphantus*, that (as if cheerefulneſſe had bene tediouſneſſe, and good entertainement were turnd to diſcourteſie) he would euer get him ſelfe alone, though almoſt when he was in companie, he was alone, ſo little attention he gaue to any that ſpake vnto him: euen the colour and figure of his face began to receaue ſome alteration; which he ſhewed little to heede: but euerie morning earlie going abroad, either to the garden, or to ſome woods towards the deſert, it ſeemed his only comfort was to be without a cõforter. But long it could not be hid from *Palladius*, whom true loue made redy to marke, & long knowledge able to marke; & therfore being nowgrowẽ weary of his abode in *Arcadia*, hauing informed himſelfe fully of the ſtrength & riches of the coũtry, of the nature of the people, and manner of their lawes: and, ſeing

ſeing the courte could not be viſited, prohibited to all men,but to certaine ſheapheardiſh people,he greatly deſired a ſpeedy returne to his own countrie, after the many mazes of fortune he had troden.But perceauing this great alteration in his friend,he thought firſt to breake with him thereof, and then to haſten his returne; whereto he founde him but ſmally enclined: whereupon one day taking him alone with certaine graces and countenances, as if he were diſputing with the trees, began in this manner to ſay vnto him.

A mind wel trayned and long exerciſed in vertue(my 2
ſweete and worthy coſin)doth not eaſily chaunge any courſe it once vndertakes, but vpon well grounded & well wayed cauſes.For being witnes to it ſelfe of his owne inward good, it findes nothing without it of ſo high a price,for which it ſhould be altered. Euen the very countenaunce and behauiour of ſuch a man doth ſhew forth Images of the ſame conſtancy, by maintaining a right harmonie betwixt it and the inward good, in yeelding it ſelfe ſutable to the vertuous reſolution of the minde. This ſpeech I direct to you(noble friend *Pyrocles*)the excellencie of whoſe minde and well choſen courſe in vertue, if I doo not ſufficiently know, hauing ſeene ſuch rare demonſtrations of it, it is my weakenes,and not your vnworthines. But as in deede I know it, and knowing it,moſt dearely loue both it, and him that hath it; ſo muſt I needs ſaye, that ſince our late comming into this country, I haue marked in you, Iwill not ſay an alteratiō, but a relenting truely,& a ſlacking of the maine career,you had ſo notably begon,& almoſt performed

formed; and that in ſuch ſorte, as I cannot finde ſufficient reaſon in my great loue toward you how to allow it; for (to leaue of other ſecreter arguments which my acquaintaunce with you makes me eaſily finde) this in effect to any manne may be manyfeſt, that whereas you were wont in all places you came, to giue your ſelfe vehemently to the knowledge of thoſe thinges which might better your minde; to ſeeke the familiaritye of excellent men in learning and ſouldiery: and laſtly, to put all theſe thinges in practiſe both by continuall wiſe proceedinge, and worthie enterpriſes, as occaſion fell for them; you now leaue all theſe things vndone: you let your minde fal a ſleepe: beſide your countenaunce troubled (which ſurely comes not of vertue; for vertue like the cleare heauen, is without cloudes) and laſtly you ſubiect your ſelfe to ſolitarines, the ſlye enimie, that doth moſt ſeparate a man from well doing. *Pyrocles* minde was all this while ſo fixed vpon another deuotion, that he no more attentiuely marked his friends diſcourſe, then the childe that hath leaue to playe, markes the laſt part of his leſson; or the diligent Pilot in a daungerous tempeſt doth attend the vnſkilful words of a paſſinger: yet the very ſound hauing imprinted the general point of his ſpeech in his hart, pierced with any miſlike of ſo deerely an eſteemed friend, and deſirous by degrees to bring him to a gentler conſideration of him, with a ſhamefaſt looke (witneſſing he rather could not helpe, then did not know his fault) anſwered him to this purpoſe. Excellent *Muſidorus*, in the praiſe you gaue me in the beginning of your ſpech, I eaſily acknowledge the force of your good will vnto mee, for neither coulde

you

you haue thought ſo well of me, if extremitie of loue had not made your iudgement partiall, nor you could haue loued me ſo intierlie, if you had not beene apt to make ſo great (though vndeſerued) iudgements of me; and euen ſo muſt I ſay to thoſe imperfections, to which though I haue euer through weaknes been ſubiect, yet you by the daily mēding of your mind haue of late bin able to looke into them, which before you could not diſcerne; ſo that the chaunge you ſpeake of, falles not out by my impairing, but by your betring. And yet vnder the leaue of your better iudgement, I muſt needes ſay thus much, my deere coſin, that I find not my ſelfe wholye to be condemned, becauſe I do not with continuall vehemēcy folow thoſe knowledges, which you call the bettering of my minde; for both the minde it ſelfe muſt (like other thinges) ſometimes be vnbent, or elſe it will be either weakned, or broken: And theſe knowledges, as they are of good vſe, ſo are they not all the minde may ſtretch it ſelfe vnto: who knowes whether I feede not my minde with higher thoughts? Trulie as I know not all the particularities, ſo yet I ſee the bounds of all theſe knowledges: but the workings of the minde I finde much more infinite, then can be led vnto by the eye, or imagined by any, that diſtract their thoughts without themſelues. And in ſuch contemplation, or as I thinke more excellent, I enioye my ſolitarines; and my ſolitarines perchaunce is the nurſe of theſe contemplations. Eagles we ſee fly alone; and they are but ſheepe, which alvvaies heard together; cōdemne not therefore my minde ſomtime to enioy it ſelfe; nor blame not the taking of ſuch times as ſerue moſt fitte for it. And alas, deere *Muſidorus*, if I be ſadde,

vvho

who knowes better then you the iuſt cauſes I haue of ſadnes? And here *Pyrocles* ſodainly ſtopped, like a man vnſatiſfied in himſelfe, though his witte might wel haue ſerued to haue ſatiſfied another. And ſo looking with a countenaunce, as though he deſired he ſhould know his minde without hearing him ſpeake, and yet deſirous to ſpeake, to breath out ſome part of his inward cuill, ſending againe new blood to his face, he continued his ſpeach in this manner. And Lord (dere coſin, ſaid he) doth not the pleaſauntnes of this place carry in it ſelfe ſufficienr reward for any time loſt in it? Do you not ſee how all things conſpire together to make this coũtry a heauenly dwelling? Do you not ſee the graſſe how in colour they excell the Emeralds, euerie one ſtriuing to paſſe his fellow, and yet they are all kept of an equal height? And ſee you not the reſt of theſe beautifull flowers, each of which would require a mans wit to know, and his life to expreſſe? Do not theſe ſtately trees ſeeme to maintaine their floriſhing olde age with the onely happines of their ſeat, being clothed with a continuall ſpring, becauſe no beautie here ſhould euer fade? Doth not the aire breath health, which the Birds (delightfull both to eare and eye) do dayly ſolemnize with the ſweet cõſent of their voyces? Is not euery *eccho* therof a perfect Muſicke? and theſe freſh and delightful brookes how ſlowly they ſlide away, as loth to leaue the company of ſo many things vnited in perfection? and with how ſweete a murmure they lament their forced departure? Certainelie, certainely, coſin, it muſt needes be that ſome Goddeſſe enhabiteth this Region, who is the ſoule of this ſoile: for neither is any, leſſe then a Goddeſſe, worthie to be ſhrined in ſuch a heap of pleaſures: nor any leſſe thẽ a Goddeſſe, could

haue

haue made it ſo perfect a plotte of the celeſtiall dwellings. And ſo ended with a deep ſigh, rufully caſting his eye vpon *Muſidorus*, as more deſirous of pittie thē pleading. But *Muſidorus* had all this while helde his looke fixed vpon *Pyrocles* countenance; and with no leſſe louing attention marked how his words proceeded from him: but in both theſe he perceiued ſuch ſtrange diuerſities, that they rather increaſed new doubts, then gaue him ground to ſettle any iudgement: for, beſides his eyes ſometimes euen great with teares, the oft chāging of his colour, with a kind of ſhaking vnſtayednes ouer all his body, he might ſee in his countenāce ſ[illegible]reat determinatiō mixed with feare; and might p[illegible]e in him ſtore of thoughts, rather ſtirred then digeſted; his words interrupted continually with ſighes (which ſerued as a burthen to each ſentence) and the tenor of his ſpeech (though of his wōted phraſe) not knit together to one conſtāt end, but rather diſſolued in it ſelfe, as the vehemencie of the inwarde paſſion preuayled: which made *Muſidorus* frame his aunſwere neereſt to that humor, which ſhould ſooneſt put out the ſecret. For, hauing in the beginning of *Pyrocles* ſpeech which defēded his ſolitarines, framed in his minde a replie againſt it, in the praiſe of honourable action, in ſhewing that ſuch a kind of cōtēplatiō is but a glorious title to idlenes; that in actiō a man did not onely better himſelf, but benefit others; that the gods would not haue deliuered a ſoule into the body, which hath armes & legges, only inſtrumēts of doing, but that it wer intēded the mind ſhould imploy thē; & that the mind ſhould beſt know his own good or euill, by practiſe: which knowledge was the onely way to increaſe the one, and correct the other: beſides many other argumentes, which the plentifulneſſe of the matter yeelded to the ſharpnes of his wit.

When he found *Pyrocles* leaue that, and fall into ſuch an affected praiſing of the place, he left it likewiſe, and ioyned with him therein: becauſe he found him in that humor vtter more ſtore of paſſion; and euen thus kindly embraſing him, he ſaid: Your words are ſuch (noble couſin) ſo ſweetly and ſtrongly handled in the praiſe of ſolitarineſſe, as they would make me likewiſe yeeld my ſelfe vp into it, but that the ſame words make me know, it is more pleaſant to enioy the companie of him that can ſpeake ſuch words, then by ſuch wordes to be perſwaded to follow ſolitarines. And euen ſo doo I giue you leaue (ſweet *Pyrocles*) euer to defend ſolitarines; ſo long, as to defende it, you euer keep companie. But I maruell at the exceſſiue praiſes you giue to this countrie; in truth it is not vnpleaſant: but yet if you would returne into *Macedon*, you ſhould ſee either many heauens, or find this no more then earthly. And euē *Tempe* in my *Theſſalia*, (where you & I to my great happineſſe were brought vp together) is nothing inferiour vnto it. But I think you will make me ſee, that the vigor of your witte can ſhew it ſelfe in any ſubiect: or els you feede ſometimes your ſolitarines with the conceites of the Poets, whoſe liberall pennes can as eaſilie trauaile ouer mountaines, as molehils: and ſo like wel diſpoſed men, ſet vp euery thing to the higheſt note; eſpecially, when they put ſuch words in the mouths of one of theſe fantaſticall mind-infected people, that children & Muſitiās cal Louers. This word, Louer, did no leſſe pearce poore *Pyrocles*, then the right tune of muſicke toucheth him that is ſick of the *Tarantula*. There was not one part of his body, that did not feele a ſodaine motion, while his hart with panting, ſeemed to daunce to the ſounde of

that

that word; yet after ſome pauſe (lifting vp his eyes a litle from the ground, and yet not daring to place them in the eyes of *Muſidorus*) armed with the verie coũtenance of the poore priſoner at the barr, whoſe aunſwere is nothing but guiltie: with much a do he brought forth this queſtion. And alas, ſaide he, deare coſin, what if I be not ſo much the Poet (the freedome of whoſe penne canne exerciſe it ſelfe in any thing) as euen that miſerable ſubiect of his conning, whereof you ſpeake? Now the eternall Gods forbid (mainely cryed out *Muſidorus*) that euer my eare ſhould be poyſoned with ſo euill newes of you. O let me neuer know that any baſe affectiõ ſhuld get any Lordſhip in your thoughts. But as he was ſpeaking more, *Kalander* came, and brake of their diſcourſe, with inuiting thẽ to the hunting of a goodly ſtagge, which beeing harbored in a wood therby, he hoped would make them good ſporte, and driue away ſome part of *Daiphantus* melancholy. They condiſcended, & ſo going to their lodgings, furniſhed thẽ ſelues as liked them *Daiphantus* writing a fevv vvordes vvhich he left in a ſealed letter againſt their returne.

CHAP. 10.

'Kalanders *hunting*. ' Daiphantus *his cloſe departure*, ' *and letter* ' Palladius *his care, and* ' *queſt after him*, ' *accompanied with* Clitophon. ' *His finding and taking on* Amphialus *his armor* ' *Their encounter with Queene* Helens *attendants*. ' *Her miſtaking* Palladius.

THen went they together abroad, the good *Kalander* entertaining thẽ, with pleaſaunt diſcourſing, howe well he loued the ſporte of hunting vvhen he was a young man, hovv

how much in the compariſon thereof he diſdained all chamber delights ; that the Sunne (how great a iornie ſoeuer he had to make) could neuer preuent him with earlines,nor the Moone(with her ſober countenance) diſſwade him from watching till midnight for the deeres feeding. O,ſaide he, you vvill neuer liue to my age, vvithout you kepe your ſelues in breath vvith exerciſe,and in hart vvith ioyfullnes :too much thinking doth conſume the ſpirits:& oft it falles out,that vvhile one thinkes too much of his doing, he leaues to doe the effect of his thinking. Then ſpared he not to remember how much *Arcadia* was chaunged ſince his youth:actiuitie &good felowſhip being nothing in the price it was then held in,but according to the nature of the old growing world,ſtill worſe & worſe.Thē would he tell them ſtories of ſuch gallaunts as he had knowen: and ſo with pleaſant com pany beguiled the times haſt, and ſhortned the wayes length, till they came to the ſide of the wood, where the houndes were in couples ſtaying their comming,but with a whining Accent craуing libertie : many of them in colour and marks ſo reſembling , that it ſhowed they were of one kinde. The huntſmen handſomely attired in their greene liueries , as though they were children of Sommer, with ſtaues in their hands to beat the guiltleſſe earth, when the houndes were at a fault, and with hornes about their neckes to ſounde an alarum vpon a ſillie fugitiue . The houndes were ſtraight vncoupled, and ere long the Stagge thought it better to truſt the nimblenes of his feete, then to the ſlender fortification of his lodging: but euen his feete betrayed him;for howſoeuer they went, they themſelues vttered themſelues to the ſent of their enimies ; who one taking it of an other

other, and ſometimes beleeuing the windes aduertiſements, ſometimes the view of (their faithfull councellors) the huntſmen, with open mouthes then denounced warre, when the warre was alreadie begun. Their crie being compoſed of ſo well ſorted mouthes, that any man would perceiue therein ſome kind of proportion, but the skilfull woodmen did finde a muſick. Then delight and varietie of opinion drew the horſmen ſundrie wayes; yet cheering their houndes with voyce and horn, kept ſtill (as it were) together. The wood ſeemed to conſpire with them againſt his own citizens, diſperſing their noiſe through all his quarters; and euen the Nimph *Echo* left to bewayle the loſſe of *Narciſſus*, and became a hunter. But the Stagge was in the end ſo hotly purſued, that (leauing his flight) he was driuen to make courage of deſpaire; & ſo turning his head, made the hounds (with change of ſpeech) to teſtifie that he was at bay: as if from hotte purſuite of their enemie, they were ſodainly come to a parley.

But *Kalander* (by his skill of coaſting the Countrey) was among the firſt that came in to the beſiged Deere; whom when ſome of the younger ſort would haue killed with their ſwordes, he woulde not ſuffer: but with a Croſſebowe ſent a death to the poore beaſt, who with teares ſhewed the vnkindneſſe he tooke of mans crueltie.

But by the time that the whole companie was aſſembled, and that the Stagge had beſtowed himſelfe liberally among them that had killed him, *Daiphantus* was miſt, for whom *Palladius* carefully enquiring, no newes could be giuen him, but by one that ſayd, he thought 2

he

he was returned home; for that he markt him, in the chiefe of the hunting, take a by-way, which might lead to *Kalanders* houſe. That anſwer for the time ſatisfying, and they hauing perfourmed all dueties, as well for the Stagges funeral, as the hounds triumph, they returned: ſome talking of the fames of the Deeres bodie; ſome of the fairenes of his head; ſome of the hounds cunning; ſome of their ſpeed; and ſome of their cry: til comming home (about the time that the candle begins to inherit the Suns office) they found *Daiphantus* was not to bee found. Whereat *Palladius* greatly maruailing, and a day or two paſſing, while neither ſearch nor inquirie could help him to knowledge, at laſt he lighted vpon the letter, which *Pyrocles* had written before hee went a hunting, and left in his ſtudie among other of his writings. The letter was directed to *Palladius* himſelfe, and conteyned theſe words.

3 My onely friend, violence of loue leades me into ſuch a courſe, wherof your knowledge may much more vexe you, then help me. Therefore pardon my concealing it from you, ſince: if I wrong you, it is in reſpect I beare you. Returne into *Theſſalia*, I pray you, as full of good fortune, as I am of deſire: and if I liue, I will in ſhort time follow you; if I die, loue my memorie.

4 This was all, and this *Palladius* read twiſe or thriſe ouer. Ah (ſaid he) *Pyrocles*, vvhat meanes this alteratiõ? vvhat haue I deſerued of thee, to be thus baniſhed of thy counſels? Heretofore I haue accuſed the ſea, condemned the Pyrats, and hated my euill fortune, that depriued me of thee; But now thy ſelf is the ſea, vvhich drounes my comfort, thy ſelfe is the Pirat that robbes thy ſelfe of me: Thy ovvne vvill becomes my euill fortune

turne. Thē turned he his thoughts to al forms of ghesses that might light vpon the purpose and course of *Pyrocles*: for he was not so sure by his wordes, that it was loue, as he was doubtful where the loue was. One time he thought, some beautie in *Laconia* had layed hold of his eyes; an other time he feared, that it might be *Parthenias* excellencie, which had broken the bands of all former resolution. But the more he thought, the more he knew not what to thinke, armies of obiections rising against any accepted opinion.

Then as carefull he was what to doo himselfe: at length determined, neuer to leaue seeking him, till his search should be either by meeting accōplished, or by death ended. Therfore (for all the vnkindnesse bearing tender respect, that his friends secrete determination should be kept from any suspition in others) he went to *Kalander*, and told him, that he had receaued a message from his friend, by which he vnderstood he was gone backe againe into *Laconia*, about some matters greatly importing the poore men, whose protection he had vndertaken, and that it was in any sorte fit for him, to follow him, but in such priuate wise, as not to be knowne, and that therefore he would as then bid him farewell: arming him selfe in a blacke armour, as either a badge, or prognostication of his mind: and taking onely with him good store of monie, and a fewe choise iewels, leauing the greatest number of them, & most of his apparell with *Kalander*: which he did partly to giue the more cause to *Kalander* to expect their return, & so to be the lesse curiously inquisitiue after thē: and partly to leaue those honorable thankes vnto him, for his charge & kindnes, which he knew he would no other way receaue. The good old man hauing neither

ther reaſon to diſſuade, nor hope to perſuade, receaued the things, with mind of a keeper, not of an owner; but before he went, deſired he might haue the happines, fully to know what they were: which he ſaid, he had euer till then delaid, fearing to be any way importune: but now he could not be ſo much an enemie to his deſires as any longer to impriſon thē in ſilence. *Palladius* tolde him that the matter was not ſo ſecrete, but that ſo worthie a friend deſerued the knowledge, and ſhuld haue it as ſoone as he might ſpeak with his friēd: without whoſe conſent (becauſe their promiſe bound him otherwiſe) he could not reueale it: but bad him hold for moſt aſſured, that if they liued but a while, he ſhould find that they which bare the names of *Daiphātus* and *Palladius*, would giue him & his cauſe to thinke his noble courteſie wel imploied. *Kalāder* would preſſe him no further: but deſiring that he might haue leaue to go, or at leaſt to ſende his ſonne and ſeruaunts with him, *Palladius* brake of all ceremonies, by telling him; his caſe ſtood ſo, that his greateſt fauour ſhould be in making leſt adoo of his parting. Wherewith *Kalander* knowing it to be more cumber then courteſie, toſtriue, abſtained from further vrging him, but not from hartie mourning the loſſe of ſo ſweet a conuerſation.

Onely *Clitophon* by vehement importunitie obteyned to go with him, to come againe to *Daiphantus*, whom he named and accoūted his Lord. And in ſuch priuate guiſe departed *Palladius*, though hauing a companiō to talke with all, yet talking much more with vnkindneſſe. And firſt they went to *Mantinæa*; whereof becauſe *Parthenia* was, he ſuſpected there might be ſome cauſe of his abode. But finding there no newes of him he went to *Tegæa*, *Ripa*, *Eniſpæ*, *Stimphalus*, and *Pheneus*,

Pheneus, famous for the poiſonous *Stygian* water, and through all the reſt of *Arcadia*, making their eyes, their eares, and their tongue ſerue almoſt for nothing, but that enquirie. But they could know nothing but that in none of thoſe places he was knowne. And ſo went they, making one place ſucceed to an other, in like vncertaintie to their ſearch, manie times encountring ſtrange aduẽtures, worthy to be regiſtred in the roulles of fame; but this may not be omitted. As they paſt in a pleaſant valley, (of either ſide of which high hils lifted vp their beetle-browes, as if they would ouer looke the pleaſantnes of their vnder-proſpect) they were by the daintines of the place, & the wearines of thẽſelues, inuited to light frõ their horſes; & pulling of their bits, that they might ſomething refreſh their mouths vpon the graſſe (which plentifully grewe, brought vp vnder the care of thoſe wel ſhading trees,) they thẽſelues laid thẽ downe hard by the murmuring muſicke of certain waters, which ſpouted out of the ſide of the hils, and in the bottome of the valley, made of many ſprings a pretie brooke, like a common-wealth of many families: but when they had a while harkened to the perſuaſion of ſleepe, they roſe, and walkt onward in that ſhadie place, till *Clitiphon* eſpied a peece of armour, & not far of an other peece: and ſo the ſight of one peece teaching him to looke for more, he at length found all, with headpeece & ſhield, by the deuiſe whereof, which was he ſtreight knew it to be the armour of his couſin, the noble *Amphialus*. Wherupon (fearing ſome incõuenience hapned vnto him) he told both his doubte, and his cauſe of doubte to *Palladius*, who (conſidering therof) thought beſt to make no longer ſtay, but to follow on: leaſt perchance ſome violẽce 7

were offered to ſo worthy a Knight, whom the fame of the world ſeemed to ſet in ballance with any Knight liuing. Yet with a ſodaine conceipt, hauing long borne great honour to the name of *Amphialus*, *Palladius* thought beſt to take that armour, thinking thereby to learne by them that ſhould know that armour, ſome newes of *Amphialus*, & yet not hinder him in the ſearch of *Daiphantus* too. So he by the help of *Clitophon* quickly put on that armour, whereof there was no one piece wanting, though hacked in ſome places, bewraying ſome fight not long ſince paſſed. It was ſome-thing too great, but yet ſerued well enough.

8 And ſo getting on their horſes, they trauailed but a little way, when in opening of the mouth of the valley into a faire field, they met with a coach drawne with foure milke-white horſes, furniſhed all in blacke, with a black a more boy vpō euery horſe, they al apparelled in white, the coach it ſelf very richly furniſhed in black & white. But before they could come ſo neere as to diſcerne what was within, there came running vpō them aboue a doſen horſmen, who cried to thē to yeeld thēſelues priſoners, or els they ſhould die. But *Palladius* not accuſtomed to grant ouer the poſſeſſiō of him ſelf vpon ſo vniuſt titles, with ſword drawne gaue them ſo rude an anſwer, that diuers of thē neuer had breath to reply again: for being wel backt by *Clitophon*, & hauing an excellēt horſe vnder him, when he was ouerpreſt by ſome, he auoided them, and ere th'other thought of it, puniſhed in him his fellowes faults: and ſo, ether with cunning or with force, or rather with a cunning force, left none of them either liuing, or able to make his life ſerue to others hurt. Which being done, he approched the coach, aſſuring the black boies they ſhould haue no

hurt

hurt,who were els readie to haue run away, & looking into the coach, he foũd in the one end a Lady of great beautie, & ſuch a beautie, as ſhewed forth the beames both of wiſdome & good nature, but al as much darkened,as might be,with ſorow. In the other,two Ladies, (who by their demeanure ſhewed well, they were but her ſeruants) holding before them a picture; in which was a goodly Gẽtleman(whom he knew not)painted, hauing in their faces a certaine waiting ſorrow, their eies being infected with their miſtres weeping.

But the chiefe Ladie hauing not ſo much as once 9
heard the noiſe of this cõflict(ſo had ſorow cloſed vp al the entries of her mind,& loue tied her ſẽces to that beloued picture) now the ſhadow of him falling vpõ the picture made her caſt vp her eie, and ſeeing the armour which too wel ſhe knew,thinking him to be *Amphialus* the Lord of her deſires,(bloud cõming more freely into her cheekes,as though it would be bold,& yet there growing new againe pale for feare)with a pitiful looke (like one vniuſtly condẽned) My Lord *Amphialus*(ſaid ſhe)you haue enough puniſhed me:it is time for cruelty to leaue you,& euil fortune me;if not I pray you,(& to graunt,my praier fitter time nor place you can haue) accompliſh the one euen now,& finiſh the other. With that, ſorrow impatient to be ſlowly vttered in her oftẽ ſtaying ſpeeches,poured it ſelf ſo faſt in teares, that *Palladius* could not hold her longer in errour, but pulling of his helmet,Madame(ſaid he)I perceaue you miſtake me:I am a ſtranger in theſe parts,ſet vpon(without any cauſe giuẽ by me)by ſome of your ſeruants, whom becauſe I hauc in my iuſt defence euill entreated, I came to make my excuſe to you,whom ſeing ſuch as I doo,I find greater cauſe, why I ſhould craue pardon of you.

When ſhe ſaw his face, & heard his ſpeech, ſhe looked out of the coach, and ſeing her men, ſome ſlaine, ſome lying vnder their dead horſes, and ſtriuing to get from vnder them, without making more account of the matter, Truely (ſaid ſhe) they are well ſerued that durſt lift vp their armes againſt that armour. But Sir Knight, (ſaid ſhe) I pray you tell me, how come you by this armour? for if it be by the death of him that owed it, then haue I more to ſay vnto you. *Palladius* aſſured her it was not ſo; telling her the true manner how he found it. It is like enough (ſaid ſhe) for that agrees with the manner he hath lately vſed. But I beſeech you Sir (ſaid ſhe) ſince your prowes hath bereft me of my cõpany: let it yet ſo farre heale the woundes it ſelfe hath giuen, as to garde me to the next towne. How great ſo euer my buſineſſe be fayre Ladie (ſaid he) it ſhall willingly yeeld to ſo noble a cauſe: But firſt euen by the fauour you beare to the Lorde of this noble armour, I coniure you to tell me the ſtorie of your fortune herein, leſt hereafter when the image of ſo excellent a Ladie in ſo ſtraunge a plight come before mine eyes, I condemne my ſelfe of want of conſideration in not hauing demaunded thus much. Neither aske I it without proteſtation, that wherein my ſworde and faith may auaile you, they ſhall binde themſelues to your ſeruice. Your coniuration, fayre Knight (ſaid ſhe) is too ſtrong for my poore ſpirite to diſobey, and that ſhall make me (without any other hope, my ruine being but by one vnrelieueable) to graunt your wil herein: and to ſay the truth, a ſtraunge niceneſſe were it in me to refraine that from the eares of a perſon repreſenting ſo much worthineſſe, which I am glad euen to rockes and woods to vtter.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

The ſtory of Queene Helen ' Philoxenus *her ſuiter* ' Amphialus *an interceſſor for his fricnde.* ' *His praiſes,* ' *birth, and* ' *education.* ' *Her loue wonne to himſelfe* ' *His refuſall and departure* ' Philoxenus *wronge-rage againſt him.* '' *Their fight.* '' *The death of ſonne and father.* '' Amphialus *his ſorrow and deteſtation of the Queene.* '' *A new onſet on* Palladius *for* Amphialus *his Armour:* '' *whoſe griefe is amplified by meeting his dead frends dog.* '' Palladius *his parting with* Helen *and* Clitophon.

KNow you then that my name is *Helen*, Queene by birth: and hetherto poſſeſſion of the faire Citie and territorie of *Corinth*. I can ſay no more of my ſelfe, but beloued of my people: and may iuſtly ſay, beloued, ſince they are content to beare with my abſence, and folly. But I being left by my fathers death, and accepted by my people, in the higheſt degree, that countrie could receiue; aſſoone, or rather, before that my age was ripe for it; my court quickely ſwarmed full of ſuiters; ſome perchaunce louing my ſtate, others my perſon, but once I know all of them, howſoeuer my poſſeſſions were in their harts, my beauty (ſuch as it is) was in their mouthes; many ſtrangers of princely and noble blood, and all of mine owne country, to whom ether birth or vertue gaue courage to avowe ſo high a deſire.

2 Among the reſt, or rather before the reſt, was the Lord *Philoxenus*, ſonne and heire to the vertuous noble man *Timotheus*: which *Timotheus* was a man both in power, riches, parentage, and (which paſſed all theſe) goodnes, and (which followed all theſe) loue of the people, beyond any of the great men of my countrie. Now this ſonne of his I muſt ſay truly, not vnworthy of ſuch a father, bending himſelfe by all meanes of ſeruiſeablenes to mee, and ſetting foorth of himſelfe to win my fauour, wan thus farre of mee, that in truth I leſſe miſliked him then any of the reſt: which in ſome proportion my countenaunce deliuered vnto him. Though I muſt proteſt it was a verie falſe embaſſadour, if it deliuered at all any affection, whereof my hart was vtterly void, I as then eſteeming my ſelfe borne to rule, & thinking foule ſcorne willingly to ſubmit my ſelfe to be ruled.

3 But whiles *Philoxenus* in good ſorte purſued my fauour, and perchaunce nouriſhed himſelfe with ouer much hope, becauſe he found I did in ſome ſorte acknowledge his valew, one time among the reſt he brought with him a deare friend of his. With that ſhe loked vpon the picture before her, & ſtraight ſighed, & ſtraight teares followed, as if the Idol of dutie ought to be honoured with ſuch oblations, and thē her ſpeach ſtaied the tale, hauing brought her to that loke, but that looke hauing quite put her out of her tale. But *Palladius* greatly pitying ſo ſweete a ſorrow in a Ladie, whom by fame he had already knowen, and honoured, beſought her for her promiſe ſake, to put ſilence ſo longe vnto her moning, til ſhe had recounted the reſt of this ſtory.

4 Why ſaid ſhe, this is the picture of *Amphialus*: what neede I ſay more to you? what eare is ſo barbarous but

hath

hath hard of *Amphialus?* who follows deeds of Armes, but euery where findes monumẽt of *Amphialus?* who is courteous, noble, liberall, but he that hath the example before his eyes of *Amphialus?* where are all heroicall parts, but in *Amphialus?* O *Amphialus* I would thou were not so excellent, or I would I thought thee not so excellent, and yet would I not, that I would so: with that she wept againe, til he againe solliciting the conclusion of her story. Then must you (said she) know the story of *Amphialus*: for his will is my life, his life my history: and indeed, in what can I better employ my lippes, then in speaking of *Amphialus?*

This knight then whose figure you see, but whose 5
mind can be painted by nothing, but by the true shape of vertue, is brothers sonne to *Basilius* King of *Arcadia*, and in his childhood esteemed his heir: till *Basilius* in his olde yeeres marrying a young and a faire Lady, had of her those two daughters, so famous for their perfection in beauty: which put by their young cosin from that expectation. Whereupon his mother (a woman of a hauty hart, being daughter to the King of *Argos*, either disdaining, or fearing, that her sonne should liue vnder the power of *Basilius* sent him to that Lorde *Timotheus* (betwene whom and her dead husband ther had passed streight bands of mutuall hospitality to be brought vp in company with his sonne *Philoxenus*.

A happie resolution for *Amphialus*, whose excellent 6
nature was by this meanes trayned on with as good education, as any Princes sonne in the world could haue, which otherwise it is thought his mother (farre vnworthie of such a sonne) would not haue giuen him. The good *Timotheus*) no lesse louing him then

then his owne ſonne: well they grew in yeeres; and ſhortly occaſions fell aptly to tric *Amphialus*, and all occaſions were but ſteppes for him to clime fame by. Nothing was ſo hard, but his valour ouercame: which yet ſtill he ſo guided with true vertue, that although no man was in our parts ſpoken of but he, for his māhood, yet, as though therein he excelled him ſelfe, he was cō-monly called the courteous *Amphialus*. An endleſſe thing it were for me to tell, how many aduentures (terrible to be ſpoken of) he atchieued: what monſters, what Giants, what conqueſt of countries: ſometimes vſing policy, ſome times force, but alwaies vertue, well followed, and but followed by *Philoxenus*: betweene whom, and him, ſo faſt a friendſhip by education was knit, that at laſt *Philoxenus* hauing no greater matter to employ his frindſhip in, then to winne me, thercin deſired, and had his vttermoſt furtheraunce: to that purpoſe brought he him to my court, where truly I may iuſtly witnes with him, that what his wit could conceiue (and his wit can conceaue as far as the limits of reaſon ſtretch) was all directed to the ſetting forwarde the ſuite of his friend *Philoxenus:* my eares could heare nothing from him, but touching the worthines of *Philoxenus*, and of the great happines it would be vnto me to haue ſuch a husband: with many arguments, which God knowes, I cannot well remember becauſe I did not much beleeue.

7 For why ſhould I vſe many circūſtances to come to that where alredy I am, and euer while I liue muſt continue? In fewe wordes, while he pleaded for an other, he wanne me for himſelfe: if at leaſt (with that ſhe ſighed) he would account it a winning, for his fame had ſo framed the way to my mind, that his preſence

ſo

ſo full of beauty, ſweetnes, and noble conuerſation, had entred there before he vouchſafed to call for the keyes. O Lord, how did my ſoule hang at his lippes while he ſpake! O when he in feeling maner would deſcribe the loue of his frend, how well (thought I) dooth loue betweene thoſe lips! when he would with daintieſt eloquence ſtirre pitie in me toward *Philoxenus*, why ſure (ſaid I to my ſelfe) *Helen*, be not afraid, this hart cannot want pitie: and when he would extol the deeds of *Philoxenus*, who indeede had but waited of him therin, alas (thought I) good *Philoxenus*, how euil doth it become thy name to be ſubſcribed to his letter? What ſhould I ſay? nay, what ſhould I not ſay (noble knight) who am not aſhamed, nay am delighted, thus to expreſſe mine owne paſſions?

Dayes paſte; his eagernes for his friende neuer de- 8
creaſed, my affection to him euer increaſed. At length, in way of ordinarie courteſie, I obteined of him (who ſuſpected no ſuch matter) this his picture, the only *Amphialus*, I feare that I ſhall euer enioy: and growen bolder, or madder, or bould with madnes, I diſcouered my affection vnto him. But, Lord, I ſhall neuer forget, how anger and courteſie, at one inſtant appeared in his eyes, when he heard that motion: how with his bluſh he taught me ſhame. In ſumme, he left nothing vnaſſayed, which might diſgrace himſelfe, to grace his frēd; in ſweet termes making me receiue a moſt reſolute refuſal of himſelf. But when he found that his preſence did far more perſwade for himſelfe, then his ſpeeche could doo for his frend, he left my court: hoping, that forgetfulneſſe (which commonly waits vpon abſence) woulde make roome for his friende: to whome he woulde not vtter thus much (I thinke) for a kinde

feare

feare not to grieue him, or perchance (though he cares little for me) of a certaine honorable gratefulnes, nor yet to diſcourſe ſo much of my ſecrets: but as it ſhould ſeeme, meant to trauell into farre countreyes, vntill his friends affection either ceaſed, or preuayled.

9 But within a while, *Philoxenus* came to ſee how onward the fruites were of his friends labour, when (as in trueth I cared not much how he tooke it) he found me ſitting, beholding this picture, I know not with how affectionate countenãce, but I am ſure with a moſt affectionate mind. I ſtraight found ielouſie and diſdaine tooke hold of him: and yet the froward paine of mine owne harte made me ſo delight to puniſh him, whom I eſteemed the chiefeſt let in my way; that when he with humble geſture, and vehement ſpeeches, ſued for my fauor; I told him, that I would heare him more willingly, if he would ſpeake for *Amphialus*, as well as *Amphialus* had done for him: he neuer anſwered me, but pale and quaking, went ſtraight away; and ſtraight my heart miſgaue me ſome euill ſucceſſe: and yet though I had authoritie inough to haue ſtayed him (as in theſe fatall things it falles out, that the hie-working powers make ſecond cauſes vnwittingly acceſſarie to their determinations) I did no further but ſent a foot-man of mine (whoſe faithfulnes to me I well knew) from place to place to follow him, and bring me word of his proceedings: which (alas) haue brought foorth that which I feare I muſt euer rewe.

10 For he had trauailed ſcarſe a dayes iorney out of my Countrey, but that (not farre from this place) he ouertooke *Amphialus*, who (by ſuccouring a diſtreſſed Lady) had bene here ſtayed: and by and by called him to fight

fight with him, proteſting that one of thē two ſhould die: you may eaſily iudge how ſtraunge it was to *Amphialus*, whoſe hart could accuſe it ſelfe of no fault, but too much affection toward him, which he (refuſing to fight with him) would faine haue made *Philoxenus* vnderſtand, but (as my ſeruant ſince tolde me) the more *Amphialus* went back, the more he followed, calling him Traytor, and coward, yet neuer telling the cauſe of this ſtrange alteration. Ah *Philoxenus* (ſaide *Amphialus*) I know I am no Traytor, and thou well knoweſt I am no coward: but I pray thee content thy ſelfe with this much, and let this ſatisfie thee, that I loue thee, ſince I beare thus much of thee, but he leauing words drew his ſworde, and gaue *Amphialus* a great blow or two, which but for the goodnes of his armour would haue ſlaine him: and yet ſo farre did *Amphialus* containe himſelfe, ſtepping aſide, and ſaying to him, Well *Philoxenus*, and thus much villany am I content to put vp, not any longer for thy ſake (whom I haue no cauſe to loue, ſince thou doſt iniure me, and wilt not tell me the cauſe) but for thy vertuous fathers ſake, to whom I am ſo much bound. I pray thee goe away, and conquer thy owne paſſions, and thou ſhalt make me ſoone yeeld to be thy ſeruant.

But he would not attend his wordes, but ſtill ſtrake ſo fiercely at *Amphialus*, that in the end (nature preuailing aboue determination) he was faine to defend himſelfe, and with-all to offend him, that by an vnluckye blow the poore *Philoxenus* fell dead at his feete; hauing had time onely to ſpeake ſome wordes, whereby *Amphialus* knew it was for my ſake: which when *Amphialus*

phialus sawe, he forthwith gaue such tokens of true felt sorrow; that as my seruant said, no imagination could conceiue greater woe. But that by and by, an vnhappie occasion made *Amphialus* passe himselfe in sorrow: for *Philoxenus* was but newly dead, when there comes to the same place, the aged and vertuous *Timotheus*, who (hauing heard of his sonnes sodaine and passionate manner of parting from my Court) had followed him as speedily as he could; but alas not so speedily, but that he foũd him dead before he could ouer take him. Though my hart be nothing but a stage for Tragedies; yet I must confesse, it is euen vnable to beare the miserable representation thereof: knowing *Amphialus* and *Timotheus* as I haue done. Alas what sorrow, what amasement, what shame was in *Amphialus*, when he saw his deere foster father, find him the killer of his oncly sonne? In my hart I know, he wished mountaines had laine vpon him, to keepe him from that meeting. As for *Timotheus*, sorow of his sonne and (I thinke principally) vnkindnes of *Amphialus* so deuoured his vitall spirits that able to say no more but *Amphialus, Amphialus*, haue I? he sancke to the earth, and presently dyed.

12 But not my tongue though daily vsed to complaints; no nor if my hart (which is nothing but sorrow) were turned to tonges, durst it vnder-take to shew the vnspeakeablenes of his griefe. But (because this serues to make you know my fortune,) he threw away his armour, euen this which you haue now vpon you, which at the first sight I vainely hoped, he had put on againe; and thẽ (as ashamed of the light) he ranne into the thickest of the woods, lamẽting, & euen crying out so pitifully, that my seruant, (though of a fortune not

not vſed to much tendernes) could not refraine weeping when he tolde it me. He once ouertooke him, but *Amphialus* drawing his ſword, which was the only part of his armes (God knowes to what purpoſe) he caried about him, threatned to kill him if he folowed him, and withall, bad him deliuer this bitter meſſage, that he wel inough foũd, I was the cauſe of al this miſchiefe: & that if I were a man, he would go ouer the world to kill me: but bad me aſſure my ſelfe, that of all creatures in the world, he moſt hated me. Ah Sir knight (whoſe eares I think by this time are tyred with the rugged wayes of theſe misfortunes) now way my caſe, if at leſt you know what loue is. For this cauſe haue I left my country, putting in hazard how my people wil in time deale by me, aduẽturing what perils or diſhonors might enſue, only to folow him, who proclaimeth hate againſt me, and to bring my neck vnto him, if that may redeem my treſpas & aſſuage his fury. And now ſir (ſaid ſhe) you haue your requeſt, I pray you take paines to guide me to the next town, that there I may gather ſuch of my company againe, as your valor hath left me. *Palladius* willingly cõdiſcẽded: but ere they began to go, there cam *Clitophon*, who hauing bene ſomething hurt by one of them, had purſued him a good way: at length ouertaking him, & ready to kill him, vnderſtood they were ſeruants to the faire Queene *Helen*, and that the cauſe of this enterpriſe was for nothing, but to make *Amphialus* priſoner, whõ they knew their miſtreſſe ſought; for ſhe concealed her ſorow, nor cauſe of her ſorow from no body.

But *Clitophon* (very ſorie for this accident) came back 13
to comfort the Queene, helping ſuch as were hurt, in the beſt ſort that he could, & framing frẽdly cõſtructiõs

of

of this raſhly vndertaken enmitie, when in comes another (till that time vnſeene) all armed, with his beuer downe, who firſt looking round about vpon the companie, as ſoone as he ſpied *Palladius*, he drew his ſword, and making no other prologue, let flie at him. But *Palladius* (ſorie for ſo much harm as had alredy happened) ſought rather to retire, and warde, thinking he might be ſome one that belonged to the faire Queene, whoſe caſe in his harte he pitied. Which *Clitophon* ſeeing, ſtept betweene them, asking the new come knight the cauſe of his quarrell; who anſwered him, that he woulde kill that theefe, who had ſtollen away his maſters armour, if he did not reſtore it. With that *Palladius* lookt vpon him, and ſawe that he of the other ſide had *Palladius* owne armour vpon him: truely (ſaid *Palladius*) if I haue ſtolne this armour, you did not buy that: but you ſhall not fight with me vpon ſuch a quarrell, you ſhall haue this armour willingly, which I did onely put on to doo honor to the owner. But *Clitophon* ſtraight knewe by his words and voyce, that it was *Iſmenus*, the faithfull & diligent Page of *Amphialus*: and therefore telling him that he was *Clitophon*, and willing him to acknowledge his error to the other, who deſerued all honour, the yong Geutleman pulled of his head-peece, and (lighting) went to kiſſe *Palladius* hands; deſiring him to pardon his follie, cauſed by extreame griefe, which eaſilie might bring foorth anger. Sweete Gentleman (ſaide *Palladius*) you ſhall onely make me this amendes, that you ſhal cary this your Lords armour from me to him, and tell him from an vnknowen knight (who admires his worthines) that he cannot caſt a greater miſte ouer his glory, thē by being vnkind to ſo excellēt a princeſſe

as

as this Queene is. *Ismenus* promiſed he would, as ſoone as he durſt find his maiſter: and with that went to doo his dutie to the Queene, whom in all theſe encounters aſtoniſhment made hardy; but aſſoone as ſhe ſaw *Ismenus* (looking to her picture) *Ismenus* (ſaid ſhe) here is my Lord, where is yours? or come you to bring me ſome ſentence of death from him? if it be ſo, welcome be it. I pray you ſpeake; and ſpeake quickly. Alas Madame, ſaid *Ismenus*, I haue loſt my Lorde, (with that teares came vnto his eyes) for aſſoone as the vnhappie combate was concluded with the death both of father and ſonne, my maiſter caſting of his armour, went his way: forbidding me vpō paine of death to follow him.

Yet diuers daies I followed his ſteppes; till laſtly I found him, hauing newly met with an excellent Spaniel, belonging to his dead companion *Philoxenus*. The dog ſtreight fawned on my maſter for old knowledge: but neuer was there thing more pittifull then to heare my maiſter blame the dog for louing his maiſters murtherer, renewing a freſh his cōplaints, with the dumbe counceller, as if they might cōfort one another in their miſeries. But my Lord hauing ſpied me, raſe vp in ſuch rage, that in truth I feared he would kill me: yet as then he ſaid onely, if I would not diſpleaſe him, I ſhould not come neere him till he ſent for me: too hard a cōmaundement for me to diſobey: I yeelded, leauing him onely waited on by his dog, and as I thinke ſeeking out the moſt ſolitarie places, that this or any other country can graunt him: and I returning where I had left his armour, found an other in ſteed thereof, & (diſdaining I muſt confeſſe that any ſhould beare the armour of the beſt Knight liuing) armed my ſelfe therein to play the 14

foole,as euē now I did. Faire *Ismenus* (said the Queen) a fitter messenger could hardly be to vnfold my Tragedie: I see the end,I see my ende.

15 With that (sobbing) she desired to be conducted to the next towne, where *Palladius* left her to be waited on by *Clitophon*, at *Palladius* earnest entreatie, who desired alone to take that melancholy course of seeking his friend: & therefore changing armours again with *Ismenus* (who went withal to a castle belonging to his master) he cōtinued his quest for his friend *Daiphantus*.

CHAP. 12.

¹ Palladius after long search of Daiphantus, *lighteth on an* Amazon *Ladie. ² Her habite, ³ song, ⁴ and who she was. ⁵ Obiections of the one against women, and loue of them. ⁶ The answeres of the other for them both. ⁷ Their passionate conclusion in relenting kindnesse.*

1 SO directed he his course to *Laconia*, aswell among the *Helots*, as *Spartans*. There indeed he found his fame flourishing, his monument engraued in Marble, and yet more durable in mens memories; but the vniuersall lamenting his absented presence, assured him of his present absence. Thence into the *Elean* prouince, to see whether at the Olympian games (there celebrated) he might in such concourse blesse his eyes with so desired an encounter: but that huge and sportfull assemblie grewe to him a tedious lonelinesse, esteeming

ming no bodie founde, ſince *Daiphantus* was loſt. Afterward he paſſed through *Achaia* and *Sicyonia*, to the *Corinthians*, prowde of their two Seas, to learne whether by the ſtreight of that *Iſthus*, it was poſſible to know of his paſſage. But finding euerie place more dumbe then other to his demaunds, and remembring that it was late-taken loue, which had wrought this new courſe, he returned againe (after two months trauaile in vaine) to make freſhe ſearche in *Arcadia*; ſo much the more, as then firſt he bethought him ſelfe of the picture of *Philoclea* (in reſembling her he had once loued) might perhaps awake againe that ſleeping paſſion. And hauing alreadie paſt ouer the greateſt part of *Arcadia*, one day comming vnder the ſide of the pleaſaunt mountaine *Mænalus*, his horſe (nothing guiltie of his inquiſitiueneſſe) with flattering taught him, that diſcrete ſtayes make ſpeedie iourneis. And therefore lighting downe, and vnbrideling his horſe, he him ſelfe went to repoſe him ſelfe in a little wood he ſawe thereby. Where lying vnder the protection of a ſhadie tree, with intention to make forgetting ſleepe comfort a ſorrowfull memorie, he ſawe a ſight which perſwaded, and obteyned of his eyes, that they would abide yet a while open. It was the appearing of a Ladie, who becauſe ſhe walked with her ſide toward him, he could not perfectly ſee her face; but ſo much he might ſee of her, that was a ſuretie for the reſt, that all was excellent.

Well might he perceaue the hanging of her haire in faireſt quãtitie, in locks, ſome curled, & ſome as it were forgotten, with ſuch a careleſſe care, & an arte ſo hiding arte, that ſhe ſeemed ſhe would lay them for a paterne, 2

whether nature ſimply, or nature helped by cunning, be more excellent: the reſt whereof was drawne into a coronet of golde richly ſet with pearle, and ſo ioyned all ouer with gold wiers, and couered with feathers of diuers colours, that it was not vnlike to an helmet, ſuch a glittering ſhew it bare, & ſo brauely it was held vp frō the head. Vpon her bodie ſhe ware a doublet of skie colour ſattin, couered with plates of gold, & as it were nailed with pretious ſtones, that in it ſhe might ſeeme armed; the nether parts of her garment was ſo full of ſtuffe, & cut after ſuch a faſhion, that though the length of it reached to the ankles, yet in her going one might ſometimes diſcerne the ſmal of her leg, which with the foot was dreſſed in a ſhort paire of crimſon veluet buſkins, in ſome places open (as the ancient manner was) to ſhew the fairenes of the skin. Ouer all this ſhe ware a certaine mantell, made in ſuch manner, that comming vnder the right arme, and couering moſt of that ſide, it had no faſtning of the left ſide, but onely vpon the top of the ſhoulder: where the two endes met, and were cloſed together with a very riche iewell: the deuiſe wherof (as he after ſaw) was this: a *Hercules* made in little fourme, but a diſtaffe ſet within his hand as he once was by *Omphales* commaundement with a worde in Grecke, but thus to be interpreted, *Neuer more valiant*. On the ſame ſide, on her thigh ſhee ware a ſword, which as it witneſſed her to be an *Amazon*, or one following that profeſſion, ſo it ſeemed but a needles weapon, ſince her other forces were without withſtanding. But this Ladie walked out-right, till he might ſee her enter into a fine cloſe arbour: it was of trees whoſe branches ſo louingly interlaced one the other,

that

that it could reſiſt the ſtrõgeſt violence of eye-ſight; but ſhe went into it by a doore ſhe opened; which moued him as warely as he could to follow her, and by and by he might heare her ſing this ſong, with a voice no leſſe beautifull to his eares, then her goodlineſſe was full of harmonic to his eyes.

TRansformd in ſhew, but more transformd in minde, 3
I ceaſe to ſtriue with double conqueſt foild:
For (woe is me) my powers all I finde
With outward force, and inward treaſon ſpoild.

For from without came to mine eyes the blowe,
Whereto mine inward thoughts did faintly yeeld;
Both theſe conſpird poore Reaſons ouerthrowe;
Falſe in my ſelfe, thus haue I loſt the field.

Thus are my eyes ſtill Captiue to one ſight:
Thus all my thoughts are ſlaues to one thought ſtill:
Thus Reaſon to his ſeruants yeelds his right;
Thus is my power transformed to your will.
What maruaile then I take a womans hew,
Since what I ſee, thinke, know is all but you?

The dittie gaue him ſome ſuſpition, but the voice 4
gaue him almoſt aſſurance, who the ſinger was. And therefore boldly thruſting open the dore, and entring into the arbour, he perceaued in deed that it was *Pyrocles* thus diſguiſed, wherewith not receauing ſo much ioy to haue found him, as griefe ſo to haue found him, amazedly looking vpon him (as *Apollo* is painted when he ſaw *Daphne* ſodainly turned into a Laurell) he was

not able to bring forth a worde. So that *Pyrocles* (who had as much ſhame, as *Muſidorus* had ſorrow) riſing to him, would haue formed a ſubſtantiall excuſe; but his inſinuation being of bluſhinge, and his diuiſion of ſighes, his whole oration ſtood vpon a ſhort narration, what was the cauſer of this Metamorphoſis? But by that time *Muſidorus* had gathered his ſpirites together, and yet caſting a gaſtfull countenaunce vpon him (as if he would coniure ſome ſtrange ſpirits) he thus ſpake vnto him.

5 And is it poſſible, that this is *Pyrocles*, the onely yong Prince in the world, formed by nature, and framed by education, to the true exerciſe of vertue? or is it indeed ſome *Amazon* that hath counterfeited the face of my friend, in this ſort to vexe me? for likelier ſure I would haue thought it, that any outwarde face might haue bene diſguiſed, then that the face of ſo excellēt a mind coulde haue bene thus blemiſhed. O ſweete *Pyrocles*, ſeparate your ſelfe a little (if it be poſſible) from your ſelfe, and let your owne minde looke vpon your owne proccedings: ſo ſhall my wordes be needleſſe, and you beſt inſtructed. See with your ſelfe, how fitt it will be for you in this your tender youth, borne ſo great a Prince, and of ſo rare, not onely expectation, but proofe, deſired of your olde Father, and wanted of your natiue countrie, now ſo neere your home, to diuert your thoughts from the way of goodneſſe; to looſe, nay to abuſe your time. Laſtly to ouerthrow all the excellent things you haue done, which haue filled the world with your fame; as if you ſhould drowne your ſhip in the long deſired hauen, or like an ill player, ſhould marre the laſt act of his Tragedie.

Remem-

Remember(for I know you know it) that if we wil be men, the reaſonable parte of our ſoule, is to haue abſolute commaundement; againſt which if any ſenſuall weaknes ariſe, we are to yeelde all our ſounde forces to the ouerthrowing of ſo vnnaturall a rebellion, wherein how can we wante courage, ſince we are to deale againſt ſo weake an aduerſary, that in it ſelfe is nothinge but weakeneſſe? Nay we are to reſolue, that if reaſon direct it, we muſt doo it, and if we muſt doo it, we will doo it; for to ſay I cannot, is childiſh, and I will not, womaniſh. And ſee how extremely euery waye you endaunger your minde; for to take this womanniſh habit (without you frame your behauiour accordingly) is wholy vaine: your behauiour can neuer come kindely from you, but as the minde is proportioned vnto it. So that you muſt reſolue, if you will playe your parte to any purpoſe, whatſoeuer peeuiſh affections are in that ſexe, ſoften your hart to receiue them, the very firſt downe-ſteppe to all wickednes: for doo not deceiue your ſelfe, my deere coſin, there is no man ſodainely excellentlie good, or extremely euill, but growes either as hee holdes himſelfe vp in vertue, or lets himſelf ſlide to vitiouſnes. And let vs ſee, what power is the auc̃thor of all theſe troubles: forſooth loue, loue, a paſſion, and the baſeſt and fruitleſſeſt of all paſſions: feare breedeth wit, Anger is the cradle of courage: ioy openeth and enhableth the hart: ſorrow, as it cloſeth, ſo it draweth it inwarde to looke to the correcting of it ſelfe; and ſo all generally haue power towards ſome good by the direction of right Reaſon. But this baſtarde Loue (for in deede the name of Loue is moſt vnworthylie

applie to ſo hatefull a humour) as it is engendered betwixt luſt and idlenes; as the matter it workes vpon is nothing, but a certaine baſe weakenes, which ſome gentle fooles call a gentle hart; as his adioyned companions be vnquietnes, longings, fond comforts, faint diſcomforts, hopes, ieloufies, vngrounded rages, cauſleſſe yeeldings; ſo is the hieſt ende it aſpires vnto, a litle pleaſure with much paine before, and great repentaunce after. But that end how endleſſe it runs to infinite euils, were fit inough for the matter we ſpeake of, but not for your eares, in whome indeede there is ſo much true diſpoſition to vertue: yet thus much of his worthie effects in your ſelfe is to be ſeen, that (beſides your breaking lawes of hoſpitality with *Kalander* and of friendſhip with me) it vtterly ſubuerts the courſe of nature, in making reaſon giue place to ſenſe, & man to woman. And truely I thinke heere-vpon it firſt gatte the name of Loue: for indeede the true loue hath that excellent nature in it, that it doth transform the very eſſence of the louer into the thing loued, vniting, and as it were incorporating it with a ſecret & inward working. And herein do theſe kindes of loue imitate the excellent; for as the loue of heauen makes one heauenly, the loue of vertue, vertuous; ſo doth the loue of the world make one become worldly, and this effeminate loue of a woman, doth ſo womaniſh a man, that (if he yeeld to it) it will not onely make him an *Amazon*; but a launder, a diſtaff-ſpinner; or what ſo euer other vile occupation their idle heads cā imagin, & their weake hands performe. Therefore (to trouble you no longer with my tedious but louing words) if either you remember what you are, what you haue bene, or what

what you muſt be: if you cõſider what it is, that moued you, or by what kinde of creature you are moued, you ſhall finde the cauſe ſo ſmall, the effect ſo daungerous, your ſelfe ſo vnworthie to runne into the one, or to be driuẽ by the other, that I doubt not I ſhall quickly haue occaſion rather to praiſe you for hauing conquered it, then to giue you further counſell, how to doo it.

But in *Pyrocles* this ſpeech wrought no more, but 6
that he, who before he was eſpied, was afraid; after, being perceiued, was aſhamed, now being hardly rubd vpon, lefte both feare and ſhame, and was moued to anger. But the exceeding good will he bare to *Muſidorus* ſtriuing with it, he thus, partely to ſatisfie him, but principally to looſe the reines to his owne motions, made him anſwere. Coſin, whatſouer good diſpoſition nature hath beſtowed vpon me, or howſoeuer that diſpoſition hath bene by bringing vp cõfirmed, this muſt I confeſſe, that I am not yet come to that degree of wiſdome, to thinke light of the ſexe, of whom I haue my life; ſince if I be any thing (which your friendſhip rather finds, thẽ I acknowledge) I was to come to it, born of a womã, & nurſed of a womã. And certẽly (for this point of your ſpeach doth neereſt touch me) it is ſtrãge to ſee the vnman-like cruelty of mãkind; who not cõtent with their tyrãnous ãbition, to haue brought the others vertuous patience vnder them (like to childiſh maiſters) thinke their maſterhood nothing, without doing iniury to them, who (if we will argue by reaſon) are framed of nature with the ſame parts of the minde for the exerciſe of vertue, as we are. And for example, euen this eſtate of *Amazons*, (which I now for my greateſt honor do ſeek to counterfaite) doth well witnes, that if generally the ſwetnes of their diſpoſitiõs did not make them

them ſee the vainneſſe of theſe thinges, which we accõpt glorious, they nether want valor of mind, nor yet doth their fairnes take away their force. And truely we men, and praiſers of men, ſhould remember, that if we haue ſuch excellẽcies, it is reaſon to thinke them excellent creatures, of whom we are: ſince a Kite neuer brought forth a good flying Hauke. But to tel you true, as I thinke it ſuperfluous to vſe any wordes of ſuch a ſubiect, which is ſo praiſed in it ſelfe, as it needes no praiſes; ſo withall I feare leſt my conceate (not able to reach vnto them) bring forth wordes, which for their vnworthines may be a diſgrace vnto thẽ I ſo inwardly honor. Let this ſuffice, that they are capable of vertue: & vertue (ye your ſelues ſay) is to be loued, & I too truly: but this I willingly cõfeſſe, that it likes me much better, when I finde vertue in a faire lodging, then when I am bound to ſeeke it in an ill fauoured creature, like a pearle in a dounghill. As for my fault of being an vnciuill gueſt to *Kalander*, if you could feele what an inward gueſt my ſelfe am hoſt vnto: ye would thinke it very excuſeable, in that I rather performe the dueties of an hoſt, then the ceremonies of a gueſt. And for my breaking the lawes of friendſhippe with you, (which I would rather dye, then effectually doo) truely, I could finde in my hart tò aske you pardon for it, but that your handling of me giues me reaſon to my former dealing. And here *Pyrocles* ſtayed, as to breath himſelfe, hauing bene tranſported with a litle vehemency, becauſe it ſeemed him *Muſidorus* had ouer-bitterly glaunſed againſt the reputation of woman-kinde: but then quieting his countenance (aſwell as out of an vnquiet mind it might be) he thus proceeded on: And poore

Loue

Loue (ſaid he) deare coſin, is little beholding vnto you, ſince you are not contented to ſpoile it of the honor of the higheſt power of the mind, which notable mē haue attributed vnto it; but ye deiect it below all other paſſions, in trueth ſomewhat ſtrangely; ſince, if loue receiue any diſgrace, it is by the company of theſe paſſions you preferre before it. For thoſe kinds of bitter obiections (as, that luſt, idlenes, and a weak harte, ſhoulde be, as it were, the matter and forme of loue) rather touch me, deare *Muſidorus*, then loue: But I am good witneſſe of mine own imperfections, & therefore will not defende my ſelfe: but herein I muſt ſay, you deale contrary to your ſelf: for if I be ſo weak, then can you not with reaſon ſtir me vp as ye did, by remēbrance of my own vertue: or if indeed I be vertuous, thē muſt ye cōfeſſe, that loue hath his working in a vertuous hart: & ſo no dout hath it, whatſoeuer I be: for if we loue vertue, in whom ſhal we loue it but in a vertuous creature? without your meaning be, I ſhould loue this word *vertue*, where I ſee it written in a book. Thoſe trobleſome effects you ſay it breedes, be not the faults of loue, but of him that loues; as an vnable veſſel to beare ſuch a licour: like euill eyes, not able to look on the Sun; or like an ill braine, ſooneſt ouerthrowē with beſt wine. Euen that heauenly loue you ſpeake of, is accōpanied in ſome harts with hopes, griefs, longings, & diſpaires. And in that heauēly loue, ſince ther are two parts, the one the loue it ſelf, th'other the excellency of the thing loued; I, not able at the firſt leap to frame both in me, do now (like a diligent workman) make ready the chiefe inſtrument, and firſt part of that great worke, which is loue it ſelf; which whē I haue a while practiſed in this ſort, then you ſhall ſee me turn

it

it to greater matters. And thus gently you may (if it pleaſe you) think of me. Neither doubt ye, becauſe I weare a womans apparell, I will be the more womanniſh, ſince, I aſſure you (for all my apparrel) there is nothing I deſire more, then fully to proue my ſelfe a man in this enterpriſe. Much might be ſaid in my defence, much more for loue, and moſt of all for that diuine creature, which hath ioyned me and loue together. But theſe diſputations are fitter for quiet ſchooles, then my troubled braines, which are bent rather in deeds to performe, then in wordes to defende the noble deſire which poſſeſſeth me. O Lord (ſaide *Muſidorus*) how ſharp-witted you are to hurt your ſelfe? No (anſwered he) but it is the hurt you ſpeake of, which makes me ſo ſharp-witted. Euen ſo (ſaid *Muſidorus*) as euery baſe occupation makes one ſharp in that practiſe, and fooliſh in all the reſt. Nay rather (anſwered *Pyrocles*) as each excellent thing once well learned, ſerues for a meaſure of all other knowledges. And is that become (ſaid *Muſidorus*) a meaſure for other things, which neuer receiued meaſure in it ſelfe? It is counted without meaſure (anſwered *Pyrocles*,) becauſe the workings of it are without meaſure: but otherwiſe, in nature it hath meaſure, ſince it hath an end allotted vnto it. The beginning being ſo excellent, I would gladly know the end. Enioying, anſwered *Pyrocles*, with a great ſigh. O (ſaid *Muſidorus*) now ſet ye foorth the baſenes of it: ſince if it ende in enioying, it ſhewes all the reſt was nothing. Ye miſtake me (anſwered *Pyrocles*) I ſpake of the end to which it is directed; which end ends not, no ſooner then the life. Alas, let your owne braine diſ-enchaunt you (ſaid *Muſidorus*.) My hart is too farre poſſeſſed (ſaid *Pyrocles*.)

But

But the head giues you direction. And the hart giues me life; aunſwered *Pyrocles.*

But *Muſidorus* was ſo greeued to ſee his welbeloued 7
friend obſtinat, as he thought, to his owne deſtruction, that it forced him with more then accuſtomed vehemency, to ſpeake theſe words; Well, well, (ſaide he) you liſt to abuſe your ſelfe; it was a very white and red vertue, which you could pick out of a painterly gloſſe of a viſage: Confeſſe the truth; and ye ſhall finde, the vtmoſt was but beautie; a thing, which though it be in as great excellencye in your ſelfe as may be in any, yet I am ſure you make no further reckning of it, then of an outward fading benefite Nature beſtowed vpon you. And yet ſuch is your want of a true grounded vertue, which muſt be like it ſelfe in all points, that what you wiſely account a trifle in your ſelfe, you fondly become a ſlaue vnto in another. For my part I now proteſt, I haue left nothing vnſaid, which my wit could make me know, or my moſt entier friendſhip to you requires of me; I do now beſech you euen for the loue betwixt vs (if this other loue haue left any in you towards me) and for the remembraunce of your olde careful father (if you can remēber him that forget your ſelf) laſtly for *Pyrocles* owne ſake (who is now vpon the point of falling or riſing) to purge your ſelfe of this vile infection; other wiſe giue me leaue, to leaue of this name of friendſhp, as an idle title of a thing which cannot be, where vertue is aboliſhed. The length of theſe ſpeaches before had not ſo much cloied *Pyrocles*, though he were very vnpatient of long deliberations, as the laſt farewel of him he loued as his owne life, did wound his ſoule, thinking him ſelfe afflicted, he was the apter to conceiue

ceiue vnkindneſſe deepely: inſomuch, that ſhaking his head, and deliuering ſome ſhewe of teares, he thus vttered his griefes. Alas (ſaid he) prince *Muſidorus*, how cruelly you deale with me; if you ſeeke the victory, take it; and if ye liſt, the triumph; haue you all the reaſon of the world, and with me remaine all the imperfections; yet ſuch as I can no more lay from me, then the Crow can be perſwaded by the Swanne to caſt of all his black fethers. But truely you deale with me like a Phiſition, that ſeeing his patient in a peſtilent feuer, ſhould chide him, in ſteede of miniſtring helpe, and bid him be ſick no more; or rather like ſuch a friend, that viſiting his friend condemned to perpetuall priſon; and loaden with greeuous fetters, ſhould will him to ſhake of his fetters, or he wuld leaue him. I am ſicke, & ſicke to the death; I am a priſoner, neither is any redreſſe, but by her to whom I am ſlaue. Now if you liſt to leaue him that loues you in the hieſt degree: But remember euer to cary this with you, that you abandon your friend in his greateſt extremity.

And herewith the deepe wound of his loue being rubbed afreſh with this new vnkindnes, begā (as it were) to bled againe, in ſuch ſort that he was not hable to beare it any longer, but guſhing out aboundance of teares, and croſſing his armes ouer his woefull hart, as if his teares had beene out-flowing blood, his armes an ouer-preſſing burthen, he ſuncke downe to the ground, which ſodaine traunce went ſo to the hart of *Muſidorus*, that falling down by him & kiſſing the weping eyes of his friend, he beſought him not to make account of his ſpeach; which if it had bene ouer vehement

ment, yet was it to be borne withall, becauſe it came out of a loue much more vehement; that he had not thought fancie could haue receiued ſo deep a wound: but now finding in him the force of it, hee woulde no further contrary it; but imploy all his ſeruice to medicine it, in ſuch ſort, as the nature of it required. But euen this kindnes made *Pyrocles* the more melte in the former vnkindnes, which his manlike teares well ſhewed, with a ſilent look vpō *Muſidorus*, as who ſhould ſay, And is it poſſible that *Muſidorus* ſhould threaten to leaue me? And this ſtrooke *Muſidorus* minde and ſenſes ſo dumbe too, that for griefe being not able to ſay any thing, they reſted, with their eyes placed one vpon another, in ſuch ſort, as might well paint out the true paſſion of vnkindnes to be neuer aright, but betwixt them that moſt dearely loue.

And thus remayned they a time; till at length, *Muſidorus* embraſing him, ſaid, And will you thus ſhake of your friend? It is you that ſhake me of (ſaide *Pyrocles*) being for my vnperfectnes vnworthie of your friendſhippe. But this (ſaid *Muſidorus*) ſhewes you more vnperfect, to be cruell to him, that ſubmits himſelfe vnto you; but ſince you are vnperfect (ſaid he ſmiling) it is reaſon you be gouerned by vs wiſe and perfect men. And that authoritie will I beginne to take vpon me, with three abſolute cōmandements: The firſt, that you increaſe not your euill with further griefes: the ſecond, that you loue her with all the powers of your mind: & the laſt cōmandemēt ſhalbe, ye cōmand me to do what ſeruice I can, towards the attaining of your deſires. *Pyrocles* hart was not ſo oppreſſed with the mighty paſſiōs

of

of loue and vnkindnes, but that it yeelded to ſome mirth at this commaundement of *Muſidorus*, that he ſhould loue: ſo that ſomething cleering his face from his former ſhewes of griefe; Wel (ſaid he) deare couſin, I ſee by the well chooſing of your commandementes, that you are fitter to be a Prince, then a Counſeller: and therfore I am reſolued to imploy all my endeuour to obey you; with this condition, that the comandementes ye commaund me to lay vpon you, ſhall onely be, that you continue to loue me, and looke vpon my imperfections, with more affection then iudgemēt. Loue you? (ſaid he) alas, how can my hart be ſeperated from the true imbraſing of it, without it burſt, by being too full of it? But (ſaid he) let vs leaue of theſe flowers of newe begun frendſhip: and now I pray you againe tel me; but tell it me fully, omitting no circumſtance, the ſtorie of your affections both beginning, and proceeding: aſſuring your ſelfe, that there is nothing ſo great, which I will feare to doo for you: nor nothing ſo ſmall, which I will diſdaine to doo for you. Let me therfore receiue a cleere vnderſtāding, which many times we miſſe, while thoſe things we account ſmall, as a ſpeech, or a look are omitted, like as a whole ſentence may faile of his congruitie, by wanting one particle. Therefore betweene frends, all muſt be layd open, nothing being ſuperfluous, nor tedious. You ſhalbe obeyed (ſaid *Pyrocles*) and here are we in as fitte a place for it as may be; for this arbor no body offers to come into but my ſelfe; I vſing it as my melancholy retiring place, and therefore that reſpect is born vnto it; yet if by chāce any ſhould come, ſay that you are a ſeruant ſent from the Q. of the *Amazons* to ſeeke me, and then let me alone for the reſt. So ſate they downe, and *Pyrocles* thus ſaid.

CHAP.

CHAP. 13.

[1] *How* Pyrocles *fell in loue with* Philoclea. [2] *His counſell and courſe therein.* [3] *His diſguiſing into* Zelmane. [4] *Her meeting with* Damætas, [5] Baſilius, [6] *the Queene and her daughters, & their ſpeaches.* [7] *Her abode there ouer entreated;* [8] *and the place thereof deſcribed.*

COuſin (ſaide hee) then began the fatall ouerthrowe of all my libertie, when walking among the pictures in *Kalanders* houſe, you your ſelfe deliuered vnto mee what you had vnderſtood of *Philoclea*, who muche reſembling (though I muſt ſay much ſurpaſſing) the Ladie *Zelmane*, whom too well I loued: there were mine eyes infected, & at your mouth did I drinke my poiſon. Yet alas ſo ſweete was it vnto me, that I could not be contented, til *Kalander* had made it more and more ſtrong with his declaratiõ. Which the more I queſtioned, the more pittie I conceaued of her vnworthie fortune: and when with pittie once my harte was made tender, according to the aptneſſe of the humour, it receaued quickly a cruell impreſſion of that wonderful paſſiõ which to be definde is impoſſible, becauſe no wordes reach to the ſtrange nature of it: they onely know it, which inwardly feele it, it is called loue. Yet did I not (poore wretch) at firſt know my diſeaſe, thinking it onely ſuch a woonted kind of deſire, to ſee rare ſights; & my pitie to be no other, but the fruits of a 1

gentle nature. But cuẽ this arguing with my ſelfe came of further thoughts; & the more I argued, the more my thoughts encreaſed. Deſirous I was to ſee the place where ſhe remained, as though the *Architecture* of the lodges would haue bene much for my learning; but more deſirous to ſee her ſelfe, to be iudge, forſooth, of the painters cũning. For thus at the firſt did I flatter my ſelfe, as though my wound had bene no deeper: but when within ſhort time I came to the degree of vncertaine wiſhes, and that the wiſhes grew to vnquiet longings, when I could fix my thoughts vpõ nothing, but that within little varying, they ſhould end with *Philoclea*: when each thing I ſaw, ſeemed to figure out ſome parts of my paſſions; whẽ euen *Parthenias* faire face became a lecture to me of *Philocleas* imagined beautie; when I heard no word ſpoken, but that me thought it caried the ſum of *Philocleas* name: then indeed, then I did yeeld to the burthen, finding my ſelfe priſoner, before I had leaſure to arme my ſelfe; & that I might well, like the ſpaniel, gnaw vpon the chaine that ties him, but I ſhould ſooner marre my teeth, then procure liberty.

a Yet I take to witneſſe the eternall ſpring of vertue, that I had neuer read, heard, nor ſeene any thing; I had neuer any taſt of Philoſophy, nor inward feeling in my ſelfe, which for a while I did not call for my ſuccour. But (alas) what reſiſtance was there, when ere long my very reaſon was (you will ſay corrupted) I muſt needs confeſſe, conquered; and that me thought euen reaſon did aſſure me, that all eies did degenerate from their creation, which did not honour ſuch beautie? Nothing in trueth could holde any plea with it, but the reuerent friendſhip I bare vnto you. For as it went againſt

againſt my harte to breake any way from you, ſo did I feare more then anie aſſault to breake it to you: finding (as it is indeed) that to a hart fully reſolute, counſaile is tedious, but reprehenſion is lothſome: & that there is nothing more terrible to a guilty hart, then the eie of a reſpected friēd. This made me determine with my ſelf, (thinking it a leſſe fault in friēdſhip to do a thing without your knowledge, then againſt your wil) to take this ſecret courſe: Which conceit was moſt builded vp in me, the laſt day of my parting and ſpeaking with you; whē vpō your ſpeach with me, & my but naming loue, (when els perchaūce I would haue gone further) I ſaw your voice & coūtenance ſo chaunge, as it aſſured me, my reuealing it ſhould but purchaſe your griefe with my cumber: & therfore (deere *Muſidorus*) euē ran away frō thy wel knowne chiding: for hauing writtē a letter, which I know not whether you found or no, & taking my chiefe iewels with me, while you were in the middeſt of your ſport, I got a time (as I think) vnmarked, to ſteale away, I cared not whether ſo I might ſcape you: & ſo came I to *Ithonia* in the prouince of *Meſſenia*; wher lying ſecret I put this in practiſe which before I had deuiſed. For remēbring by *Philanax* his letter, & Kalāders ſpeech, how obſtinately *Baſilius* was determined not to mary his daughters, & therfore fearing, leſt any publike dealing ſhould rather increaſe her captiuitie, then further my loue; Loue (the refiner of inuentiō) had put in my head thus to diſguiſe my ſelf, that vnder that maske I might (if it were poſſible,) get acceſſe, and what acceſſe could bring forth, commit to fortune & induſtry: determining to beare the countenance of an *Amazon*. Therfore in the cloſeſt maner I could, naming my ſelfe

3

Zelmane, for that deere Ladies ſake, to whoſe memorie I am ſo much bound, I cauſed this apparell to be made, and bringing it neere the lodges, which are harde at hand, by night, thus dreſſed my ſelfe, reſting till occaſion might make me found by them, whom I ſought: which the next morning hapned as well, as my owne plot could haue laide it. For after I had runne ouer the whole petigree of my thoughts, I gaue my ſelfe to ſing a little, which as you know I euer delighted in, ſo now eſpecially, whether it be the nature of this clime to ſtir vp Poeticall fancies, or rather as I think, of Loue; whoſe ſcope being pleaſure, will not ſo much as vtter his griefes, but in ſome forme of pleaſure.

4 But I had ſong very little, when (as I thinke diſpleaſed with my bad muſike) comes maſter *Dametas* with a hedging bill in his hand, chafing, and ſwearing by the pãtable of *Pallas*, & ſuch other othes as his ruſticall brauery could imagine; & whẽ he ſaw me, I aſſure you my beauty was no more beholding to him thẽ my harmony; for leaning his hands vpon his bil, & his chin vpon his hãds, with the voice of one that plaieth *Hercules* in a play, but neuer had his fancie in his head, the firſt word he ſpake to me, was, Am not I *Dametas?* why, am not I *Dametas?* He needed not name him ſelfe: for *Kalanders* deſcription had ſet ſuch a note vpõ him, as made him very notable vnto me, and therefore the height of my thoughts would not diſcend ſo much as to make him any anſwer, but continued on my inward diſcourſes: which (he perchaunce witnes of his owne vnworthines, & therefore the apter to thinke him ſelfe contẽned) tooke in ſo hainous manner, that ſtanding vpõ his tip-toes, and ſtaring as though he would haue a mote

pulled

pulled out of his eie, Why (ſaid he) thou womã, or boy, or both, what ſoeuer thou be, I tell thee here is no place for thee, get thee gone, I tell thee it is the Princes pleaſure, I tell thee it is *Dametas* pleaſure. I could not chooſe, but ſmile at him, ſeeing him looke ſo like an Ape that had newly taken a purgation; yet taking my ſelfe with the maner, ſpake theſe wordes to my ſelfe: O ſpirite (ſaide I) of mine, how canſt thou receaue anie mirth in the midſt of thine agonies, and thou mirth how dareſt thou enter into a minde ſo growne of late thy profeſſed enemie? Thy ſpirite (ſaide *Dametas*) dooſt thou thinke me a ſpirite, I tell thee I am *Baſilius* officer, and haue charge of him, and his daughters. O onely pearle (ſaid I ſobbing) that ſo vile an oyſter ſhould keepe thee? By the combe-caſe of *Diana* (ſware *Dametas*) this woman is mad: oyſters, and pearles? dooſt thou thinke I will buie oyſters? I tell thee once againe get thee packing, and with that lifted vp his bill to hit me with the blunt ende of it: but indeede that put me quite out of my leſſon, ſo that I forgat al *Zelmanes-ſhip*, and drawing out my ſworde, the baſeneſſe of the villaine yet made me ſtay my hande, and he (who, as *Kalander* tolde me, from his childehood euer feared the blade of a ſworde) ran backe, backward (with his hands aboue his head) at leſt twentie paces, gaping and ſtaring, with the verie grace (I thinke) of the clownes, that by *Latonas* prayers were turned into Frogs. At length ſtaying, finding himſelfe without the compaſſe of blowes, he fell to a freſh ſcolding, in ſuch mannerlie manner, as might well ſhewe he had paſſed through the diſcipline of a Tauerne. But ſeeing me walke vp and downe, without

marking what he ſaide, he went his way (as I perceiued after) to *Baſilius*: for within a while he came vnto mee, bearing in deed ſhewes in his countenaunce of an honeſt and well-minded gentleman, and with as much courteſie, as *Dametas* with rudeneſſe ſaluting me, Faire Lady (ſaide he) it is nothing ſtrange, that ſuch a ſolitary place as this ſhould receiue ſolitary perſons; but much do I maruaile, how ſuch a beauty as yours is, ſhould be ſuffered to be thus alone. I (that now knew it was my part to play) looking with a graue maieſtie vpon him, as if I found in my ſelfe cauſe to be reuerenced. They are neuer alone (ſaide I) that are accompanied with noble thoughts. But thoſe thoughts (replied *Baſilius*) cãnot in this your lonelines neither warrant you from ſuſpition in others, nor defend you from melancholy in your ſelfe. I then ſhewing a miſlike that he preſſed me ſo farre, I ſeeke no better warraunt (ſaide I) then my owne conſcience, nor no greater pleaſures, then mine owne contentation. Yet vertue ſeekes to ſatiſfie others, (ſaide *Baſilius*.) Thoſe that be good (ſaide I,) and they wil be ſatiſfied as long as they ſee no euill. Yet will the beſt in this country, (ſaid *Baſilius*) ſuſpect ſo excellent a beauty being ſo weakely garded. Then are the beſt but ſtarke nought, (aunſwered I) for open ſuſpecting others, comes of ſecrete condemning themſelues; But in my countrie (whoſe manners I am in all places to maintaine and reuerence) the generall goodnes (which is nouriſhed in our harts) makes euery one thinke the ſtrength of vertue in another, whereof they finde the aſſured foundation in themſelues. Excellent Ladie (ſaid he) you praiſe ſo greatly, (and yet ſo wiſely) your coũtry, that I muſt needes deſire to know what the neſt is, out of which ſuch Byrds doo flye.

You

You muſt firſt deſerue it (ſaid I) before you may obtaine it. And by what meanes (ſaide *Baſilius*) ſhall I deſerue to know your eſtate? By letting me firſt knowe yours (aunſwered I.) To obey you (ſaid he) I will doe it, although it were ſo much more reaſon, yours ſhould be knowen firſt, as you doo deſerue in all points to be preferd. Know you (faire Lady) that my name is *Baſilius*, vnworthily Lord of this coũtry: the reſt, either fame hath brought to your eares, or (if it pleaſe you to make this place happie by your preſence) at more leaſure you ſhall vnderſtand of me. I that from the beginning aſſured my ſelfe it was he, but would not ſeeme I did ſo, to keepe my grauitie the better, making a peece of reuerẽce vnto him, Mighty Prince (ſaid I) let my not knowing you ſerue for the excuſe of my boldnes, and the little reuerence I doe you, impute it to the manner of my coũtry, whch is the inuincible Lande of the *Amazons*; My ſelfe neece to *Senicia*, Queene thereof, lineally deſcended of the famous *Pentheſilea*, ſlaine by the bloody hand of *Pyrrhus*. I hauing in this my youth determined to make the worlde ſee the *Amazons* excellencies, aſwell in priuate, as in publicke vertue, haue paſſed ſome daungerous aduentures in diuers coũtries: till the vnmercifull Sea depriued me of my company: ſo that ſhipwrack caſting me not far hence, vncertaine wandring brought me to this place. But *Baſilius* (who now began to taſt that, which ſince he hath ſwallowed vp, as I will tell you) fell to more cunning intreating my aboad, then any greedy hoſt would vſe to well paying paſſingers. I thought nothing could ſhoot righter at the mark of my deſires; yet had I learned alredy ſomuch, that it was aganſt my womanhood

manhoode to be forward in my owne wiſhes. And therefore he (to proue whither interceſſions in fitter mouths might better preuaile) commaunded *Dametas* to bring forth-with his wife and daughters thether; three Ladies, although of diuers, yet all of excellent beauty.

6 His wife in graue Matronlike attire, with countenaunce and geſture ſutable, and of ſuch fairnes (being in the ſtrengh of her age) as if her daughters had not bene by, might with iuſt price haue purchaſed admiration; but they being there, it was enough that the moſt dainty eye would thinke her a worthy mother of ſuch children. The faire *Pamela*, whoſe noble hart I finde doth greatly diſdaine, that the truſt of her vertue is repoſed in ſuch a louts hands as *Dametas*, had yet to ſhewe an obedience, taken on ſhepeardiſh apparell, which was but of Ruſſet cloth cut after their faſhion, with a ſtraight body, open breſted, the nether parte ful of pleights, with long and wide ſleeues: but beleeue me ſhe did apparell her apparell, and with the pretiouſnes of her body made it moſt ſumptuous. Her haire at the full length, wound about with gold lace, onely by the compariſon to ſee how farre her haire doth excell in colour: betwixt her breaſts (which ſweetly raſe vp like two faire Mountaints in the pleaſaunt valley of *Tempe*) there honge a very riche *Diamond* ſet but in a blacke horne, the worde I haue ſince read is this; *yet ſtil my ſelfe*. And thus particularly haue I deſcribed them, becauſe you may know that mine eyes are not ſo partiall, but that I marked them too. But when the ornament of the Earth, the modell of heauen, the Triumphe of Nature, the light of beauty, Queene of

Loue

Loue, yoũg *Philoclea* appeared in her Nimphe-like apparell, ſo neare nakednes, as one might well diſcerne part of her perfections; & yet ſo apparelled, as did ſhew ſhe kept beſt ſtore of her beuty to her ſelf: her haire (alas too poore a word, why ſhould I not rather call thẽ her beames) drawẽ vp into a net, able to take *Iupiter* when he was in the forme of an Eagle; her body (O ſweet body) couered with a light Taffeta garment, ſo cut, as the wrought ſmocke came through it in many places, inough to haue made your reſtraind imaginatiõ haue thought what was vnder it: with the caſt of her blacke eyes; blacke indeed, whether nature ſo made them, that we might be the more able to behold & bear their wõderfull ſhining, or that ſhe, (goddeſſe like) would work this miracle in her ſelfe, in giuing blacknes the price aboue all beauty. Then (I ſay) indeede me thought the Lillies grew pale for enuie, the roſes me thought bluſhed to ſee ſweeter roſes in her cheekes, & the apples me thought, fell downe frõ the trees, to do homage to the apples of her breaſt; Then the cloudes gaue place, that the heauẽs might more freſhly ſmile vpõ her; at the leſt the cloudes of my thoughts quite vaniſhed: and my ſight (then more cleere and forcible then euer) was ſo fixed there, that (I imagine) I ſtood like a well wrought image, with ſome life in ſhew, but none in practiſe. And ſo had I beene like inough to haue ſtayed long time, but that *Gynecia* ſtepping betweene my ſight and the onely *Philoclea*, the chaunge of obiect made mee recouer my ſences: ſo that I coulde with reaſonable good manner receiue the ſalutation of her, and of the the princes *Pamela*, doing them yet no further reuerẽce then

then one Prince vſeth to another. But when I came to the neuer-inough praiſed *Philoclea*, I could not but fall downe on my knees, and taking by force her hand, and kiſſing it (I muſt confeſſe) with more then womanly ardency, Diuine Lady, (ſaide I) let not the worlde, nor theſe great princes maruaile, to ſe me (contrary to my manner) do this eſpeciall honor vnto you, ſince all both men and women, do owe this to the perfection of your beauty. But ſhe bluſhing (like a faire morning in Maye) at this my ſingularity, and cauſing me to riſe, Noble Lady, (ſaide ſhe) it is no maruaile to ſee your iudgement miſtaken in my beauty, ſince you beginne with ſo great an errour, as to do more honour vnto me then to them, whom I my ſelfe owe all ſeruice. Rather (anſwered I with a bowed downe countenaunce) that ſhewes the power of your beauty, which forced me to do ſuch an errour, if it were an errour. You are ſo well acquainted (ſaide ſhe ſweetely, moſt ſweetely ſmiling,) with your owne beautie, that it makes you eaſilie fall into the diſcourſe of beauty. Beauty in me? (ſaid I truely ſighing) alas if there be any, it is in my eyes, which your bleſſed preſence hath imparted vnto them.

7 But then (as I thinke) *Baſilius* willing her ſo do, Well (ſaide ſhe) I muſt needs confeſſe I haue heard that it is a great happines to be praiſed of them that are moſt praiſe worthie; And well I finde that you are an inuincible *Amazon*, ſince you will ouercome, though in a wrong matter. But if my beauty be any thing, then let it obtaine thus much of you, that you will remaine ſome while in this cõpanie, to eaſe your owne trauail, and our ſolitarines. Firſt let me dye (ſaid I) before any word ſpoken by ſuch a mouth, ſhould come in vaine.

And

And thus with ſome other wordes of entertaining, was my ſtaying concluded, and I led among them to the lodge; truely a place for pleaſantnes, not vnfitte to flatter ſolitarineſſe; for it be[illegible]pon ſuch an vnſenſible riſing of the ground, [illegible]are come to a prety height before almoſt you perceiue that you aſcend, it giues the eye lordſhip ouer a good large circuit, which according to the nature of the coũtry, being diuerſified betwene hills and dales, woods and playnes, one place more cleere, and the other more darkſome, it ſeemes a pleaſant picture of nature, with loucly lightſomnes and artificiall ſhadowes. The Lodge is of a yellow ſtone, built in the forme of a ſtarre; hauing round about a garden framed into like points: and beyond the gardein, ridings cut out, each aunſwering the Angles of the Lodge: at the end of one of them is the other ſmaller Lodge, but of like faſhion; where the gratious *Pamela* liueth: ſo that the Lodge ſeemeth not vnlike a faire *Comete*, whoſe taile ſtretcheth it ſelfe to a ſtarre of leſſe greatnes.

CHAP. 14.

[1] *The deuiſes of the firſt banket to* Zelmane. [2] *Her croſſes in loue,* [3] *by the loue of* Baſilius [4] *and* Gynecia [5] *The concluſion between* Muſidorus *and* Zelmane.

SO *Gynecia* her ſelfe bringing me to my Lodging, anone after I was inuited and brought downe to ſuppe with them in the gardein, a place not fairer in naturall ornaments, then artificiall inuentions: wherein 1

is

is a banquetting houſe among certaine pleaſant trees, whoſe heads ſeemed curled with the wrappings about of Vine branches. The table was ſet neere to an excellent water-worke; for by the caſting of the water in moſt cunning maner, it makes (with the ſhining of the Sunne vpon it) a perfect rainbow, not more pleaſant to the eye then to the mind, ſo ſenſibly to ſee the proof of the heauenly *Iris*. There were birds alſo made ſo finely, that they did not onely deceiue the ſight with their figure, but the hearing with their ſongs; which the watrie inſtruments did make their gorge deliuer. The table at which we ſate, was round, which being faſt to the floore whereon we ſate, and that deuided from the reſt of the buildings (with turning a vice, which *Baſilius* at firſt did to make me ſport) the table, and we about the table, did all turne rounde, by meanes of water which ranne vnder, and carried it about as a Mille. But alas, what pleaſure did it to mee, to make diuers times the full circle round about, ſince *Philoclea* (being alſo ſet) was carried ſtill in equall diſtance from me, and that onely my eyes did ouertake her; which when the table was ſtayed, and wee beganne to feede, dranke much more eagerlie of her beautie, then my mouth did of any other licour. And ſo was my common ſenſe deceiued (being chiefly bent to her) that as I dranke the wine, and withall ſtale a looke on her, me ſeemed I taſted her deliciouſneſſe. But alas, the one thirſte was much more inflamed, then the other quenched. Sometimes my eyes would lay themſelues open to receiue all the dartes ſhe did throwe, ſomtimes cloze vp with admiration, as if with a contrary fancie, they woulde preſerue the riches of that ſight they had gotten,

gotten, or caſt my lidde as curtaines ouer the image of beautie, her preſence had painted in them. True it is, that my Reaſon (now growen a ſeruant to Paſſion) did yet often tel his maſter, that he ſhould more moderatly vſe his delight. But he, that of a rebell was become a Prince, diſdayned almoſt to allow him the place of a Counſeller: ſo that my ſenſes delights being too ſtrōg for any other reſolution, I did euen looſe the raines vnto them: hoping, that (going for a woman) my lookes would paſſe, either vnmarked, or vnſuſpected.

Now thus I had (as me thought) well playd my firſt acte, aſſuring my ſelfe, that vnder that diſguiſment, I ſhould find opportunitie to reueal my ſelf to the owner of my harte. But who would thinke it poſſible (though I feele it true) that in almoſt eight weekes ſpace, I haue liued here (hauing no more companie but her parents, and I being familiar, as being a woman, and watchfull, as being a louer) yet could neuer finde opportunitie to haue one minutes leaſure of priuie conference: the cauſe whereof is as ſtrange, as the effects are to me miſerable. And (alas) this it is. 2

At the firſt ſight that *Baſilius* had of me (I think *Cupid* hauing headed his arrows with my misfortune) he was ſtriken (taking me to be ſuch as I profeſſe) with great affectiō towards me: which ſince is growen to ſuch a doting loue, that (till I was faine to gette this place, ſometimes to retire vnto freely) I was euen choaked with his tedioufnes. You neuer ſaw fourſcore yeares daunce vp and downe more liuely in a young Louer: now, as fine in his apparrell, as if he would make me in loue with a cloake; and verſe for verſe with the ſharpeſt-witted Louer in *Arcadia*. Doo you not think that this is a ſallet of 3

worm-

woormwood, while mine eyes feede vpon the *Ambroſia* of *Philocleas* beauty.

But this is not all; no this is not the worſt; for he (good man) were eaſy enough to be dealt with: but (as I thinke) Loue and miſcheefe hauing made a wager, which ſhould haue moſt power in me, haue ſet *Gynecia* alſo on ſuch a fire towardes me, as will neuer (I feare) be quenched but with my deſtruction. For ſhe (being a woman of excellent witte, and of ſtrong working thoughts) whether ſhe ſuſpected me by my ouer-vehement ſhowes of affection to *Philoclea* (which loue forced me vnwiſely to vtter, while hope of my maske fooliſhly incouraged me) or that ſhe hath take ſome other marke of me, that I am not a woman: or what deuil it is hath reuealed it vnto her, I know not; but ſo it is, that al her countenances, words and geſtures, are miſerable portraitures of a deſperate affection. Whereby a man may learne, that theſe auoydings of companie, doo but make the paſſions more violent, when they meete with fitte ſubiects. Truely it were a notable dumb ſhew of *Cupids* kingdome, to ſee my eyes (languiſhing with ouer-vehement longing) direct themſelues to *Philoclea*: & *Baſilius* as buſie about me as a Bee, & indeed as cumberſome; making ſuch ſuits to me, who nether could if I would; nor would if I could, helpe him: while the terrible witte of *Gynecia*, carried with the beere of violent loue, runnes thorow vs all. And ſo ielious is ſhe of my loue to her daughter, that I could neuer yet beginne to open my mouth to the vneuitable *Philoclea*, but that her vnwiſhed preſence gaue my tale a cõcluſion, before it had a beginning.

And ſurely if I be not deceiued, I ſee ſuch ſhewes of liking,

liking, and (if I bee acquainted with paſſions) of almoſt a paſſionate liking in the heauenly *Philoclea*, towardes me, that I may hope her eares would not abhorre my diſcourſe. And for good *Baſilius*, he thought it beſt to haue lodged vs together, but that the eternall hatefulnes of my deſtinie, made *Gynecias* ielouſie ſtoppe that, and all other my bleſſings. Yet muſt I confeſſe, that one way her loue doth me pleaſure: for ſince it was my fooliſh fortune, or vnfortunate follie, to be knowen by her, that keepes her from bewraying me to *Baſilius*. And thus (my *Muſidorus*) you haue my Tragedie played vnto you by my ſelfe, which I pray the gods may not in deede prooue a Tragedie. And there he ended, making a full point of a hartie ſigh.

Muſidorus recõmended to his beſt diſcourſe, all which *Pyrocles* had told him. But therein he found ſuch intricatenes, that he could ſee no way to lead him out of the maze; yet perceiuing his affection ſo groũded, that ſtriuing againſt it, did rather anger then heale the wound, and rather call his friendſhippe in queſtion, then giue place to any friendly counſell. Well (ſaid he) deare coſin, ſince it hath pleaſed the gods to mingle your other excellencies with this humor of loue, yet happie it is, that your loue is imployed vpon ſo rare a woman: for certainly, a noble cauſe dooth eaſe much a grieuous caſe. But as it ſtands now, nothing vexeth me, as that I cãnot ſee wherein I can be ſeruiſable vnto you. I deſire no greater ſeruice of you (ãſwered *Pyrocles*) thẽ that you remayn ſecretly in this country, & ſome-times come to this place; either late in the night, or early in the morning, where you ſhal haue my key to ẽter, bicauſe as my for-

fortune, eyther amendes or empaires. I may declare it vnto you, and haue your counſell and furtheraunce: & hereby I will of purpoſe lead her, that is the prayſe, and yet the ſtaine of all womankinde, that you may haue ſo good a view, as to allowe my iudgement: and as I can get the moſt conuenient time, I wil come vnto you; for though by reaſon of yonder wood you cannot ſee the Lodge; it is harde at hande. But now, (ſaid ſhe) it is time for me to leaue you, and towardes euening wee will walke out of purpoſe hetherward, therefore keepe your ſelfe cloſe in that time. But *Muſidorus* bethinking him ſelfe that his horſe might happen to bewray them, thought it beſt to returne for that day, to a village not farre of, and diſpatching his horſe in ſome ſorte, the next day early to come a foote thither, and ſo to keepe that courſe afterward, which *Pyrocles* very well liked of. Now farewell deere couſin (ſaid he) from me, no more *Pyrocles*, nor *Daiphantus* now, but *Zelmane*: *Zelmane* is my name, *Zelmane* is my title, *Zelmane* is the onely hope of my aduauncement. And with that word going out, and ſeeing that the coaſt was cleare, *Zelmane* diſmiſſed *Muſidorus*, who departed as full of care to helpe his friend, as before he was to diſſwade him.

CHAP. 15.

[1] *The Labyrinth of* Zelmanes *loue.* [2] *The Ladies exerciſes.* [3] *The challenge of* Phalantus *in paragon of* Arteſias *beautie.* [4] *The deſcription of their perſons and affections:* [5] *and occaſion of this challenge.* [6] *The ſucceſſe thereof abroad.*

Zelmane



Elmane returned to the Lodge, 1
where (inflamed by *Philoclea*, watched by *Gynecia*, and tired by *Basilius*) she was like a horse, desirous to runne, and miserablie spurred, but so short rainde, as he cannot stirre forward: *Zelmane* sought occasion to speake with *Philoclea*; *Basilius* with *Zelmane*; and *Gynecia* hindered them all. If *Philoclea* hapned to sigh (and sigh she did often) as if that sigh were to be wayted on, *Zelmane* sighed also; whereto *Basilius* and *Gynecia* soone made vp toure parts of sorow. Their affection increased their conuersation; and their conuersation increased their affection. The respect borne bredde due ceremonies; but the affection shined so through them, that the ceremonies seemed not ceremonious. *Zelmanes* eyes were (like children afore sweet meate) eager, but fearefull of their ill-pleasing gouernors. Time in one instant, seeming both short, and long vnto them: short, in the pleasingnes of such presence: long, in the stay of their desires.

But *Zelmane* fayled not to intice them all many times 2
abroad, becausе she was desirous her friend *Musidorus* (neere whom of purpose she ledde them) might haue full sight of them. Sometimes angling to a little Riuer neere hand, which for the moisture it bestowed vpon rootes of some flourishing Trees, was rewarded with their shadowe. There would they sitte downe, & pretie wagers be made betweene *Pamela* and *Philoclea*, which could soonest beguile silly fishes; while *Zelmane* protested, that the fitte pray for them was hartes of Princes. She also had an angle in her hand; but the taker was so

taken, that ſhe had forgotten taking. *Baſilius* in the meane time would be the cooke him ſelfe of what was ſo caught,& *Gynecia* ſit ſtil, but with no ſtil penſifneſſe. Now ſhe brought them to ſee a ſeeled Doue, who the blinder ſhe was, the higher ſhe ſtraue. Another time a Kite, which hauing a gut cunningly pulled out of her, and ſo let flie, called all the Kites in that quarter, who (as oftentimes the worlde is deceaued) thinking her proſperous when indeed ſhe was wounded, made the poore Kite find, that opinion of riches may wel be dangerous.

3 But theſe recreations were interrupted by a delight of more gallant ſhew; for one euening as *Baſilius* returned from hauing forced his thoughts to pleaſe themſelues in ſuch ſmall conqueſts, there came a ſhepheard, who brought him word that a Gentlemã deſired leaue to do a meſſage from his Lord vnto him. *Baſilius* granted; wherupon the Gentleman came, and after the dutifull ceremonies obſerued, in his maiſters name tolde him, that he was ſent from *Phalãtus* of *Corinth*, to craue licence, that as he had done in many other courts, ſo he might in his preſence defie all *Arcadian* Knights in the behalfe of his miſtres beautie, who would beſides, her ſelfe in perſon be preſent, to giue euident proofe what his launce ſhould affirme. The conditions of his chalenge were, that the defendant ſhould bring his miſtreſſe picture, which being ſet by the image of *Arteſia* (ſo was the miſtreſſe of *Phalantus* named) who in ſix courſes ſhould haue better of the other, in the iudgement of *Baſilius*, with him both the honors and the pictures ſhould remaine. *Baſilius* (though he had retired him ſelfe into that ſolitarie dwelling, with intention

to

to auoid, rather then to accept any matters of drawing company; yet becauſe he would entertaine *Zelmane*, (that ſhe might not think the time ſo gainefull to him, loſſe to her) graunted him to pitch his tent for three dayes, not farre from the lodge, and to proclayme his chalenge, that what *Arcadian* Knight (for none els but vpon his perill was licenſed to come) woulde defende what he honored againſt *Phalantus*, ſhould haue the like freedome of acceſſe and returne.

This obteyned and publiſhed, *Zelmane* being deſi- 4
rous to learne what this *Phalantus* was, hauing neuer knowne him further then by report of his owne good, in ſomuch as he was commonly called, The faire man of armes, *Baſilius* told her that he had had occaſion by one very inward with him, to knowe in parte the diſcourſe of his life, which was, that he was baſtard-brother to the faire *Helen* Queene of *Corinth*, and deerly eſteemed of her for his exceeding good parts, being honorablie courteous, and wrongleſly valiaunt, conſiderately pleaſant in conuerſation, & an excellent courtier without vnfaithfulnes; who (finding his ſiſters vnperſwadeable melancholy, thorow the loue of *Amphialus*) had for a time left her court, and gone into *Laconia*: where in the warre againſt the *Helots*, he had gottē the reputatiō of one, that both durſt & knew. But as it was rather choiſe thē nature, that led him to matters of armes, ſo as ſoon as the ſpur of honor ceaſed, he willingly reſted in peaceable delightes, being beloued in all cōpanies for his louely qualities, & (as a mā may terme it) cunning cherefulnes, wherby to the Prince & Court of *Laconia*, none was more agreable thē *Phalantus*: and he not giuen greatly to ſtruggle with his

owne diſpoſition, followed the gentle currant of it, hauing a fortune ſufficient to content, & he content with a ſufficient fortune. But in that court he ſawe, and was acquainted with this *Arteſia*, whoſe beautie he now defendes, became her ſeruant, ſaid him ſelfe, and perchaunce thought him ſelfe her louer. But certainly, (ſaid *Baſilius*) many times it falles out, that theſe young companiõs make themſelues beleeue they loue at the firſt liking of a likely beautie; louing, becauſe they will loue for want of other buſineſſe, not becauſe they feele indeed that diuine power, which makes the heart finde a reaſon in paſſion: and ſo (God knowes) as inconſtantly leane vpon the next chaunce that beautie caſtes before them. So therefore taking loue vppon him like a faſhion, he courted this Ladie *Arteſia*, who was as fit to paie him in his owne monie as might be. For ſhe thinking ſhe did wrong to her beautie if ſhe were not prowde of it, called her diſdaine of him chaſtitie, and placed her honour in little ſetting by his honouring her: determining neuer to marrie, but him, whome ſhe thought worthie of her: and that was one, in whome all worthineſſe were harboured. And to this conceipt not onely nature had bent her, but the bringing vp ſhe receaued at my ſiſter in lawe *Cecropia*, had confirmed her: who hauing in her widowhood taken this young *Arteſia* into her charge; becauſe her Father had bene a deare friend of her dead husbandes, and taught her to thinke that there is no wiſdome but in including heauen & earth in ones ſelf: and that loue, courteſie, gratefulneſſe, friendſhip, and all other vertues are rather to be taken on, then taken in ones ſelfe: And ſo good diſcipline ſhe found of her,

that

that liking the fruits of her owne planting, ſhe was cõtent (if ſo her ſonne could haue liked of it) to haue wiſhed her in marriage to my Nephew *Amphialus*. But I thinke that deſire hath loſt ſome of his heate, ſince ſhe hath knowne, that ſuch a Queene as *Helen* is, doth offer ſo great a price as a kingdome, to buie his fauour; for if I be not deceaued in my good ſiſter *Cecropia*, ſhee thinks no face ſo beautifull, as that which lookes vnder a crowne. But *Arteſia* indeede liked well of my Nephew *Amphialus*; for I cã neuer deeme that loue, which in hauty harts proceeds of a deſire onely to pleaſe, and as it were, peacock themſelues; but yet ſhe hath ſhewed vehemencie of deſire that way, I thinke, becauſe all her deſires be vehemẽt, in ſo much that ſhe hath both placed her onely brother (a fine youth called *Iſmenus*) to be his ſquire, and her ſelfe is content to waite vpon my ſiſter, till ſhe may ſee the vttermoſt what ſhe may worke in *Amphialus*: who being of a melancholie (though I muſt needes ſaye courteous and noble) mind, ſeems to loue nothing leſſe then Loue: & of late hauing through ſome aduenture, or inwarde miſcontentment, withdrawne him ſelfe frõ any bodies knowledge, where he is: *Arteſia* the eaſier condiſcended to goe to the court of *Laconia*, whether ſhe was ſent for by the Kinges wife, to whome ſhe is ſomewhat allied.

And there after the war of the *Helots*, this Knight *Phalantus*, (at leaſt for tongue-delight) made him ſelfe her ſeruaunt, and ſhe ſo little caring, as not to ſhowe miſlike thereof, was content onely to be noted to haue a notable ſeruaunt. For truely one in my court neerely acquainted with him, within theſe few dayes made me

a pleaſaunt deſcription of their loue, while he with cheerefull lookes would ſpeake ſorowfull words, vſing the phraſe of his affection in ſo high a ſtile, that *Mercurie* would not haue wooed *Venus* with more magnificent Eloquence: but els neyther in behauiour, nor action, accuſing in him ſelfe anie great trouble in minde, whether he ſped or no. And ſhe of the other ſide, well finding howe little it was, and not caring for more, yet taught him, that often it falleth out but a fooliſhe wittineſſe, to ſpeake more then one thinkes.

5 For ſhe made earneſt benefite of his ieſt, forcing him in reſpect of his promiſe, to doo her ſuche ſeruice, as were both cumberſome and coſtly vnto him, while he ſtil thought he went beyond her, becauſe his harte did not commit the idolatrie. So that laſtlie, ſhe (I thinke) hauing in minde to make the fame of her beautie an oratour for her to *Amphialus*, (perſwading her ſelfe perhaps, that it might fall out in him, as it dothe in ſome that haue delightfull meate before them, and haue no ſtomacke to it, before other folkes prayſe it) ſhe tooke the aduauntage one daye vppon *Phalantus* vnconſcionable prayſinges of her, and certaine caſt-awaie vowes, howe much he would doo for her ſake, to arreſt his woord aſſoone as it was out of his mouth, and by the vertue thereof to charge him to goe with her thorow all the courts of *Greece*, & with the chalenge now made, to giue her beauty the principality ouer all other. *Phalantus* was entrapped, and ſaw round about him, but could not get out. Exceedinglie perplexed he was (as he confeſt to him that tolde mee the tale) not for doubt hee had of him ſelfe (for indeed

indeede he had litle cauſe, being accounted, with his Launce eſpecially (whereupon the challenge is to be tryed) as perfect as any that *Greece* knoweth; but becauſe he feared to offend his ſiſter *Helen*, and with all (as he ſaid) he could not ſo much beleeue his loue, but that he might thinke in his hart (whatſoeuer his mouth affirmed) that both ſhe, my daughters, and the faire *Parthenia* (wife to a moſt noble Gentleman, my wiues neere kinſman) might far better put in their clayme for that prerogatiue. But his promiſe had bound him prentice, and therfore it was now better with willingnes to purchaſe thankes, then with a diſcontented doing to haue the paine, and not the reward: and therefore went on, as his faith, rather then loue, did lead him.

And now hath he already paſſed the courts of *Laconia*, *Elis*, *Argos* and *Corinth*: and (as many times it happēs) that a good pleader makes a bad cauſe to preuaile; ſo hath his Lawnce brought captiues to the triumph of *Arteſias* beauty, ſuch, as though *Arteſia* be among the faireſt, yet in that company were to haue the preheminence: for in thoſe courts many knights (that had bene in other far countries) defēded ſuch as they had ſeene, and liked in their trauaile: but their defence had bene ſuch; as they had forfayted the picture of their Ladies, to giue a forced falſe teſtimonie to *Arteſias* excellencie. And now laſtly is he come hether, where he hath leaue to trye his fortune. But I aſſure you, if I thought it not in dew & true cōſideratiō an iniurious ſeruice & churliſh curteſie, to put the danger of ſo noble a title in the deciding of ſuch a dāgerles cōbat, I would make yong maſter *Phalantus* know, that your eyes can ſharpē a blūt 6

Launce

Launce, and that age, which my graye haires (onely gotten by the louing care of others) make ſeeme more then it is, hath not diminiſhed in me the power to protect an vndeniable verity. With that he buſtled vp himſelfe, as though his harte would faine haue walked abroad. *Zelmane* with an inwarde ſmiling gaue him outward thanks, deſiring him to reſerue his force for worthier cauſes.

CHAP. 16.

Phalantus and Arteſias pompous entraunce. The painted muſter of an eleuen conquered beauties.

SO paſſing their time according to their woont, they wayted for the cõming of *Phalantus*, who the next morning hauing alredy cauſed his tents to be pitched, neere to a faire tree hard by the Lodge, had vppon the tree made a ſhield to bee hanged vp, which the defendant ſhould ſtrike, that woulde call him to the mainteyning his challendge. The *Impreſa* in the ſhield; was a heauen full of ſtarres, with a ſpeech ſignifying, that it was *the beauty which gaue it the praiſe.*

Himſelfe came in next after a triumphant chariot, made of Carnatiõ veluet inriched with purle & pearle, wherein *Arteſia* ſat, drawne by foure winged horſes with artificiall flaming mouths, and fiery winges, as if ſhe had newly borrowed them of *Phœbus*. Before her marched, two after two, certaine footemẽ pleaſantly attired, who betweene them held one picture after another

other of them, that by *Phalantus* well running had loſt the prize in the race of beauty, and at euery pace they ſtayed, turning the pictures to each ſide, ſo leaſurely, that with perfect iudgement they might be diſcerned.

The firſt that came in (folowing the order of the time wherein they had bene wonne) was the picture of *Andromana*, Queene of *Iberia*; whom a *Laconian* Knight hauing ſometime (and with ſpeciall fauour) ſerued, (though ſome yeares ſince retourned home) with more gratefulnes then good fortune defended. But therein *Fortune* had borrowed witte; for indeede ſhe was not cõparable to *Arteſia*; not becauſe ſhe was a good deale elder (for time had not yet beene able to impoueriſh her ſtore thereof) but an exceeding red haire with ſmall eyes, did (like ill companions) diſgrace the other aſſembly of moſt commendable beauties. 1

Next after her was borne the counterfaite of the princeſſe of *Elis*, a Lady that taught the beholders no other point of beauty, but this, that as lyking is, not alwaies the child of beauty, ſo whatſoeuer liketh, is beautyfull; for in that viſage there was nether Maieſtie, grace, fauour, nor faireneſſe; yet ſhe wanted not a ſeruaunt that woulde haue made her fairer then the faire *Arteſia*. But he wrote her praiſes with his helmet in the duſt, and left her picture to be as true a witnes of his ouerthrow, as his running was of her beauty. 2

After her was the goodly *Artaxia*, great Q. of *Armenia*, a Lady vpon whom nature beſtowed, & wel placed her delightful colours; & withal, had proportioned her without any fault, quickly to be diſcouered by the ſenſes, yet altogether ſeemed not to make vp that harmony, that *Cupid* delights in; the reaſõ wherof might ſeem a manniſh countenance, which ouerthrew that louely ſweetenes, 3

ſweetnes, the nobleſt power of womankinde, farre fitter to preuaile by parley, then by battell.

4 Of a farre contrary conſideratiõ was the repreſentation of her that next followed, which was *Erona* Queene of *Licia*, who though of ſo browne a haire, as no man ſhould haue iniuried it to haue called it blacke, and that in the mixture of her cheeks the white did ſo much ouercome the redde (though what was, was very pure) that it came neare to palenes, and that her face was a thought longer then the exacte *Symmetrians* perhaps would allow; yet loue plaid his part ſo well, in euerie part, that it caught holde of the iudgement, before it could iudge, making it firſt loue, & after acknowledge it faire, for there was a certaine delicacie, which in yeelding, conquered; & with a pitiful looke made one find cauſe to craue helpe himſelfe.

5 After her came two Ladies, of noble, but not of royall birth: the former was named *Baccha*, who though very faire, and of a fatnes rather to allure, then to miſlike, yet her breſts ouer-familiarly laide open, with a mad countenaunce about her mouth, betweene ſimpring & ſmyling, her head bowed ſomwhat down, ſeemed to lãguiſh with ouer-much idlenes, with an inuiting look caſt vpward, diſſwading with too much perſwading, while hope might ſeem to ouercome deſire.

6 The other (whoſe name was written *Leucippe*) was of a fine daintines of beauty, her face carying in it a ſober ſimplicitie; like one that could do much good, & ment no hurt, her eyes hauing in them ſuch a cheerefulnes, as nature ſeemed to ſmile in them: though her mouth and cheekes obeyed that prety demurenes which the more one markes, the more one woulde iudge the poore ſoule apt to beleue; & therfore the more pitie

to

to deceiue her.

Next came the Queene of *Laconia*, one that ſeemed 7
borne in the confines of beauties kingdome: for all her
lineamẽts were neither perfect poſſeſſions thereof, nor
abſent ſtrangers thereto: but ſhe was a Queene, and
therefore beautyfull.

But ſhe that followed, conquered indeed with being 8
conquered; & might well haue made all the beholders
waite vpõ her triumph, while her ſelfe were led captiue.
It was the excellẽtly-faire Queene *Helen*, whoſe Iacinth
haire curled by nature, & intercurled by arte (like a fine
brooke through goldẽ ſãds) had a rope of faire pearles,
which now hiding, now hidden by the haire, did as it
were play at faſt or looſe, each with other, mutually gi-
ning & receiuing riches. In her face ſo much beautie &
fauour expreſſed, as if *Helen* had not bene knowẽ, ſome
would rather haue iudged it the painters exerciſe, to
ſhew what he could do, thẽ coũterfaiting of any liuing
patterne: for no fault the moſt fault finding wit could
haue foũd, if it were not, that to the reſt of the body the
face was ſomewhat too little: but that little was ſuch a
ſparke of beauty, as was able to enflame a world of loue.
For euery thing was full of a choyce finenes, that if it
wãted any thing in maieſtie, it ſupplied it with increaſe
of pleaſure; & if at the firſt it ſtrake not admiration, it ra-
uiſhed with delight. And no indifferẽt ſoule there was,
which if it could reſiſt frõ ſubiecting it ſelf to make it his
princeſſe, that would not lõg to haue ſuch a playfelow.
As for her attire, it was coſtly and curious, though the
look (fixt with more ſadnes thẽ it ſeemed nature had be
ſtowed to any that knew her fortune) bewraied, that as
ſhe vſed thoſe ornamẽts, not for her ſelf, but to preuaile
with another, ſo ſhe feared, that all would not ſerue.

Of

9 Of a farre differing (though eſteemed equall) beautie, was the faire *Parthenia*, who next wayted on *Arteſias* triumph, though farre better ſhe might haue ſitte in the throne. For in her euery thing was goodly, and ſtately; yet ſo, that it might ſeeme that great-mindednes was but the auncient-bearer to humblenes. For her great graie eye, which might ſeem full of her owne beauties, a large, and exceedingly faire forhead, with all the reſt of her face and body, caſt in the mould of Noblenes; was yet ſo attired, as might ſhew, the miſtres thought it either not to deſerue, or not to need any exquiſite decking, hauing no adorning but cleanlines; and ſo farre from all arte, that it was full of careleſneſſe: vnleſſe that careleſneſſe it ſelfe (in ſpite of it ſelfe) grew artificiall. But *Baſilius* could not abſtaine from praiſing *Parthenia*, as the perfect picture of a womanly vertue, and wiuely faithfulnes: telling withall *Zelmane*, how he had vnderſtoode, that when in the court of *Laconia*, her picture (maintained by a certaine *Sycionian* Knight) was loſt, thorow want, rather of valour, then iuſtice: her huſband (the famous *Argalus*) would in a chafe haue gone and redeemed it with a new triall. But ſhe (more ſporting then ſorrowing for her vndeſerued champion) tolde her husbande, ſhe deſired to be beautifull in no bodies eye but his; and that ſhe would rather marre her face as euill as euer it was, then that it ſhould be a cauſe to make *Argalus* put on armour. Then would *Baſilius* haue tolde *Zelmane*, that which ſhe alredie knew, of the rare triall of their coupled affection: but the next picture made the mouth giue place to their eyes.

10 It was of a young mayd, which ſate pulling out a thorne out of a Lambs foote, with her looke ſo attentiue

tiue vppon it, as if that little foote coulde haue bene the circle of her thoughts; her apparell ſo poore, as it had nothing but the inſide to adorne it; a ſhephooke lying by her with a bottle vpon it. But with al that pouertie, beauty plaid the prince, and commanded as many harts as the greateſt Queene there did. Her beautie and her eſtate made her quicklie to be knowne to be the faire ſhepheardeſſe, *Vrania*, whom a rich knight called *Lacemon*, farre in loue with her, had vnluckely defended.

The laſt of all in place, becauſe laſt in the time of her being captiue, was *Zelmane*, daughter to the King *Plexirtus*: who at the firſt ſight ſeemed to haue ſome reſembling of *Philoclea*, but with more marking (cõparing it to the preſent *Philoclea*, who indeed had no paragon but her ſiſter) they might ſee, it was but ſuch a likeneſſe, as an vnperfect glaſſe doth giue; aunſwerable enough in ſome feitures, & colors, but erring in others. But *Zelmane* ſighing, turning to *Baſilius*, Alas ſir (ſaid ſhe) here be ſome pictures which might better become the tõbes of their Miſtreſſes, then the triumphe of *Arteſia*. It is true ſweeteſt Lady (ſaide *Baſilius*) ſome of them be dead, and ſome other captiue: But that hath happened ſo late, as it may be the Knightes that defended their beauty, knew not ſo much: without we will ſay (as in ſome harts I know it would fall out) that death it ſelfe could not blot out the image which loue hath engrauẽ in thẽ. But diuers beſides theſe (ſaid *Baſilius*) hath *Phalantus* woon, but he leaues the reſt, carying onely ſuch, who either for greatnes of eſtate, or of beauty, may iuſtly glorifie the glory of *Arteſias* triumph. 11

CHAP.

CHAP. 17.

[1] The ouerthrow of fiue Arcadian *knights.* [2] *The young ſhepheards prettie challenge.* [3] *What paſsions the ſixth knights ſoyle bredde in* Zelmane. [4] Clitophon *hardly ouermatched by* Phalantus. [5] *The ill arayed, & the black knights contention for prioritie againſt* Phalantus. [6] *The halting knights complaint againſt the black knight.* [7] Phalantus *fall by the ill furniſht knight.* [8] *The croſſe-parting of* Phalantus *with* Arteſia, [9] *and who the victor was.*

1 THus talked *Baſilius* with *Zelmane*, glad to make any matter ſubiect to ſpeake of, with his miſtreſſe, while *Phalantus* in this pompous manner, brought *Arteſia* with her gẽtlewomẽ, into one Tent, by which he had another: where they both wayted who would firſt ſtrike vpon the ſhielde, while *Baſilius* the Iudge appointed ſticklers, and trumpets, to whom the other ſhould obey. But non that day appeared, nor the next, till already it had conſumed halfe his allowance of light; but then there came in a knight, proteſting himſelfe as contrarie to him in minde, as he was in apparrell. For *Phalantus* was all in white, hauing in his baſes, and capariſon imbroidered a wauing water: at each ſide whereof he had nettings caſt ouer, in which were diuers fiſhes naturally made, & ſo pretily, that as the horſe ſtirred, the fiſhes ſeemed to ſtriue, and leape in the nette.

But the other knight, by name *Neſtor*, by birth an *Arcadian*,

cadian, & in affection vowed to the faire Shepherdeſſe, was all in black, with fire burning both vpō his armour, and horſe. His *impreſa* in his ſhield, was a fire made of Iuniper, with this word, *More eaſie, and more ſweete*. But this hote knight was cooled with a fall, which at the third courſe he receiued of *Phalantus*, leauing his picture to keepe companie with the other of the ſame ſtampe; he going away remedileſly chafing at his rebuke. The next was *Polycetes*, greatly eſteemed in *Arcadia*, for deedes he had done in armes: and much ſpoken of for the honourable loue he had long borne to *Gynecia*; which *Baſilius* himſelfe was content, not onely to ſuffer, but to be delighted with; he carried it in ſo honorable and open plainnes, ſetting to his loue no other marke, then to do her faithfull ſeruice. But neither her faire picture, nor his faire running, could warrant him from ouerthrow, and her from becomming as then the laſt of *Arteſias* victories: a thing *Gynecias* vertues would little haue recked at another time, nor then, if *Zelmane* had not ſeene it. But her champion went away aſmuch diſcomforted, as diſcomfited. Then *Telamon* for *Polixena*, & *Eurimelō* for *Elpine*, and *Leon* for *Zoana*; all braue Knights, all faire Ladies, with their going down, lifted vp the ballance of his praiſe for actiuitie, and hers for fairenes.

Vpon whoſe loſſe as the beholders were talking, 2
there comes into the place where they ranne, a ſhepheard ſtripling (for his height made him more then a boy, & his face would not allow him a mā) brown of cō plexiō (whether by nature, or by the Suns familiaritie) but very louely withall; for the reſt ſo perfectly proportioned, that Nature ſhewed, ſhe dooth not like men

who

who ſlubber vp matters of meane account. And well might his proportion be iudged; for he had nothing vpon him but a paire of ſloppes, and vpon his bodie a Gote-ſkinne, which he caſt ouer his ſhoulder, doing all things with ſo pretie grace, that it ſeemed ignorance could not make him do amiſſe, becauſe he had a hart to do well, holding in his right hand a long ſtaffe, & ſo cõming with a looke ful of amiable fiercenes, as in whom choller could not take away the ſweetnes, he came towards the king, and making a reuerence (which in him was comely becauſe it was kindly) My liege Lord (ſaid he) I pray you heare a few words; for my hart wil break if I ſay not my minde to you. I ſee here the picture of *Vrania*, which (I cannot tell how, nor why) theſe men when they fall downe, they ſay is not ſo faire as yonder gay woman. But pray God, I may neuer ſee my olde mother aliue, if I think ſhe be any more match to *Vrania*, then a Goate is to a fine Lambe; or then the Dog that keepes our flock at home, is like your white Greihounde, that pulled down the Stagge laſt day.

And therefore I pray you let me be dreſt as they be, and my hart giues me, I ſhall tumble him on the earth: for indeede he might aſwell ſay, that a Couſlip is as white as a Lillie: or els I care not let him come with his great ſtaffe, and I with this in my hand, and you ſhall ſee what I can doo to him. *Baſilius* ſawe it was the fine ſhepheard *Lalus*, whom once he had afore him in Paſtorall ſportes, and had greatly delighted in his wit full of prety ſimplicitie, and therefore laughing at his earneſtneſſe, he bad him be content, ſince he ſawe the pictures of ſo great Queenes, were faine to follow their champions fortune. But *Lalus* (euen weeping ripe) went

went among the reſt, longing to ſee ſome bodie that would reuenge *Vranias* wronge; and praying hartely for euery bodie that ran againſt *Phalantus*, then began to feele pouerty, that he could not ſet him ſelfe to that triall. But by and by, euen when the Sunne (like a noble harte) began to ſhew his greateſt countenaunce in his loweſt eſtate, there came in a Knight, called *Phebilus*, a Gentleman of that coũtry, for whom hatefull fortune had borrowed the dart of Loue, to make him miſerable by the ſight of *Philoclea*. For he had euen from her infancie loued her, and was ſtriken by her, before ſhe was able to knowe what quiuer of arrowes her eyes caried; but he loued and diſpaired; and the more he diſpaired, the more he loued. He ſawe his owne vnworthines, and thereby made her excellencie haue more terrible aſpect vpon him: he was ſo ſecrete therein, as not daring to be open, that to no creature he euer ſpake of it, but his hart made ſuch ſilent complaints within it ſelfe, that while all his ſenſes were attentiue thereto, cunning iudges might perceaue his minde: ſo that he was knowne to loue though he denied, or rather was the better knowne, becauſe he denied it. His armour and his attire was of a Sea couller, his *Impreſa*, the fiſhe called *Sepia*, which being in the nette caſtes a blacke inke about it ſelfe, that in the darkeneſſe thereof it may eſcape: his worde was, *Not ſo. Philocleas* picture with almoſt an idolatrous magnificence was borne in by him. But ſtreight ielouſie was a harbinger for diſdaine in *Zelmanes* harte, when ſhe ſawe any (but her ſelfe) ſhould be auowed a champion for *Philoclea*: in ſomuch that ſhe wiſht his ſhame, till ſhe ſawe him ſhamed: for at the ſecond courſe he

was ſtriken quite from out of the ſaddle, ſo full of grief, and rage withall, that he would faine with the ſworde haue reuenged it: but that being contrary to the order ſet downe, *Baſilius* would not ſuffer; ſo that wiſhing him ſelfe in the bottome of the earth, he went his way, leauing *Zelmane* no leſſe angry with his los, thē ſhe would haue beene with his victory. For if ſhe thought before a riuals prayſe woulde haue angred her, her Ladies diſgrace did make her much more forget what ſhe then thought, while that paſſion raigned ſo much the more, as ſhe ſaw a pretie bluſh in *Philocleas* cheekes bewray a modeſt diſcontentment. But the night commaunded truce for thoſe ſportes, & *Phalantus* (though intreated) would not leaue *Arteſia*, who in no caſe would come into the houſe, hauing (as it were) ſuckte of *Cecropias* breath a mortall miſlike againſt *Baſilius*.

4 But the night meaſured by the ſhortell of ſleepe, was ſoone paſt ouer, and the next morning had giuen the watchful ſtars leaue to take their reſt, when a trumpet ſummoned *Baſilius* to play his iudges parte: which he did, taking his wife & daughters with him; *Zelmane* hauing lockt her doore, ſo as they would not trouble her for that time: for already there was a Knight in the fielde, readie to proue *Helen* of *Corinth* had receaued great iniury, both by the erring iudgement of the challenger, and the vnlucky weakeneſſe of her former defender. The new Knight was quickly knowne to be *Clitophon* (*Kalāders* ſonne of *Baſilius*-his ſiſter), by his armour, which al guilt, was ſo well hādled, that it ſhewed like a glittering ſande and grauell, interlaced with ſiluer riuers: his deuice he had put in the picture of *Helen* which hee defended. It was the *Ermion*, with a

ſpeach

ſpeach that ſignified, *Rather dead then ſpotted*. But in that armour ſince he had parted frō *Helen* (who would no longer his companie, finding him to enter into termes of affection,) he had performed ſo honourable actiōs, (ſtil ſeeking for his two friends by the names of *Palladius* and *Daiphātus*,) that though his face were couered, his being was diſcouered, which yet *Baſilius* (which had brought him vp in his court) would not ſeeme to do; but glad to ſee triall of him, of whom he had heard very well, he commaunded the trumpets to ſound; to which the two braue Knights obeying, they performed their courſes, breaking their ſix ſtaues, with ſo good, both skill in the hitting, & grace in the maner, that it bred ſome difficulty in the iudgement. But *Baſilius* in the ende gaue ſentence againſt *Clitophon*, becauſe *Phalantus* had broken more ſtaues vpō the head, & that once *Clitophon* had receiued ſuch a blowe, that he had loſt the raines of his horſe, with his head well nie touching the crooper of the horſe. But *Clitophon* was ſo angry with the iudgemēt, (wherin he thought he had receiued wrōg) that he omitted his duty to his Prince, & vncle; and ſodainly went his way, ſtill in the queſt of them, whom as then he had left by ſeeking: & ſo yeelded the field to the next commer.

Who comming in about two houres after, was no 5
leſſe marked then al the reſt before, becauſe he had nothing worth the marking. For he had neither picture, nor deuice, his armour of as old a faſhion (beſides the ruſtie pooreneſſe,) that it might better ſeeme a monument of his graundfathes courage: about his middle he had in ſteede of baſes, a long cloake of ſilke, which as vnhandſomely, as it needes muſt, became the wea-

rer: ſo that all that lookt on, meaſured his length on the earth alreadie, ſince he had to meete one who had bene victorious of ſo many gallants. But he went on towardes the ſhielde, and with a ſober grace ſtrake it; but as he let his ſworde fall vpon it, another Knight, all in blacke came ruſtling in, who ſtrake the ſhield almoſt aſſoone as he, and ſo ſtrongly, that he brake the ſhield in two: the ill appointed Knight (for ſo the beholders called him) angrie with that, (as he accounted,) inſolent iniurie to himſelfe, hit him ſuch a ſound blowe, that they that looked on ſaide, it well became a rude arme. The other aunſwered him againe in the ſame caſe, ſo that Launces were put to ſilence, the ſwordes were ſo buſie.

But *Phalantus* angry of this defacing his ſhield, came vpon the blacke Knight, and with the pommell of his ſworde ſet fire to his eyes, which preſently was reuenged, not onely by the Blacke, but the ill apparelled Knight, who diſdained another ſhould enter into his quarrell, ſo as, who euer ſawe a matachin daunce to imitate fighting, this was a fight that did imitate the matachin: for they being but three that fought, euerie one had aduerſaries, ſtriking him, who ſtrooke the third, and reuenging perhaps that of him, which he had receaued of the other. But *Baſilius* riſing himſelfe to parte them, the ſticklers authoritie ſcarſlie able to perſwade cholerike hearers; and parte them he did.

But before he could determine, comes in a fourth,
6 halting on foote, who complained to *Baſilius*, demaunding iuſtice on the blacke Knight, for hauing by force taken away the picture of *Pamela* from him, whiche in little forme he ware in a Tablet, and couered with

ſilke

ſilke had faſtened it to his Helmet, purpoſing for want of a bigger, to paragon the little one with *Arteſias* length, not doubting but in that little quantitie, the excellencie of that would ſhine thorow the weakeneſſe of the other: as the ſmalleſt ſtarre dothe thorow the whole Element of fire. And by the way he had met with this blacke Knight, who had (as he ſaid) robbed him of it. The iniurie ſeemed grieuous, but when it came fully to be examined, it was found, that the halting Knight meeting the other, asking the cauſe of his going thetherward, and finding it was to defend *Pamelas* diuine beautie againſt *Arteſias*, with a prowde iollitie commaunded him to leaue that quarrell onely for him, who was onely worthy to enter into it. But the blacke Knight obeying no ſuch cõmandements, they fell to ſuch a bickering, that he gat a halting, & loſt his picture. This vnderſtood by *Baſilius*, he told him he was now fitter to looke to his owne bodie, then an others picture: & ſo (vncomforted therein) ſent him away to learn of *Æſculapius* that he was not fit for *Venus*.

But then the queſtion ariſing who ſhould be the former againſt *Phalantus*, of the blacke, or the ill apparelled Knight (who now had gotten the reputation of ſome ſturdy loute, he had ſo well defended himſelfe) of the one ſide, was alleged the hauing a picture which the other wanted: of the other ſide, the firſt ſtriking the ſhield; but the concluſion was, that the ill apparelled Knight ſhould haue the precedence, if he deliuered the figure of his miſtreſſe to *Phalantus*; who aſking him for it, Certainely (ſaid he) her liueliеſt picture, (if you could ſee it) is in my hart, & the beſt cõpariſon I could make of her, is of the Sunne & of all other the

heauenly beauties. But becauſe perhappes all eyes cannot taſte the Diuinitie of her beautie, and would rather be dazeled, then taught by the light, if it bee not clowded by ſome meaner thing; know you then, that I defend that ſame Ladie, whoſe image *Phebilus* ſo feebly loſt yeſternight, and in ſteede of an other (if you ouercome mee) you ſhall haue me your ſlaue to carrie that image in your miſtreſſe triumphe. *Phalantus* eaſilie agreed to the bargaine, which alreadie he made his owne.

7 But when it came to the triall, the ill apparelled Knight chooſing out the greateſt ſtaues in all the ſtore, at the firſt courſe gaue his head ſuch a remembraunce, that he loſt almoſt his remembraunce, he him ſelfe receyuing the incounter of *Phalantus* without any extraordinarie motion. And at the ſeconde gaue him ſuch a counterbuffe, that becauſe *Phalantus* was ſo perfite a horſeman, as not to be driuen from the ſaddle, the ſaddle with broken girthes was driuen from the horſe: *Phalantus* remaining angrie and amazed, becauſe now being come almoſt to the laſt of his promiſed enterpriſe, that diſgrace befell him, which he had neuer before knowne.

8 But the victorie being by the iudges giuen, and the trumpets witneſſed to the ill apparelled Knight; *Phalantus* diſgrace was ingrieued in lieu of comforte by *Arteſia*; who telling him ſhe neuer lookt for other, bad him ſeeke ſome other miſtreſſe. He excuſing himſelfe, and turning ouer the fault to Fortune, Then let that be your ill Fortune too (ſaide ſhe) that you haue loſt me.

Nay truely Madame (ſaide *Phalantus*) it ſhall not be

be ſo : for I thinke the loſſe of ſuch a Miſtreſſe will prooue a great gaine : and ſo concluded; to the ſporte of *Baſilius*, to ſee young folkes loue, that came in maskt with ſo great pompe, goe out with ſo little conſtancie. But *Thalantus* firſt profeſſing great ſeruice to *Baſilius* for his curteous intermitting his ſolitary courſe for his ſake, would yet conduct *Arteſia* to the caſtle of *Cecropia*, whether ſhe deſired to goe : vowing in himſelfe, that neither hart, nor mouth-loue, ſhould euer any more intangle him. And with that reſolution he left the company.

Whence all being diſmiſſed (among whom the black knight wēt away repyning at his luck, that had kept him frō winning the honor, as he knew he ſhuld haue don, to the picture of *Pamela*) the ill apparelled knight (who was only deſired to ſtay, becauſe *Baſilius* meant to ſhew him to *Zelmane*) puld of his Helmet, & then was knowē himſelfe to be *Zelmane*: who that morning (as ſhe told) while the others were buſie, had ſtolne out to the Princes ſtable, which was a mile of frō the Lodge, had gotten a horſe (they knowing it was *Baſilius* pleaſure ſhe ſhould be obeyed) & borrowing that homely armour for want of a better, had come vpon the ſpur to redeem *Philocleas* picture, which ſhe ſaid, ſhe could not beare, (being one of that little wilderneſſe-company) ſhould be in captiuitie, if the cunning ſhe had learned in her coūtrye of the noble *Amazons*, could withſtād it: & vnder that pretext faine ſhe would haue giuē a ſecret paſport to her affection. But this act painted at one inſtant redneſſe in *Philocleas* face, and paleneſſe in *Gynecias*, but broght forth no other coūtenāces but of admiratiō, no ſpeches but of cōmēdatiōs: al theſe few (beſides loue) 9

thinking they honoured themſelues, in honouring ſo accompliſhed a perſon as *Zelmane*: whom dayly they ſought with ſome or other ſports to delight, for which purpoſe *Baſilius* had in a houſe not farre of, ſeruaunts, who though they came not vncalled, yet at call were redye.

CHAP. 18.

[1] Muſidorus *diſguiſed.* [2] *His ſong.* [3] *His loue,* [4] *the cauſe thereof.* [5] *His courſe therein.*

AND ſo many daies were ſpent, and many waies vſed, while *Zelmane* was like one that ſtoode in a tree waiting a good occaſiō to ſhoot, & *Gynecia* a blauncher, which kept the deareſt deere from her. But the day being come, which according to an apointed courſe, the ſheapheards were to aſſēble, & make their paſtorall ſports afore *Baſilius*: *Zelmane* (fearing, leſt many eyes, and comming diuers waies, might 1 hap to ſpy *Muſidorus*) went out to warne him thereof.

But before ſhe could come to the Arbour, ſhe ſawe walking from her-ward, a man in ſheapperdiſh apparrel who being in the ſight of the Lodge it might ſeeme he was allowed there. A lōg cloke he had on, but that caſt vnder his right arme, wherein he held a ſhephooke, ſo finely wrought, that it gaue a brauery to pouerty; & his rayments, though they were meane, yet receiued they hanſomnes by the grace of the wearer; though he himſelfe

ſelfe went but a kinde of languiſhing pace, with his eies ſomewhat caſt vp to heauen, as though his fancyes ſtraue to mount higher; ſometimes throwne downe to the ground, as if the earth could not beare the burthens of his ſorrowes; at length, with a lamētable tune, he ſonge theſe fewe verſes.

Come ſhepheards weedes, become your maſters minde: 2
Yeld outward ſhew, what inward chance he tryes:
Nor be abaſht, ſince ſuch a gueſt you finde,
Whoſe ſtrongeſt hope in your weake comfort lyes.

Come ſhepheards weedes, attend my woefull cryes:
Diſuſe your ſelues from ſweete Menalcas *voice:*
For other be thoſe tunes which ſorrow tyes,
From thoſe cleere notes which freely may reioyce.
Then powre out plaint, and in one word ſay this:
Helples his plaint, who ſpoyles himſelfe of bliſſe.

And hauing ended, he ſtrake himſelfe on the breſt; ſaying, O miſerable wretch, whether do thy deſtenies guide thee? The voice made *Zelmane* haſten her pace to ouertake him: which hauing done, ſhe plainly perceaued that it was her deare friend *Muſidorus*, whereat maruailing not a little, ſhe demaunded of him, whether the Goddeſſe of thoſe woods had ſuch a powre to trāſforme euery body, or whether, as in all enterpriſes elſe he had done, he meant thus to match her in this newe alteration.

Alas, (ſaid *Muſidorus*) what ſhall I ſay, who am loth 3
to ſay, and yet faine would haue ſaid? I find indeed, that all is but lip-wiſdome, which wants experience. I now

woe

(woe is me) do try what loue can doo. O *Zelmane*, who will reſiſt it, muſt either haue no witte, or put out his eyes: can any man reſiſt his creation? certainely by loue we are made, and to loue we are made. Beaſts onely cannot diſcerne beauty, and let them be in the role of Beaſts that doo not honor it. The perfect friendſhip *Zelmane* bare him, and the great pitie ſhe (by good triall) had of ſuch caſes, coulde not keepe her from ſmiling at him, remembring how vehemently he had cryed out againſt the folly of louers. And therefore a litle to puniſh him, Why how now deere couſin (ſaid ſhe) you that were laſt day ſo hie in Pulpit againſt louers, are you now become ſo meane an auditor? Remember that loue is a paſſion; and that a woorthie mans reaſon muſt euer haue the maſterhood. I recant, I recant (cryed *Maſidorus*,) and withall falling downe proſtrate, O thou celeſtial, or infernal ſpirit of Loue, or what other heauēly or helliſh title thou liſt to haue (for effects of both I finde in my ſelfe) haue compaſſion of me, and let thy glory be as great in pardoning them that be ſubmitted to thee, as in conquering thoſe that were rebellious. No, no ſaide *Zelmane*, I ſee you well enough: you make but an enterlude of my miſhaps, and doo but counterfaite thus, to make me ſee the deformitie of my paſſions: but take heede, that this ieſt do not one day turne to earneſt. Now I beſeech thee (ſaide *Muſidorus* taking her faſt by the hand) euen for the truth of our friendſhip, of which (if I be not altogether an vnhappy man) thou haſt ſome remembraunce, & by thoſe ſacred flames which (I know) haue likewiſe neerely touched thee; make no ieſt of that, which hath ſo erneſtly pearced me thorow, nor let that

be

be light to thee, which is to me ſo burdenous, that I am not able to beare it. *Muſidorus* both in words & behauiour, did ſo liuely deliuer out his inward grief, that *Zelmane* found indeede, he was thorowly woũded: but there roſe a new ielouſy in her minde, leſt it might be with *Philoclea*, by whom, as *Zelmane* thought, in right all hartes and eyes ſhould be inherited. And therefore deſirous to be cleered of that doubt, *Muſidorus* ſhortly (as in haſt and full of paſſionate perplexednes,) thus recounted his caſe vnto her.

The day (ſaid he) I parted from you, I being in mind 4
to returne to a towne, from whence I came hether, my horſe being before tired, would ſcarce beare me a mile hence: where being benighted, the light of a candle (I ſaw a good way of) guided me to a young ſhepheards houſe, by name *Menalcas*, who ſeing me to be a ſtraying ſtrãger, with the right honeſt hoſpitality which ſeemes to be harboured in the *Arcadian* breſts, & though not with curious coſtlines, yet with cleanly ſufficiencie, entertained me: and hauing by talke with him, found the manner of the countrie, ſomething more in particular, then I had by *Kalanders* report, I agreed to ſoiourne with him in ſecret, which he faithfully promiſed to obſerue. And ſo hether to your arbour diuers times repaired: & here by your meanes had the ſight (O that it had neuer bene ſo, nay, O that it might euer be ſo) of a Goddeſſe, who in a definite compaſſe can ſet forth infinite beauty. All this while *Zelmane* was racked with iealouſie. But he went on, For (ſaide he) I lying cloſe, and in truth thinking of you, and ſaying thus to my ſelfe, O ſweet *Pyrocles*, how art thou bewitched? where is thy vertue? where is the vſe of thy reaſon? how much

am

am I inferior to thee in the ſtate of the mind? And yet know I, that all the heauens cannot bring me to ſuch thraldome. Scarcely, thinke I, had I ſpoken this word, when the Ladies came foorth; at which ſight, I thinke the very words returned back again to ſtrike my ſouel; at leaſt, an vnmeaſurable ſting I felt in my ſelfe, that I had ſpoken ſuch words. At which ſight ſaid *Zelmane*, not able to beare him any longer. O (ſayd *Muſidorus*) I know your ſuſpition; No, no, baniſh all ſuch feare, it was, it is, and muſt be *Pamela*. Then all is ſafe (ſayd *Zelmane*) proceede, deare *Muſidorus*. I will not (ſaid he) impute it to my late ſolitarie life (which yet is prone to affections) nor, to the much thinking of you (though that cald the conſideratiõ of loue into my mind, which before I euer neglected) nor to the exaltation of *Venus*; nor reuenge of *Cupid*; but euen to her, who is the Planet, nay, the Goddeſſe, againſt which, the onely ſhielde muſt be my Sepulchre. When I firſt ſaw her, I was preſently ſtriken, and I (like a fooliſh child, that when any thing hits him, wil ſtrike himſelfe again vpon it) would needs looke againe; as though I would perſwade mine eyes, that they were deceiued. But alas, well haue I found, that Loue to a yeelding hart is a king; but to a reſiſting, is a tyrant. The more with arguments I ſhaked the ſtake, which he had planted in the grounde of my harte, the deeper ſtill it ſanke into it. But what meane I to ſpeake of the cauſes of my loue, which is as impoſſible to deſcribe, as to meaſure the backſide of heauen? Let this word ſuffice, I loue.

5 And that you may know I doo ſo, it was I that came in black armour to defende her picture, where I was both preuented, and beaten by you. And ſo, I that waited

ted here to do you ſeruice, haue now my ſelf moſt need of ſuccor. But wherupon got you your ſelf this aparrel? ſaid *Zelmane*. I had forgotten to tel you (ſaid *Muſidorus*) though that were one principall matter of my ſpeech; ſo much am I now maſter of my owne minde. But thus it happened: being returned to *Menalcas* houſe, full of tormenting deſire, after a while faynting vnder the weight, my courage ſtird vp my wit to ſeeke for ſome releefe, before I yeelded to periſh. At laſt this came into my head, that very euening, that I had to no purpoſe laſt vſed my horſe and armour. I tolde *Menalcas*, that I was a *Theſſalian* Gentle-man, who by miſchaunce hauing killed a great fauorit of the Prince of that coũtry, was purſued ſo cruelly, that in no place, but either by fauour, or corruption, they would obtaine my deſtruction; and that therefore I was determined (till the fury of my perſecutions might be aſſwaged) to diſguiſe my ſelfe among the ſhephadrs of *Arcadia*, & (if it were poſſible) to be one of them that were allowed the Princes preſence; Becauſe if the woorſt ſhould fall, that I were diſcouered, yet hauing gotten the acquaintance of the Prince, it might happen to moue his hart to protect me. *Menalcas* (being of an honeſt diſpoſitiõ) pittied my caſe, which my face through my inward torment made credible; and ſo (I giuing him largely for it) let me haue this rayment, inſtructing me in all the particularities, touching himſelfe, or my ſelfe, which I deſired to know: yet not truſting ſo much to his conſtancie, as that I would lay my life, and life of my life, vpon it, I hired him to goe into *Theſſalia* to a friend of mine, & to deliuer him a letter frõ me; coniuring him to bring me as ſpeedy an anſweere as he could, becauſe it imported me

me greatly to know, whether certaine of my friendes did yet poſſeſſe any fauour, whoſe interceſſiõs I might vſe for my reſtitution. He willingly tooke my letter, which being well ſealed, indeed conteyned other matter. For I wrote to my truſtie ſeruant *Calodoulus* (whom you know) that aſſoone as he had deliuered the letter, he ſhould keep him priſoner in his houſe, not ſuffering him to haue conference with any body, till he knewe my further pleaſure: in all other reſpects that he ſhould vſe him as my brother. And thus is *Menalcas* gone, and I here a poore ſhepheard; more proud of this eſtate, thẽ of any kingdom: ſo manifeſt it is, that the higheſt point outward things can bring one vnto, is the contentmẽt of the mind: with which, no eſtate; without which, all eſtates be miſerable. Now haue I choſen this day, becauſe (as *Menalcas* tolde me) the other ſhepheards are called to make their ſports, and hope that you wil with your credite, finde meanes to get me allowed among them. You neede not doubt (anſwered *Zelmane*) but that I will be your good miſtreſſe: marrie the beſt way of dealing muſt be by *Dametas*, who ſince his blunt braine hath perceiued ſõme fauour the Prince dooth beare vnto me (as without doubt the moſt ſeruile flatterie is lodged moſt eaſilie in the groſſeſt capacitie; for their ordinarie conceite draweth a yeelding to their greaters, and then haue they not witte to learne the right degrees of duetie) is much more ſeruiceable vnto me, then I can finde any cauſe to wiſh him. And therefore diſpaire not to winne him: for euery preſent occaſion will catch his ſenſes, and his ſenſes are maſters of his ſillie mind; onely reuerence him, and reward him, and with that bridle and ſaddle you ſhall well ride him.

O heauen and earth (ſaid *Muſidorus*) to what a paſſe are our mindes brought, that from the right line of vertue, are wryed to theſe crooked ſhifts? But ô Loue, it is thou that dooſt it: thou changeſt name vpõ name; thou diſguiſeſt our bodies, and disfigureſt our mindes. But in deed thou haſt reaſon, for though the wayes be foule, the iourneys end is moſt faire and honourable.

CHAP. 19.

[1] *The meanes of* Muſidorus *his apprentiſage vnto* Dametas. [2] *The preparation and place of the Paſtorals.* [3] *The Lyons aſſault on* Philoclea, *and death by* Zelmane. [4] *The ſhee beares on* Pamela, *and death by* Dorus. [5] *The* Io Pæan *of* Dametas, [6] *and his ſcape from the beare.* [7] *The victors praiſes.* [8] *Whence thoſe beaſts were ſent.*

NO more ſweete *Muſidorus* (ſaid *Zelmane*) of theſe philoſophies; for here comes the very perſon of *Dametas*. And ſo he did in deed, with a ſword by his ſide, a forreſt-bill on his neck, and a chopping-knife vnder his girdle: in which prouided ſorte he had euer gone, ſince the feare *Zelmane* had put him in. But he no ſooner ſawe her, but with head and armes he laid his reuerence afore her; inough to haue made any man forſweare all courteſie. And then in *Baſilius* name, he did inuite her to walke downe to the place, where that day they were to haue the Paſtoralles. 1

But

But when he spied *Musidorus* to be none of the shepheards allowed in that place, he would faine haue perswaded himselfe to vtter some anger, but that he durste not; yet muttering, and champing, as though his cudde troubled him; he gaue occasion to *Musidorus* to come neare him, and feine this tale of his owne life: That he was a younger brother of the shepheard *Menalcas*, by name *Dorus*, sent by his father in his tender age to *Athens*, there to learne some cunning more then ordinarie, that he might be the better liked of the Prince: and that after his fathers death, his brother *Menalcas* (latelie gone thether to fetch him home) was also deceased: where (vpon his death) he had charged him to seek the seruice of *Dametas*, and to be wholy, and euer guyded by him; as one in whose iudgement and integritie, the Prince had singular confidence. For token whereof, he gaue to *Dametas* a good summe of golde in redy coine, which *Menelcas* had bequeathed vnto him, vpon condition he should receiue this poore *Dorus* into his seruice, that his mind and manner might grow the better by his dayly example. *Dametas*, that of all manners of stile could best conceiue of golden eloquence, being withall tickled by *Musidorus* prayses, had his brayne so turned, that he became slaue to that, which he, that shewed to be his seruant, offered to giue him: yet for countenance sake, he seemed very squeimish, in respect of the charge he had of the Princesse *Pamela*. But such was the secrete operation of the golde, helped with the perswasion of the Amazon *Zelmane*, (who sayde it was pittie so handsome a young man should be any where els, then with so good a master) that in the ende he agreed (if that day he behaued himselfe so to the lyking

of

of *Basilius*, as he might be cõtented) that then he would receiue him into his seruice.

And thus went they to the Lodge, where they foũd 2
Gynecia and her daughters ready to go to the field, to delight themselues there a while, vntill the shepheards comming: whether also taking *Zelmane* with them, as they went, *Dametas* told them of *Dorus*, and desired he might be accepted there that day, in steed of his brother *Menalcas*. As for *Basilius*, he staied behind to bring the shepherds, with whom he meant to cõfer, to breed the better *Zelmanes* liking (which he onely regarded) while the other beautifull band came to the faire field, appointed for the shepherdish pastimes. It was indeed a place of delight; for thorow the middest of it, there ran a sweete brooke, which did both hold the eye open with her azure streams, & yet seeke to close the eie with the purling noise it made vpon the pibble stones it ran ouer: the field it self being set in some places with roses, & in al the rest constantly preseruing a florishing greene; the Roses added such a ruddy shew vnto it, as though the field were bashfull at his owne beautie: about it (as if it had bene to inclose a *Theater*) grew such a sort of trees, as eyther excellency of fruit, statelines of grouth, continuall greennes, or poeticall fancies haue made at any time famous. In most part of which there had bene framed by art such pleasant arbors, that (one tree to tree, answering another) they became a gallery aloft from almost round about, which below gaue a perfect shadow, a pleasant refuge then from the cholericke looke of *Phœbus*.

In this place while *Gynecia* walked hard by them, ca- 3
rying many vnquiet cõtentions about her, the Ladies

ſate them downe, inquiring many queſtiõs of the ſhepheard *Dorus*; who (keeping his eie ſtill vpon *Pamela*) anſwered with ſuch a trembling voice, & abaſhed coũtenance, & oftentimes ſo far from the matter, that it was ſome ſport to the young Ladies, thinking it want of education, which made him ſo diſcountenaunced with vnwoonted preſence. But *Zelmane* that ſaw in him the glaſſe of her owne miſerie, taking the hande of *Philoclea*, and with burning kiſſes ſetting it cloſe to her lips (as if it ſhould ſtande there like a hand in the margine of a Booke, to note ſome ſaying worthy to be marked) began to ſpeake theſe wordes. O Loue, ſince thou art ſo changeable in mens eſtates, how art thou ſo conſtãt in their torments? when ſodainly there came out of a wood a monſtrous Lion, with a ſhe Beare not far from him, of litle leſſe fiercenes, which (as they gheſt) hauing bene hũted in Foreſts far of, were by chaũce come thether, where before ſuch beaſtes had neuer bene ſeene. Then care, not feare; or feare, not for themſelues, altered ſome thing the coũtenances of the two Louers, but ſo, as any man might perceiue, was rather an aſſembling of powers, then diſmaiednes of courage. *Philoclea* no ſooner eſpied the Liõ, but that obeying the cõmandement of feare, ſhe lept vp, & ran to the lodge-ward, as faſt as her delicate legs could carrie her, while *Dorus* drew *Pamela* behind a tree, where ſhe ſtood quaking like the Partridge, on which the Hawke is euẽ ready to ſeaze. But the Lion (ſeing *Philoclea* run away) bent his race to her-ward, & was ready to ſeaze him ſelfe on the pray, when *Zelmane* (to whome daunger then was a cauſe of dreadleſnes, all the cõpoſitions of her elemẽts being nothing but fierie) with ſwiftneſſe of deſire croſt him,

him,and with force of affection ſtrake him ſuch a blow vpon his chine,that ſhe opened al his body: wherwith the valiant beaſt turning vpō her with open iawes, ſhe gaue him ſuch a thruſt thorow his breſt, that al the Liō could do, was with his paw to teare of the mantle and ſleeue of *Zelmane*, with a little ſcratch, rather then a wound; his death-blow hauing takē away the effect of his force. But there withall he fell downe, & gaue *Zelmane* leaſure to take of his head,to carrie it for a preſent to her Ladie *Philoclea:* who all this while (not knowing what was done behind her)kept on her courſe,like *Arethuſa* when ſhe ran from *Alpheus*; her light apparell being carried vp with the winde, that much of thoſe beauties ſhe would at another time haue willingly hidden,was preſent to the ſight of the twiſe wounded *Zelmane*.Which made *Zelmane* not folow her ouer haſtily, leſt ſhe ſhould too ſoone depriue her ſelfe of that pleaſure: But carying the Lions head in her hand, did not fully ouertake her, till they came to the preſence of *Baſilius*.Nether were they lōg there,but that *Gynecia* came thether alſo: who had bene in ſuch a traunce of muſing, that *Zelmane* was fighting with the Lion, before ſhe knew of any Lions cōming: but then affection reſiſting, and the ſoone ending of the fight preuenting all extremitie of feare, ſhe marked *Zelmanes* fighting. And when the Lions head was of, as *Zelmane* ran after *Philoclea*, ſo ſhe could not find in her hart but run after *Zelmane*: ſo that it was a new ſight, Fortune had prepared to thoſe woods, to ſee theſe great perſonages thus runne one after the other: each carried forward with an inwarde violence: *Philoclea* with ſuch feare, that ſhe thought ſhe was ſtill in the Lions mouth:

Zelmane with an eager and impatient delight, *Gynecia* with wings of Loue, flying they neither knew, nor cared to know whether. But now, being all come before *Baſilius* amazed with this ſight, and feare hauing ſuch poſſeſſiō in the faire *Philoclea*, that her bloud durſt not yet to come to her face, to take away the name of paleneſſe from hec moſt pure whitenes, *Zelmane* kneeled down, and preſented the Lions head vnto her. Only Ladie (ſaid ſhe) here ſee you the puniſhment of that vnnatural beaſt, which cōtrary to her owne kind wold haue wronged Princes bloud, guided with ſuch traiterous eies, as durſt rebell againſt your beauty. Happy am I, and my beautie both (anſwered the ſweete *Philoclea* then bluſhing, for feare had bequeathed his roome to his kinſman baſhfulnes) that you excellent *Amazon*, were there to teach him good manners. And euen thankes to that beautie (anſwered *Zelmane*) which can giue an edge to the blunteſt ſwordes? There *Philoclea* told her father, how it had hapned: but as ſhe had turned her eyes in her tale to *Zelmane*, ſhe perceiued ſome bloud vpō *Zelmanes* ſhoulder, ſo that ſtarting with the louely grace of pitty, ſhe ſhewed it to her Father and mother: who, as the nurſe ſometimes with ouer-much kiſſing may forget to giue the babe ſucke, ſo had they with too much delighting, in beholding and prayſing *Zelmane*, left of to marke whether ſhe needed ſuccour. But then they ran both vnto her, like a father and mother to an onely childe, and (though *Zelmane* aſſured them, it was nothing) would needes ſee it; *Gynecia* hauing skill in ſurgery, an arte in thoſe daies much eſteemed, becauſe it ſerued to vertuous courage, which euē Ladies would (euē with the contēpt of courage) ſeeme

to

to cheriſh. But looking vpon it (which gaue more inward bleeding woũds to *Zelmane*, for ſhe might ſometimes feele *Philocleas* touch, whiles ſhe helped her mother) ſhe found it was indeed of no great importance: yet applied ſhe a pretious baulme vnto it, of power to heale a greater griefe.

But euen then, & not before, they remẽbred *Pamela*, 4
& therefore *Zelmane* (thinking of her friend *Dorus*) was running back to be ſatisfied, whẽ they might all ſee *Pamela* cõming between *Dorus* & *Dametas*, hauing in her hãd the paw of a Beare, which the ſhepheard *Dorus* had newly preſented vnto her, deſiring her to accept it, as of ſuch a beaſt, which though ſhe deſerued death for her preſumption, yet was her will to be eſteemed, ſince ſhe could make ſo ſweet a choice. *Dametas* for his part came piping and dauncing, the merieſt man in a pariſh. But whẽ he came ſo neere, as he might be heard of *Baſilius*, he would needs breake thorow his eares with this ioyfull ſong of their good ſucceſſe.

NOw thanked be the great God Pan, 5
which thus preſerues my loued life:
Thanked be I that keepe a man,
who ended hath this fearefull ſtrife:
For if my man muſt praiſes haue,
what then muſt I that keepe the knaue?

For as the Moone the eies doth pleaſe,
with gentle beames not hurting ſight:
Yet hath ſir Sunne the greateſt praiſe,
becauſe from him doth come her light:
So if my man muſt praiſes haue,
what then muſt I that keepe the knaue?

4 Being al now come together,& all deſirous to know each others aduẽtures,*Pamelas* noble hart would needs gratefully make knowne the valiãt mean of her ſafety: which (directing her ſpeach to her mother) ſhe did in this mãner.As ſoone(ſaid ſhe)as ye were all run away, and that I hoped to be in ſafetie, there came out of the ſame woods a foule horrible Beare, which(fearing belike to deale while the Lion was preſent,as ſoone as he was gone) came furiouſly towardes the place where I was,and this youug ſhepheard left alone by me;I truly (not guilty of any wiſedome, which ſince they lay to my charge,becauſe they ſay,it is the beſt refuge againſt that beaſt, but euẽ pure feare bringing forth that effect of wiſedome) fell downe flat of my face, needing not coũterfait being dead,for indeed I was litle better. But this ſhepheard hauing no other weapon,but that knife you ſee,ſtanding before the place where I lay,ſo behaued him ſelfe,that the firſt ſight I had (when I thought my ſelfe nearer *Charons* ferry,)was the ſhepheard ſhewing me his bloudy knife in token of victory. I pray you (ſaide *Zelmane*,ſpeaking to *Dorus*,whoſe valour ſhe was carefull to haue manifeſted) in what ſorte, ſo ill weaponed, could you atchiue this enterpriſe? Noble Ladie (ſaide *Dorus*) the manner of theſe beaſtes fighting with any man,is to ſtande vp vpon their hinder feete: and ſo this did,& being ready to giue mẹ a ſhrewd imbracement,I thinke, the God *Pan*, (euer carefull of the chiefe bleſſings of *Arcadia*) guided my hand ſo iuſt to the hart of the beaſt,that neither ſhe could once touch me,nor(which is the only matter in this worthy remẽbrãce)breed any dãger to the Princeſſe. For my part,I am rather(withall ſubiected humblenes)to thanke her excellencies, ſince the duety thereunto gaue me harte

to

to ſaue my ſelfe, then to receiue thankes for a deede, which was her onely inſpiring. And this *Dorus* ſpake, keeping affection as much as he could, backe from cõming into his eyes and geſtures. But *Zelmane* (that had the ſame Character in her heart) could eaſily diſcerne it, and therefore to keepe him the longer in ſpeach, deſired to vnderſtand the concluſion of the matter; and how the honeſt *Dametas* was eſcaped.

Nay (ſaid *Pamela*) none ſhall take that office from 6
my ſelfe, being ſo much bound to him as I am, for my education. And with that word (ſcorne borrowing the countenance of myrth) ſomewhat ſhe ſmiled, and thus ſpake on: When (ſaid ſhe) *Dorus* made me aſſuredly perceiue, that all cauſe of feare was paſſed (the truth is) I was aſhamed to finde my ſelfe alone with this ſhepheard: and therefore looking about me, if I could ſee any bodie; at length we both perceiued the gentle *Dametas*, lying with his breaſt and head as farre as he could thruſt himſelfe into a buſh: drawing vp his legges as cloſe vnto him as hee coulde: for, like a man of a very kind nature, ſoone to take pittie of himſelfe, he was full reſolued not to ſee his owne death. And when this ſhepheard puſhed him, bidding him to be of good cheere; it was a good while, ere we could perſwade him, that *Dorus* was not the beare: ſo that he was faine to pull him out by the heeles, & ſhew him the beaſt, as deade as he could wiſh it: which you may beleeue me, was a very ioyful ſight vnto him. But then he forgate al curteſie, for he fel vpon the beaſt, giuing it many a manfull wound: ſwearing by much, it was not wel ſuch beaſts ſhuld be ſuffered in a cõmõ welth. And then my gouernour, as full of ioy, as before of feare,

came dauncing and ſinging before vs as euen now you ſaw him. Well wel (ſaid *Baſilius*) I haue not choſen *Dametas* for his fighting, nor for his diſcourſing, but for his plaineneſſe and honeſtie, and therein I know he will not deceaue me.

7 But then he told *Pamela* (not ſo much becauſe ſhe ſhould know it, as becauſe he would tell it) the wonderfull act *Zelmane* had perfourmed, which *Gynecia* likewiſe ſpake off, both in ſuch extremitie of praiſing, as was eaſie to be ſeene, the conſtructions of their ſpeach might beſt be made by the Grammer rules of affection. *Baſilius* told with what a gallant grace ſhee ranne with the Lyons head in her hand, like another *Pallas* with the ſpoiles of *Gorgon*. *Gynecia* ſware, ſhee ſawe the face of the young *Hercules* killing the *Nemean* Lion, & all with a grateful aſſent confirmed the ſame praiſes: onely poore *Dorus* (though of equall deſert, yet not proceeding of equall eſtate) ſhould haue bene left forgotten, had not *Zelmane* againe with great admiration, begun to ſpeake of him; aſking, whether it were the faſhion or no, in *Arcadia*, that ſheepherds ſhould performe ſuch valorous enterpriſes. This *Baſilius* (hauing the quicke ſenſe of a louer) tooke, as though his Miſtres had giuen a ſecret reprehenſion, that he had not ſhewed more gratefulneſſe to *Dorus*; and therefore (as nymblie as he could) enquired of his eſtate, adding promiſe of great rewards: among the reſt, offering to him, if he would exerciſe his courage in ſouldierie, he would commit ſome charge vnto him vnder his Lieutenant *Philanax*. But *Dorus* (whoſe ambition clymed by another ſtayre) hauing firſt anſwered touching his eſtate, that he was brother to the ſhepheard *Menalcas*;

who

who among other, was wont to reſort to the Princes preſence,& excuſed his going to ſouldierie, by the vnaptneſſe he found in himſelfe that way: he told *Baſilius*, that his brother in his laſt teſtament had willed him to ſerue *Dametas*; and therefore (for due obedience thereunto) he would thinke his ſeruice greatly rewarded, if he might obtaine by that meane to liue in the ſight of his Prince, and yet practiſe his owne choſen vocation. *Baſilius* (liking well his goodly ſhape and handſome manner) charged *Dametas* to receiue him like a ſonne into his houſe: ſaying, that his valour, and *Dametas* truth would be good bulwarkes againſt ſuch miſchiefes, as (he ſticked not to ſay) were threatned to his daughter *Pamela*.

Dametas, no whit out of countenance with all that 2
had bene ſaid (becauſe he had no worſe to fal into then his owne) accepted *Dorus:* and with all, telling *Baſilius*, that ſome of the ſhepheards were come; demaunded in what place he would ſee their ſports: who firſt curious to know whether it were not more requiſite for *Zelmanes* hurt to reſt, then ſit vp at thoſe paſtimes; and ſhe (that felt no wound but one) earneſtly deſiring to haue Paſtorals, *Baſilius* commanded it ſhould be at the gate of the lodge: where the throne of the Prince being (according to the auncient manner) he made *Zelmane* ſit betweene him & his wife therin, who thought her ſelfe betweene drowning and burning: and the two young Ladies of either ſide the throne, and ſo prepared their eyes and eares to bee delighted by the ſhepheards.

But before al of them were aſſembled to begin their 8
ſports, there came a fellow, who being out of breath (or
ſeeming

ſeeming ſo to be for haſte) with humble haſtines told *Baſilius*, that his Miſtres, the Lady *Cecropia*, had ſent him to excuſe the miſchance of her beaſtes ranging in that dãgerous ſort, being happened by the folly of the keeper; who thinking himſelf able to rule them, had caried them abroad, & ſo was deceiued: whom yet (if *Baſilius* would puniſh for it) ſhe was readie to deliuer. *Baſilius* made no other anſwere, but that his Miſtres if ſhee had any more ſuch beaſtes, ſhould cauſe them to be killed: and then he told his wife & *Zelmane* of it, becauſe they ſhould not feare thoſe woods; as though they harbored ſuch beaſts, where the like had neuer bene ſeene. But *Gynecia* tooke a further conceit of it, miſtruſting *Cecropia*, becauſe ſhee had heard much of the diuelliſh wickedneſſe of her heart, and that particularly ſhe did her beſt to bring vp her ſonne *Amphialus* (being brothers ſonne to *Baſilius*) to aſpire to the crowne, as next heire male after *Baſilius*; and therefore ſaw no reaſon, but that ſhe might coniecture, it proceeded rather of ſome miſchieuous practiſe, than of miſfortune. Yet did ſhe onely vtter her doubt to her daughters, thinking, ſince the worſt was paſt, ſhee would attend a further occaſion, leaſt ouer much haſte might ſeeme to proceede of the ordinarie miſlike betweene ſiſters in Lawe: onely they maruelled, that *Baſilius* looked no further into it; who (good man) thought ſo much of his late conceiued common wealth, that all other matters were but digreſſions vnto him. But the ſhepheards were ready, and with wel handling themſelues, called their ſenſes to attend their paſtimes.

The

The firſt Eclogues.

BASILIVS, becauſe *Zelmane* ſo would haue it, vſed the artificiall day of torches, to lighten the ſports their inuẽtions could miniſter. And yet becauſe many more ſhepheards were newly come, then at the firſt; he did in a gentle manner chaſtiſe the cowardiſe of the fugitiue ſhepheards: with making them (for that night) the Torch-bearers, and the others later come, he willed with all freedome of ſpeech and behauiour, to keepe their accuſtomed method. Which while they prepared to do, *Dametas*, who much diſdained (ſince his late authority) all his old companions, brought his ſeruant *Dorus* in good acquaintance and allowance of thẽ; & himſelfe ſtood like a directer ouer thẽ, with nodding, gaping, winking, or ſtamping ſhewing how he did like, or miſlike thoſe things he did not vnderſtand. The firſt ſports the ſhepheards ſhewed, were full of ſuch leapes & gambols, as being accorded to the Pipe (which they bare in their mouthes, euen as they daunced) made a right picture of their chiefe god *Pan*, and his companions the *Satyres*. Then would they caſt away their Pipes; and holding hand in hand, daunce as it were in a braule, by the onely cadence of their voices, which they would vſe in ſinging ſome ſhort coplets, whereto the one halfe beginning, the other halfe ſhould anſwere. As the one halfe ſaying,

We loue, and haue our loues rewarded.

The others would aunſwere.

We loue, and are no whit regarded.

The

The firſt againe.

We finde moſt ſweete affections ſnare,

With like tune it ſhould be as in quire ſent back againe.

That ſweete, but ſower deſpaireſull care.

A third time likewiſe thus:

Who can deſpaire, whom hope doth beare?

The aunſwere.

And who can hope, that feeles deſpaire?

Then all ioyning their voyces, and dauncing a faſter meaſure, they would couclude with ſome ſuch words:

As without breath, no pipe doth moue,
No muſike kindly without loue.

Hauing thus varied both their ſongs and daunces into diuers ſorts of inuentions; their laſt ſport was one of them to prouoke another to a more large expreſſing of his paſſions: which *Lalus* (accounted one of the beſt ſingers amongſt them) hauing marked in *Dorus* dauncing, no leſſe good grace & hanſome behauiour, then extreame tokens of a trauelled minde; began firſt with his Pipe, and then with his voice, thus to chalenge *Dorus*, and was by him anſwered in the vnderwritten ſort.

Lalus and Dorus.

Lalus. *COme* Dorus, *come, let ſongs thy ſorowes ſignifie:*
And if for want of vſe thy minde aſhamed is,
That verie ſhame with Loues high title dignifie.
No ſtile is held for baſe, where Loue well named is:
Ech eare ſuckes vp the words, a true loue ſcattereth,
And plaine ſpeach oft, then quaint phraſe, better framed is.

Nigh-

Nightingales ſeldome ſing, the Pie ſtill chattereth: Dorus.
The wood cries moſt, before it throughly kindled be,
Deadly wounds inward bleed, ech ſleight ſore mattereth.
Hardly they heard, which by good hunters ſingled be.
Shallow brookes murmure moſt, deep ſilent ſlide away;
Nor true loue loues thoſe loues with others mingled be.

If thou wilt not be ſeene, thy face goe hide away, Lalus.
Be none of vs, or els maintaine our faſhion:
Who frownes at others feaſtes, dooth better bide away.
But if thou haſt a Loue, in that Loues paſsion,
I challenge thee by ſhew of her perfection,
Which of vs two deſerueth moſt compaſsion.

Thy challenge great, but greater my protection: Dorus.
Sing then, and ſee (for now thou haſt inflamed me)
Thy health too meane a match for my infection.
No, though the heau'ns for high attempts haue blamed me,
Yet high is my attempt. O Muſe hiſtorifie
Her praiſe, whoſe praiſe to learne your skill hath framed me.

Muſe hold your peace: but thou, my God Pan, glorifie Lalus.
My Kalas gifties: who with all good gifts filled is.
Thy pipe, ô Pan, ſhall helpe, though I ſing ſorilie.
A heape of ſweetes ſhe is, where nothing ſpilled is;
Who though ſhe be no Bee, yet full of honie is:
A Lillie field, with plowe of Roſe which tilled is.
Milde as a Lambe, more daintie then a Conie is:
Her eyes my eyeſight is, her conuerſation
More gladde to me, then to a miſer monie is.
What coye account ſhe makes of eſtimation?
How nice to touch? how all her ſpeeches peized be?

A Nimph thus turnde, but mended in tranſlation.

Dorus. *Such* Kala *is: but ah, my fancies rayſed be*
In one, whoſe name to name were high preſumption,
Since vertues all, to make her title, pleaſed be.
O happie Gods, which by inward aſſumption
Enioy her ſoule, in bodies faire poſſeſſion,
And keep it ioynde, fearing your ſeates conſumption.
How oft with raine of teares skies make confeſſion,
Their dwellers rapt with ſight of her perfection
From heau'nly throne to her heau'n vſe digreſſion?
Of beſt things then what world can yeeld confection
To liken her? Decke yours with your compariſon:
She is her ſelfe, of beſt things the collection.

Lalus. *How oft my dolefull Sire cried to me, tarrie ſonne*
When firſt he ſpied my loue? how oft he ſaid to me,
Thou art no ſouldier fitte for Cupids *garriſon?*
My ſonne, keepe this, that my long toyle hath laide to me:
Loue well thine owne: me thinkes, woolles whitenes paſſeth all:
I neuer found long loue ſuch wealth hath paide to me.
This winde he ſpent: but when my Kala *glaſſeth all*
My ſight in her faire limmes, I then aſſure my ſelfe,
Not rotten ſheepe, but high crownes ſhe ſurpaſſeth all.
Can I be poore, that her golde haire procure my ſelfe?
Want I white wooll, whoſe eyes her white skinne garniſhed?
Till I get her, ſhall I to keepe enure my ſelfe?

Dorus. *How oft, when reaſon ſaw, loue of her harniſed*
With armour of my hart, he cried, O vanitie,
To ſet a pearle in ſteele ſo meanely varniſhed?
Looke to thy ſelfe; reach not beyond humanitie:

Her

Her minde, beames, ſtate farre from thy weake wings baniſhed:
And Loue, which louer hurts is inhumanitie.
Thus Reaſon ſaid: but ſhe came, Reaſon vaniſhed;
Her eyes ſo maiſtering me, that ſuch obiection
Seemde but to ſpoyle the foode of thoughts long famiſhed.
Her peereles height my minde to high erection
Drawes vp; and if hope-fayling ende liues pleaſure,
O ſfayrer death how can I make election?

Once my well-waiting eyes eſpied my treaſure, Lalus.
With ſleeues turnde vp, looſe haire, and breſt enlarged,
Her fathers corne (mouing her faire limmes) meaſure.
O cried I, of ſo meane worke be diſcharged:
Meaſure my caſe, how by thy beauties filling
With ſeede of woes my hart brimme-full is charged.
Thy father bids thee ſaue, and chides for ſpilling.
Saue then my ſoule, ſpill not my thoughts well heaped,
No louely praiſe was euer got by killing.
Theſe bolde words ſhe did heare, this fruite I reaped,
That ſhe, whoſe looke alone might make me bleſſed,
Did ſmile on me, and then away ſhe leaped.

Once, ô ſweete once, I ſaw with dread oppreſſed Dorus.
Her whom I dread; ſo that with proſtrate lying
Her length the earth in Loues chiefe clothing dreſſed.
I ſaw that riches fall, and fell a crying;
Let not dead earth enioy ſo deare a couer,
But deck therewith my ſoule for your ſake dying.
Lay all your feare vpon your fearefull louer:
Shine eyes on me, that both our liues be guarded;
So I your ſight, you ſhall your ſelues recouer.
I cried, and was with open rayes rewarded:

But ſtraight they fledde, ſummond by cruell honor,
Honor, the cauſe, deſart is not regarded.

Lalus. *This mayde, thus made for ioyes, ô* Pan *bemone her,*
That without loue ſhe ſpends her yeares of louc:
So faire a fielde would well become an owner.
And if enchantment can a harde hart moue,
Teach me what circle may acquaint her ſprite,
Affections charmes in my behalfe to proue.
The circle is my (round about her) ſight:
The power I will inuoke dwelles in her eyes:
My charme ſhould be, ſhe haunt me day and night.

Dorus. *Farre other care, ô* Muſe, *my ſorrow tries,*
Bent to ſuch one, in whom, my ſelfe muſt ſay,
Nothing can mend that point that in her lies.
What circle then in ſo rare force beares ſwaye?
Whoſe ſprite all ſprites can ſpoile, raiſe, damne, or ſauc:
No charme holdes her, but well poſſeſse ſhe may;
Poſſeſse ſhe doth, and makes my ſoule her ſlaue:
My eyes the bandes, my thoughts the fatall knot.
No thralles like them that inward bondage haue.

Lalus. Kala *at length conclude my lingring lotte:*
Diſdaine me not, although I be not faire.
Who is an heire of many hundred ſheep
Doth beauties keep, which neuer Sunne can burne,
Nor ſtormes doo turne: fairenes ſerues oft to wealth.
Yet all my health I place in your good-will.
Which if you will (ô doo) beſtow on me,
Such as you ſee, ſuch ſtill you ſhall me finde.
Conſtant and kind: my ſheep your foode ſhall breed,

Their

Their wooll your weede, I will you Muſique yeeld
In flowrie fielde; and as the day begins
With twenty ginnes we will the ſmall birds take,
And paſtimes make, as Nature things hath made.
But when in ſhade we meet of mirtle bowes,
Then Loue allowes, our pleaſures to enrich,
The thought of which doth paſſe all worldly pelfe.

Lady your ſelfe, whom nether name I dare, Dorus.
And titles are but ſpots to ſuch a worthe,
Heare plaints come forth from dungeon of my minde.
The nobleſt kinde reiects not others woes.
I haue no ſhewes of wealth: my wealth is you,
My beauties hewe your beames, my health your deeds;
My minde for weeds your vertues liuerie weares.
My foode is teares; my tunes waymenting yeeld:
Deſpaire my fielde; the flowers ſpirits warrs:
My day newe cares; my ginnes my daily ſight,
In which do light ſmall birds of thoughts orethrowne:
My paſtimes none: time paſſeth on my fall:
Nature made all, but me of dolours made:
I finde no ſhade, but where my Sunne doth burne:
No place to turne; without, within it fryes:
Nor helpe by life or death who liuing dyes.

But if my Kala *this my ſuite denies,* Lalus.
Which ſo much reaſon beares,
Let crowes picke out mine eyes, which ſaw too much:
If ſtill her minde be ſuch,
My earthy moulde will melte in watrie teares.

My earthy moulde doth melte in watrie teares, Dorus.

And they againe resolue
To aire of sighes, sighes to the hartes fire turne,
Which doth to ashes burne:
So doth my life within it selfe dissolue,

Lalus. *So doth my life within it selfe dissolue,*
That I am like a flower
New plucked from the place where it did breed,
Life showing, dead indeed:
Such force hath Loue aboue poore Natures power.

Dorus. *Such force hath Loue aboue poore Natures power,*
That I growe like a shade,
Which being nought seems somewhat to the eyen,
While that one body shine.
Oh he is mard that is for others made.

Lalus. *Oh he is mard that is for others made.*
Which thought doth marre my piping declaration,
Thinking how it hath mard my shepheards trade.
Now my hoarse voice doth faile this occupation,
And others long to tell their loues condition:
Of singing take to thee the reputation.

Dorus. *Of singing take to thee the reputation*
New friend of mine; I yeeld to thy habilitie:
My soule doth seeke another estimation.
But ah my Muse *I would thou hadst agilitie,*
To worke my Goddesse so by thy inuention,
On me to cast those eyes, where shine nobilitie.
Seen, and vnknowne; heard, but without attention.

This

THis Eclogue betwixt *Lalus* & *Dorus*, of euery one of the beholders receiued great commendations. When *Baſilius* called to a yong ſhepheard, who nether had daunced nor ſong with thē, but layne al this while vpō the ground at the foot of a cypreſſe tree, in ſo deep a melancholy, as though his mind were baniſhed from the place he loued, to be in priſon in his body: & deſired him he would begin ſome Eclogue, with ſome other of the ſhepheards, according to the accuſtomed guiſe: or els declare the diſcourſe of his owne fortune, vnknowne to him; as being a ſtraunger in that coūtry. But he praied the King to pardon him, the time being far too ioyful to ſuffer the reherſall of his miſeries. Yet, to ſatisfy *Baſilius* ſome way, he ſange this ſonge, he had learned before he had ſubiected his thoughts to acknowledge no maiſter, but a miſtreſſe.

AS I my little flocke on Iſter *banke*
(A little flocke; but well my pipe they couthe)
Did piping leade, the Sunne already ſanke
Beyond our worlde, and ere I got my boothe
Each thing with mantle black the night doth ſcothe;
Sauing the glowe worme, which would curteous be
Of that ſmall light oft watching ſhepheards ſee.

The welkin had full niggardly encloſed
In cofer of dimme clowdes his ſiluer groates,
Icleped ſtarres; each thing to reſt diſpoſed:
The caues were full, the mountaines voide of goates:
The birds eyes cloſde cloſed their chirping notes.
As for the Nightingale woodmuſiques King,
It Auguſt *was, he daynde not then to ſing.*

Amid my sheepe, though I sawe nought to feare
Yet (for I nothing sawe) I scared sore;
Then fonde I which thing is a charge to beare
As for my sheepe I dradded mickle more
Then euer for my selfe since I was bore:
I sate me downe: for see to goe ne could,
And sange vnto my sheepe lest stray they should.

The songe I sange old Lanquet had me taught,
Lanquet, the shepheard best swift Ister knewe,
For clerkly reed, and hating what is naught,
For faithfull hart, cleane hands, and mouth as true:
With his sweet skill my skillesse youth he drewe,
To haue a feeling tast of him that sitts
Beyond the heauen, far more beyond your witts.

He said, the Musique best thilke powers pleasd
Was iumpe concorde betweene our wit and will:
Where highest notes to godlines are raisd,
And lowest sinke not downe to iote of ill:
With old true tales he woont mine eares to fill,
How sheepheards did of yore, how now they thriue,
Spoiling their flock, or while twixt thē they striue.

He liked me, but pitied lustfull youth:
His good strong staffe my slippry yeares vpbore:
He still hop'd well, because he loued truth;
Till forste to parte, with harte and eyes euen sore,
To worthy Coriden he gaue me ore.
But thus in okes true shade recounted he
Which now in nights deepe shade sheep heard of me.

Such

Such maner time there was (what time I n'ot)
When all this Earth, this damme or mould of ours
Was onely won'd with such as beastes begot:
Vnknowne as then were they that builded towers:
The cattell wild, or tame, in natures bowers
Might freely rome, or rest, as seemed them:
Man was not man their dwellings in to hem.

The beastes had sure some beastly pollicie:
For nothing can endure where order n'is.
For once the Lion by the Lambe did lie;
The fearefull Hinde the Leopard did kisse:
Hurtles was Tygers pawe and Serpents hisse.
This thinke I well, the beasts with courage clad
Like Senators a harmeles empire had.

At which whether the otbers did repine,
(For enuie harbreth most in feebleſt hartes)
Or that they all to chaunging did encline,
(As euen in beasts their dames leaue chaunging parts)
The multitude to Ioue a suite empartes,
With neighing, blaying, braying, and barking,
Roring, and howling for to haue a King.

A King, in language theirs they said they would:
(For then their language was a perfect speech)
The birdes likewise with chirpes, and puing could
Cackling, and chattring, that of Ioue beseech.
Onely the owle still warnde them not to seech
So hastily that which they would repent:
But sawe they would, and he to deserts went.

Ioue wiſely ſaid (for wiſedome wiſely ſayes)
O beaſts, take heed what you of me deſire.
Rulers will thinke all things made them to pleaſe,
And ſoone forget the ſwincke due to their hire.
But ſince you will, part of my heau'nly fire
I will you lende; the reſt your ſelues muſt giue,
That it both ſeene and felte may with you liue.

Full glad they were and tooke the naked ſprite,
Which ſtreight the Earth yclothed in his claye:
The Lion, harte; the Ounce gaue actiue might;
The Horſe, good ſhape; the Sparrow, luſt to playe;
Nightingale, voice, entiſing ſonges to ſaye.
Elephant gaue a perfect memorie:
And Parot, ready tongue, that to applie.

The Foxe gaue craſte; the Dog gaue flatterie;
Aſſe, pacience; the Mole, a working thought;
Eagle, high looke; Wolfe ſecrete crueltie:
Monkie, ſweet breath; the Cow, her faire eyes brought;
The Ermion, whiteſt skinne, ſpotted with nought;
The ſheep, mild-ſeeming face; climing, the Beare;
The Stagge did giue the harme eſchewing feare.

The Hare, her ſleights; the Cat, his melancholie;
Ante, induſtrie; and Connie, skill to builde;
Cranes, order; Storkes, to be appearing holie;
Cameleon, eaſe to chaunge; Ducke, eaſe to yelde;
Crocodile, teares, which might be falſely ſpilde:
Ape great thing gaue, though he did mowing ſtand,
The inſtrument of inſtruments, the hand.

Ech other beast likewise his present brings:
And (but they drad their Prince they ought should want)
They all consented were to giue him wings:
And aye more awe towards him for to plant,
To their owne worke this priuiledge they graunt,
That from thenceforth to all eternitie,
No beast should freely speake, but onely he.

Thus Man was made; thus Man their Lord became:
Who at the first, wanting, or hiding pride,
He did to beastes best vse his cunning frame;
With water drinke, herbes meate, and naked hide,
And fellow-like let his dominion slide;
Not in his sayings saying I, but we:
As if he meant his lordship common be.

But when his seate so rooted he had found,
That they now skilld not, how from him to wend;
Then gan in guiltlesse earth full many a wound,
Iron to seeke, which gainst it selfe should bend,
To teare the bowels, that good corne should send.
But yet the common Damme none did bemone;
Because (though hurt) they neuer heard her grone.

Then gan the factions in the beastes to breed;
Where helping weaker sort, the nobler beastes,
(As Tygers, leopards, beares, and Lions seed)
Disdaind with this, in deserts sought their restes;
Where famine ruine taught their hungrie chestes,
That craftily he forst them to do ill,
Which being done he afterwards would kill.

For murthers done, which neuer erſt was ſeene,
By thoſe great beaſtes, as for the weakers good,
He choſe themſelues his guarders for to bene,
Gainſt thoſe of might, of whom in feare they ſtood,
As horſe and dogge, not great, but gentle blood:
Blith were the commons cattell of the fielde,
Tho when they ſaw their foen of greatnes kilde.

But they or ſpent, or made of ſlender might,
Then quickly did the meaner cattell finde,
The great beames gone, the houſe on ſhoulders light:
For by and by the horſe faire bitts did binde:
The dogge was in a coller taught his kinde.
As for the gentle birds like caſe might rewe
When falcon they, and goſſehauke ſaw in mewe.

Worſt fell to ſmalleſt birds, and meaneſt heard,
Whom now his owne, full like his owne he vſed.
Yet firſt but wooll, or fethers off he teard:
And when they were well vs'de to be abuſed,
For hungrie teeth their fleſh with teeth he bruſed:
At length for glutton taſte he did them kill:
At laſt for ſport their ſillie liues did ſpill.

But yet ô man, rage not beyond thy neede:
Deeme it no gloire to ſwell in tyrannie.
Thou art of blood; ioy not to ſee things bleede:
Thou feareſt death; thinke they are loth to die.
A plaint of guiltleſſe hurt doth pierce the ſkie.
And you poore beaſtes, in patience bide your hell,
Or know your ſtrengths, and then you ſhall do well.

Thus

Thus did I ſing, and pipe eight ſullen houres
To ſheepe, whom loue, not knowledge, made to heare,
Now fancies fits, now fortunes baleſull ſtowers:
But then I homewards call'd my lambkins deare:
For to my dimmed eyes beganne t'appeare
The night growne old, her blacke head waxen gray,
Sure ſhepherds ſigne, that morne ſhould ſoone fetch day.

ACcording to the nature of diuerſe eares, diuerſe iudgements ſtreight followed: ſome praiſing his voice, others his words fit to frame a paſtorall ſtile, others the ſtrangenes of the tale, and ſcanning what he ſhuld meane by it. But old *Geron* (who had borne him a grudge euer ſince in one of their Eclogues he had taken him vp ouer-bitterly) tooke hold of this occaſion to make his reuenge, and ſaid, He neuer ſaw thing worſe proportioned, then to bring in a tale of he knew not what beaſtes at ſuch a ſport-meeting, when rather ſome ſong of loue, or matter for ioyfull melody was to be brought forth. But, ſaid he, This is the right conceipt of young men, who thinke, then they ſpeake wiſelieſt, when they cannot vnderſtand themſelues. But little did the melancholike ſhepherd regard either his diſpraiſes, or the others praiſes, who had ſet the foundation of his honour there; where he was moſt deſpiſed. And therefore he returning againe to the traine of his deſolate penſiueneſſe, *Geron* inuited *Hiſtor* to anſwere him in Eclogue-wiſe; who indeed hauing bene long in loue with the faire *Kala*, and now by *Lalus* ouergone; was growne into a deteſtation of marriage. But thus it was.

Geron

Geron. Hiſtor.

Geron. IN faith, good Hiſtor, long is your delay,
From holy marriage ſweete and ſureſt meane:
Our fooliſh luſt in honeſt rules to ſtay.
I pray thee doo to Lalus ſample leane:
Thou ſeeſt, how friske, and iolly now he is,
That laſt day ſeem'd, he could not chew a beane.
Beleeue me man, there is no greater bliſſe,
Then is the quiet ioy of louing wife;
Which who ſo wants, halfe of himſelfe doth miſſe.
Friend without change, playfellow without ſtrife,
Foode without fulnes, counſaile without pride,
Is this ſweet doubling of our ſingle life.

Hiſtor. No doubt to whom ſo good chance did betide,
As for to finde a paſture ſtrawed with golde,
He were a foole, if there he did not bide.
Who would not haue a Phœnix if he could?
The humming Waſpe, if it had not a ſtinge,
Before all flies the Waſpe accept I would.
But this bad world, few golden fieldes doth bring,
Phœnix but one, of Crowes we millions haue:
The Waſpe ſeemes gay, but is a combrous thing.
If many Kalaes our Arcadia gaue,
Lalus example I would ſoone enſue,
And thinke, I did my ſelfe from ſorrow ſaue.
But of ſuch wiues we finde a ſlender crew;
Shrewdnes ſo ſtirres, pride ſo puffes vp the hart,
They ſeldome ponder what to them is due.
With meager lookes, as if they ſtill did ſmart;

Puiling,

Puiling, and whimpring, or elſe ſcolding flat,
Make home more paine then following of the cart.
Ether dull ſilence, or eternall chat;
Still contrarie to what her huſband ſayes;
If he do praiſe the dog, ſhe likes the cat.
Anſtere ſhe is, when he would honeſt playes;
And gameſome then, when he thinkes on his ſheepe;
She bids him goe, and yet from iorney ſtayes.
She warre doth euer with his kinsfolke keepe,
And makes them fremb'd, who frinds by nature are,
Enuying ſhallow toyes with malice deepe.
And if forſooth there come ſome new found ware,
The little coine his ſweating browes haue got,
Muſt goe for that, if for her lowres he care:
Or els; Nay faith, mine is the luckleſt lot,
That euer fell to honeſt woman yet:
No wife but I hath ſuch a man, God wot.
Such is their ſpeech, who be of ſober wit;
But who doo let their tongues ſhew well their rage,
Lord, what bywords they ſpeake, what ſpite they ſpit?
The houſe is made a very lothſome cage,
Wherein the birde doth neuer ſing but cry;
With ſuch a will as nothing can aſſwage.
Dearely the ſeruants doo their wages buy,
Reuil'd for ech ſmall fault, ſometimes for none:
They better liue that in a gaile doo lie.
Let other fowler ſpots away be blowne;
For I ſeeke not their ſhame, but ſtill me thinkes,
A better life it is to lye alone.

Who for ech fickle feare from vertue ſhrinkes, Geron.
Shall in his life embrace no worthy thing:

No

No mortall man the cuppe of ſuretie drinkes.
The heau'ns doo not good haps in handfuls bring,
But let vs pike our good from out much bad:
That ſtill our little world may know his king.
But certainly ſo long we may be glad,
While that we doo what nature doth require,
And for th'euent we neuer ought be ſad.
Man oft is plag'de with aire, is burnt with fire,
In water dround, in earth his buriall is;
And ſhall we not therefore their vſe deſire?
Nature aboue all things requireth this,
That we our kind doo labour to maintaine;
Which drawne-out line doth hold all humane bliſſe.
Thy father iuſtly may of thee complaine,
If thou doo not repay his deeds for thee,
In granting vnto him a grandſires gaine.
Thy common-wealth may rightly grieued be,
Which muſt by this immortall be preſerued,
If thus thou murther thy poſteritie.
His very being he hath not deſerued,
Who for a ſelfe-conceipt will that forbeare,
Whereby that being aye muſt be conſerued.
And God forbid, women ſuch cattell were,
As you paint them: but well in you I finde,
No man doth ſpeake aright, who ſpeakes in feare.
Who onely ſees the ill is worſe then blind.
Theſe fiftie winters maried haue I beene;
And yet finde no ſuch faults in womankind.
I haue a wife worthie to be a Queene,
So well ſhe can command, and yet obay;
In ruling of a houſe ſo well ſhee's ſeene.
And yet in all this time, betwixt vs tway,

We beare our double yoke with ſuch conſent,
That neuer paſt foule word, I dare well ſay.
But theſe be your loue-toyes, which ſtill are ſpent
In lawleſſe games, and loue not as you ſhould,
But with much ſtudie learne late to repent.
How well laſt day before our Prince you could
Blinde Cupids *workes with wonder teſtifie?*
Yet now the roote of him abaſe you would.
Goe to, goe to, and Cupid *now applie*
To that where thou thy Cupid *maiſt auowe,*
And thou ſhalt finde, in women vertues lie.
Sweete ſupple mindes which ſoone to wiſdome bowe
Where they by wiſdomes rule directed are,
And are not forſt fonde thraldome to allow.
As we to get are fram'd, ſo they to ſpare:
We made for paine, our paines they made to cheriſh:
We care abroad, and they of home haue care.
O Hiſtor, *ſeeke within thy ſelfe to flouriſh:*
Thy houſe by thee muſt liue, or els be gone:
And then who ſhall the name of Hiſtor *nouriſh?*
Riches of children paſſe a Princes throne;
Which touch the fathers hart with ſecret ioy,
When without ſhame he ſaith, theſe be mine owne.
Marrie therefore; for marriage will deſtroy
Thoſe paſsions which to youthfull head doo clime
Mothers and Nurſes of all vaine annoy.

ALl the aſſemblie laught at the luſtines of the old felowe, and eaſilie perceiued in *Hiſtor*, he liked *Lalus* fortune better, then he loued his perſon. But *Baſilius* to entermixe with theſe light notes of libertie, ſome ſadder tune, ſet to the key of his own paſſion, not ſeeing there

there *Strephon* or *Klaius*, (who called thence by *Vranias* letter, were both gone to continue their ſuite, like two true runners, both employing their beſt ſpeed, but not one hindring the other) he called to one *Lamō* of their acquaintance, and willed him to ſing ſome one of their ſongs; which he redily performed in this doble Seſtine.

Strephon. Klaius.

Strephon. *YOu Gote-heard Gods, that loue thè graſsie mountaines,*
You Nimphes that haunt the ſprings in pleaſant vallies,
You Satyrs ioyde with free and quiet forreſts,
Vouchſafe your ſilent eares to playning muſique,
Which to my woes giues ſtill an early morning:
And drawes the dolor on till wery euening.

Klaius. *O* Mercurie, *foregoer to the euening,*
O heauenlie huntreſſe of the ſauage mountaines,
O louelie ſtarre, entitled of the morning,
While that my voice doth fill theſe woſull vallies,
Vouchſafe your ſilent eares to plaining muſique,
Which oft hath Echo *tir'd in ſecrete forreſts.*

Strephon. *I that was once free-burges of the forreſts,*
Where ſhade from Sunne, and ſports I ſought at euening,
I that was once eſteem'd for pleaſant muſique,
Am baniſht now among the monſtrous mountaines
Of huge deſpaire, and foule afflictions vallies,
Am growne a ſhrich-owle to my ſelfe each morning.

Klaius. *I that was once delighted euery morning,*
Hunting the wilde inhabiters of forreſts,

I that

I that was once the muſique of theſe vallies,
So darkened am, that all my day is euening,
Hart-broken ſo, that molehilles ſeeme high mountaines,
And fill the vales with cries in ſteed of muſique.

Long ſince alas, my deadly Swanniſh muſique
Hath made it ſelfe a crier of the morning, Strephon.
And hath with wailing ſtrēgth clim'd higheſt mountaines:
Long ſince my thoughts more deſert be then forreſts:
Long ſince I ſee my ioyes come to their euening,
And ſtate throwen downe to ouer-troden vallies.

Long ſince the happie dwellers of theſe vallies, Klaius.
Haue praide me leaue my ſtrange exclaiming muſique,
Which troubles their dayes worke, and ioyes of euening:
Long ſince I hate the night, more hate the morning:
Long ſince my thoughts chaſe me like beaſts in forreſts,
And make me wiſh my ſelfe layd vnder mountaines.

Me ſeemes I ſee the high and ſtately mountaines, Strephon.
Transforme themſelues to lowe deiected vallies:
Me ſeemes I heare in theſe ill-changed forreſts,
The Nightingales doo learne of Owles their muſique:
Me ſeemes I feele the comfort of the morning
Turnde to the mortall ſerene of an euening.

Me ſeemes I ſee a filthie clowdie euening, Klaius.
As ſoon as Sunne begins to clime the mountaines:
Me ſeemes I feele a noyſome ſent, the morning
When I doo ſmell the flowers of theſe vallies:
Me ſeemes I heare, when I doo heare ſweete muſique,
The dreadfull cries of murdred men in forreſts.

I wiſh

Strephon. *I wiſh to fire the trees of all theſe forreſts;*
I giue the Sunne a laſt farewell each euening;
I curſe the fidling finders out of Muſicke:
With enuie I doo hate the loftie mountaines;
And with deſpite deſpiſe the humble vallies:
I doo deteſt night, euening, day, and morning.

Klaius. *Curſe to my ſelfe my prayer is, the morning:*
My fire is more, then can be made with forreſts;
My ſtate more baſe, then are the baſeſt vallies:
I wiſh no euenings more to ſee, each euening;
Shamed I haue my ſelfe in ſight of mountaines,
And ſtoppe mine eares, leſt I growe mad with Muſicke.

Strephon. *For ſhe, whoſe parts maintainde a perfect muſique,*
Whoſe beautie ſhin'de more then the bluſhing morning,
Who much did paſſe in ſtate the ſtately mountaines,
In ſtraightnes paſt the Cedars of the forreſts,
Hath caſt me wretch into eternall euening,
By taking her two Sunnes from theſe darke vallies.

Klaius. *For ſhe, to whom compar'd, the Alpes are valiies,*
She, whoſe leſt word brings from the ſpheares their muſique,
At whoſe approach the Sunne roſe in the euening,
Who, where ſhe went, bare in her forhead morning,
Is gone, is gone from theſe our ſpoyled forreſts,
Turning to deſarts our beſt paſtur'de mountaines.

Strephon. *Theſe mountaines witneſſe ſhall, ſo ſhall theſe vallies,*
Klaius. *Theſe forreſts eke, made wretched by our muſique,*
Our morning hymne is this, and ſong at euening.

Zelmane ſeing no body offer to fill the ſtage, as if her long reſtrained conceits had new burſt out of priſon, ſhe thus deſiring her voice ſhould be accorded to nothing but *Philocleas* eares, laying faſt holde on her face with her eyes, ſhe ſange theſe Sapphiques, ſpeaking as it were to her owne Hope.

If mine eyes can ſpeake to doo harty errande,
Or mine eyes language ſhe doo hap to iudge of,
So that eyes meſſage be of her receaued,
Hope we do liue yet.

But if eyes faile then, when I moſt doo need them,
Or if eyes language be not vnto her knowne,
So that eyes meſſage doo returne reiected,
Hope we doo both dye.

Yet dying, and dead, doo we ſing her honour;
So become our tombes monuments of her praiſe;
So becomes our loſſe the triumph of her gayne;
Hers be the glory.

If the ſpheares ſenſeleſſe doo yet hold a muſique,
If the Swannes ſweet voice be not heard, but at death,
If the mute timber when it hath the life loſt,
Yeldeth a lutes tune.

Are then humane mindes priuiledg'd ſo meanly,
As that hatefull death can abridge them of powre,
With the vowe of truth to record to all worldes,
That we be her ſpoiles?

Thus not ending, endes the due praiſe of her praiſe;
Fleſhly vaile conſumes; but a ſoule hath his life,
Which is helde in loue, loue it is, that hath ioynde
Life to this our ſoule.

But if eyes can ſpeake to doo harty errande,
Or mine eyes language ſhe doo hap to iudge of,
So that eyes meſſage be of her receaued,
Hope we doo liue yet.

WHat exclaiming praiſes *Baſilius* gaue to *Zelmanes* ſonge, any man may gheſſe, that knowes loue is better then a paire of ſpectacles to make euery thing ſeeme greater, which is ſeene through it: and then is it neuer tongue-tied, where fit commendation (whereof womankind is ſo licorous) is offered vnto it. Yea, he fel proſtrate on the ground, and thanked the Gods, they had preſerued his life ſo long, as to heare the very muſique they themſelues vſed, in an earthly body. But the waſting of the torches ſerued as a watch vnto them, to make them ſee the time waſte; and therefore the King (though vnwilling) roſe from the ſeate, which he thought excellently ſetled on the one ſide: and conſidering *Zelmanes* late hurte, perſwaded her to take that farre-ſpent nights reſt. And ſo of all ſides they went to recommend themſelues to the elder brother of death.

The end of the firſt Booke.

THE SECOND BOOKE OF THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA.

CHAP. 1.

The loue-complaintes [1] *of* Gynecia, [2] Zelmane, [3] *and* Basilius. [4] *Her*, [5] *and his wooing of* Zelmane, *and her shifting of both*, [6] *to bemone her selfe.*



IN *these pastorall pastimes a great number of dayes were sent to follow their flying predecessours, while the cup of poison (which was deepely tasted of this noble companie) had left no sinewe of theirs without mortally searching into it; yet neuer manifesting his venomous worke, till once, that the night (parting away angerly, that she could distill no more sleepe into the eies of louers) had no sooner giuen place to the breaking out of the morning light, and the Sunne bestowed his beames vpon the tops of the mountaines, but that the wofull Gynecia (to whom rest was no ease) had left her loathed lodging, and gotten her selfe into the solitary places those de-*

ſerts were full of, going vp and downe with ſuch vnquiet motions, as a grieued & hopeles mind is wont to bring forth. There appeered vnto the eies of her iudgement the euils ſhe was like to run into, with ougly infamie waiting vpon them: ſhe felt the terrous of her owne conſcience: ſhe was guilty of a long exerciſed vertue, which made this vice the fuller of deformitie. The vttermoſt of the good ſhe could aſpire vnto, was a mortall wound to her vexed ſpirits: and laſtly no ſmall part of her euils was, that ſhe was wiſe to ſee her euils. In ſo much, that hauing a great while throwne her coũtenaunce ghaſtly about her (as if ſhe had called all the powers of the worlde tc witneſſe of her wretched eſtate) at length caſting vp her watrie eyes to heauen, O Sunne (ſaid ſhe) whoſe vnſpotted light directs the ſteps of mortall mankind, art thou not aſhamed to impart the clearneſſe of thy preſence to ſuch a duſt-creeping worme as I am? O you heauens (which continually keepe the courſe allotted vnto you) can none of your influences preuaile ſo much vpon the miſerable *Gynecia*, as to make her preſerue a courſe ſo lõg embraced by her? O deſerts, deſerts, how fit a gueſt am I for you, ſince my hart can people you with wild rauenous beaſtes, which in you are wanting? O Vertue, where dooſt thou hide thy ſelfe? or what hideous thing is this which doth eclips thee? or is it true that thou weart neuer but a vaine name, and no eſſentiall thing, which haſt thus left thy profeſſed ſeruant, when ſhe had moſt need of thy louely preſence? O imperfect proportiõ of reaſon, which cã too much forſee, & too little preuent. Alas, alas (ſaid ſhe) if there were but one hope for all my paines, or but one excuſe for all my faultineſſe. But

wretch

wretch that I am, my torment is beyond all ſuccour,& my euill deſeruing doth exceed my euill fortune. For nothing els did my husband take this ſtraunge reſolutiō to liue ſo ſolitarily: for nothing els haue the winds deliuered this ſtraunge gueſt to my country: for nothing els haue the deſtinies reſerued my life to this time,but that only I(moſt wretched I)ſhould become a plague to my ſelfe,and a ſhame to womankind.Yet if my deſire (how vniuſt ſo euer it be) might take effect, though a thouſand deaths folowed it,and euery death were followed with a thouſand ſhames;yet ſhould not my ſepulcher receiue me without ſome contentment. But alas, though ſure I am, that *Zelmane* is ſuch as can anſwere my loue; yet as ſure I am, that this diſguiſing muſt needs come for ſome foretakē cōceipt.And then, wretched *Gynecia*,where cāſt thou find any ſmal groūdplot for hope to dwel vpon? No, no, it is *Philoclea* his hart is ſet vpon: it is my daughter I haue borne to ſupplant me. But if it be ſo, the life I haue giuen thee(vngratefull *Philoclea*) I will ſooner with theſe handes bereaue thee of,then my birth ſhall glory, ſhe hath bereaued me of my deſires. In ſhame there is no cōfort, but „ to be beyond all bounds of ſhame.

Hauing ſpokē thus,ſhe began to make a piteous war with hir faire haire, when ſhe might heare (not far frō 2 her)an extremely doleful voice, but ſo ſuppreſſed with a kind of whiſpering note,that ſhe could not conceaue the wordes diſtinctly. But (as a lamentable tune is the „ ſweeteſt muſicke to a wofull mind) ſhe drewe thether neere-away, in hope to find ſome cōpaniō of her miſery.And as ſhe paſſed on, ſhe was ſtopped with a nūber of trees,ſo thickly placed together, that ſhe was afraid ſhe ſhould (with ruſhing thorow) ſtop the ſpeach of

the lamentable partie, which ſhe was ſo deſirous to vnderſtand. And therefore ſetting her downe as ſoftly as ſhe could (for ſhe was now in diſtaunce to heare) ſhe might firſt perceaue a Lute excellently well played vpon, and then the ſame dolefull voice accompanying it with theſe verſes.

IN vaine, mine Eyes, you labour to amende
With flowing teares your fault of haſty ſight:
Since to my hart her ſhape you ſo did ſende;
That her I ſee, though you did loſe your light.

In vaine, my Hart, now you with ſight are burnd,
With ſighes you ſeeke to coole your hotte deſire:
Since ſighes (into mine inward fornace turnd)
For bellowes ſerue to kindle more the fire.

Reaſon, in vaine (now you haue loſt my hart)
My head you ſeeke, as to your ſtrongeſt forte:
Since there mine eyes haue played ſo falſe a parte,
That to your ſtrength your foes haue ſure reſorte.
Then ſince in vaine I find were all my ſtrife,
To this ſtrange death I vainely yeeld my life.

The ending of the ſong ſerued but for a beginning of new plaints, as if the mind (oppreſſed with too heauy a burthē of cares) was faine to diſcharge it ſelf of al ſides, & as it were, paint out the hideouſnes of the paine in al ſortes of coulours. For the wofull perſon (as if the lute had euill ioined with the voice) threw it to the ground with ſuch like words: Alas, poore Lute, how much art thou deceiu'd to think, that in my miſeries thou couldſt eaſe my woes, as in my careles times thou was wont to

pleaſe my fancies? The time is changed, my Lute, the time is changed; and no more did my ioyfull minde then receiue euery thing to a ioyful conſideration, then my carefull mind now makes ech thing taſt like the bitter iuyce of care. The euill is inward, my Lute, the euill is inward; which all thou dooſt, doth ſerue but to make me thinke more freely off, and the more I thinke, the more cauſe I finde of thinking, but leſſe of hoping. And alas, what is then thy harmony, but the ſweete meats of ſorrow? The diſcord of my thoughts, my Lute, doth ill agree to the concord of thy ſtrings; therefore be not aſhamed to leaue thy maſter, ſince he is not afraide to forſake himſelfe.

And thus much ſpokē (in ſteed of a concluſion) was 4
cloſed vp with ſo harty a groning, that *Gynecia* could not refraine to ſhew her ſelfe, thinking ſuch griefes could ſerue fitly for nothing, but her owne fortune. But as ſhe came into the little Arbour of this ſorrowfull muſicke, her eyes met with the eyes of *Zelmane*, which was the party that thus had indited her ſelfe of miſerie: ſo that either of them remained confuſed with a ſodaine aſtoniſhment. *Zelmane* fearing, leaſt ſhee had heard ſome part of thoſe complaints, which ſhee had riſen vp that morning of purpoſe, to breath out in ſecret to her ſelfe. But *Gynecia* a great while ſtoode ſtill, with a kind of dull amaſement, looking ſtedfaſtly vpon her: at length returning to ſome vſe of her ſelfe, ſhee began to aſke *Zelmane*, what cauſe carried her ſo early abroad? But as if the opening of her mouth to *Zelmane*, had opened ſome great flood-gate of ſorrow (wherof her heart could not abide the violēt iſſue) ſhe ſanke to the ground, with her hands ouer her face, crying vehemently, *Zelmane* helpe

me, O *Zelmane* haue pittie on me. *Zelmane* ranne to her, maruelling what ſodaine ſickneſſe had thus poſſeſſed her: and beginning to aſke her the cauſe of her paine, and offring her ſeruice to be imployed by her: *Gynecia* opening her eyes wildly vpon her, pricked with the flames of loue, and the torments of her owne conſcience; O *Zelmane*, *Zelmane*, (ſaid ſhe) dooſt thou offer me phiſicke, which art my onely poyſon? Or wilt thou doo me ſeruice, which haſt alredie brought me into eternall ſlauerie? *Zelmane* then knowing well at what marke ſhe ſhot, yet loth to enter into it; Moſt excellent Ladie (ſaid ſhe) you were beſt retire your ſelfe into your lodging, that you the better may paſſe this ſodaine fitte. Retire my ſelfe? (ſaid *Gynecia*) If I had retyred my ſelfe into my ſelfe, when thou to me (vnfortunate gueſt) cameſt to draw me from my ſelfe; bleſſed had I beene, and no neede had I had of this counſaile. But now alas, I am forced to flie to thee for ſuccour, whom I accuſe of all my hurt; and make thee iudge of my cauſe, who art the onely author of my miſchiefe. *Zelmane* the more aſtoniſhed, the more ſhe vnderſtood her, Madam (ſaid ſhe) whereof do you accuſe me, that I will not cleere my ſelfe? Or wherein may I ſteed you, that you may not command me? Alas, anſwered *Gynecia*, what ſhall I ſay more? Take pitty of me, O *Zelmane*, but not as *Zelmane*, and diſguiſe not with me in words, as I know thou dooſt in apparell.

Zelmane was much troubled with that word, finding
3 her ſelfe brought to this ſtreight. But as ſhee was thinking what to anſwere her; they might ſee olde *Baſilius* paſſe harde by them, without euer ſeeing them: complayning likewiſe of loue verie freſhly; and ending his com-

complaint with this ſong, Loue hauing renewed both his inuention, and voyce.

LEt not old age diſgrace my high deſire,
O heauenly ſoule, in humaine ſhape conteind:
Old wood inflam'de, doth yeeld the braueſt fire,
When yonger dooth in ſmoke his vertue ſpend.

Ne let white haires, which on my face doo grow,
Seeme to your eyes of a diſgracefull hewe:
Since whiteneſſe doth preſent the ſweeteſt ſhow,
Which makes all eyes doo honour vnto you.

Old age is wiſe and full of conſtant truth;
Old age well ſtayed from raunging humor liues:
Old age hath knowne what euer was in youth:
Old age orecome, the greater honour giues.
And to old age ſince you your ſelfe aſpire,
Let not old age diſgrace my high deſire.

Which being done, he looked verie curiouſly vpon himſelfe, ſometimes fetching a little ſkippe, as if he had ſaid, his ſtrength had not yet forſaken him. But *Zelmane* hauing in this time gotten leaſure to thinke for an anſwere; looking vpon *Gynecia*, as if ſhe thought ſhe did her ſome wrong: Madam (ſaid ſhe) I am not acquainted with thoſe words of diſguiſing, neither is it the profeſſion of an *Amazon*, neither are you a partie with whom it is to be vſed. If my ſeruice may pleaſe you, imploy it, ſo long as you do me no wrong in misiudging of me. Alas *Zelmane* (ſaid *Gynecia*) I perceiue you know ful little, how percing the eyes are of a true louer.

There

There is no one beame of thoſe thoughts you haue planted in me, but is able diſcerne a greater cloud then you doo goe in. Seeke not to conceale your ſelfe further from me, nor force not the paſſion of loue into violent extremities. Nowe was *Zelmane* brought to an exigent, when the king, turning his eyes that way thorow the trees, perceiued his wife and miſtres togither: ſo that framing the moſt louely countenance he could, he came ſtraightway towards them; and at the firſt word (thanking his wife for hauing entertained *Zelmane*,) deſired her ſhe would now returne into the lodge, becauſe hee had certaine matters of eſtate to impart to the Ladie *Zelmane*. The Queene (being nothing troubled with ielouſie in that point) obeyed the kings commaundement; full of raging agonies, and determinatly bent, that as ſhe would ſeeke all louing meanes to winne *Zelmane*, ſo ſhe would ſtirre vp terrible tragedies, rather then faile of her entent. And ſo went ſhe from them to the lodge-ward, with ſuch a battaile in her thoughts, and ſo deadly an ouerthrow giuen to her beſt reſolutions, that euen her bodie (where the fielde was fought) was oppreſſed withall: making a languiſhing ſickneſſe waite vpon the triumph of paſſion; which the more it preuailed in her, the more it made her ielouſie watchfull, both ouer her daughter, and *Zelmane*; hauing euer one of them entruſted to her owne eyes.

But as ſoone as *Baſilius* was ridde of his wiues preſence, falling downe on his knees, O Lady (ſaid he) which haſt onely had the power to ſtirre vp againe thoſe flames which had ſo long layn deade in me; ſee in me the power of your beautie; which can make

old

old age come to aſke counſaile of youth; and a Prince vncõquered, to become a ſlaue to a ſtranger. And whẽ you ſee that power of yours, loue that at leſt in me, ſince it is yours, although of me you ſee nothing to be loued. Worthy Prince (anſwered *Zelmane*, taking him vp from his kneeling) both your manner, and your ſpeech are ſo ſtraunge vnto me, as I know not how to anſwere it better then with ſilence. If ſilence pleaſe you (ſaid the king) it ſhal neuer diſpleaſe me, ſince my heart is wholly pledged to obey you: otherwiſe if you would vouchſafe mine eares ſuch happineſſe, as to heare you, they ſhall conuay your words to ſuch a mind, which is with the humbleſt degree of reuerẽce to receiue them. I diſdaine not to ſpeake to you (mightie Prince ſaid *Zelmane*,) but I diſdaine to ſpeake to any matter which may bring my honor into queſtion. And therewith, with a braue counterfeited ſcorne ſhe departed from the king; leauing him not ſo ſorie for his ſhort anſwere, as proud in himſelf that he had broken the matter. And thus did the king (feeding his minde with thoſe thoughts) paſſe great time in writing verſes, & making more of himſelfe, then he was wont to doo: that with a little helpe, he would haue growne into a prettie kind of dotage.

But *Zelmane* being ridde of this louing, but little-loued company, Alas (ſaid ſhe) poore *Pyrocles*, was there euer one, but I, that had receiued wrong, and could blame no body? that hauing more then I deſire, am ſtill in want of that I woulde? Truly Loue, I muſt needes ſay thus much on thy behalfe; thou haſt imployed my loue there, where all loue is deſerued; and for recompence haſt ſent me more loue then euer I deſired.

6

But

But what wilt thou doo *Pyrocles?* which way canſt thou finde to ridde thee of thy intricate troubles? To her whom I would be knowne to, I liue in darkeneſſe: and to her am reuealed, from whom I would be moſt ſecreat. What ſhift ſhall I finde againſt the diligent loue of *Baſilius?* what ſhield againſt the violent paſſions of *Gynecia?* And if that be done, yet how am I the neerer to quench the fire that conſumes me? Wel, well, ſweete *Philoclea*, my whole confidence muſt be builded in thy diuine ſpirit, which cannot be ignorant of the cruell wound I haue receiued by you.

CHAP. 2.

[1] Dametas-*his enſtructing of* Dorus. [2] Zelmanes *diſcourſe to* Dorus *of her difficulties*; [3] *& his to her of his ſucceſſe in loue.* [4] *His loue-ſuits made to* Mopſa, *meant to* Pamela: *with their anſweres.*

BVt as ſicke folkes, when they are alone, thinke companie would relieue them, & yet hauing company do find it noyſome; changing willingly outward obiects, when indeed the euill is inward: So poore *Zelmane* was no more weery of *Baſilius*, then ſhe was of her ſelfe, when *Baſilius* was gone: and euer the more, the more ſhe turned her eyes to become her owne iudges. Tyred wherewith, ſhe longed to meete her friende *Dorus*; that vpon the ſhoulders of friendſhip ſhe might lay the burthen of ſorrow: and therefore went toward the other lodge: where among certaine Beeches ſhe found *Dorus*, apparelled in ſlanen, with a goats ſkin caſt vpon him, & a garland of Laurell

mixt

mixt with Cypres leaues on his head, wayting on his maſter *Dametas*, who at that time was teching him how with his ſheephooke to catch a wanton Lambe, & with the ſame to caſt a litle clod at any one that ſtrayed out of cõpanie. And while *Dorus* was practiſing, one might ſee *Dametas* hold his hand vnder his girdle behind him, nodding from the waſt vpwards, & ſwearing he neuer knew man go more aukewardly to worke: & that they might talke of booke-learning what they would; but for his part, he neuer ſaw more vnfeatlie fellowes, then great clearks were.

But *Zelmanes* comming ſaued *Dorus* from further chiding. And ſo ſhe beginning to ſpeake with him of the number of his maſters ſheepe, and which Prouince of *Arcadia* bare the fineſt wooll, drewe him on to follow her in ſuch countrie diſcourſes, till (being out of *Dametas* hearing) with ſuch vehemencie of paſſion, as though her harte would clime into her mouth, to take her tongues office, ſhe declared vnto him, vpon what briers the roſes of her affections grew: how time ſtill ſeemed to forget her, beſtowing no one houre of comfort vpon her; ſhe remaining ſtil in one plight of ill fortune, ſauing ſo much worſe, as continuance of euill dooth in it ſelfe increaſe euill. Alas my *Dorus* (ſaid ſhe) thou ſeeſt how long and languiſhingly the weekes are paſte ouer vs ſince our laſte talking. And yet am I the ſame, miſerable I, that I was: onely ſtronger in longing, and weaker in hoping. Then fell ſhe to ſo pitifull a declaration of the inſupportablenes of her deſires, that *Dorus* eares (not able to ſhew what woundes that diſcourſe gaue vnto them) procured his eyes with teares to giue teſtimonie, how much they ſuffered for her 2

her ſuffering: till paſſion (a moſt cumberſome gueſt to it ſelfe) made *Zelmane* (the ſooner to ſhake it of) earneſtly intreate *Dorus*, that he alſo (with like freedome of diſcourſe) would beſtow a Mappe of his little worlde, vpon her; that ſhe might ſee, whether it were troubled with ſuch vnhabitable climes of colde deſpaires, and hotte rages, as hers was. And ſo walking vnder a fewe Palme trees, (which being louing in their own nature, ſeemed to giue their ſhadow the willinglier, becauſe they held diſcourſe of loue) *Dorus* thus entred to the deſcription of his fortune.

3 Alas (ſaid he) deare Coſin, that it hath pleaſed the high powers to throwe vs to ſuch an eſtate, as the onely entercourſe of our true friendſhippe, muſt be a bartring of miſeries. For my parte, I muſt confeſſe indeede, that from a huge darkenes of ſorrowes, I am crept (I cannot ſay to a lightſomnes, but) to a certain dawning, or rather, peeping out of ſome poſſibilitie of comfort: But woe is me, ſo farre from the marke of my deſires, that I rather thinke it ſuch a light, as comes through a ſmall hole to a dungeon, that the miſerable caitife may the better remember the light, of which he is depriued: ot like a ſcholler, who is onely come to that degree of knowledge, to finde him ſelfe vtterly ignorant.

But thus ſtands it with me: After that by your meanes I was exalted to ſerue in yonder bleſſed lodge, for a while I had, in the furnace of my agonies, this refreſhing; that (becauſe of the ſeruice I had done in killing of the Beare) it pleaſed the Princeſſe (in whom indeede ſtatelines ſhines through courteſie) to let fall ſome gratious looke vpon me. Sometimes to ſee my ex-

exerciſes, ſometimes to heare my ſonges. For my parte, my harte woulde not ſuffer me to omitte any occaſion, whereby I might make the incomparable *Pamela*, ſee how much extraordinarie deuotion I bare to her ſeruice: and withall, ſtraue to appeare more worthy in her ſight; that ſmall deſert, ioyned to ſo great affection, might preuaile ſomething in the wiſeſt Ladie. But too well (alas) I founde, that a ſhepheards ſeruice was but conſidered of as from a ſhepheard, and the acceptation limitted to no further proportion, then of a good ſeruant. And when my countenance had once giuen notice, that there lay affection vnder it, I ſawe ſtraight, Maieſty (ſitting in the throne of Beautie) draw foorth ſuch a ſworde of iuſt diſdaine, that I remayned as a man thunder-ſtriken; not daring, no not able, to beholde that power. Now, to make my eſtate knowen, ſeemed againe impoſſible, by reaſon of the ſuſpitiouſnes of *Dametas*, *Miſo*, and my young Miſtreſſe, *Mopſa*. For, *Dametas* (according to the conſtitution of a dull head) thinkes no better way to ſhewe him ſelfe wiſe, then by ſuſpecting euery thing in his way. Which ſuſpition *Miſo* (for the hoggiſh ſhrewdneſſe of her braine) and *Mopſa* (for a very vnlikely enuie ſhe hath ſtumbled vpon, againſt the Princeſſes vnſpeakeable beautie) were very gladde to execute. So that I (finding my ſeruice by this meanes lightlie regarded, my affection deſpiſed, and my ſelfe vnknowen) remayned no fuller of deſire, then voyde of comfort how to come to my deſire. Which (alas) if theſe trees could ſpeak, they might well witneſſe. For, many times haue I ſtoode here, bewailing my ſelfe vnto them:

many

many times haue I, leaning to yonder Palme, admired the bleſſednes of it, that coulde beare Loue without ſence of paine. Many times, when my maſters cattle came hether to chewe their cudde, in this freſh place, I might ſee the young Bull teſtifie his loue. But how? with proud lookes, and ioyfulnes. O wretched mankind (ſaid I then to my ſelfe) in whom witte (which ſhould be the gouerner of his welfare) becomes the traitor to his bleſſednes. Theſe beaſts, like children to nature, inherite her bleſſings quietly; we, like baſtards, are layd abroad, euen as foundlinges to be trayned vp by griefe and ſorrow. Their mindes grudge not their bodies comfort, nor their ſences are letted from enioying their obiects: we haue the impediments of honor, and the torments of conſcience. Truely in ſuch cogitatiõs haue I ſomtimes ſo long ſtood, that me thought my feete began to grow into the ground, with ſuch a darkenes and heauines of minde, that I might eaſilie haue bene perſwaded to haue reſigned ouer my very eſſence. But Loue, (which one time layeth burthens, another time giueth wings) when I was at the loweſt of my downward thoughts, pulled vp my harte to remẽber, that nothing is atchieued before it be throughlie attempted; and that lying ſtill doth neuer goe forward: and that therefore it was time, now or neuer, to ſharpen my inuention, to pearce thorow the hardnes of this enterpriſe; neuer ceaſing to aſſemble al my conceites, one after the other, how to manifeſt both my minde and eſtate. Till at laſt, I lighted and reſolued on this way, which yet perchaunce you will think was a way rather to hide it.

4 I began to counterfeite the extremeſt loue towards

Mopſa,

Mopſa, that might be: and as for the loue, ſo liuely it was indeed within me, (although to another ſubiect) that litle I needed to counterfait any notable demonſtrations of it: and ſo making a contrariety the place of my memory, in her fowlnes I beheld *Pamelas* fayreneſſe, ſtill looking on *Mopſa*, but thinking on *Pamela*; as if I ſaw my Sunne ſhine in a puddled water: I cryed out of nothiug but *Mopſa*: to *Mopſa* my attendance was directed: to *Mopſa* the beſt fruites I coulde gather were brought: to *Mopſa* it ſeemed ſtill that mine eye conueyed my tongue. So that *Mopſa* was my ſaying; *Mopſa* was my ſinging; *Mopſa*, (that is onely ſuteable in laying a foule complexion vpon a filthy fauour, ſetting foorth both in ſluttiſhneſſe) ſhe was the load-ſtarre of my life, ſhe the bleſſing of mine eyes, ſhe the ouerthrowe of my deſires, and yet the recompence of my ouerthrowe; ſhe the ſweetneſſe of my harte, euen ſweetning the death, which her ſweetneſſe drew vpon me. In ſumme, what ſoeuer I thought of *Pamela*, that I ſaide of *Mopſa*; whereby as I gatte my maiſters good-will, who before ſpited me, fearing leſt I ſhould winne the Princeſſe fauour from him, ſo did the ſame make the Princeſſe be better content to allow me her preſence: whether indeede it were, that a certaine ſparke of noble indignation did riſe in her, not to ſuffer ſuch a baggage to winne away any thing of hers, how meanely ſoeuer ſhe reputed of it; or rather (as I thinke) my words being ſo paſſionate; and ſhooting ſo quite contrarie from the markes of *Mopſaes* worthineſſe, ſhe perceiued well enough, whither they were directed: and therefore being ſo masked, ſhe was contented, as a ſporte of witte to attend them.

Whereupon one day determining to find ſome means to tel (as of a third perſon) the tale of mine owne loue, and eſtate, finding *Mopſa* (like a Cuckoo by a Nightingale) alone with *Pamela*, I came in vnto them, and with a face (I am ſure) full of clowdy fancies, tooke a harpe, and ſonge this ſonge.

SInce ſo mine eyes are ſubiect to your ſight,
That in your ſight they fixed haue my braine;
Since ſo my harte is filled with that light,
That onely light doth all my life maintaine;

Since in ſweete you all goods ſo richly raigne,
That where you are no wiſhed good can want;
Since ſo your liuing image liues in me,
That in my ſelfe your ſelfe true loue doth plant;
How can you him vnworthy then decree,
In whoſe chiefe parte your worthes implanted be?

The ſong being ended, which I had often broken of in the middeſt with grieuous ſighes, which ouertooke euery verſe I ſange, I let fall my harpe frō me; & caſting my eie ſometime vpon *Mopſa*, but ſetting my ſight principally vpon *Pamela*, And is it the onely fortune moſt bewtiful *Mopſa* (ſaid I) of wretched *Dorus*, that fortune ſhould be meaſure of his mind? Am I onely he that becauſe I am in miſerie, more miſerie muſt be laid vpon me? muſt that which ſhould be cauſe of compaſſion, become an argument of cruelty againſt me? Alas excellent *Mopſa*, conſider, that a vertuous Prince requires the life of his meaneſt ſubiect, and the heauen-

ly

ly Sunne diſdaines not to giue light to the ſmalleſt worme. O *Mopſa, Mopſa*, if my hart could be as manifeſt to you, as it is vncomfortable to me, I doubt not the height of my thoughts ſhould well counteruaile the lowneſſe of my qualitie. Who hath not heard of the greatnes of your eſtate? who ſeeth not, that your eſtate is much excelled with that ſweet vniting of al beauties, which remaineth & dwelleth with you? who knowes not, that al theſe are but ornamẽts of that diuine ſparke within you, which being deſcẽded from heauen could not els-where picke out ſo ſweete a manſion? But if you will knowe what is the bande that ought to knit all theſe excellencies together, it is a kinde of mercyfulneſſe to ſuch a one, as is in his ſoule deuoted to thoſe perfections. *Mopſa* (who already had had a certaine ſmackring towardes me) ſtood all this while with her hand ſometimes before her face, but moſt cõmonly with a certaine ſpeciall grace of her owne, wagging her lips, and grinning in ſteede of ſmiling: but all the wordes I could get of her, was, wringing her waſte, and thruſting out her chinne, In faith you ieſt with me: you are a merry man indeede. But the euer-pleaſing *Pamela* (that well found the Comedie would be marred, if ſhe did not helpe *Mopſa* to her parte) was cõtent to vrge a little further of me. Maiſter *Dorus* (ſaid the faire *Pamela*) me thinks you blame your fortune very wrongfully, ſince the fault is not in Fortune, but in you that cannot frame your ſelfe to your fortune: and as wrongfully do require *Mopſa* to ſo great a diſparagement as to her Fathers ſeruaunt; ſince ſhe is not worthy to be loued, that hath not ſome feeling of her owne worthines. I ſtaied a good while after her words,

in hope ſhe would haue continued her ſpeech (ſo great a delight I receaued in hearing her) but ſeeing her ſay no further, (with a quaking all ouer my body) I thus anſwered her. Ladie, moſt worthie of all dutie, how falles it out that you in whom all vertue ſhines, will take the patronage of fortune, the onely rebellious handmaide againſt vertue? Eſpecially, ſince before your eyes, you haue a pittifull ſpectacle of her wickedneſſe, a forlorne creature, which muſt remaine not ſuch as I am, but ſuch as ſhe makes me, ſince ſhe muſt be the ballance of worthineſſe or diſparagement. Yet alas, if the condemned man (euen at his death) haue leaue to ſpeake, let my mortall wound purchaſe thus much conſideration; ſince the perfections are ſuch in the partie I loue, as the feeling of them cannot come into any vnnoble hart; ſhall that harte, which doth not onely feele them, but hath all the working of his life placed in them, ſhall that hart I ſaie, lifted vp to ſuch a height, be counted baſe? O let not an excellent ſpirit doo it ſelfe ſuch wrong, as to thinke, where it is placed, imbraced, and loued; there can be any vnworthineſſe, ſince the weakeſt miſt is not eaſilier driuen away by the Sunne, then that is chaſed away with ſo high thoughts. I will not denie (anſwered the gratious *Pamela*) but that the loue you beare to *Mopſa*, hath brought you to the conſideration of her vertues, and that conſideration may haue made you the more vertuous, and ſo the more worthie: But euen that then (you muſt confeſſe) you haue receiued of her, and ſo are rather gratefully to thanke her, then to preſſe any further, till you bring ſomething of your owne wherby to claime it. And truely *Dorus*, I muſt in *Mopſaes* behalfe

behalfe ſay thus much to you, that if her beauties haue ſo ouertaken you, it becomes a true Loue to haue your harte more ſet vpon her good then your owne, and to beare a tenderer reſpect to her honour, then your ſatisfaction. Now by my hallidame, Madame (ſaid *Mopſa*, throwing a great number of ſheeps eyes vpon me) you haue euen touched mine owne minde to the quicke, forſooth. I (finding that the pollicie that I had vſed, had at leſt wiſe procured thus much happineſſe vnto me, as that I might euen in my Ladies preſence, diſcouer the ſore which had deepely feſtered within me, and that ſhe could better conceaue my reaſons applied to *Mopſa*, then ſhe would haue vouchſafed them, whileſt her ſelfe was a partie) thought good to purſue on my good beginning, vſing this fit occaſion of *Pameleas* wit, and *Mopſaes* ignorance. Therfore with an humble pearcing eye, looking vpon *Pamela*, as if I had rather bene cõdemned by her mouth, then highly exalted by the other, turning my ſelfe to *Mopſa*, but keeping mine eye where it was, faire *Mopſa* (ſaid I) well doo I finde by the wiſe knitting together of your anſwere, that any diſputatiõ I can vſe is aſmuch too weake, as Ivnworthy. I find my loue ſhalbe proued no loue, without I leue to loue, being too vnfit a veſſell in whõ ſo high thoughts ſhould be engraued. Yet ſince the Loue I beare you, hath ſo ioyned it ſelf to the beſt part of my life, as the one cãnot depart, but that th'other will follow, before I ſeeke to obey you in making my laſt paſſage, let me know which is my vnworthines, either of mind, eſtate, or both? *Mopſa* was about to ſay, in neither; for her hart I thinke tũbled with ouer much kindneſſe, when *Pamela* with a more fauourable

countenance thē before (finding how apt I was to fall into diſpaire) told me, I might therein haue anſwered my ſelfe; for beſides that it was graunted me, that the inward feeling of *Mopſaes* perfectiōs had greatly beautified my minde, there was none could denie, but that my minde and bodie deſerued great allowance. But *Dorus* (ſayd ſhe) you muſt be ſo farre maiſter of your loue, as to conſider, that ſince the iudgement of the world ſtands vpon matter of fortune, and that the ſexe of womankind of all other is moſt bound to haue regardfull eie to mens iudgements, it is not for vs to play the philoſophers, in ſeeking out your hidden vertues: ſince that, which in a wiſe prince would be coūted wiſdome, in vs wil be taken for a light-grounded affectiō: ſo is not one thing, one, done by diuers perſons. There is no man in a burning feuer feeles ſo great contentmēt in cold water greedily receiued (which aſſoone as the drinke ceaſeth, the rage reneweth) as poore I found my ſoule refreſhed with her ſweetly pronoūced words; & newly, & more violētly againe enflamed, aſſoone as ſhe had cloſed vp her delightfull ſpeach, with no leſſe wel graced ſilence. But remēbring in my ſelf that aſwell the Souldier dieth which ſtandeth ſtill, as he that giues the braueſt onſet: & ſeeing that to the making vp of my fortune, there wanted nothing ſo much as the making knowne of mine eſtate, with a face wel witneſſing how deeply my ſoule was poſſeſſed, & with the moſt ſubmiſſiue behauior, that a thralled hart could expreſſe, euē as my words had bene too thicke for my mouth, at lēgth ſpake to this purpoſe. Alas, moſt worthy Princeſſe (ſaid I) & do not then your owne ſweet words ſufficiētly teſtifie, that there was neuer mā could haue a iuſter actiō

against

againſt filthy fortune, thē I, ſince all other things being granted me, her blindneſſe is my onely let: O heauēly God, I would either ſhe had ſuch eyes as were able to diſcerne my deſerts, or I were blind not to ſee the daily cauſe of my miſfortune. But yet (ſaid I) moſt honoured Lady, if my miſerable ſpeeches haue not already cloied you, & that the verie preſence of ſuch a wretch become not hatefull in your eyes; let me reply thus much further againſt my mortall ſentence, by telling you a ſtorie, which happened in this ſame country long ſince (for woes make the ſhorteſt time ſeeme long) whereby you ſhall ſee that my eſtate is not ſo contemptible, but that a Prince hath bene content to take the like vpon him, and by that onely hath aſpired to enioy a mightie Princeſſe. *Pamela* gratiouſly harkened, and I told my tale in this ſort.

CHAP. 3.

Dorus-*his tale of his owne* [1] *education,* [2] *trauaile,* [3] *enamoring,* [4] *metamorphoſing,* [5] *ſauing from ſea,* [6] *and being* Muſidorus. [7] *His octaue.* [8] *Pamelas and Mopſas anſwere to his ſuit.* [9] *His preſent to them;* [10] *and perplexitie in himſelfe.*

IN the countrie of *Theſſalia*, (alas why name I that accurſed country, which brings forth nothing, but matters for tragedies? but name it I muſt) in *Theſſalia* (I ſay) there was (well may I ſay, there was) a Prince (no, no Prince, whō bondage wholly poſſeſſed; but

yet accounted a Prince,and) named *Muſidorus*. O *Muſidorus*, *Muſidorus*; but to what ſerue exclamations, where there are no eares to receiue the ſounde? This *Muſidorus*, being yet in the tendreſt age, his worthy father paied to nature (with a violent death) her laſt dueties, leauing his childe to the faith of his friends, and the proofe of time: death gaue him not ſuch pangs as the foreſight-full care hee had of his ſilly ſucceſſour. And yet if in his foreſight he could haue ſeene ſo much, happie was that good Prince in his timely departure, which barred him from the knowledge of his ſonnes miſeries, which his knowledge could neither haue preuented, nor relieued. The young *Muſidorus* (being thus, as for the firſt pledge of the deſtinies good will, depriued of his principall ſtay) was yet for ſome yeares after (as if the ſtarres would breath themſelues for a greater miſchiefe) lulled vp in as much good luck, as the heedfull loue of his dolefull mother, and the floriſhing eſtate of his country could breed vnto him.

2 But when the time now came, that miſerie ſeemed to be ripe for him, becauſe he had age to know miſery, I thinke there was a conſpiracy in all heauenly & earthly things, to frame fit occaſion to leade him vnto it. His people (to whom all forraine matters in foretime were odious) beganne to wiſh in their beloued Prince, experience by trauaile: his deare mother (whoſe eyes were held open, onely with the ioy of looking vpon him) did now diſpenſe with the comfort of her widowhead life, deſiring the ſame her ſubiectes did, for the increaſe of her ſonnes worthineſſe. And here-to did *Muſidorus* owne vertue (ſee how vertue can be a miniſter to miſchiefe) ſufficiently prouoke him: for indeed

indeed thus much I muſt ſay for him, although the likeneſſe of our miſhaps makes me preſume to patterne my ſelfe vnto him) that well-doing was at that time his ſcope, from which no faint pleaſure could with-hold him. But the preſent occaſion which did knit all this togither, was his vncle the king of *Macedon*; who hauing lately before gottē ſuch victories, as were beyond expectation, did at this time ſend both for the Prince his ſonne (brought vp togither, to auoid the warres, with *Muſidorus*) and for *Muſidorus* himſelfe, that his ioy might be the more full, hauing ſuch partakers of it. But alas, to what a ſea of miſeries my plaintfull toong doth lead me; and thus out of breath, rather with that I thought, then that I ſaid, I ſtayed my ſpeech, till *Pamela* ſhewing by countenance that ſuch was her pleaſure, I thus continued it. Theſe two young Princes to ſatiſfie the king, tooke their way by ſea, towards *Thrace*, whether they would needs go with a Nauie to ſuccour him: he being at that time before *Bizantium* with a mighty Army beſeeging it; where at that time his court was. But when the conſpired heauens had gotten this Subiect of their wrath vpon ſo fit a place as the ſea was, they ſtreight began to breath out in boyſtrous windes ſome part of their malice againſt him; ſo that with the loſſe of all his Nauie, he onely with the Prince his coſin, were caſt a land, farre off from the place whether their deſires would haue guided them. O cruell winds in your vnconſiderate rages, why either beganne you this furie, or why did you not end it in his end? But your cruelty was ſuch, as you would ſpare his life for many deathfull torments. To tel you what pittiful miſhaps fell to the young Prince of *Macedon* his coſen, I

ſhould

ſhould too much fill your eares with ſtrange horrors; neither will I ſtay vpon thoſe laborſome aduẽtures, nor loathſome miſaduentures, to which, & through which his fortune and courage conducted him; My ſpeach haſtneth it ſelf to come to the ful-point of *Muſidorus* his infortunes. For as we finde the moſt peſtilẽt diſeaſes do gather into themſelues al the infirmitie, with which the body before was annoyed; ſo did his laſt miſery embracein the extremitie of it ſelf all his former miſchiefes.

3 *Arcadia*, *Arcadia* was the place prepared to be the ſtage of his endleſſe ouerthrow. *Arcadia* was, (alas well might I ſay it is) the charmed circle, where all his ſpirits for euer ſhould be enchaunted. For here (and no where els) did his infected eyes make his minde know, what power heauenly beauty hath to throw it downe to helliſh agonies. Here, here did he ſee the *Arcadian* Kings eldeſt daughter, in whom he forthwith placed ſo all his hopes of ioy, and ioyfull parts of his heart, that he left in himſelfe nothing, but a maze of longing, and a dungeon of ſorrow. But alas what can ſaying make them beleeue, whom ſeeing cannot perſwade? Thoſe paines muſt be felt before they cã be vnderſtood; no outward vtterance can command a conceipt. Such was as then the ſtate of the King, as it was no time by direct meanes to ſeeke her. And ſuch was the ſtate of his captiued wil, as he could delay no time of ſeeking her.

In this intangled caſe, he cloathed himſelfe in a ſhep-
4 heards weede, that vnder the baſeneſſe of that forme, he might at leſt haue free acceſſe to feed his eyes with that, which ſhould at length eate vp his hart. In which doing, thus much without doubt he hath manifeſted, that this eſtate is not alwayes to be reiected, ſince vnder

der that vaile there may be hidden things to be eſteemed. And if he might with taking on a ſhepherds look caſt vp his eyes to the faireſt *P*rinceſſe Nature in that time created; the like, nay the ſame deſire of mine need no more to be diſdained, or held for diſgracefull. But now alas mine eyes waxe dimme, my toong beginnes to falter, and my hart to want force to help, either with the feeling remembrance I haue, in what heape of miſeries the caitife *P*rince lay at this time buried. *P*ardon therfore, moſt excellent *P*rinceſſe, if I cut off the courſe of my dolorous tale, ſince if I be vnderſtood, I haue ſaid enough, for the defence of my baſeneſſe; and for that which after might befall to that patterne of ill fortune, (the matters are monſtrous for my capacitie) his hatefull deſtinies muſt beſt declare their owne workemanſhip.

Thus hauing deliuered my tale in this perplexed manner, to the end the *P*rinceſſe might iudge that he ment himſelfe, who ſpake ſo feelingly; her aunſwere was both ſtrange, and in ſome reſpect comfortable. For would you thinke it? ſhe hath heard heretofore of vs both, by meanes of the valiant prince *Plangus*, and particularly of our caſting away: which ſhe (following my owne ſtile) thus delicately brought foorth. You haue told (ſaid ſhe) *Dorus*, a prettie tale; but you are much deceiued in the latter end of it. For the prince *Muſidorus* with his coſen *Pyrocles* did both periſh vpon the coaſt of *Laconia*; as a noble gentleman, called *Plangus* (who was well acquainted with the hiſtorie) did aſſure my father. O how that ſpeach of hers did poure ioyes in my hart? ô bleſſed name (thought I) of mine, ſince thou haſt bene in that toong, and paſſed through thoſe lips, though

though I can neuer hope to approch them. As for *Pyrocles* (ſaid I) I will not denie it, but that he is periſhed: (which I ſaid, leaſt ſooner ſuſpition might ariſe of your being, then your ſelfe would haue it) and yet affirmed no lye vnto her, ſince I onely ſaid, I would not deny it. But for *Muſidorus* (ſaid I) I perceiue indeed you haue neither heard or read the ſtory of that vnhappy Prince; for this was the verie obiection, which that peereleſſe Princeſſe did make vnto him, whē he ſought to appeare ſuch as he was before her wiſdome: and thus as I haue read it faire written in the certaintie of my knowledge he might anſwere her, that indeed the ſhip wherein he came, by a treaſon was periſhed, and therfore that *Plangus* might eaſily be deceaued: but that he himſelfe was caſt vpon the coaſt of *Laconia*, where he was taken vp by a couple of ſhepheards, who liued in thoſe dayes famous; for that both louing one faire maide, they yet remained conſtant friends; one of whoſe ſongs not long ſince was ſong before you by the ſhepheard *Lamon*, and brought by them to a noble-mans houſe, neere *Mantinea*, whoſe ſonne had a little before his mariage, bene taken priſoner, and by the helpe of this Prince, *Muſidorus* (though naming himſelfe by another name) was deliuered. Now theſe circumlocutions I did vſe, becauſe of the one ſide I knewe the Princeſſe would knowe well the parties I ment; and of the other, if I ſhould haue named *Strephon*, *Claius*, *Kalander*, and *Clitophon*, perhappes it would haue rubd ſome coniecture into the heauie heade of Miſtreſſe *Mopſa*.

6 And therfore (ſaid I) moſt diuine Lady, he iuſtly was to argue againſt ſuch ſuſpitions; that the Prince might

eaſily

eaſily by thoſe parties be ſatisfied, that vpon that wrack ſuch a one was taken vp: and therefore that *Plangus* might well erre, who knew not of anies taking vp againe: that he that was ſo preſerued, brought good tokens to be one of the two, chiefe of that wracked companie: which two ſince *Plangus* knew to be *Muſidorus* and *Pyrocles*, he muſt needes be one of them, although (as I ſaid) vpon a foretaken vowe, he was otherwiſe at that time called. Beſides, the Princeſſe muſt needes iudge, that no leſſe then a Prince durſt vndertake ſuch an enterpriſe, which (though he might gette the fauour of the Princeſſe) he could neuer defend with leſſe thē a Princes power, againſt the force of *Arcadia*. Laſtly, (ſaid he) for a certaine demonſtration, he preſumed to ſhew vnto the Princeſſe a marke he had on his face, as I might (ſaid I) ſhew this of my neck to the rare *Mopſa:* and withall, ſhewed my necke to them both, where (as you know) there is a redde ſpotte, bearing figure (as they tell me) of a Lyons pawe, that ſhe may aſcertaine her ſelfe, that I am *Menalcas* brother. And ſo did he, beſeeching her to ſend ſome one ſhe might truſt, into *Theſſalia*, ſecretely to be aduertiſed, whether the age, the complexion, and particularly that notable ſigne, did not fully agree with this Prince *Muſidorus*. Doo you not know further (ſaide ſhe, with a ſetled countenance, not accuſing any kind of inwarde motion) of that ſtorie. Alas no, (ſaid I) for euen here the Hiſtoriographer ſtopped, ſaying, The reſt belonged to Aſtrologie. And therewith, thinking her ſilent imaginations began to worke vpon ſomewhat, to mollifie them (as the nature of Muſick is to do) and withal, to ſhew what kind

kind of ſhepheard I was, I took vp my Harpe, and ſang theſe few verſes.

7 *MY ſheepe are thoughts, which I both guide and ſerue:*
Their paſture is faire hilles of fruitleſſe Loue:
On barren ſweetes they feede, and feeding ſterue:
I waile their lotte, but will not other proue.
My ſheepehooke is wanne hope, which all vpholdes:
My weedes, Deſire, cut out in endleſſe ſoldes.
What wooll my ſheepe ſhall beare, whiles thus they liue,
In you it is, you muſt the iudgement giue.

And then, partly to bring *Mopſa* againe to the matter (leſt ſhe ſhould too much take heed to our diſcourſes) but principally, if it were poſſible, to gather ſome comfort out of her anſweares, I kneeled downe to the Princeſſe, and humblie beſought her to moue *Mopſa* in my behalfe, that ſhe would vnarme her hart of that ſteely reſiſtãce againſt the ſweet blowes of Loue: that ſince all her parts were decked with ſome particular ornamẽt; her face with beautie, her head with wiſdome, her eyes with maieſtie, her countenance with gracefulnes, her lippes with louelines, her tongue with victorie; that ſhe woulde make her hart the throne of pitie, being the moſt excellent rayment of the moſt excellent part.

8 *Pamela*, without ſhew either of fauour or diſdaine, either of heeding or neglecting what I had ſaid, turned her ſpeech to *Mopſa*, and with ſuch a voice and action,

as

as might ſhewe ſhe ſpake of a matter which little did concerne her, Take heede to your ſelfe (ſaide ſhe) *Mopſa*, for your ſhepheard can ſpeake well: but truely, if he doo fully prooue himſelfe ſuch as he ſaith, I mean, the honeſt ſhepheard *Menalchas* his brother, and heire, I know no reaſon why you ſhoulde thinke ſcorne of him. *Mopſa* though (in my conſcience) ſhe were euen then farre ſpent towards me, yet ſhe anſwered her, that for all my queint ſpeeches, ſhe would keepe her honeſtie cloſe inough: And that as for the highe way of matrimony, ſhe would ſteppe neuer a foote further, till my maiſter her father had ſpoken the whole word him ſelfe, no ſhe would not. But euer and anon turning her muzzell toward me, ſhe threwe ſuch a proſpect vpon me, as might well haue giuen a ſurfet to any weake louers ſtomacke. But Lord what a foole am I, to mingle that driuels ſpeeches among my noble thoughts? but becauſe ſhe was an Actor in this Tragedie, to geue you a ful knowledge, and to leaue nothing (that I can remember) vnrepeated.

Now the Princeſſe being about to withdrawe her ſelfe from vs, I tooke a Iewell, made in the figure of a Crab-fiſh, which, becauſe it lookes one way and goes another, I thought it did fitly patterne out my looking to *Mopſa*, but bending to *Pamela*: The word about it was, *By force, not choice*; and ſtill kneeling, beſought the Princeſſe that ſhe would vouchſafe to giue it *Mopſa*, and with the bleſſednes of her hande to make acceptable vnto her that toye which I had founde, followinge of late an acquaintaunce of mine at the plowe. For (ſayd I) as the earth was turned vp, the plow-ſhare lighted vpon a great ſtone: we puld that 9

vp

vp,& ſo found both that,and ſome other prety thinges which we had deuided betwixt vs.

10 *Mopſa* was benummed with ioy when the Princeſſe gaue it her: but in the Princeſſe I could finde no apprehenſion of what I either ſaid or did, but with a calme careleſneſſe letting each thing ſlide,iuſtly as we doo by their ſpeeches, who neither in matter nor perſon doo any way belong vnto vs: which kind of colde temper, mixt with that lightning of her naturall maieſtie, is of all others moſt terrible vnto me: for yet if I found ſhe contemned me,I would deſperatly labour both in fortune and vertue to ouercome it; if ſhe onely miſdoubted me, I were in heauen; for quickly I woulde bring ſufficient aſſurance: laſtly,if ſhe hated me, yet I ſhould know what paſſion to deale with; and either with infinitenes of deſert I would take away the fewell from that fire; or if nothing would ſerue, then I would giue her my hart-bloud to quench it. But this cruell quietnes, neither retiring to miſlike, nor proceeding to fauour;gratious,but gratious ſtill after one maner; all her courteſies hauing this engrauen in them, that what is done,is for vertues ſake, not for the parties; euer keeping her courſe like the Sun, who neither for our prayſes,nor curſes,will ſpare or ſtoppe his horſes. This (I ſay)heauenlines of hers,(for how ſo euer my miſerie is I cannot but ſo entitle it)is ſo impoſſible to reach vnto, that I almoſt begin to ſubmitte my ſelfe to the tyrannie of deſpaire, not knowing any way of perſwaſiō, where wiſdome ſeemes to be vnſenſible. I haue appeared to her eyes,like my ſelfe, by a deuice I vſed with my maſter, perſwading him,that we two might put on a certaine rich apparrel I had prouided,and ſo practiſe ſome thing

thing on horſback before *Pamela*, telling him, it was apparell I had gotten for playing well the part of a King in a Tragedie at *Athens*: my horſe indeed was it I had left at *Menalcas* houſe, and *Dametas* got one by friendſhip out of the Princes ſtable. But how ſoeuer I ſhow, I am no baſe bodie, all I doo is but to beate a rocke and get ſome.

CHAP. 4.

[1] Baſilius *his hauking.* [2] Gynecias *hurte by* Dametas *ouerturning her coache.* [3] *Her iclouſie ouer* Zelmane. Philocleas [4] *louepaſſions*, [5] *vowe of chaſtitie*, [6] *reuocation*, [7] *lamentation.*

BVt as *Dorus* was about to tell further, *Dametas* (who came whiſtling, & counting vpon his fingers, how many loade of hay his ſeuenteen fat oxen eat vp in a yeare) deſired *Zelmane* from the King that ſhe would come into the lodge, where they ſtayed for her. Alas (ſaid *Dorus*, taking his leaue) the ſum is this, that you may wel find you haue beatē your ſorrow againſt ſuch a wall, which with the force of rebound may wel make your ſorrow ſtrōger. But *Zelmane* turning her ſpeach to *Dametas*, I ſhall grow (ſaid ſhe) skilfull in country matters, if I haue often conference with your ſeruaunt. In ſooth (anſwered *Dametas* with a graceleſſe skorne) the Lad may proue wel enough, if he ouerſoon thinke not too well of himſelfe, and will beare away that he hea- 1

reth of his elders. And therewith as they walked to the other lodge, to make *Zelmane* find ſhe might haue ſpēt her time better with him, he began with a wilde Methode to runne ouer all the art of husbandrie: eſpecially imploying his tongue about well dunging of a fielde: while poore *Zelmane* yeelded her eares to thoſe tedious ſtrokes, not warding them ſo much as with any one anſwere, till they came to *Baſilius*, and *Gynecia*, who attēded for her in a coach to carrie her abroad to ſee ſome ſportes prepared for her. *Baſilius* and *Gynecia* ſitting in the one ende, placed her at the other, with her left ſide to *Philoclea*. *Zelmane* was moued in her minde, to haue kiſſed their feete for the fauour of ſo bleſſed a ſeate: for the narrowneſſe of the coach made them ioine from the foote to the ſhoulders very cloſe together; the truer touch wherof though it were barred by their enuious apparell, yet as a perfect Magnes, though put in an iuorie boxe, will thorow the boxe ſend forth his imbraced vertue to a beloued needle; ſo this imparadiſed neighbourhood made *Zelmanes* ſoule cleaue vnto her, both thorow the iuory caſe of her body, and the apparell which did ouer-clowd it. All the bloud of *Zelmanes* body ſtirring in her, as wine will do when ſuger is haſtely put into it, ſeeking to ſucke the ſweetnes of the beloued gueſt; her hart, like a lion new impriſoned, ſeeing him that reſtraines his libertie, before the grate; not panting, but ſtriuing violently (if it had bene poſſible) to haue leapt into the lappe of *Philoclea*. But *Dametas*, euen then proceeding from being maiſter of a carte, to be doctor of a coach, not a little prowd in himſelfe, that his whippe at that time guided the rule of *Arcadia*, draue the coach (the couer whereof

whereof was made with ſuch ioints, that as they might (to auoid the weather) pull it vp cloſe when they liſted, ſo when they would they might put each ende downe, and remaine as diſcouered & open ſighted as on horſebacke) till vpon the ſide of the forreſt they had both greyhounds, ſpaniels, and hounds: whereof the firſt might ſeeme the Lords, the ſecond the Gentlemen, and the laſt the Yeomen of dogges; a caſt of Merlins there was beſides, which flying of a gallant height ouer certaine buſhes, would beate the birdes (that roſe) downe vnto the buſhes, as Faulcons will doo wilde-foule ouer a riuer. But the ſporte which for that daie *Baſilius* would principallie ſhewe to *Zelmane*, was the mountie at a Hearne, which getting vp on his wagling winges with paine, till he was come to ſome height, (as though the aire next to the earth were not fit for his great bodie to flie thorow) was now growen to diminiſh the ſight of himſelf, & to giue example to great perſons, that the higher they be, the leſſe they ſhould ſhow: whē a Ierfaulcon was caſt of after her, who ſtreight ſpying where the pray was, fixing her eie with deſire, & guiding her wing by her eie, vſed no more ſtrēgth then induſtry. For as a good builder to a hie tower will not make his ſtayre vpright, but winding almoſt the ful cōpaſſe about, that the ſteepnes be the more vnſenſible: ſo ſhe, ſeing the towring of her purſued chaſe, went circkling, & cōpaſſing about, riſing ſo with the leſſe ſence of riſing; & yet finding that way ſcantly ſerue the greedines of her haſt, as an ambitious body wil go far out of the direct way, to win to a point of height which he deſires; ſo would ſhe (as it were) turne taile to the Heron, & flie quite out another way,

but all was to returne in a higher pitche; which once gotten, ſhe would either beate with cruell aſſaults the Heron, who now was driuen to the beſt defence of force, ſince flight would not ſerue; or els claſping with him, come downe together, to be parted by the ouer-partiall beholders.

2 Diuers of which flights *Baſilius* ſhewing to *Zelmane*, thus was the richeſſe of the time ſpent, and the day deceaſſed before it was thought of, till night like a degenerating ſucceſſour made his departure the better remembred. And therefore (ſo conſtrained) they willed *Dametas* to driue homeward, who (halfe ſleeping, halfe muſing about the mending of a vine-preſſe) guided the horſes ſo ill, that the wheele comming ouer a great ſtub of a tree, it ouerturned the coach. Which though it fell violently vpon the ſide where *Zelmane* & *Gynecia* ſat, yet for *Zelmanes* part, ſhe would haue bene glad of the fall, which made her beare the ſweete burthen of *Philoclea*, but that ſhe feared ſhe might receaue ſome hurt. But indeede neither ſhe did, nor any of the reſt, by reaſon they kept their armes and legs within the coach, ſauing *Gynecia*, who with the onely bruze of the fall had her ſhoulder put out of ioinct; which though by one of the Faulkeners cunning, it was ſet well againe, yet with much paine was ſhe brought to the lodge; and paine (fetching his ordinary companion, a feuer with him) draue her to entertaine them both in her bedde.

3 But neither was the feuer of ſuch impatient heate, as the inwarde plague-ſore of her affection, nor the paine halfe ſo noyſome, as the iealouſie ſhe conceaued of her daughter *Philoclea*, leſt this time of her ſickneſſe might

might giue apt occaſion to *Zelmane*, whom ſhe miſdoubted. Therefore ſhe called *Philoclea* to her, and though it were late in the night, commaunded her in her eare to go to the other lodge, and ſend *Miſo* to her, with whom ſhe would ſpeake, and ſhe lie with her ſiſter *Pamela*. The meane while *Gynecia* kepte *Zelmane* with her, becauſe ſhe would be ſure, ſhe ſhould be out of the lodge, before ſhe licenced *Zelmane*. *Philoclea* not skild in any thing better then obedience, went quietly downe; and the Moone then full (not thinking skorne to be a torche-bearer to ſuch beautie) guided her ſteppes, whoſe motions bare a minde, which bare in it ſelfe farre more ſtirring motions. And alas (ſweete *Philoclea*) how hath my penne till now forgot thy paſſions, ſince to thy memorie principally all this long matter is intended? pardon the ſlacknes to come to thoſe woes, which hauing cauſed in others, thou didſt feele in thy ſelfe.

The ſweete minded *Philoclea* was in their degree of well doing, to whom the not knowing of euill ſerueth for a ground of vertue, and hold their inward powers in better forme with an vnſpotted ſimplicitie, then many, who rather cũningly ſeeke to know what goodnes is, then willingly take into themſelues the following of it. But as that ſweet & ſimple breath of heauenly goodneſſe, is the eaſier to be altered, becauſe it hath not paſſed through the worldlie wickedneſſe, nor feelingly found the euill, that euill caries with it; ſo now the Ladie *Philoclea* (whoſe eyes and ſenſes had receaued nothing, but according as the naturall courſe of each thing required; which frõ the tender youth had obediently liued vnder her parents beheſts, without framing 4

out of her own wil the fore-choſing of any thing) whē now ſhe came to appoint, wherin her iudgemēt was to be practized, in knowing faultines by his firſt tokēs, ſhe was like a yong faune, who cōming in the wind of the hunters, doth not know whether it be a thing or no to be eſchewed; whereof at this time ſhe began to get a coſtly experience. For after that *Zelmane* had a while liued in the lodge with her, and that her onely being a noble ſtraunger had bred a kind of heedfull attention; her cōming to that lonely place (where ſhe had no body but her parents) a willingnes of conuerſatiō; her wit & behauiour, a liking & ſilent admiration; at length the excellency of her natural gifts, ioined with the extreme ſhewes ſhe made of moſt deuout honouring *Philoclea*, (carying thus in one perſon the only two bāds of good will, louelines & louingnes) brought forth in her hart a yeelding to a moſt friēdly affectiō; which when it had gotten ſo ful poſſeſſion of the keies of her mind, that it would receaue no meſſage frō her ſenſes, without that affection were the interpreter; thē ſtreight grew an exceeding delight ſtil to be with her, with an vnmeaſurable liking of al that *Zelmane* did: maters being ſo turned in her, that where at firſt, liking her manners did breed good-wil, now good-wil became the chiefe cauſe of liking her manners: ſo that within a while *Zelmane* was not prized for her demeanure, but the demeanure was prized becauſe it was *Zelmanes*. Thē followed that moſt natural effect of cōforming ones ſelf to that, which ſhe did like, and not onely wiſhing to be her ſelfe ſuch an other in all thinges, but to ground an imitation vpon ſo much an eſteemed authoritie: ſo that the next degree was to marke all *Zelmanes* dooings, ſpeeches,

and

and faſhions, and to take them into herſelfe, as a patterne of worthy proceeding. Which when once it was enacted, not onely by the comminaltie of Paſſions, but agreed vnto by her moſt noble Thoughts, and that by Reaſon it ſelf (not yet experienced in the iſſues of ſuch matters) had granted his royall aſſent; then Friendſhip (a diligent officer) tooke care to ſee the ſtatute thorowly obſerued. Then grew on that not onely ſhe did imitate the ſobernes of her countenance, the gracefulneſſe of her ſpeech, but euen their particular geſtures: ſo that as *Zelmane* did often eye her, ſhe would often eye *Zelmane*; & as *Zelmanes* eyes would deliuer a ſubmiſſiue, but vehement deſire in their looke, ſhe, though as yet ſhe had not the deſire in her, yet ſhould her eyes anſwere in like pearcing kindneſſe of a looke. *Zelmane* as much as *Gynecias* iealouſie would ſuffer, deſired to be neere *Philoclea*; *Philoclea*, as much as *Gynecias* iealouſie would ſuffer, deſired to be neere *Zelmane*. If *Zelmane* tooke her hand, and ſoftly ſtrained it, ſhe alſo (thinking the knots of friendſhip ought to bee mutuall) would (with a ſweete faſtnes) ſhew ſhe was loth to part from it. And if *Zelmane* ſighed, ſhe would ſigh alſo; whē *Zelmane* was ſad, ſhe deemed it wiſdome, and therefore ſhe would be ſad too. *Zelmanes* lāguiſhing coūtenāce with croſt armes, and ſometimes caſt-vp eyes, ſhe thought to haue an excellent grace: and therefore ſhe alſo willingly put on the ſame countenāce: til at the laſt (poore ſoule, ere ſhe were aware) ſhe accepted not onely the band, but the ſeruice; not only the ſigne, but the paſſion ſignified. For whether it were, that her wit in cōtinuāce did finde, that *Zelmanes* friendſhip was full of impatient deſire, hauing more thē ordinarie limits, & therfore

ſhee was content to ſecond *Zelmane*, though her ſelfe knew not the limits; or that in truth, true-loue (well conſidered) haue an infectiue power. At laſt ſhe fell in acquaintance with loues harbinger, wiſhing. Firſt ſhe would wiſh, that they two might liue all their liues togither, like two of *Dianas* Nimphes. But that wiſh, ſhe thought not ſufficient, becauſe ſhe knew, there would be more Nimphes beſides them, who alſo would haue their part in *Zelmane*. Thē would ſhe wiſh, that ſhe were her ſiſter, that ſuch a natural band might make her more ſpeciall to her. But againſt that, ſhe conſidered, that though being her ſiſter, if ſhe happened to be married, ſhe ſhould be robbed of her. Then growne bolder, ſhe would wiſh either her ſelfe, or *Zelmane* a man, that there might ſucceed a bleſſed marriage betwixt them. But when that wiſh had once diſplaied his enſigne in her minde, then followed whole ſquadrons of longings, that ſo it might be, with a maine battaile of miſlikings, and repynings againſt their creation, that ſo it was not. Then dreames by night beganne to bring more vnto her, then ſhe durſt wiſh by day, whereout making did make her know her ſelfe the better by the image of thoſe fancies. But as ſome diſeaſes when they are eaſie to be cured, they are hard to be knowne, but when they grow eaſie to be knowne, they are almoſt impoſſible to be cured: ſo the ſweete *Philoclea*, while ſhe might preuent it, ſhe did not feele it, now ſhe felt it, when it was paſt preuenting; like a riuer, no rampiers being built againſt it, till alreadie it haue ouerflowed. For now indeed, Loue puld of his maſke, and ſhewed his face vnto her, and told her plainly, that ſhee was his priſoner. Then needed ſhe no more paint

her

her face with paſſions; for paſſions ſhone thorow her face; Then her roſie coulor was often encreaſed with extraordinarie bluſhing: and ſo another time, perfect whiteneſſe aſcended to a degree of paleneſſe; now hot, then cold, deſiring ſhe knew not what, nor how, if ſhe knew what. Then her minde (though too late) by the ſmart was brought to thinke of the diſeaſe, and her owne proofe taught her to know her mothers minde; which (as no error giues ſo ſtrong aſſault, as that which comes armed in the authoritie of a parent, ſo) greatly fortified her deſires, to ſee, that her mother had the like deſires. And the more iealous her mother was, the more ſhe thought the Iewell precious, which was with ſo many lookes garded. But that preuailing ſo far, as to keepe the two louers from priuate conference, then began ſhe to feele the ſweetneſſe of a louers ſolitarineſſe, when freely with words and geſtures, as if *Zelmane* were preſent, ſhee might giue paſſage to her thoughts, and ſo as it were vtter out ſome ſmoke of thoſe flames, wherewith elſe ſhe was not only burned, but ſmothered. As this night, that going from the one lodge to the other by her mothers commandement, with dolefull geſtures and vncertaine paces, ſhee did willingly accept the times offer, to be a while alone: ſo that going a little aſide into the wood; where manie times before ſhe had delighted to walke, her eyes were ſaluted with a tuft of trees, ſo cloſe ſet togither, as with the ſhade the moone gaue thorow it, it might breede a fearefull kinde of deuotion to looke vpon it. But true thoughts of loue baniſh all vaine fancie of ſuperſtition. Full well ſhe did both remember and like the place; for there had ſhe often with their ſhade beguiled

led *Phœbus* of looking vpon her: There had ſhe enioyed her ſelfe often, while she was miſtreſſe of her ſelfe, and had no other thoughts, but ſuch as might ariſe out of quiet ſenſes.

But the principall cauſe that inuited her remembrance, was a goodly white marble ſtone, that should ſeeme had bene dedicated in ancient time to the *Siluan* gods: which she finding there a fewe dayes before *Zelmanes* comming, had written theſe words vpon it, as a teſtimonie of her mind, againſt the ſuſpition her captiuitie made her thinke ſhe liued in. The writing was this.

You liuing powres encloſed in ſtately ſhrine
Of growing trees; you rurall Gods that wield
Your ſcepters here, if to your eares diuine
A voice may come, which troubled ſoule doth yeld:
This vowe receaue, this vowe ô Gods maintaine;
My virgin life no ſpotted thought ſhall ſtaine.

Thou pureſt ſtone, whoſe pureneſſe doth preſent
My pureſt minde; whoſe temper hard doth ſhowe
My tempred hart; by thee my promiſe ſent
Vnto my ſelfe let after-liuers know.
No fancy mine, nor others wronge ſuſpect
Make me, ô vertuous Shame, thy lawes neglect.

O Chaſtitie, the chiefe of heauenly lightes,
Which makſt vs moſt immortall ſhape to weare,
Holde thou my hart, eſtabliſh thou my ſprights:
To onely thee my conſtant courſe I beare.

Till

Till ſpotleſse ſoule vnto thy boſome flye,
Such life to leade, ſuch death I vow to dye.

But now that her memorie ſerued as an accuſer of her change, and that her own hand-writing was there, to beare teſtimony againſt her fall; she went in among thoſe few trees, ſo cloſed in the toppes togither, as they might ſeeme a little chappell: and there might she by the help of the moone-light perceiue the goodly ſtone, which ſerued as an altar in that wooddie deuotion. But neither the light was enough to reade the words, and the inke was alreadie foreworne, and in many places blotted: which as ſhe perceaued, Alas (ſaid ſhe) faire Marble, which neuer receiuedſt ſpot but by my writing, well do theſe blots become a blotted writer. But pardon her which did not diſſemble then, although ſhe haue chaunged ſince. Enioy, enioy the glorie of thy nature, which can ſo conſtantly beare the markes of my inconſtancie. And herewith hiding her eyes with her ſoft hand, there came into her head certaine verſes, which if ſhe had had preſent commoditie, ſhe would haue adioyned as a retractation to the other. They were to this effect. 6

My words, in hope to blaze my ſtedfaſt minde,
This marble choſe, as of like temper knowne:
But loe, my words defaſte, my fancies blinde,
Blots to the ſtone, ſhame to my ſelfe I finde:
And witneſse am, how ill agree in one,
A womans hand with conſtant marble ſtone.

My words full weake, the marble full of might;

My

My words in ſtore, the marble all alone;
My words blacke inke, the marble kindly white;
My words vnſeene, the marble ſtill in ſight,
May witneſſe beare, how ill agree in one,
A womans hand, with conſtant marble ſtone.

7 But ſeeing ſhe could not ſee meanes to ioyne as thē this recantation to the former vow, (laying all her faire length vnder one of the trees) for a while ſhe did nothing but turne vp and downe, as if ſhe had hoped to turne away the fancie that maſtred her, and hid her face, as if ſhe could haue hidden her ſelfe from her owne fancies. At length with a whiſpring note to her ſelfe; O me vnfortunate wretch (ſaid ſhe) what poyſonous heates be theſe, which thus torment me? How hath the ſight of this ſtrange gueſt inuaded my ſoule? Alas, what entrance found this deſire, or what ſtrength had it thus to conquer me? Then, a cloud paſſing betweene her ſight and the moone, O *Diana* (ſaid ſhe) I would either the cloud that now hides the light of my vertue would as eaſily paſſe away, as you will quickly ouercome this let; or els that you were for euer thus darkned, to ſerue for an excuſe of my outragious folly. Then looking to the ſtarres, which had perfitly as then beautified the cleere ſkie: My parēts (ſaid ſhe) haue told me, that in theſe faire heauenly bodies, there are great hiddē deities, which haue their working in the ebbing & flowing of our eſtates. If it be ſo, then (O you Stars) iudge rightly of me, & if I haue with wicked intēt made my ſelfe a pray to fancie, or if by any idle luſtes I framed my harte fit for ſuch an impreſſion, then let this plague dayly encreaſe in me, till my name bee made

odious

odious to womankind. But if extreame and vnreſiſtable violence haue oppreſſed me, who will euer do any of you ſacrifice (ô you Starres) if you do not ſuccour me. No, no, you will not help me. No, no, you cannot helpe me: Sinne muſt be the mother, and ſhame the daughter of my affection. And yet are theſe but childiſh obiections (ſimple *Philoclea*) it is the impoſſibilitie that dooth torment me: for, vnlawfull deſires are puniſhed after the effect of enioying; but vnpoſſible deſires are puniſhed in the deſire it ſelfe. O then, ô tenne times vnhappie that I am, ſince where in all other hope kindleth loue; in me deſpaire ſhould be the bellowes of my affection: and of all deſpaires the moſt miſerable, which is drawen from impoſſibilitie. The moſt couetous man longs not to get riches out of a groũd which neuer can beare any thing; Why? becauſe it is impoſſible. The moſt ambitious wight vexeth not his wittes to clime into heauen; Why? becauſe it is impoſſible. Alas then, ô Loue, why dooſt thou in thy beautifull ſampler ſette ſuch a worke for my Deſire to take out, which is as much impoſſible? And yet alas, why doo I thus condemne my Fortune, before I heare what ſhe can ſay for her ſelfe? What doo I, ſillie wench, knowe what Loue hath prepared for me? Doo I not ſee my mother, as well, at leſt as furiouſlie as my ſelfe, loue *Zelmane*? And ſhould I be wiſer then my mother? Either ſhe ſees a poſſibilitie in that which I think impoſſible, or els impoſſible loues neede not miſbecome me. And doo I not ſee *Zelmane* (who doth not thinke a thought which is not firſt wayed by wiſdome and vertue) doth not ſhe vouchſafe to loue me with like ardour? I ſee it, her eyes dep oſe it to be true; what then? and if ſhe can

loue

loue poore me, ſhall I thinke ſcorne to loue ſuch a woman as *Zelmane*? Away then all vaine examinations of why and how. Thou loueſt me, excellent *Zelmane*, and I loue thee: and with that, embraſing the very grounde whereon ſhe lay, ſhe ſaid to her ſelfe (for euen to her ſelfe ſhe was aſhamed to ſpeake it out in words) O my *Zelmane*, gouerne and direct me: for I am wholy giuen ouer vnto thee.

CHAP. 5.

[1] The bedfellow communication of Philoclea *and* Pamela. *[2]* Pamelas *narration of her ſhepheardes making loue, [3] of* Dorus *and* Dametas *horſemanſhippe, [4] of his hote purſuite, and her colde acceptance. [5] His letter. [6] Her relenting, [7] and* Philocleas *ſole complaint.*

1 IN this depth of muzes, and diuers ſorts of diſcourſes, would ſhe haue rauingly remained, but that *Dametas* and *Miſo* (who were rounde about to ſeeke her, vnderſtanding ſhe was to come to their lodge that night) came hard by her; *Dametas* ſaying, That he would not deale in other bodies matters; but for his parte, he did not like that maides ſhould once ſtirre out of their fathers houſes, but if it were to milke a cow, or ſaue a chicken from a kites foote, or ſome ſuch other matter of importance. And *Miſo* ſwearing that if it were her daughter *Mopſa*, ſhe woulde giue her a leſſon for walking ſo late, that ſhould make her keepe within dores for one fortnight.

But

But their iangling made *Philoclea* riſe, and pretending as though ſhe had done it but to ſport with them, went with them (after ſhe had willed *Miſo* to waite vpon her mother) to the lodge; where (being now accuſtomed by her parents diſcipline, as well as her ſiſter, to ſerue her ſelfe) ſhe went alone vp to *Pamelas* chamber: where meaning to delight her eies, and ioy her thoughts with the ſweet conuerſation of her beloued ſiſter, ſhe found her (though it were in the time that the wings of night doth blow ſleep moſt willingly into mortall creatures) ſitting in a chaire, lying backward, with her head almoſt ouer the back of it, & looking vpon a wax-cãdle which burnt before her; in one hand holding a letter, in the other her hand-kerchiefe, which had lately dronk vp the teares of her eyes, leauing in ſteed of them, crimſen circles, like redde flakes in the element, when the weather is hotteſt. Which *Philoclea* finding (for her eyes had learned to know the badges of ſorowes) ſhe earneſtlie intreated to knowe the cauſe thereof, that either ſhe might comforte, or accompanie her dolefull humor. But *Pamela*, rather ſeeming ſorie that ſhe had perceiued ſo much, then willing to open any further, O my *Pamela* (ſaid *Philoclea*) who are to me a ſiſter in nature, a mother in counſell, a Princeſſe by the law of our coũtrey, and which name (me thinke) of all other is the deareſt, a friend by my choice and your fauour, what meanes this baniſhing me from your counſels? Do you loue your ſorrowe ſo well, as to grudge me part of it? Or doo you thinke I ſhall not loue a ſadde *Pamela*, ſo well as a ioyfull? Or be my eares vnwoorthie, or my tongue ſuſpected? What is it (my ſiſter) that you ſhould conceale from your ſiſter, yea and ſeruant *Philoclea*?

Theſe

Theſe wordes wanne no further of *Pamela*, but that telling her they might talke better as they lay together, they impouerifhed their cloathes to inriche their bed, which for that night might well ſcorne the ſhrine of *Venus*: and there cheriſhing one another with deare, though chaſte embracements; with ſweet, though cold kiſſes; it might ſeeme that Loue was come to play him there without darte; or that weerie of his owne fires, he was there to refreſhe himſelfe betweene their ſweete-breathing lippes. But *Philoclea* earneſtly againe intreated *Pamela* to open her griefe; who (drawing the curtain, that the candle might not complaine of her bluſhing) was ready to ſpeake: but the breath almoſt formed into words, was againe ſtopt by her, and turned into ſighes. But at laſt, I pray you (ſaid ſhe) ſweete *Philoclea*, let vs talke of ſome other thing: & tell me whether you did euer ſee any thing ſo amẽded as our Paſtoral ſports be, ſince that *Dorus* came hether? O Loue, how farre thou ſeeſt with blind eyes? *Philoclea* had ſtraight found her, and therefore to draw out more, In deed (ſaid ſhe) I haue often wondred to my ſelfe how ſuch excellẽcies could be in ſo meane a perſon; but belike Fortune was afraide to lay her treaſures, where they ſhould be ſtaind with ſo many perfections: onely I maruaile how he can frame himſelfe to hide ſo rare giftes vnder ſuch a block as *Dametas*. Ah (ſaid *Pamela*) if you knew the cauſe: but no more doo I neither; and to ſay the trueth: but Lord, how are we falne to talke of this fellow? and yet indeed if you were ſometimes with me to marke him, while *Dametas* reades his ruſticke lecture vnto him (how to feede his beaſtes before noone, where to ſhade them in the extreame heate, how to make the manger hanſome

for

for his oxen, when to vſe the goade, & when the voice: giuing him rules of a heardmã, though he pretẽded to make him a ſhepheard) to ſee all the while with what a grace (which ſeemes to ſet a crowne vpon his baſe eſtate) he can deſcend to thoſe poore matters, certainly you would: but to what ſerues this? no doubt we were better ſleepe then talke of theſe idle matters. Ah my *Pamela* (ſaid *Philoclea*) I haue caught you, the conſtantnes of your wit was not wont to bring forth ſuch diſiointed ſpeeches: you loue, diſſemble no further. It is true (ſaid *Pamela*) now you haue it; and with leſſe adoo ſhould, if my hart could haue thoght thoſe words ſuteable for my mouth. But indeed (my *Philoclea*) take heed: for I thinke Vertue it ſelf is no armour of proofe againſt affection. Therfore learne by my example. Alas thought *Philoclea* to her ſelfe, your ſheeres come to late to clip the birds wings that already is flowne away.

2

But then *Pamela* being once ſet in the ſtreame of her Loue, went away a maine withall, telling her how his noble qualities had drawne her liking towardes him; but yet euer waying his meanenes, & ſo held continually in due limits; till ſeeking many meanes to ſpeake with her, & euer kept from it (as wel becauſe ſhe ſhund it, ſeing and diſdaining his mind, as becauſe of her iealous iaylours) he had at length vſed the fineſt pollicie that might be in counterfaiting loue to *Mopſa*, & ſaying to *Mopſa* what ſoeuer he would haue her know: and in how paſſionate manner he had told his owne tale in a third perſon, making poore *Mopſa* beleue, that it was a matter fallen out many ages before. And in the end, becauſe you ſhal know my teares come not, neither of repẽtance nor miſery, who thinke you, is my *Dorus* fallen

out to be? euen the Prince *Musidorus*, famous ouer all *Asia*, for his heroical enterprises, of whom you remember how much good the straunger *Plangus* told my father; he not being drowned (as *Plangus* thought) though his cousin *Pyrocles* indeed perished. Ah my sister, if you had heard his words, or seene his gestures, when he made me know what, and to whom his loue was, you would haue matched in your selfe (those two rarely matched together) pittie and delight. Tell me deare sister (for the gods are my witnesses I desire to doo vertuously) can I without the detestable staine of vngratefulnesse abstaine from louing him, who (far exceeding the beautifulnesse of his shape with the beautifulnesse of his minde, and the greatnesse of his estate with the greatnesse of his actes) is content so to abase him selfe, as to become *Dametas* seruaunt for my sake? you will say, but how know I him to be *Musidorus*, since the handmaid of wisdome is slow belief? That cõsideratiõ did not want in me, for the nature of desire it selfe is no easier to receiue beliefe, then it is hard to ground belief. For as desire is glad to embrace the first shew of comfort, so is desire desirous of perfect assuraunce: and that haue I had of him, not onely by necessary arguments to any of cõmon sense, but by sufficient demonstrations. Lastly he would haue me send to *Thessalia*: but truly I am not as now in mind to do my honorable Loue so much wrong, as so far to suspect him: yet poor soule knowes he no other, but that I doo both suspect, neglect, yea & detest him. For euery day he finds one way or other to set forth him selfe vnto me, but all are rewarded with like coldnesse of acceptation.

3 A few daies since, he & *Dametas* had furnished thẽ-

selues

ſelues very richly to run at the ring before me. O how mad a ſight it was to ſee *Dametas*, like rich Tiſſew furd with lambe skins? But ô how well it did with *Dorus*, to ſee with what a grace he preſented him ſelfe before me on horſeback, making maieſtie wait vpon humblenes? how at the firſt, ſtanding ſtil with his eies bent vpõ me, as though his motiõs were chained to my looke, he ſo ſtaide till I cauſed *Mopſa* bid him doo ſomething vpon his horſe: which no ſooner ſaid, but (with a kinde rather of quick geſture, then ſhew of violẽce) you might ſee him come towards me, beating the groũd in ſo due time, as no daunce can obſerue better meaſure. If you remember the ſhip we ſaw once, whẽ the Sea went hie vpon the coaſt of *Argos*; ſo went the beaſt: But he (as if Cẽtaurlike he had bene one peece with the horſe) was no more moued, then one is with the going of his owne legges: and in effect ſo did he command him, as his owne limmes, for though he had both ſpurres and wande, they ſeemed rather markes of ſoueraintie, then inſtruments of puniſhment; his hand and legge (with moſt pleaſing grace) commãding without threatning, & rather remẽbring then chaſtiſing, at leſt if ſometimes he did, it was ſo ſtolen, as neyther our eyes could diſcerne it, nor the horſe with any chaunce did cõplaine of it, he euer going ſo iuſt with the horſe, either foorth right, or turning, that it ſeemed as he borrowed the horſes body, ſo he lent the horſe his minde: in the turning one might perceiue the bridle-hand ſomthing gently ſtir, but indeed ſo gently, as it did rather diſtill vertue, then vſe violence. Him ſelf (which me thinkes is ſtraunge) ſhewing at one inſtant both ſteadines & nimblenes; ſomtimes making him turne cloſe to the groũd,

like a cat, when ſcratchingly ſhe wheeles about after a mouſe: ſometimes with a little more riſing before, now like a Rauen leaping from ridge to ridge, then like one of *Dametas* kiddes bound ouer the hillocks: and all ſo done, as neither the luſtie kinde ſhewed any roughneſſe, nor the eaſier any idleneſſe: but ſtill like a well obeyed maiſter, whoſe becke is enough for a diſcipline, euer concluding ech thing he did with his face to me-wards, as if thence came not onely the beginning, but ending of his motions. The ſporte was to ſee *Dametas*, how he was toſt from the ſadle to the mane of the horſe, and thence to the ground, giuing his gay apparell almoſt as foule an outſide, as it had an inſide. But as before he had euer ſaid, he wanted but horſe & apparell to be as braue a courtier as the beſt, ſo now bruſed with proofe, he proclaimed it a folly for a man of wiſedome, to put himſelfe vnder the tuition of a beaſt; ſo as *Dorus* was fayne alone to take the Ringe. Wherein truely at leſt my womaniſh eyes could not diſcerne, but that taking his ſtaffe from his thigh, the deſcending it a little downe, the getting of it vp into the reſt, the letting of the point fall, and taking the ring was but all one motion, at leſt (if they were diuers motions) they did ſo ſtealingly ſlippe one into another, as the latter parte was euer in hande, before the eye could diſcerne the former was ended. Indeed *Dametas* found fault that he ſhewed no more ſtrength in ſhaking of his ſtaffe: but to my conceite the fine cleernes of bearing it was exceeding delightfull.

4 But how delightfull ſoeuer it was, my delight might well be in my ſoule, but it neuer went to looke out of the window to doo him any comfort, But how much more

more I found reaſon to like him, the more I ſet all the ſtrength of mind to ſuppreſſe it, or at leſt to conceale it. Indeed I muſt confeſſe, as ſome Phyſitions haue tolde me, that when one is cold outwardly, he is not inwardly; ſo truly the colde aſhes layed vpon my fire, did not take the nature of fire from it. Full often hath my breſt ſwollen with keeping my ſighes impriſoned; full often haue the teares, I draue backe from mine eyes, turned backe to drowne my harte. But alas what did that helpe poore *Dorus?* whoſe eyes (being his diligent intelligencers) coulde carrie vnto him no other newes, but diſcomfortable. I thinke no day paſt, but by ſome one inuention he would appeare vnto me to teſtifie his loue. One time he daunced the Matachine daunce in armour (O with what a gracefull dexteritie?) I thinke to make me ſee, that he had bene brought vp in ſuch exerciſes: an other time he perſwaded his maiſter (to make my time ſeeme ſhorter) in manner of a Dialogue, to play *Priamus* while he plaide *Paris*. Thinke (ſweet *Philoclea*) what a *Priamus* we had: but truely, my *Paris* was a *Paris*, and more then a *Paris*: who while in a ſauage apparell, with naked necke, armes, and legges, he made loue to *Oenone*, you might wel ſee by his chaunged countenance, and true teares, that he felte the parte he playde. Tell me (ſweet *Philoclea*) did you euer ſee ſuch a ſhepheard? tell me, did you euer heare of ſuch a Prince? And then tell me, if a ſmall or vnworthy aſſaulte haue conquered me. Truely I would hate my life, if I thought vanitie led me. But ſince my parents deale ſo cruelly with me, it is time for me to truſt ſomething to my owne iudgement. Yet hetherto haue my lookes bene as I told you,

which continuing after many of theſe his fruitles trials, haue wrought ſuch change in him, as I tell you true (with that worde ſhe laid her hand vpon her quaking ſide) I doo not a little feare him. See what a letter this is (then drewe ſhe the curtaine and tooke the letter from vnder the pillowe) which to daie (with an afflicted humbleneſſe) he deliuered me, pretending before *Mopſa*, that I ſhould read it vnto her, to mollifie (forſooth) her iron ſtomacke; with that ſhe read the letter containing thus much.

5 MOſt bleſſed paper, which ſhalt kiſſe that hãd, where to al bleſſednes is in nature a ſeruãt, do not yet diſdain to cary with thee the woful words of a miſer now deſpairing: neither be afraid to appeare before her, bearing the baſe title of the ſender. For no ſooner ſhal that diuine hande touch thee, but that thy baſeneſſe ſhall be turned to moſt hie preferment. Therefore mourne boldly my Inke; for while ſhe lookes vpõ you, your blacknes wil ſhine: crie out boldly my Lamẽtatiõ; for while ſhe reads you, your cries wil be muſicke. Say then (O happy meſſenger of a moſt vnhappy meſſage) that the too ſoone borne, too late dying creature, which dares not ſpeake, no not looke, no not ſcarcely thinke (as from his miſerable ſelfe, vnto her heauenly highneſſe) onely preſumes to deſire thee (in the time that her eyes and voice doo exalt thee) to ſay, and in this manner to ſay, not from him, O no, that were not fit, but of him. Thus much vnto her ſacred iudgement: O you, the onely, the onely honour to women, to men the onely admiration, you that being armed by Loue, defie him that armed you, in this high eſtate wherein you haue placed me, yet let me remember him

to

to whom I am bound for bringing me to your preſence; and let me remember him, who (ſince he is yours, how meane ſo euer it be) it is reaſõ you haue an account of him. The wretch (yet your wretch) though with languiſhing ſteppes runnes faſt to his graue, and will you ſuffer a temple (how poorely-built ſoeuer, but yet a temple of your deitie) to be raſed? But he dyeth: it is moſt true, he dyeth; and he in whom you liue, to obey you, dieth. Whereof though he plaine, he doth not complaine: for it is a harme, but no wrong, which he hath receiued. He dyes, becauſe in wofull language all his ſenſes tell him, that ſuch is your pleaſure: for ſince you will not that he liue, alas, alas, what followeth, what followeth of the moſt ruined *Dorus*, but his ende? Ende then, euill deſtinyed *Dorus*, ende; and ende thou wofull letter, end; for it ſuffiſeth her wiſedome to know, that her heauenly will ſhalbe accompliſhed.

O my *Philoclea*, is hee a perſon to write theſe 6
words? and are theſe words lightly to be regarded? But if you had ſeene, when with trembling hand he had deliuered it, how hee went away, as if he had beene but the coffin that carried himſelfe to his ſepulcher. Two times I muſt confeſſe I was about to take curteſie into mine eyes; but both times the former reſolution ſtopt the entrie of it: ſo that he departed without obtaining any further kindneſſe. But he was no ſooner out of the doore, but that I looked to the doore kindly; and truely the feare of him euer ſince hath put me into ſuch perplexitie, as now you found me. Ah my *Pamela* (ſaid *Philoclea*) leaue ſorrow. The riuer of your teares will ſoone looſe his fountaine;

it is in your hand as well to ſtitch vp his life againe, as it was before to rent it. And ſo (though with ſelf-grieued mind) ſhe comforted her ſiſter, till ſleepe came to bath himſelfe in *Pamelaes* faire weeping eyes.

Which when *Philoclea* found, wringing her hands, O me (ſaid ſhe) indeed the onely ſubiect of the deſtinies diſpleaſure, whoſe greateſt fortunatenes is more vnfortunate, then my ſiſters greateſt vnfortunateneſſe. Alas ſhee weepes becauſe ſhe would be no ſooner happy; I weepe becauſe I can neuer be happie; her teares flow from pittie; mine from being too farre lower then the reach of pittie. Yet doo I not enuie thee, deare *Pamela*, I do not enuy thee: onely I could wiſh that being thy ſiſter in nature, I were not ſo farre off a kin in fortune.

CHAP. 6.

[a] *The Ladies vpriſing,* [b] *and interrogatories to* Dorus *concerning* Pyrocles *and* Euarchus. [c] *His hiſtoriologie of* Euarchus *kingly excellencies,* [d] *his entry on a moſt corrupt eſtate,* [e] *and reformation thereof by royall arts and actions.* [f] *His, and* Dorilaus *croſſe-mariage to ech others ſiſter, hauing by ech a ſonne; their mutuall defence, with* Dorilaus *death.*

BVt the darkeneſſe of ſorrow ouerſhadowing her mind, as the night did her eyes, they were both content to hide themſelues vnder the wings of ſleepe, till the next morning had almoſt loſt his name, before

fore the two ſweet ſleeping ſiſters awaked frō dreames, which flattered them with more comfort, then their waking could, or would conſent vnto. For then they were called vp by *Miſo*; who hauing bene with *Gynecia*, had receiued commaundement to be continually with her daughters, and particularly not to let *Zelmane* and *Philoclea* haue any priuate cōferēce, but that ſhe ſhould be preſent to heare what paſſed. But *Miſo* hauing now her authoritie encreaſed, came with ſkowling eyes to deliuer a ſlauering good morrow to the two Ladies, telling them, it was a ſhame for them to marre their complexions, yea and conditions to, with long lying a bedde: & that, when ſhe was of their age, ſhe trowed, ſhe would haue made a handkerchiefe by that time of the day. The two ſweete Princes with a ſmiling ſilence anſwered her entertainement, and obeying her direction, couered their daintie beauties with the glad clothes. But as ſoone as *Pamela* was readie (& ſooner ſhe was then her ſiſter) the agony of *Dorus* giuing a fit to her ſelfe, which the words of his letter (liuely imprinted in her minde) ſtill remembred her of, ſhe called to *Mopſa*, and willed her to fetch *Dorus* to ſpeake with her: becauſe (ſhe ſaid) ſhe woule take further iudgement of him, before ſhe would moue *Dametas* to graunt her in mariage vnto him. *Mopſa* (as glad as of ſweete-meate to goe of ſuch an arrant) quickly returned with *Dorus* to *Pamela*, who entended both by ſpeaking with him to giue ſome comfort to his paſſionate harte, and withall to heare ſome part of his life paſt; which although fame had alreadie deliuered vnto her, yet ſhe deſired in more particular certainties to haue it from ſo beloued an hiſtorian. Yet the ſweetneſſe of vertues

diſpoſition

diſpoſition icalous, euen ouer it ſelfe, ſuffred her not to enter abruptlie into queſtions of *Muſidorus* (whom ſhe was halfe aſhamed ſhe did loue ſo well, and more then halfe ſorie ſhe could loue no better) but thought beſt firſt to make her talke ariſe of *Pyrocles*, and his vertuous father: which thus ſhe did.

2 *Dorus* (ſaid ſhe) you told me the laſt day, that *Plangus* was deceaued in that he affirmed the Prince *Muſidorus* was drowned: but withall, you confeſſed his coſen *Pyrocles* periſhed; of whom certainly in that age there was a great loſſe, ſince (as I haue heard) he was a young Prince, of whō al mē expected as much, as mans power could bring forth, & yet vertue promiſed for him, their expectation ſhould not be deceaued. Moſt excellent Ladie (ſaid *Dorus*) no expectatiō in others, nor hope in himſelf could aſpire to a higher mark, thē to be thought worthy to be praiſed by your iudgement, & made worthy to be praiſed by your mouth. But moſt ſure it is, that as his fame could by no meanes get ſo ſweete & noble an aire to flie in, as in your breath, ſo could not you (leauing your ſelfe aſide) finde in the world a fitter ſubiect of commendation; as noble, as a long ſucceſſion of royall anceſtors, famous, and famous of victories could make him: of ſhape moſt louely, and yet of mind more louely; valiant, curteous, wiſe, what ſhould I ſay more? ſweete *Pyrocles*, excellent *Pyrocles*, what can my words but wrong thy perfections, which I would to God in ſome ſmall meaſure thou hadſt bequethed to him that euer muſt haue thy vertues in admiration; that maſked at leaſt in them, I might haue found ſome more gratious acceptation? with that he impriſoned his looke for a while vpon *Mopſa*, who thereupon

fell

fell into a verie wide ſmiling. Truely (ſaid *Pamela*) *Dorus* I like well your minde, that can raiſe it ſelfe out of ſo baſe a fortune, as yours is, to thinke of the imitating ſo excellent a Prince, as *Pyrocles* was. Who ſhootes at the mid-day Sunne, though he be ſure he ſhall neuer hit the marke; yet as ſure he is, he ſhall ſhoote higher, then who aymes but at a buſh. But I pray you *Dorus* (ſaid ſhe) tell me (ſince I perceaue you are well acquainted with that ſtorie) what Prince was that *Euarchus* father to *Pyrocles*, of whom ſo much fame goes, for his rightly royall vertues, or by what wayes he got that opinion. And then ſo deſcend to the cauſes of his ſending firſt away from him, and then to him for that excellent ſonne of his, with the diſcourſe of his life and loſſe: and therein you may (if you liſt) ſay ſomething of that ſame *Muſidorus* his coſen, becauſe, they going togither, the ſtory of *Pyrocles* (which I onely deſire) may be the better vnderſtood.

Incomparable Lady (ſaid he) your commandement 3
doth not onely giue me the wil, but the power to obey you, ſuch influence hath your excellencie. And firſt, for that famous King *Euarchus*, he was (at this time you ſpeake off) King of *Macedon*, a kingdome, which in elder time had ſuch a ſoueraintie ouer all the prouinces of *Greece*, that euē the particular kings therin did acknowledge (with more or leſſe degrees of homage) ſome kind of fealty thereunto: as among the reſt, euen this now moſt noble (and by you ennobled) kingdome of *Arcadia*. But he, whē he came to his crowne, finding by his later anceſtors either negligēce, or misfortune, that in ſome ages many of thoſe duties had bin intermitted, would neuer ſtirre vp old titles (how apparant ſoeuer)

where-

whereby the publike peace (with the loſſe of manie not guiltie ſoules) ſhould be broken; but contenting himſelfe to guide that ſhippe, wherein the heauens had placed him, ſhewed no leſſe magnanimitie in daungerleſſe deſpiſing, then others in daungerous affecting the multiplying of kingdomes: for the earth hath ſince borne enow bleeding witneſſes, that it was no want of true courage. Who as he was moſt wiſe to ſee what was beſt, and moſt iuſt in the perfourming what he ſaw, & temperate in abſtaining from any thing any way contrary: ſo thinke I, no thought can imagine a greater harte to ſee and contemne daunger, where daunger would offer to make any wrongfull threatning vpon him. A Prince, that indeed eſpecially meaſured his greatneſſe by his goodneſſe: and if for any thing he loued greatneſſe, it was, becauſe therein he might exerciſe his goodnes. A Prince of a goodly aſpect, and the more goodly by a graue maieſtie, wherewith his mind did decke his outward graces; ſtrong of body, and ſo much the ſtronger, as he by a well diſciplined exerciſe taught it both to do, and ſuffer. Of age, ſo as he was about fiftie yeares when his Nephew *Muſidorus* tooke on ſuch ſhepherdiſh apparell for the loue of the worlds paragon, as I now weare.

4 This King left Orphan both of father and mother, (whoſe father & grandfather likewiſe had dyed yong) he found his eſtate, when he came to age (which allowed his authoritie) ſo disioynted euen in the nobleſt & ſtrongeſt lims of gouernmēt, that the name of a King was growne euē odious to the people, his autority hauing bin abuſed by thoſe great Lords, & litle kings: who in thoſe betweene-times of raigning (by vniuſt fauouring

ring thoſe that were partially theirs,& oppreſſing them that woulde defende their libertie againſt them had brought in (by a more felt then ſeene maner of proceeding) the worſt kind of *Oligarchie*; that is, whē men are gouerned in deede by a fewe, and yet are not taught to know what thoſe fewe be, to whom they ſhould obey. For they hauing the power of kinges, but not the nature of kings, vſed the authority as men do their farms, of which they ſee within a yeere they ſhal goe out: making the Kinges ſworde ſtrike whom they hated, the Kings purſe reward whom they loued: and (which is worſt of all) making the Royall countenance ſerue to vndermine the Royall ſoueraintie. For the Subiectes could taſte no ſweeter fruites of hauing a King, then grieuous taxations to ſerue vaine purpoſes; Lawes made rather to finde faults, then to preuent faultes: the Court of a Prince rather deemed as a priuiledged place of vnbrideled licentiouſnes, then as a biding of him, who as a father, ſhould giue a fatherly example vnto his people. Hence grew a very diſſolution of all eſtates, while the great men (by the nature of ambition neuer ſatisfied) grew factious among themſelues: and the vnderlings, glad indeede to be vnderlings to them they hated leſt, to preſerue them from ſuch they hated moſt. Men of vertue ſuppreſſed, leſt their ſhining ſhould diſcouer the others filthiñes; and at length vertue it ſelfe almoſt forgotten, when it had no hopefull end whereunto to be directed; olde men long nuſled in corruption, ſcorning them that would ſecke reformation; yong men very fault-finding, but very faultie: and ſo to newfanglenes both of manners, apparrell, and each thing

els

els,by the cuſtome of ſelfe-guiltie cuill,glad to change though oft for a worſe; marchandiſe abuſed, and ſo townes decayed for want of iuſt and naturall libertie; offices,euen of iudging ſoules, ſolde; publique defences neglected; and in ſumme, (leſt too long I trouble you) all awrie, and (which wried it to the moſt wrie courſe of all) witte abuſed, rather to faine reaſon why it ſhould be amiſſe, then how it ſhould be amended.

In this, and a much worſe plight then it is fitte to
5 trouble your excellent eares withal,did rhe King *Enarchus* finde his eſtate,when he tooke vpon him the regiment: which by reaſon of the long ſtreame of abuſe, he was forced to eſtabliſh by ſome euen extreme ſeueritie, not ſo much for the very faultes themſelues, (which he rather ſought to preuent then to puniſh) as for the faultie ones; who ſtrong,euen in their faultes, ſcorned his youth, and coulde not learne to diſgeſt, that the man which they ſo long had vſed to maſke their owne appetites, ſhould now be the reducer of them into order. But ſo ſoone as ſome fewe (but in deede notable) examples, had thundred a ductie into the ſubiects hartes, he ſoone ſhewed,no baſenes of ſuſpition,nor the baſeſt baſenes of enuie, could any whit rule ſuch a Ruler. But then ſhined foorth indeede all loue among them, when an awfull feare,ingendred by iuſtice,did make that loue moſt louely: his firſt & principall care being to appeare vnto his people,ſuch as he would haue them be,& to be ſuch as he appeared; making his life the example of his lawes,as it were, his actions ariſing out of his deedes. So that within ſmall

time,

time, he wanne a ſingular loue in his people, and engraffed ſingular confidence. For how could they chuſe but loue him, whom they found ſo truely to loue thē? He euen in reaſon diſdayning, that they that haue charge of beaſtes, ſhould loue their charge, and care for them; and that he that was to gouerne the moſt excellent creature, ſhould not loue ſo noble a charge. And therefore, where moſt Princes (ſeduced by flatterie to builde vpon falſe grounds of gouernment) make themſelues (as it were) another thing from the people; and ſo count it gaine what they can get from them: and (as if it were two counter-ballances, that their eſtate goes hieſt when the people goes loweſt) by a fallacie of argument thinking themſelues moſt Kinges, when the ſubiect is moſt baſely ſubiected: he contrariwiſe, vertuouſlie and wiſely acknowledging, that he with his people made all but one politike bodie, whereof himſelfe was the head; euen ſo cared for them, as he woulde for his owne limmes: neuer reſtrayning their liberty, without it ſtretched to licenciouſnes, nor pulling from them their goods, which they found were not imployed to the purchaſe of a greater good: but in all his actions ſhewing a delight to their welfare, brogh̄t that to paſſe, that while by force he tooke nothing, by their loue he had all. - In ſumme (peereleſſe Princeſſe) I might as eaſily ſette downe the whole Arte of gouernement, as to lay before your eyes the picture of his proceedings. But in ſuch ſorte he flouriſhed in the ſweete comforte of dooing much good, when by an action of leauing his Countrie, he was forced to bring foorth his vertue of magnanimitie, as before he had done of iuſtice.

He

6 He had onely one ſiſter, a Ladie (leſt I ſhould too eaſilie fall to partiall prayſes of her) of whom it may be iuſtly ſaid, that ſhe was no vnfit brãch to the noble ſtock wherof ſhe came. Her he had giuen in mariage to *Dorilaus*, Prince of *Theſſalia*, not ſo much to make a frẽdſhip, as to cõfirm the frẽdſhip betwixt their poſteritie, which betwene them, by the likenes of vertue, had been long before made: for certainly, *Dorilaus* could neede no amplifiers mouth for the higheſt point of praiſe. Who hath not heard (ſaid *Pamela*) of the valiãt, wiſe, and iuſt *Dorilaus*, whoſe vnripe death doth yet (ſo many yeares ſince) draw teares frõ vertuous eyes? And indeede, my father is wont to ſpeak of nothing with greater admiration, then of the notable friendſhippe (a rare thing in Princes, more rare betwene Princes) that ſo holily was obſerued to the laſt, of thoſe two excellent men. But (ſaid ſhe) goe on I pray you. *Dorilaus* (ſaid he) hauing maried his ſiſter, had his mariage in ſhort time bleſt (for ſo are folke woont to ſay, how vnhappie ſoeuer the children after grow) with a ſonne, whom they named *Muſidorus:* of whom I muſt needes firſt ſpeake before I come to *Pyrocles*; becauſe as he was borne firſt, ſo vpon his occaſion grew (as I may ſay accidentally) the others birth. For ſcarcely was *Muſidorus* made partaker of this oft-blinding light, when there were found numbers of Southſayers, who affirmed ſtrange & incredible things ſhould be performed by that childe; whether the heauens at that time liſted to play with ignorant mankind, or that flatterie be ſo preſumptuous, as euen at times to borow the face of Diuinitie. But certainly, ſo did the boldnes of their affirmation accompanie the greatnes of what they did affirme (euen deſcending to particularities,

rities, what kingdomes he ſhould ouercome) that the King of *Phrygia* (who ouer-ſuperſtitiouſly thought him ſelfe touched in the matter) ſought by force to deſtroy the infant, to preuent his after-expectations: becauſe a skilful man (hauing compared his natiuity with the child) ſo told him. Fooliſh mā, either vainly fearing what was not to be feared, or not conſidering, that if it were a worke of the ſuperiour powers, the heauens at length are neuer children. But ſo he did, & by the aid of the Kings of *Lydia* and *Crete* (ioining together their armies) inuaded *Theſſalia*, & brought *Dorilaus* to ſome behind-hand of fortune, when his faithfull friend & brother *Euarchus* came ſo mightily to his ſuccour, that with ſome enterchanging changes of fortune, they begat of a iuſt war, the beſt child, peace. In which time *Euarchus* made a croſſe mariage alſo with *Dorilaus* his ſiſter, & ſhortly left her with child of the famous *Pyrocles*, driuen to returne to the defence of his owne countrie, which in his abſence (helped with ſome of the ill contented nobilitie) the mighty King of *Thrace*, & his brother, King of *Pannonia*, had inuaded. The ſucceſſe of thoſe warres was too notable to be vnknowne to your eares, to which it ſeemes all worthy fame hath glory to come vnto. But there was *Dorilaus* (valiantly requiting his friēds helpe) in a great battaile depriued of his life, his obſequies being no more ſolēniſed by the teares of his partakers, thē the bloud of his enimies; with ſo pearcing a ſorrow to the conſtant hart of *Euarchus*, that the newes of his ſons birth could lighten his countenance with no ſhew of comfort, although al the comfort that might be in a child, truth it ſelfe in him forthwith deliuered. For what fortune onely ſouthſayers foretold of *Muſidorus*, that all men might ſee prognoſticated in *Py-*

rocles; both Heauens & Earth giuing tokēs of the comming forth of an Heroicall vertue. The ſenate houſe of the planets was at no time to ſet, for the decreeing of perfectiō in a man, as at that time all folkes skilful therin did acknowledge: onely loue was threatned, and promiſed to him, and ſo to his couſin, as both the tempeſt and hauen of their beſt yeares. But as death may haue preuented *Pyrocles*, ſo vnworthineſſe muſt be the death to *Muſidorus*.

CHAP. 7.

[1] The education of Pyrocles *&* Muſidorus. *[2] Their friendſhip, [3] nauigation, [4] and firſt ſhipwracke. [5] The ſtraunge gratitude of two brothers to them, vpon their liberalitie to thoſe two brothers.*

1 BVt the mother of *Pyrocles* (ſhortly after her childe-birth) dying, was cauſe that *Euarchus* recommended the care of his only ſon to his ſiſter; doing it the rather becauſe the warre continued in cruell heat, betwixt him & thoſe euil neighbours of his. In which meane time thoſe young Princes (the only comforters of that vertuous widow) grewe on ſo, that *Pyrocles* taught admiration to the hardeſt conceats: *Muſidorus* (perchaunce becauſe among his ſubiectes) exceedingly beloued: and by the good order of *Euarchus* (well perfourmed by his ſiſter) they were ſo brought vp, that all the ſparkes of vertue, which nature had kindled in thē, were ſo blowne to giue forth their vttermoſt heate that

that iuſtly it may be affirmed, they enflamed the affections of all that knew thē. For almoſt before they could perfectly ſpeake, they began to receaue cōceits not vnworthy of the beſt ſpeakers: excellent deuiſes being vſed, to make euen their ſports profitable; images of battailes, & fortificatiōs being then deliuered to their memory, which after, their ſtronger iudgemēts might diſpens, the delight of tales being cōuerted to the knowledge of al the ſtories of worthy Princes, both to moue them to do nobly, & teach them how to do nobly; the beautie of vertue ſtill being ſet before their eyes, & that taught them with far more diligent care, then Grāmatical rules, their bodies exerciſed in all abilities, both of doing and ſuffring, & their mindes acquainted by degrees with daungers; & in ſum, all bent to the making vp of princely mindes: no ſeruile feare vſed towardes them, nor any other violent reſtraint, but ſtil as to Princes: ſo that a habite of commaunding was naturalized in them, and therefore the farther from Tyrannie: Nature hauing done ſo much for them in nothing, as that it made them Lords of truth, whereon all the other goods were builded.

Among which I nothing ſo much delight to recount, as the memorable friendſhip that grewe betwixt the two Princes, ſuch as made them more like then the likeneſſe of all other vertues, and made them more neer one to the other, then the neerenes of their bloud could aſpire vnto; which I think grew the faſter, and the faſter was tied betweene them, by reaſon that *Muſidorus* being elder by three or foure yeares, it was neither ſo great a difference in age as did take away the delight in ſocietie, and yet by the difference there was

taken away the occaſion of childiſh contentions; till they had both paſt ouer the humour of ſuch contentions. For *Pyrocles* bare reuerẽce ful of loue to *Muſidorus*, & *Muſidorus* had a delight full of loue in *Pyrocles*. *Muſidorus*, what he had learned either for body or minde, would teach it to *Pyrocles*; and *Pyrocles* was ſo glad to learne of none, as of *Muſidorus*: till *Pyrocles*, being come to ſixtene yeares of age, he ſeemed ſo to ouerrun his age in growth, ſtrength, and al things following it, that not *Muſidorus*, no nor any man liuing (I thinke) could performe any action, either on horſe, or foote, more ſtrongly, or deliuer that ſtrength more nimbly, or become the deliuery more gracefully, or employ al more vertuouſly. Which may well ſeeme wonderfull: but wonders are no wonders in a wonderfull ſubiect.

3 At which time vnderſtanding that the King *Euarchus*, after ſo many yeares warre, and the conqueſt of all *Pannonia*, and almoſt *Thrace*, had now brought the cõcluſion of al to the ſiege of *Bizantium* (to the raiſing of which ſiege great forces were made) they would needs fall to the practiſe of thoſe vertues, which they before learned. And therefore the mother of *Muſidorus* nobly yeelding ouer her owne affects to her childrens good (for a mother ſhe was in effect to thẽ both) the rather that they might helpe her beloued brother, they brake of all delayes; which *Muſidorus* for his parte thought already had deuoured too much of his good time, but that he had once graunted a boone (before he knew what it was) to his deere friend *Pyrocles*; that he would neuer ſeeke the aduentures of armes, vntil he might go with him: which hauing faſt boũd his hart (a true ſlaue to faith) he had bid a tedious delay of following his owne

owne humour for his friends ſake, till now finding him able euery way to go thorow with that kinde of life, he was as deſirous for his ſake, as for his owne, to enter into it. So therefore preparing a nauie, that they might go like themſelues, and not onely bring the comfort of their preſence, but of their power to their deere parent *Euarchus*, they recommended themſelues to the Sea, leauing the ſhore of *Theſſalia* full of teares and vowes; and were receiued thereon with ſo ſmooth and ſmiling a face, as if *Neptune* had as then learned falſely to fawne on Princes. The winde was like a ſeruaunt, waiting behind them ſo iuſt, that they might fill the ſailes as they liſted; and the beſt ſaylers ſhewing themſelues leſſe couetous of his liberalitie, ſo tempered it, that they all kept together like a beautifull flocke, which ſo well could obey their maiſters pipe: without ſometimes, to delight the Princes eies, ſome two or three of themwould ſtriue, who could (either by the cunning of well ſpending the windes breath, or by the aduantageous building of their mouing houſes) leaue their fellowes behind them in the honour of ſpeed: while the two Princes had leaſure to ſee the practiſe of that, which before they had learned by bookes: to conſider the arte of catching the winde priſoner, to no other ende, but to runne away with it; to ſee how beautie, and vſe can ſo well agree together, that of all the trinckets, where with they are attired, there is not one but ſerues to ſome neceſſary purpoſe. And (ô Lord) to ſee the admirable power & noble effects of Loue, whereby the ſeeming inſenſible Loadſtone, with a ſecret beauty (holding the ſpirit of iron in it) can draw that hard-harted thing vnto it, and (like a

vertuous miſtreſſe) not onely make it bow it ſelfe, but with it make it aſpire to ſo high a Loue, as of the heauenly Poles; and thereby to bring foorth the nobleſt deeds, that the children of the Earth can boaſt of. And ſo the Princes delighting their cõceats with cõfirming their knowledge, ſeing wherein the Sea-diſcipline differed from Land-ſeruice, they had for a day & almoſt a whole night, as pleaſing entertainement, as the falſeſt hart could giue to him he meanes worſt to.

4 But by that the next morning began a little to make a guilden ſhewe of a good meaning, there aroſe euen with the Sun, a vaile of darke cloudes before his face, which ſhortly (like inck powred into water) had blacked ouer all the face of heauen; preparing (as it were) a mournefull ſtage for a Tragedie to be plaied on. For forthwith the windes began to ſpeake lowder, and as in a tumultuous kingdome, to thinke themſelues fitteſt inſtruments of commaundement; and blowing whole ſtormes of hayle and raine vpon them, they were ſooner in daunger, then they coulde almoſt bethinke themſelues of chaunge. For then the traiterous Sea began to ſwell in pride againſt the afflicted Nauie, vnder which (while the heauen fauoured them) it had layne ſo calmely, making mountaines of it ſelfe, ouer which the toſſed and tottring ſhip ſhoulde clime, to be ſtreight carried downe againe to a pit of helliſh darkeneſſe; with ſuch cruell blowes againſt the ſides of the ſhippe (that which way ſoeuer it went, was ſtill in his malice) that there was left neither power to ſtay, nor way to eſcape. And ſhortly had it ſo diſſeuered the louing companie, which the daie before had tarried together, that moſt of them neuer met againe,

but

but were ſwallowed vp in his neuer-ſatiſfied mouth. Some indeed (as ſince was knowne) after long wandring returned into *Theſſalia*; other recouered *Bizantium*, and ſerued *Euarchus* in his warre. But in the ſhip wherein the Princes were (now left as much alone as proud Lords be when fortune fails them) though they employed all induſtrie to ſaue themſelues, yet what they did was rather for dutie to nature, then hope to eſcape. So ougly a darkeneſſe, as if it would preuent the nights comming, vſurped the dayes right: which (accompanied ſometimes with thunders, alwayes with horrible noyſes of the chafing winds) made the maſters and pilots ſo aſtoniſhed, that they knew not how to direct, and if they knew they could ſcarcely (when they directed) heare their owne whiſtle. For the ſea ſtraue with the winds which ſhould be lowder, & the ſhrouds of the ſhip with a ghaſtful noiſe to them that were in it, witneſſed, that their ruine was the wager of the others contention, and the heauen roaring out thunders the more amazed them, as hauing thoſe powers for enimies. Certainely there is no daunger carries with it more horror, then that which growes in thoſe flowing kingdomes. For that dwelling place is vnnaturall to mankind, and then the terribleneſſe of the continuall motion, the diſſolutiõ of the fare being from comfort, the eye and the eare hauing ougly images euer before it, doth ſtill vex the minde, euen when it is beſt armed againſt it. But thus the day paſt (if that might be called a day) while the cunningeſt mariners were ſo conquered by the ſtorme, as they thought it beſt with ſtriking ſailes to yeelde to be gouerned by it: the valianteſt feeling inward diſmayedneſſe, and yet the feare-

fulleſt aſhamed fully to ſhew it, ſeeing that the Princes (who were to parte from the greateſt fortunes) did in their countenances accuſe no point of feare, but encouraging them to doo what might be done (putting their handes to euerie moſt painefull office) taught them at one inſtant to promiſe themſelues the beſt, and yet not to deſpiſe the worſt. But ſo were they carryed by the tyrannie of the winde, and the treaſon of the ſea, all that night, which the elder it was, the more wayward it ſhewed it ſelfe towards them: till the next morning (knowne to be a morning better by the houre-glaſſe, then by the day cleereneſſe) hauing runne fortune as blindly, as it ſelfe euer was painted, leſt the concluſion ſhould not aunſwere to the reſt of the play, they were driuen vpon a rocke: which hidden with thoſe outragious waues, did, as it were, cloſely diſſemble his cruel mind, till with an vnbeleeued violence (but to them that haue tried it) the ſhippe ranne vpon it; and ſeeming willinger to periſh then to haue her courſe ſtayed, redoubled her blowes, till ſhe had broken her ſelfe in peeces; and as it were tearing out her owne bowels to feede the ſeas greedineſſe, left nothing within it but deſpaire of ſafetie, and expectation of a loathſome end. There was to be ſeene the diuerſe manner of minds in diſtreſſe: ſome ſate vpon the toppe of the poupe weeping and wailing, till the ſea ſwallowed them; ſome one more able to abide death, then feare of death, cut his owne throate to preuent drowning; ſome prayed, and there wanted not of them which curſed, as if the heauens could not be more angrie then they were. But a monſtrous crie begotten of manie roaring

vowes

vowes, was able to infect with feare a minde that had not preuented it with the power of reaſon.

But the Princes vſing the paſſions of fearing euill, and deſiring to eſcape, onely to ſerue the rule of vertue, not to abandon ones ſelfe, lept to a ribbe of the ſhippe, which broken from his fellowes, floted with more likelyhood to doo ſeruice, then any other limme of that ruinous bodie; vpon which there had gotten alreadie two brethren, well knowne ſeruants of theirs; and ſtreight they foure were carryed out of ſight, in that huge riſing of the ſea, from the reſt of the ſhippe. But the peece they were on ſinking by little and little vnder them, not able to ſupport the weight of ſo manie, the brethren (the elder whereof was *Leucippus*, the younger *Nelſus*) ſhewed themſelues right faithfull and gratefull ſeruants vnto them; gratefull (I ſay) for this cauſe: Thoſe two gentlemen had bene taken priſoners in the great warre the king of *Phrygia* made vpon *Theſſalia*, in the time of *Muſidorus* his infancie; and hauing beene ſolde into another countrie (though peace fell after betweene theſe Realmes) could not be deliuered, becauſe of their valor knowne, but for a farre greater ſumme, then either all their friends were able, or the Dowager willing to make, in reſpect of the great expences her ſelfe and people had bene put to in thoſe warres; and ſo had they remained in priſon about thirteene yeares, when the two young Princes (hearing ſpeaches of their good deſerts) found meanes both by ſelling all the Iewels they had of great price, and by giuing vnder their hands great eſtates when they ſhould come to be Kings (which promiſes their vertue promiſed for them ſhould be kept) to get

ſo

ſo much treaſure as redeemed them from captiuitie. This remembred, and kindly remembred by theſe two brothers, perchance helped by a naturall duetie to their Princes blood, they willingly left holde of the boord, committing themſelues to the ſeas rage, & euen when they went to dye, themſelues praying for the Princes liues. It is true, that neither the paine nor daunger, ſo moued the Princes hartes as the tenderneſſe of that louing part, farre from glorie, hauing ſo few lookers on; farre from hope of reward, ſince themſelues were ſure to periſh.

CHAP. 8.

[1]Pyrocles *caſt on the ſhore of Phrygia* [2] *led priſoner to the King.* [3] *That ſuſpicious tyrant naturalized.* [4] *His intent to kill* Pyrocles. [5] Muſidorus-*his eſcape from ſea, and offer to dye for his friend.* [6] *Their contention for death.* [7] *Preparation for* Muſidorus *execution.* [8] *His ſtraunge deliuerie by* Pyrocles, [9] *and a ſodaine mutinie.* [10] *Their killing the bad King,* [11] *and creating a better.*

BVt now of all the royal Nauie they had left but one peece of one ſhip, whereon they kept themſelues in all trueth, hauing enterchaunged their cares, while either cared for other, ech comforting and councelling how to labour for the better, and to abide the worſe. But ſo fell it out, that as they were carryed by the tide (which there ſeconded by the ſtorme ran exceedingly ſwiftly)

Muſidorus

Muſidorus ſeeing (as he thought) *Pyrocles* not well vpon the boord, as he would with his right hand haue helped him on better, he had no ſooner vnfaſtned his hold, but that a waue forcibly ſpoiled his weaker hand of hold; and ſo for a time parted thoſe friends, each crying to the other, but the noiſe of the ſea drowned their farewell. But *Pyrocles* (then careleſſe of death, if it had come by any meanes, but his owne) was ſhortly brought out of the ſeas furie to the lands comfort; when (in my conſcience I know) that comfort was but bitter vnto him. And bitter indeed it fell out euen in it ſelfe to be vnto him.

For being caſt on land much bruſed & beaten both 2
with the ſeas hard farewell, and the ſhores rude welcome; and euen almoſt deadly tired with the length of his vncomfortable labour, as he was walking vp to diſcouer ſome bodie, to whom he might goe for reliefe, there came ſtreight running vnto him certaine, who (as it was after knowne) by appointment watched (with manie others) in diuerſe places along the coaſt: who laide handes of him, and without either queſtioning with him, or ſhewing will to heare him, (like men fearefull to appeare curious) or which was worſe hauing no regard to the hard plight he was in (being ſo wette and weake) they carried him ſome miles thence, to a houſe of a principall officer of that countrie. Who with no more ciuilitie (though with much more buſines then thoſe vnder-fellowes had ſhewed) beganne in captious manner to put interrogatories vnto him. To which he (vnuſed to ſuch entertainment) did ſhortlie and plainely aunſwere, what he was, and how he came thither.

But

But that no ſooner knowne, with numbers of armed men to garde him (for miſchiefe, not from miſchiefe) he was ſent to the Kings court, which as then was not aboue a dayes iourney off, with letters from that officer, containing his owne ſeruiceable diligence in diſcouering ſo great a perſonage; adding with all more then was true of his coniectures, becauſe he would endeare his owne ſeruice.

3 This country whereon he fell was *Phrygia*, and it was to the King thereof to whom he was ſent, a Prince of a melancholy conſtitution both of bodie and mind; wickedly ſad, euer muſing of horrible matters; ſuſpecting, or rather condemning all men of euill, becauſe his minde had no eye to eſpie goodneſſe: and therefore accuſing *Sycophantes*, of all men did beſt ſort to his nature; but therefore not ſeeming *Sycophantes*, becauſe of no euill they ſaid, they could bring any new or doubtfull thing vnto him, but ſuch as alreadie he had bene apt to determine; ſo as they came but as proofes of his wiſedome: fearefull and neuer ſecure; while the feare he had figured in his minde had any poſſibilitie of euent. A tode-like retyredneſſe, and cloſeneſſe of minde; nature teaching the odiouſneſſe of poyſon, and the daunger of odiouſneſſe. Yet while youth laſted in him, the exerciſes of that age, and his humour (not yet fullie diſcouered) made him ſomething the more frequentable, and leſſe daungerous. But after that yeares beganne to come on with ſome, though more ſeldome ſhewes of a bloudie nature, and that the prophecie of *Muſidorus* deſtinie came to his eares (deliuered vnto him, and receiued of him with the hardeſt interpretation, as though his

his ſubiectes did delight in the hearing thereof.) Then gaue he himſelfe indeede to the full currant of his diſpoſition, eſpetially after the warre of *Theſſalia*, wherein (though in trueth wrongly) he deemed, his vnſucceſſings proceeded of their vnwillingnes to haue him proſper: and then thinking him ſelfe contemned, (knowing no countermine againſt contempt, but terror) began to let nothing paſſe which might beare the colour of a fault, without ſharpe puniſhment: & when he wanted faults, excellencie grew a fault; and it was ſufficient to make one guiltie, that he had power to be guiltie. And as there is no honor, to which impudent pouertie cannot make it ſelfe ſeruiceable, ſo were there enow of thoſe deſperate ambitious, who would builde their houſes vpon others ruines, which after ſhoulde fall by like practiſes. So as ſeruitude came mainly vpon that poore people, whoſe deedes were not onely puniſhed, but words corrected, and euen thoughts by ſome meane or other puld out of thē: while ſuſpitiō bred the mind of crueltie, and the effectes of crueltie ſtirred a new cauſe of ſuſpition. And in this plight (ful of watchfull fearefulnes) did the ſtorme deliuer ſweete *Pyrocles* to the ſtormie minde of that Tyrant, all men that did ſuch wrong to ſo rare a ſtranger (whoſe countenaunce deſerued both pitie and admiration) condemning thēſelues as much in their hearts, as they did brag in their forces.

But when this bloudy King knew what he was, and 4
in what order he and his coſin *Muſidorus* (ſo much of him feared) were come out of *Theſſalia*, aſſuredly thinking (becauſe euer thinking the worſt) that thoſe forces were prouided againſt him; glad of the periſhing (as

(as he thought) of *Muſidorus*, determined in publique ſort to put *Pyrocles* to death. For hauing quite loſte the way of noblenes, he ſtraue to clime to the height of terriblenes; and thinking to make all men adread, to make ſuch one an enemie, who would not ſpare, nor feare to kill ſo great a Prince; and laſtly, hauing nothing in him why to make him his friend, thought, he woulde make him away, for being his enemie. The day was appointed, and all things appointed for that cruell blow, in ſo ſolemne an order, as if they would ſet foorth tyrāny in moſt gorgeous decking. The Princely youth of inuincible valour, yet ſo vniuſtly ſubiected to ſuch outragious wrong, carrying himſelfe in all his demeanure ſo conſtātly, abiding extremitie, that one might ſee it was the cutting away of the greateſt hope of the world, and deſtroying vertue in his ſweeteſt grouth.

5 But ſo it fell out that his death was preuented by a rare example of friendſhippe in *Muſidorus:* who being almoſt drowned, had bene taken vp by a Fiſherman belonging to the kingdome of *Pontus*; and being there, and vnderſtanding the full diſcourſe (as Fame was very prodigall of ſo notable an accident) in what caſe *Pyrocles* was; learning withall, that his hate was farre more to him then to *Pyrocles*, he founde meanes to acquaint him ſelfe with a noble-man of that Countrie, to whom largely diſcouering what he was, he found him a moſt fitte inſtrument to effectuate his deſire. For this noble-man had bene one, who in many warres had ſerued *Euarchus*, and had bene ſo mind-ſtriken by the beautie of vertue in that noble King, that (though not borne his Subiect) he euen profeſte himſelfe his ſeruaunt. His deſire therefore to him was, to keepe *Muſidorus*

in a

in a ſtrong Caſtle of his, and then to make the King of *Phrygia* vnderſtande, that if he would deliuer *Pyrocles*, *Muſidorus* woulde willingly put him ſelfe into his handes: knowing well, that how thirſtie ſo euer he was of *Pyrocles* bloud, he woulde rather drinke that of *Muſidorus*.

The Nobleman was loath to preſerue one by the loſſe of another, but time vrging reſolution: the importunitie of *Muſidorus* (who ſhewed a minde not to ouer-liue *Pyrocles*) with the affection he bare to *Euarchus*, ſo preuayled, that he carried this ſtrange offer of *Muſidorus*, which by that Tyrant was greedelie accepted.

And ſo vpon ſecuritie of both ſides, they were 6
enterchanged. Where I may not omitte that worke of friendſhippe in *Pyrocles*, who both in ſpeache and coũtenance to *Muſidorus*, well ſhewed, that he thought himſelfe iniured, and not releeued by him: asking him, what he had euer ſeene in him, why he could not beare the extremities of mortall accidentes as well as any man? and why he ſhoulde enuie him the glorie of ſuffering death for his friendes cauſe, and (as it were) robbe him of his owne poſſeſſion? But in this notable contention, (where the conqueſt muſt be the conquerers deſtruction, and ſafetie the puniſhment of the conquered) *Muſidorus* preuayled: becauſe he was a more welcome prize to the vniuſte King, that wiſht none well, to them worſe then others, and to him worſte of all: and as chearefully going towardes, as *Pyrocles* went frowardly fromwarde his death, he was deliuered to the King, who could not be inough ſure of him, without he fed his owne eies vpon one,

one, whom he had begon to feare, as ſoone as the other began to be.

7 Yet becauſe he would in one acte, both make oſtentation of his owne felicitie (into whoſe hands his moſt feared enemie was fallen) and withal cut of ſuch hopes from his ſuſpected ſubiects (when they ſhould knowe certainly he was dead) with much more ſkilful cruelty, and horrible ſolemnitie he cauſed each thing to be prepared for his triumph of tyrannie. And ſo the day being come, he was led foorth by many armed men (who often had beene the fortifiers of wickednes) to the place of execution: where comming with a mind comforted in that he had done ſuch ſeruice to *Pyrocles*, this ſtrange encounter he had.

8 The excelling *Pyrocles* was no ſooner deliuered by the kings ſeruants to a place of liberty, then he bent his witte and courage, (and what would not they bring to paſſe?) how ether to deliuer *Muſidorus*, or to periſh with him. And (finding he could get in that countrie no forces ſufficient by force to reſcue him) to bring himſelfe to die with him, (little hoping of better euent) he put himſelfe in poore rayment, and by the helpe of ſome few crownes he tooke of that noble-man, (who full of ſorrow, though not knowing the ſecrete of his intent, ſuffered him to goe in ſuch order from him) he (euen he, born to the greateſt expectation, and of the greateſt bloud that any Prince might be) ſubmitted himſelfe to be ſeruant to the executioner that ſhould put to death *Muſidorus*: a farre notabler proofe of his friendſhip, conſidering the height of his minde, then any death could be. That bad officer not ſuſpecting him, being araied fit for ſuch an eſtate, & hauing his beautie hidden by

by many foule ſpots he artificially put vpon his face, gaue him leaue not onely to weare a ſworde himſelfe, but to beare his ſworde prepared for the iuſtified murther. And ſo *Pyrocles* taking his time, when *Muſidorus* was vpon the ſcaffold (ſeparated ſomewhat from the reſt, as allowed to ſay ſomething) he ſtept vnto him, & putting the ſworde into his hande not bound (a point of ciuility the officers vſed towards him, becauſe they doubted no ſuch enterpriſe) *Muſidorus* (ſaid he) die nobly. In truth, neuer mã betweene ioy before knowledge what to be glad of, and feare after cõſidering his caſe, had ſuch a confuſion of thoughts, as I had, when I ſaw *Pyrocles*, ſo neare me. But with that *Dorus* bluſhed, and *Pamela* ſmiled: and *Dorus* the more bluſhed at her ſmiling, and ſhe the more ſmiled at his bluſhing; becauſe he had (with the remembraunce of that plight he was in) forgotten in ſpeaking of him ſelfe to vſe the third perſon. But *Muſidorus* turned againe her thoughts from his cheekes to his tongue in this ſorte: But (ſaid he) when they were with ſwordes in handes, not turning backs one to the other (for there they knew was no place of defence) but making that a preſeruation in not hoping to be preſerued, and now acknowledging themſelues ſubiect to death, meaning onely to do honour to their princely birth, they flew amongſt thẽ all (for all were enimies) & had quickly either with flight or death, left none vpon the ſcaffolde to annoy them. Wherein *Pyrocles* (the excellent *Pyrocles*) did ſuch wonders beyond beliefe, as was hable to leade *Muſidorus* to courage, though he had bene borne a coward. But indeed, iuſt rage & deſperate vertue did ſuch effects, that the popular ſorte of the beholders began to be almoſt

ſuperſtitiouſly amazed, as at effectes beyond mortall power. But the King with angry threatnings from-out a window (where he was not aſhamed, the worlde ſhould behold him a beholder) cõmaunded his garde, and the reſt of his ſouldiers to haſten their death. But many of them loſt their bodies to looſe their ſoules, when the Princes grew almoſt ſo weary, as they were ready to be conquered with conquering.

9 But as they were ſtil fighting with weake armes, and ſtrong harts, it happened, that one of the ſouldiers (cõmaũded to go vp after his fellowes againſt the Princes) hauing receiued a light hurt, more woũded in his hart, went backe with as much diligence, as he came vp with modeſtie: which another of his fellowes ſeeing, to pike a thanke of the King, ſtrake him vpon the face, reuiling him, that ſo accompanied, he would runne away from ſo fewe. But he (as many times it falls out) onely valiant, when he was angrie, in reuenge thruſt him through: which with his death was ſtreight reuenged by a brother of his: and that againe requited by a fellow of the others. There began to be a great tumult amongſt the ſouldiers; which ſeene, and not vnderſtood by the people (vſed to feares but not vſed to be bolde in them) ſome began to crie treaſon; and that voice ſtreight multiplying it ſelfe, the King (O the cowardiſe of a guiltie conſcience) before any man ſet vpon him, fled away. Where-with a bruit (either by arte of ſome well meaning men, or by ſuch chaunce as ſuch thinges often fall out by) ran from one to the other, that the King was ſlaine; wherwith certaine yong men of the braueſt minds, cried with lowde voice, Libertie; and encouraging the other Citizens to follow them,

them,ſet vpon the garde,and ſouldiers as chiefe inſtruments of Tyrannie: and quickly, aided by the *Princes*, they had left none of them aliue, nor any other in the cittie,who they thought had in any ſorte ſet his hand to the worke of their ſeruitude,and (God knowes) by the blindneſſe of rage,killing many guiltles perſons,either for affinity to the Tyrant,or enmitie to the tyrant-killers. But ſome of the wiſeſt (ſeeing that a popular licence is indeede the many-headed tyranny) preuailed with the reſt to make *Muſidorus* their chiefe: chooſing one of them (becauſe *Princes*) to defende them, and him becauſe elder and moſt hated of the Tyrant, and by him to be ruled: whom foorthwith they lifted vp, Fortune (I thinke) ſmiling at her worke therein, that a ſcaffold of execution ſhould grow a ſcaffold of coronation.

But by and by there came newes of more certaine truth,that the King was not dead, but fled to a ſtrong caſtle of his,neere hād, where he was gathering forces in all ſpeed poſſible to ſuppreſſe this mutinie. But now they had run themſelues too farre out of breath, to go backe againe the ſame career; and too well they knew the ſharpneſſe of his memorie to forget ſuch an iniury; therefore learning vertue of neceſſitie, they continued reſolute to obey *Muſidorus*. Who ſeing what forces were in the citie, with them iſſued againſt the Tyrant, while they were in this heat; before practiſes might be vſed to diſſeuer them: & with them met the King,who likewiſe hoping little to preuaile by time, (knowing and finding his peoples hate) met him with little delay in the field: where him ſelfe was ſlaine by *Muſidorus*, after he had ſeene his onely ſonne (a Prince of great

courage & beautie, but foſtred in bloud by his naughty Father) ſlaine by the hand of *Pyrocles*. This victory obteined, with great, and truly not vndeſerued honour to the two Princes, the whole eſtates of the country with one conſent, gaue the crowne and all other markes of ſoueraigntie to *Muſidorus*; deſiring nothing more, then to liue vnder ſuch a gouernment, as they promiſed thẽſelues of him.

11 But he thinking it a greater greatnes to giue a kingdome, then get a kingdome; vnderſtanding that there was left of the bloud Roiall, & next to the ſucceſſiõ, an aged Gentleman of approued goodnes (who had gotten nothing by his couſins power, but danger frõ him, and odiouſnes for him) hauing paſt his time in modeſt ſecrecy, & aſmuch from entermedling in matters of gouernment, as the greatneſſe of his bloud would ſuffer him, did (after hauing receiued the full power to his owne hands) reſigne all to the noble-mã: but with ſuch conditions, & cautions of the conditions, as might aſſure the people (with aſmuch aſſurãce as worldly matters beare) that not onely that gouernour, of whom indeed they looked for al good, but the nature of the gouernment, ſhould be no way apt to decline to Tyrãny.

CHAP. 9.

[1] *The two brothers eſcape to the ſhore of* Pontus. [2] *Incõſtancy,* [3] *and enuie purtraied in the King & his Counſellor.* [4] *The aduancement & ouerthrow by them of thoſe two brothers.* [5] *The reuenge thereof by the two Princes.* [6] *The cruelties of two reuengefull Gyants, and their death by the Princes.* [7] *Their honours, and their honourable mindes.*

This

THis dooing ſet foorth no leſſe his magnificēce, then the other act did his magnanimitie: ſo that greatly prayſed of al, and iuſtly beloued of the newe King, who in all both wordes and behauiour proteſted him ſelfe their Tenaunt, or Liegeman, they were drawne thence to reuenge thoſe two ſeruāts of theirs, of whoſe memorable faith, I told you (moſt excellēt Princeſſe) in willingly giuing themſelues to be drowned for their ſakes: but drowned indeed they were not, but gat with painefull ſwimming vpon a rocke: frō whence (after being come as neere famiſhing, as before drowning) the weather breaking vp, they were brought to the maine lande of *Pontus*; the ſame coūtry vpon which *Muſidorus* alſo was fallen, but not in ſo luckie a place. 1

For they were brought to the King of that country, a Tyrant alſo, not thorow ſuſpition, greedines, or vnreuēgefulnes, as he of *Phrygia*, but (as I may terme it) of a wanton crueltie: inconſtant of his choiſe of friends, or rather neuer hauing a friēd, but a playfellow; of whom when he was wearie, he could not otherwiſe rid himſelf, thē by killing thē: giuing ſomtimes prodigally, not becauſe he loued them to whom he gaue, but becauſe he luſted to giue: puniſhing, not ſo much for hate or anger, as becauſe he felt not the ſmart of puniſhment: delighted to be flattered, at firſt for thoſe vertues which were not in him, at length making his vices vertues worthy the flattering: with like iudgement glorying, when he had happened to do a thing well, as when he had performed ſome notable miſchiefe. 2

3 He chaũced at that time (for indeed long time none laſted with him) to haue next in vſe about him, a mã of the moſt enuious diſpoſitiõ, that (I think) euer infected the aire with his breath: whoſe eies could not looke right vpon any happie mã, nor eares beare the burthen of any bodies praiſe: cõtrary to the natures of al other plagues, plagued with others well being; making happines the ground of his vnhappineſſe, & good newes the argumẽt of his ſorrow: in ſum, a man whoſe fauour no man could winne, but by being miſerable.

4 And ſo, becauſe theſe two faithfull ſeruants of theirs came in miſerable ſorte to that Courte, he was apte inough at firſt to fauour them; and the King vnderſtanding of their aduenture, (wherein they had ſhewed ſo conſtant a faith vnto their Lordes) ſuddainly falles to take a pride in making much of them, extolling them with infinite prayſes, and prayſing him ſelfe in his harte, in that he prayſed them. And by and by were they made great courtiers, and in the way of minions, when aduauncement (the moſt mortall offence to enuy) ſtirred vp their former friend, to ouerthrow his owne worke in them; taking occaſion vpon the knowledge (newly come to the court) of the late King of *Phrygia* deſtroied by their two Lordes, who hauing bene a neere kinſman to this Prince of *Pontus*, by this enuious Coũcellour, partly with ſuſpition of practiſe, partly with glory of in-part reuẽging his couſins death, the King was ſuddainly turned, (and euery turne with him was a downe-fall) to locke them vp in priſon, as ſeruaunts to his enimies, whom before he had neuer knowne, nor (til that time one of his own ſubiects had entertained and dealt for them) did euer take heed of.

But

But now earneſt in euery preſent humour, and making himſelfe braue in his liking, he was content to giue them iuſt cauſe of offence, when they had power to make iuſt reuenge. Yet did the Princes ſend vnto him before they entred into war, deſiring their ſeruants liberty. But he ſwelling in thier hũblenes, (like a bubble ſwollen vp with a ſmall breath, broken with a great) forgetting, or neuer knowing humanitie, cauſed their heads to be ſtriken off, by the aduice of his enuious Councellor (who now hated them ſo much the more, as he foreſaw the happines in hauing ſuch, and ſo fortunate maſters) and ſent them with vnroyall reproches to *Muſidorus* and *Pyrocles*, as if they had done traiterouſly, and not heroically in killing his tyrannicall Coſen.

But that iniurie went beyond al degree of reconcile- 5
ment; ſo that they making forces in *Phrygia* (a kingdome wholy at their commandement, by the loue of the people, and gratefulneſſe of the King) they entred his country; and wholy conquering it (with ſuch deeds as at leſt Fame ſaid were excellent) tooke the King; and by *Muſidorus* commaundement (*Pyrocles* hart more enclined to pitie) he was ſlaine vpon the tombe of their two true Seruants; which they cauſed to be made for them with royall expences, and notable workmanſhip to preſerue their deade liues. For his wicked Seruant he ſhould haue felt the like, or worſe, but that his harte brake euen to death with the beholding the honour done to the deade carcaſſes: There might *Pyrocles* quietly haue enioyed that crowne, by all the deſire of that people, moſt of whom had reuolted vnto him: but he, finding a ſiſter of the late Kings (a faire and well eſteemed Ladie) looking for no-

thing more, then to be oppreſſed with her brothers ruines, gaue her in marriage to the noble man his fathers old friend, and endowed them with the crowne of that kingdome. And not content with thoſe publike actions, of princely, and (as it were) gouerning vertue, they did (in that kingdome and ſome other neere about) diuers acts of particular trials, more famous, becauſe more perilous. For in that time thoſe regions were full both of cruell monſters, & monſtrous men: all which in ſhort time by priuate combats they deliuered the countries of.

6 Among the reſt, two brothers of huge both greatneſſe & force, therefore commonly called giants, who kept thẽſelues in a caſtle ſeated vpon the top of a rocke, impregnable, becauſe there was no comming vnto it, but by one narrow path, where one mans force was able to keepe downe an armie. Theſe brothers had a while ſerued the King of *Pontus*, and in all his affaires (eſpecially of war, wherunto they were onely apt) they had ſhewed, as vncõquered courage, ſo a rude faithfulnes: being men indeed by nature apter to the faults of rage, then of deceipt; not greatly ambitious, more then to be well and vprightly dealt with; rather impatient of iniury, then delighted with more then ordinary curteſies; and in iniuries more ſenſible of ſmart or loſſe, then of reproch or diſgrace. Theſe men being of this nature (and certainely Iewels to a wiſe man, conſidering what indeed wonders they were able to performe) yet were diſcarded by that vnworthy Prince, after many notable deſerts, as not worthy the holding. Which was the more euident to them; becauſe it ſodainly fell from an exceſſe of fauor, which (many examples hauing taught them)

them) neuer ſtopt his race till it came to an headlong ouerthrow: they full of rage, retyred themſelues vnto this caſtle. Where thinking nothing iuſter thē reuenge, nor more noble then the effects of anger, that (according to the nature) ful of inward brauery and fiercenes, ſcarcely in the glaſſe of Reaſon, thinking it ſelf faire, but when it is terrible, they immediately gaue themſelues to make all the countrie about them (ſubiect to that King) to ſmart for their Lords folly: not caring how innocent they were, but rather thinking the more innocent they were, the more it teſtified their ſpite, which they deſired to manifeſt. And with vſe of euill, growing more and more euill, they tooke delight in ſlaughter, and pleaſing themſelues in making others wracke the effect of their power: ſo that where in the time that they obeyed a maſter, their anger was a ſeruiceable power of the minde to doo publike good; ſo now vnbridled, and blinde iudge of it ſelfe, it made wickedneſſe violent, and praiſed it ſelfe in excellencie of miſchiefe; almoſt to the ruine of the countrie, not greatly regarded by their careleſſe and loueleſſe king. Till now theſe Princes finding them ſo fleſhed in cruelty, as not to be reclaimed, ſecreatly vndertooke the matter alone: for accompanied they would not haue ſuffered them to haue mounted; and ſo thoſe great fellowes ſcornefully receiuing them, as fooliſh birds faine into their net, it pleaſed the eternall iuſtice to make thē ſuffer death by their hands: So as they were manifoldly acknowledged the ſauers of that countrie.

It were the part of a verie idle Orator to ſet forth the 7
numbers of wel-deuiſed honors done vnto them: But as high honor is not onely gotten and borne by paine,

and

and daunger, but muſt be nurſt by the like, or els vaniſheth as ſoone as it appeares to the world: ſo the naturall hunger thereof (which was in *Pyrocles*) ſuffered him not to account a reſting ſeate of that, which euer either riſeth, or falleth, but ſtill to make one action beget another; whereby his doings might ſend his praiſe to others mouthes to rebound againe true contentment to his ſpirite. And therefore hauing well eſtabliſhed thoſe kingdomes, vnder good gouernours, and rid them by their valure of ſuch giants and monſters, as before time armies were not able to ſubdue, they determined in vnknowne order to ſee more of the world, & to imploy thoſe gifts eſteemed rare in them, to the good of mankinde; and therefore would themſelues (vnderſtanding that the King *Euarchus* was paſſed all the cumber of his warres) goe priuately to ſeeke exerciſes of their vertue; thinking it not ſo worthy, to be brought to heroycall effects by fortune, or neceſſitie (like *Vlyſſes* and *Aeneas*) as by ones owne choice, and working. And ſo went they away from verie vnwilling people to leaue them, making time haſte it ſelfe to be a circumſtance of their honour, and one place witneſſe to another of the truth of their doings. For ſcarcely were they out of the cõfines of *Pontus*, but that as they ridde alone armed, (for alone they went, one ſeruing the other) they mette an aduenture; which though not ſo notable for any great effect they perfourmed, yet worthy to be remembred for the vn-vſed examples therein, as well of true natural goodnes, as of wretched vngratefulneſſe.

CHAP.

CHAP. 10.

[1] *The pitifull ſtate, and ſtorie of the* Paphalgonian *vnkinde King, and his kind ſonne,* [2] *firſt related by the ſon,* [3] *then by the blind father.* [4] *The three Princes aſſaulted by* Plexirtus *and his traine:* [5] *aſſiſted by their King of* Pontus *and his troupes.* [6] Plexirtus *ſuccoured and ſaued by two brothers, that vertuouſly loued a moſt vicious man.* [7] *Beſeeged by the new King,* [8] *he ſubmitteth, & is pardoned.* [9] *The two Princes depart to aide the Queene of* Lycia.

IT was in the kingdome of *Galacia*, the ſeaſon being (as in the depth of winter) very cold, and as then ſodainely growne to ſo extreame and foule a ſtorme, that neuer any winter (I thinke) brought foorth a fowler child: ſo that the Princes were euen compelled by the haile, that the pride of the winde blew into their faces, to ſeeke ſome ſhrowding place within a certaine hollow rocke offering it vnto them, they made it their ſhield againſt the tempeſts furie. And ſo ſtaying there, till the violence thereof was paſſed, they heard the ſpeach of a couple, who not perceiuing them (being hidde within that rude canapy) helde a ſtraunge and pitifull diſputation which made them ſteppe out; yet in ſuch ſort, as they might ſee vnſeene. There they perceaued an aged man, and a young, ſcarcely come to the age of a man, both poorely arayed, extreamely weather-beaten; the olde man blinde, the young man leading him: and yet through all thoſe miſeries, in both theſe ſeemed 1

ſeemed to appeare a kind of nobleneſſe, not ſutable to that affliction. But the firſt words they heard, were theſe of the old man. Well *Leonatus* (ſaid he) ſince I cannot perſwade thee to lead me to that which ſhould end my griefe, & thy trouble, let me now entreat thee to leaue me: feare not, my miſerie cannot be greater then it is, & nothing doth become me but miſerie; feare not the danger of my blind ſteps, I cannot fall worſe then I am. And doo not I pray thee, doo not obſtinately continue to infect thee with my wretchednes. But flie, flie from this region, onely worthy of me. Deare father (anſwered he) doo not take away from me the onely remnant of my happineſſe: while I haue power to doo you ſeruice, I am not wholly miſerable. Ah my ſonne (ſaid he, and with that he groned, as if ſorrow ſtraue to breake his harte,) how euill fits it me to haue ſuch a ſonne, and how much doth thy kindneſſe vpbraide my wickednesſe? Theſe dolefull ſpeeches, and ſome others to like purpoſe (well ſhewing they had not bene borne to the fortune they were in,) moued the Princes to goe out vnto them, and aſke the younger what they were? Sirs (anſwered he, with a good grace, and made the more agreable by a certaine noble kinde of pitiouſnes) I ſee well you are ſtraungers, that know not our miſerie ſo well here knowne, that no man dare know, but that we muſt be miſerable. In deede our ſtate is ſuch, as though nothing is ſo needfull vnto vs as pittie, yet nothing is more daungerous vnto vs, then to make our ſelues ſo knowne as may ſtirre pittie. But your preſence promiſeth, that cruelty ſhall not ouer-runne hate. And if it did, in truth our ſtate is ſoncke below the degree of feare.

This

'This old man (whom I leade) was lately rightfull 2
Prince of this countrie of *Paphlagonia*, by the hard-harted vngratefulnes of a ſonne of his, depriued, not onely of his kingdome (whereof no forraine forces were euer able to ſpoyle him) but of his ſight, the riches which Nature graũts to the pooreſt creatures. Whereby, & by other his vnnaturall dealings, he hath bin driuen to ſuch griefe, as euen now he would haue had me to haue led him to the toppe of this rocke, thẽce to caſt himſelfe headlong to death: and ſo would haue made me (who receiued my life of him) to be the worker of his deſtruction. But noble Gentlemen (ſaid he) if either of you haue a father, and feele what duetifull affection is engraffed in a ſonnes hart, let me intreate you to conuey this afflicted Prince to ſome place of reſt & ſecuritie. Amongſt your worthie actes it ſhall be none of the leaſt, that a King, of ſuch might and fame, and ſo vniuſtly oppreſſed, is in any ſort by you relieued.

But before they could make him anſwere, his father 3
began to ſpeake, Ah my ſonne (ſaid he) how euill an Hiſtorian are you, that leaue out the chiefe knotte of all the diſcourſe? my wickednes, my wickednes. And if thou doeſt it to ſpare my eares, (the oncly ſenſe nowe left me proper for knowledge) aſſure thy ſelfe thou doſt miſtake me. And I take witneſſe of that Sunne which you ſee (with that he caſt vp his blinde eyes, as if he would hunt for light,) and wiſh my ſelfe in worſe caſe then I do wiſh my ſelfe, which is as euill as may be, if I ſpeake vntruely; that nothing is ſo welcome to my thoughts, as the publiſhing of my ſhame. Therefore know you Gentlemen (to whom from my harte I wiſh that it may not proue ominous foretokẽ of misfortune

to

to haue mette with ſuch a miſer as I am) that whatſoe-uer my ſonne(ô God, that trueth binds me to reproch him with the name of my ſonne)hath ſaid, is true. But beſides thoſe truthes, this alſo is true, that hauing had in lawful mariage,of a mother fitte to beare royall children,this ſonne(ſuch one as partly you ſee, and better ſhall knowe by my ſhorte declaration) and ſo enioyed the expectations in the world of him,till he was growē to iuſtifie their expectations (ſo as I needed enuie no father for the chiefe comfort of mortalitie, to leaue an other ones-ſelfe after me) I was caried by a baſtarde ſonne of mine (if at leaſt I be bounde to beleeue the words of that baſe woman my concubine,his mother) firſt to miſſlike,then to hate,laſtly to deſtroy,to doo my beſt to deſtroy, this ſonne (I thinke you thinke) vndeſeruing deſtruction. What waies he vſed to bring me to it,if I ſhould tell you , I ſhould tediouſly trouble you with as much poyſonous hypocriſie, deſperate fraude, ſmoothe malice,hidden ambition,& ſmiling enuie, as in any liuing perſon could be harbored. But I liſt it not, no remembrance, (no,of naughtines)delights me,but mine own;& me thinks, the accuſing his traines might in ſome manner excuſe my fault,which certainly I loth to doo. But the concluſion is,that I gaue order to ſome ſeruants of mine,whom I thought as apte for ſuch charities as my ſelfe,to leade him out into a forreſt,& there to kill him.

But thoſe theeues (better natured to my ſonne then my ſelfe)ſpared his life, letting him goe, to learne to liue poorely : which he did, giuing himſelfe to be a priuate ſouldier, in a countrie here by . But as he was redy to be greatly aduaunced for ſome noble pee-

ces

ces of ſeruice which he did, he hearde newes of me: who (dronke in my affection to that vnlawfull and vnnaturall ſonne of mine) ſuffered my ſelf ſo to be gouerned by him, that all fauors and puniſhments paſſed by him, all offices, and places of importance, diſtributed to his fauourites; ſo that ere I was aware, I had left my ſelf nothing but the name of a King: which he ſhortly wearie of too, with many indignities (if any thing may be called an indignity, which was laid vpon me) threw me out of my ſeat, and put out my eies; and then (proud in his tyrannie) let me goe, nether impriſoning, nor killing me: but rather delighting to make me feele my miſerie; miſerie indeed, if euer there were any; full of wretchednes, fuller of diſgrace, and fulleſt of guiltines. And as he came to the crowne by ſo vniuſt meanes, as vniuſtlie he kept it, by force of ſtranger ſouldiers in *Cittadels*, the neſtes of tyranny, & murderers of libertie; diſarming all his own countrimen, that no man durſt ſhew himſelf a wel-willer of mine: to ſay the trueth (I think) few of thē being ſo (conſidering my cruell follie to my good ſonne, and fooliſh kindnes to my vnkinde baſtard:) but if there were any who fell to pitie of ſo great a fall, and had yet any ſparkes of vnſtained duety lefte in them towardes me, yet durſt they not ſhewe it, ſcarcely with giuing me almes at their doores; which yet was the onelie ſuſtenaunce of my diſtreſſed life, no bodie daring to ſhewe ſo much charitie, as to lende me a hande to guide my darke ſteppes: Till this ſonne of mine (God knowes, woorthie of a more vertuous, and more fortunate father) forgetting my abhominable wrongs, not recking danger, & neglecting the preſent good way he was in doing himſelfe good, came

came hether to doo this kind office you ſee him performe towards me, to my vnſpeakable griefe; not onely becauſe his kindnes is a glaſſe eue to my blind eyes, of my naughtines, but that aboue all griefes, it greeues me he ſhould deſperatly aduenture the loſſe of his ſould. deſeruing life for mine, that yet owe more to fortune for my deſerts, as if he would cary mudde in a cheſt of chriſtall. For well I know, he that now raigneth, how much ſoeuer (and with good reaſon) he deſpiſeth me, of all men deſpiſed; yet he will not let ſlippe any aduantage to make away him, whoſe iuſt title (ennobled by courage and goodnes) may one day ſhake the ſeate of a neuer ſecure tyrannie. And for this cauſe I craued of him to leade me to the toppe of this rocke, indeede I muſt confeſſe, with meaning to free him from ſo Serpentine a companion as I am. But he finding what I purpoſed, onely therein ſince he was borne, ſhewed himſelfe diſobedient vnto me. And now Gentlemen, you haue the true ſtorie, which I pray you publiſh to the world, that my miſchieuous proceedinges may be the glorie of his filiall pietie, the onely reward now left for ſo great a merite. And if it may be, let me obtaine that of you, which my ſonne denies me: for neuer was there more pity in ſauing any, then in ending me; both becauſe therein my agonies ſhall ende, and ſo ſhall you preſerue this excellent young man, who els wilfully folowes his owne ruine.

4 The matter in it ſelf lamentable, lamentably expreſſed by the old Prince (which needed not take to himſelfe the geſtures of pitie, ſince his face could not put of the markes thereof) greatly moued the two Princes to compaſſion, which could not ſtay in ſuch harts as theirs with-

without ſeeking remedie. But by and by the occaſion was preſented: for *Plexirtus* (ſo was the baſtard called) came thether with fortie horſe, onely of purpoſe to murder this brother; of whoſe comming he had ſoone aduertiſement, and thought no eyes of ſufficient credite in ſuch a matter, but his owne; and therefore came him ſelfe to be actor, and ſpectator. And as ſoone as he came, not regarding the weake (as he thought) garde of but two men, commaunded ſome of his followers to ſet their handes to his, in the killing of *Leonatus*. But the young Prince (though not otherwiſe armed but with a ſworde) how falſely ſoeuer he was dealt with by others, would not betray him ſelfe: but brauely drawing it out, made the death of the firſt that aſſaulted him, warne his fellowes to come more warily after him. But then *Pyrocles* and *Muſidorus* were quickly become parties (ſo iuſt a defence deſeruing as much as old friendſhip) and ſo did behaue them among that cõpanie (more iniurious, then valiant) that many of them loſt their liues for their wicked maiſter.

Yet perhaps had the number of them at laſt preuailed, if the King of *Pontus* (lately by them made ſo) had not come vnlooked for to their ſuccour. Who (hauing had a dreame which had fixt his imagination vehemently vpon ſome great daunger, preſently to follow thoſe two Princes whom he moſt deerely loued) was come in all haſt, following as well as he could their tracke with a hundreth horſes in that countrie, which he thought (conſidering who then raigned) a fit place inough to make the ſtage of any Tragedie. 5

But then the match had ben ſo ill made for *Plexirtus*, that his ill-led life, & worſe gotten honour ſhould haue 6

tumbled together to deſtructiō; had there not come in *Tydeus* & *Telenor*, with fortie or fiftie in their ſuit, to the defence of *Plexirtus*. Theſe two were brothers, of the nobleſt houſe of that country, brought vp frō their infancie with *Plexirtus*: men of ſuch proweſſe, as not to know feare in themſelues, and yet to teach it others that ſhould deale with them: for they had often made their liues triumph ouer moſt terrible daungers; neuer diſmayed, and euer fortunate; and truely no more ſetled in their valure, then diſpoſed to goodneſſe and iuſtice, if either they had lighted on a better friend, or could haue learned to make friendſhip a child, and not the father of Vertue. But bringing vp (rather then choiſe) hauing firſt knit their minds vnto him, (indeed craftie inough, eyther to hide his faultes, or neuer to ſhew them, but when they might pay home) they willingly held out the courſe, rather to ſatisfie him, then al the world; and rather to be good friendes, then good men: ſo as though they did not like the euill he did, yet they liked him that did the euill; and though not councellors of the offence, yet protectors of the offender. Now they hauing heard of this ſodaine going out, with ſo ſmall a company, in a country full of euil-wiſhing minds toward him (though they knew not the cauſe) followed him; till they found him in ſuch caſe as they were to venture their liues, or elſe he to looſe his: which they did with ſuch force of minde and bodie, that truly I may iuſtly ſay, *Pyrocles* & *Muſidorus* had neuer till then found any, that could make them ſo well repeate their hardeſt leſſon in the feates of armes. And briefly ſo they did, that if they ouercame not; yet were they not ouercome, but caried away that vngratefull

maiſter

maiſter of theirs to a place of ſecuritie; howſoeuer the Princes laboured to the cõtrary. But this matter being thus far begun, it became not the conſtãcie of the Princes ſo to leaue it; but in all haſt making forces both in *Pontus* and *Phrygia*, they had in fewe dayes, lefte him but only that one ſtrong place where he was. For feare hauing bene the onely knot that had faſtned his people vnto him, that once vntied by a greater force, they all ſcattered from him; like ſo many birdes, whoſe cage had bene broken.

In which ſeaſon the blind King (hauing in the chief cittie of his Realme, ſet the crowne vpõ his ſonne *Leonatus* head) with many teares (both of ioy and ſorrow) ſetting forth to the whole people, his owne fault & his ſonnes vertue, after he had kiſt him, and forſt his ſonne to accept honour of him (as of his newe-become ſubiect) euẽ in a moment died, as it ſhould ſeeme: his hart broken with vnkindnes & affliction, ſtretched ſo farre beyond his limits with this exceſſe of cõfort, as it was able no longer to keep ſafe his roial ſpirits. But the new King (hauing no leſſe louingly performed all duties to him dead, then aliue) purſued on the ſiege of his vnnatural brother, aſmuch for the reuenge of his father, as for the eſtabliſhing of his owne quiet. In which ſiege truly I cannot but acknowledge the proweſſe of thoſe two brothers, then whom the Princes neuer found in all their trauell two men of greater habilitie to performe, nor of habler skill for conduct. 7

But *Plexirtus* finding, that if nothing els, famin would at laſt bring him to deſtructiõ, thought better by hũblenes to creepe, where by pride he could not march. For certainely ſo had nature formed him, & the exerciſe of 8

craft conformed him to all turnings of ſleights, that though no mã had leſſe goodnes in his ſoule then he, no man could better find the places whence argumẽts might grow of goodneſſe to another: though no man felt leſſe pitie, no man could tel better how to ſtir pitie: no mã more impudẽt to deny, where proofes were not manifeſt; no man more ready to confeſſe with a repenting mãner of aggrauating his owne euil, where denial would but make the fault fowler. Now he tooke this way, that hauing gotten a paſport for one (that pretended he would put *Plexirtus* aliue into his hãds) to ſpeak with the King his brother, he him ſelfe (though much againſt the minds of the valiant brothers, who rather wiſhed to die in braue defence) with a rope about his necke, barefooted, came to offer himſelfe to the diſcretion of *Leonatus*. Where what ſubmiſſion he vſed, how cunningly in making greater the faulte he made the faultines the leſſe, how artificially he could ſet out the torments of his owne cõſcience, with the burdenſome comber he had found of his ambitious deſires, how finely ſeeming to deſire nothing but death, as aſhamed to liue, he begd life, in the refuſing it, I am not cunning inough to be able to expreſſe: but ſo fell out of it, that though at firſt ſight *Leonatus* ſaw him with no other eie, then as the murderer of his father; & anger already began to paint reuenge in many colours, ere long he had not only gotten pitie, but pardon, and if not an excuſe of the fault paſt, yet an opinion of a future amẽdment: while the poore villaines (chiefe miniſters of his wickednes, now betraied by the author therof,) were deliuered to many cruell ſorts of death; he ſo handling it, that it rather ſeemed, he had rather come into the de-

fence

fence of an vnremediable miſchiefe already cõmitted, then that they had done it at firſt by his conſent.

In ſuch ſort the Princes left theſe recõciled brothers (*Plexirtus* in all his behauiour carying him in far lower degree of ſeruice, then the euer-noble nature of *Leonatus* would ſuffer him) & taking likewiſe their leaues of their good friend the King of *Pontus* (who returned to enioy their benefite, both of his wife and kingdome) they priuately went thence, hauing onely with them the two valiant brothers, who would needs accõpanie them, through diuers places; they foure dooing actes more daungerous, though leſſe famous, becauſe they were but priuat chiualries: till hearing of the faire and vertuous Queene *Erona* of *Lycia*, beſieged by the puiſſant King of *Armenia*, they bent themſelues to her ſuccour, both becauſe the weaker (& weaker as being a Ladie,) & partly becauſe they heard the King of *Armenia* had in his company three of the moſt famous men liuing, for matters of armes, that were knowne to be in the worlde. Whereof one was the Prince *Phalgus*, (whoſe name was ſweetened by your breath, peerleſſe Ladie, when the laſt daie it pleaſed you to mention him vnto me) the other two were two great Princes (though holding of him) *Barzanes* and *Euardes*, men of Giant-like both hugenes and force: in which two eſpecially, the truſt the King had of victorie, was repoſed. And of them, thoſe two brothers *Tydeus* and *Telenor* (ſufficient iudges in warlike matters) ſpake ſo high commendations, that the two yong Princes had euen a youthfull longing to haue ſome triall of their vertue. And therefore as ſoone as they were entred into *Lycia* they ioyned thẽſelues with them that faithfully ſerued 9

the poore Queene, at that time beſieged: and ere long animated in ſuch ſort their almoſt ouerthrowne harts, that they went by force to relieue the towne, though they were depriued of a great part of their ſtrength by the parting of the two brothers, who were ſent for in all haſt to returne to their old friend and maiſter, *Plexirtus*: who (willingly hood-winking themſelues from ſeeing his faultes, and binding themſelues to beleeue what he ſaid) often abuſed the vertue of courage to defend his fowle vice of iniuſtice. But now they were ſent for to aduaunce a conqueſt he was about; while *Pyrocles* and *Muſidorus* purſued the deliuerie of the Queene *Erona*.

CHAP. 11.

Dorus his ſuite to Pamela *interrupted by* Mopſas *waking.* *The ſiſters going with* Zelmane *to waſh themſelues.* *The pleaſantnes of the riuer.* *The pleaſure* Zelmane *had in ſeeing them, vttered* *in ſpeach,* *and ſong.* *She led by a ſpaniel, to know, and hurte her noble riuall.* *The parting of that fraye.*

I Haue heard (ſaid *Pamela*) that parte of the ſtory of *Plangus* whē he paſſed through this country: therfore you may (if you liſt) paſſe ouer that warre of *Eronaes* quarrell, leſt if you ſpeake too much of warre matters, you ſhould wake *Mopſa*, which might happily breed a great broile.

1 He looked, and ſaw that *Mopſa* indeed ſat ſwallowing of

of ſleepe with opē mouth, making ſuch a noiſe withal, as no bodie could lay the ſtealing of a nappe to her charge. Whereupon, willing to vſe that occaſion, he kneeled downe, and with humble-hartednesſe, & harty earneſtnes printed in his graces, Alas (ſaid he) diuine Lady, who haue wrought ſuch miracles in me, as to make a Prince (none of the baſeſt) to thinke all principalities baſe, in reſpect of the ſheephooke, which may hold him vp in your ſight; vouchſafe now at laſt to heare in direct words my humble ſute, while this dragō ſleepes, that keepes the golden fruite. If in my deſire I wiſh, or in my hopes aſpire, or in my imagination faine to my ſelfe any thing which may be the leſt ſpot to that heauenly vertue, which ſhines in all your doings; I pray the eternal powers, that the words I ſpeak may be deadly poyſons, while they are in my mouth, and that all my hopes, all my deſires, all my imaginations, may onely worke their owne confuſion. But if loue, loue of you, loue of your vertues, ſeeke onely that fauour of you, which becommeth that gratefulnes, which cānot misbecome your excellencie, O doo not: He would haue ſaid further, but *Pamela* calling aloud *Mopſa*, ſhe ſodainly ſtart vp, ſtaggering, and rubbing her eies, ran firſt out of the doore, and then backe to them, before ſhe knew how ſhe went out, or why ſhe came in againe: till at length, being fully come to her little ſelfe, ſhe aſked *Pamela*, why ſhe had called her. For nothing (ſaid *Pamela*) but that you might heare ſome tales of your ſeruants telling: and therefore now (ſaid ſhe) *Dorus* go on.

But as he (who found no ſo good ſacrifice, as obe- 2
dience) was returning to the ſtory of himſelfe, *Philoclea* came in, & by and by after her, *Miſo*; ſo as for that time

they were faine to let *Dorus* depart. But *Pamela*) delighted euē to preſerue in her memory, the words of ſo wel a beloued ſpeaker) repeated the whole ſubſtance to her ſiſter, till their ſober dinner being come and gone, to recreate themſelues ſomething, (euen tyred with the noyſomnes of *Miſos* conuerſation) they determyned to goe (while the heate of the day laſted) to bath themſelues (ſuch being the maner of the *Arcadian* nymphes often to doo) in the riuer of *Ladon*, and take with them a Lute, meaning to delight them vnder ſome ſhadow. But they could not ſtir, but that *Miſo* with her daughter *Mopſa* was after them: and as it lay in their way to paſſe by the other lodge, *Zelmane* out of her window eſpied them, and ſo ſtale downe after them: which ſhe might the better doo becauſe that *Gynecia* was ſicke, and *Baſilius* (that day being his birth-day) according to his maner, was buſie about his deuotions; and therefore ſhe went after, hoping to finde ſome time to ſpeake with *Philoclea*: but not a word could ſhe beginne, but that *Miſo* would be one of the audience; ſo that ſhe was driuen to recommend thinking, ſpeaking, and all, to her eyes, who diligently perfourmed her truſt, till they came to the riuers ſide; which of all the riuers of *Greece* 3 had the price for excellent pureneſſe and ſweeteneſſe, in ſo much as the verie bathing in it, was accoũted exceeding healthfull. It ranne vpon ſo fine and delicate a ground, as one could not eaſely iudge, whether the Riuer did more waſh the grauell, or the grauel did purifie the Riuer; the Riuer not running forth right, but almoſt continually winding, as if the lower ſtreames would returne to their ſpring, or that the Riuer had a delight to play with it ſelfe. The banckes of either ſide

ſeeming

ſeeming armes of the louing earth, that faine would embrace it; and the Riuer a wanton nymph which ſtill would ſtirre from it: either ſide of the bancke being fringed with moſt beautifull trees, which reſiſted the ſunnes dartes from ouer-much pearcing the naturall coldnes of the Riuer. There was the

But among the reſt a goodly *Cypres*, who bowing her faire head ouer the water, it ſeemed ſhe looked into it; and dreſſed her greene lockes, by that running Riuer. There the Princeſſes determining to bath themſelues, though it was ſo priuiledged a place, vpon paine of death, as no bodie durſt preſume to come thither, yet for the more ſurety, they looked round about, and could ſee nothing but a water ſpaniell, who came downe the riuer, ſhewing that he hunted for a duck, & with a ſnuffling grace, diſdaining that his ſmelling force coulde not as well preuaile thorow the water, as thorow the aire; & therefore wayting with his eye, to ſee whether he could eſpie the duckes getting vp againe: but then a little below them failing of his purpoſe, he got out of the riuer, & ſhaking off the water (as great men do their friends, now he had no further cauſe to vſe it) in-weeded himſelfe ſo, as the Ladies loſt the further marking his ſportfulneſſe: and inuiting *Zelmane* alſo to waſh her ſelfe with them, and ſhe excuſing her ſelfe with hauing taken a late cold, they began by peece-meale to take away the eclipſing of their apparell.

Zelmane would haue put to her helping hand, but ſhe 4
was taken with ſuch a quiuering, that ſhe thought it more wiſedome to leane her ſelfe to a tree and looke on, while *Miſo* and *Mopſa* (like a couple of foreſwat melters)

melters) were getting the pure ſiluer of their bodies out of the vre of their garments. But as the rayments went of to receaue kiſſes of the ground, *Zelmane* enuied the happineſſe of all, but of the ſmocke was euen iealous, and when that was taken away too, and that *Philoclea* remained (for her *Zelmane* onely marked) like a *Dyamond* taken from out the rocke, or rather like the Sun getting from vnder a cloud, and ſhewing his naked beames to the full vew, then was the beautie too much for a patient ſight, the delight too ſtrong for a ſtayed conceipt: ſo that *Zelmane* could not chooſe but runne, to touch, embrace, and kiſſe her; But conſcience made her come to her ſelfe, & leaue *Philoclea*, who bluſhing, and withall ſmiling, making ſhamefaſtneſſe pleaſant, and pleaſure ſhamefaſt, tenderly moued her feete, vnwonted to feele the naked ground, till the touch of the cold water made a prettie kinde of ſhrugging come ouer her bodie, like the twinckling of the faireſt among the fixed ſtars. But the Riuer it ſelfe gaue way vnto her, ſo that ſhe was ſtreight breſt high; which was the deepeſt that there-about ſhe could be: and when cold *Ladon* had once fully imbraced them, himſelfe was no more ſo cold to thoſe Ladies, but as if his cold complexion had bene heated with loue, ſo ſeemed he to play about euery part he could touch.

5 Ah ſweete, now ſweeteſt *Ladon* (ſaid *Zelmane*) why doſt thou not ſtay thy courſe to haue more full taſt of thy happines? But the reaſon is manifeſt, the vpper ſtreames make ſuch haſte to haue their part of embracing, that the nether (though lothly) muſt needs giue place vnto them. O happie *Ladon*, within whom ſhe is, vpon whom her beautie fals, thorow whom her eye perceth.

perceth. O happie *Ladon*, which art now an vnperfect mirror of al perfection, canſt thou euer forget the bleſſednes of this impreſſion? if thou do, then let thy bed be turned from fine grauel, to weeds & mudde; if thou doo, let ſome vniuſt niggards make weres to ſpoile thy beauty; if thou do, let ſome greater riuer fal into thee, to take away the name of *Ladon*. Oh *Ladon*, happie *Ladon*, rather ſlide then run by her, leſt thou ſhouldeſt make her legs ſlippe from her; and then, O happy *Ladon*, who would then cal thee, but the moſt curſed *Ladon*? But as the Ladies plaid them in the water, ſomtimes ſtriking it with their hands, the water (making lines in his face) ſeemed to ſmile at ſuch beating, and with twentie bubbles, not to be content to haue the picture of their face in large vpon him, but he would in ech of thoſe bubbles ſet forth the miniature of them.

But *Zelmane*, whoſe ſight was gaine-ſaid by nothing 6
but the tranſparent vaile of *Ladon*, (like a chamber where a great fire is kept, though the fire be at one ſtay, yet with the continuance continually hath his heate encreaſed) had the coales of her affection ſo kindled with wonder, and blowne with delight, that nowe all her parts grudged, that her eyes ſhould doo more homage, then they, to the Princeſſe of them. In ſomuch that taking vp the Lute, her wit began to be with a diuine furie inſpired; her voice would in ſo beloued an occaſion ſecond her wit; her hands accorded the Lutes muſicke to the voice; her panting hart daunced to the muſicke; while I thinke her feete did beate the time; while her bodie was the roome where it ſhould be celebrated; her ſoule the Queene which ſhoulde be delighted. And ſo togither went the vtterance and the

the inuention, that one might iudge, it was *Philocleas* beautie which did ſpeedily write it in her eyes; or the ſenſe thereof, which did word by word endite it in her minde, whereto ſhe (but as an organ) did onely lend vtterance. The ſong was to this purpoſe.

WHat toong can her perfections tell
In whoſe each part all pens may dwell?
Her haire fine threeds of fineſt gould
In curled knots mans thought to hold:
But that her fore-head ſayes in me
A whiter beautie you may ſee.
Whiter indeed; more white then ſnow,
Which on cold winters face doth grow.
That doth preſent thoſe euen browes,
Whoſe equall line their angles bowes,
Like to the Moone when after chaunge
Her horned head abroad doth raunge:
And arches be to heauenly lids,
Whoſe winke ech bold attempt forbids.
For the blacke ſtarres thoſe Spheares containe,
The matchleſſe paire, euen praiſe doth ſtaine.
No lampe, whoſe light by Art is got,
No Sunne, which ſhines, and ſeeth not,
Can liken them without all peere,
Saue one as much as other cleere:
Which onely thus vnhappie be,
Becauſe themſelues they cannot ſee.
Her cheekes with kindly claret ſpred,
Aurora *like new out of bed,*
Or like the freſh Queene-apples *ſide,*
Bluſhing at ſight of Phœbus *pride.*

Her noſe, her chinne pure iuorie weares:
No purer then the pretie eares.
So that therein appeares ſome blood,
Like wine and milke that mingled ſtood.
In whoſe Incirclets if ye gaze,
Your eyes may tread a Louers maze.
But with ſuch turnes the voice to ſtray,
No talke vntaught can finde the way.
The tippe no iewell needes to weare:
The tippe is iewell of the eare.
But who thoſe ruddie lippes can miſſe?
Which bleſſed ſtill themſelues doo kiſſe.
Rubies, Cherries, and Roſes new,
In worth, in taſte, in perfitte hewe:
Which neuer part but that they ſhowe
Of pretious pearle the double rowe,
The ſecond ſweetly-fenced warde,
Her heau'nly-dewed tongue to garde.
Whence neuer word in vaine did flowe.
Faire vnder theſe doth ſtately growe,
The handle of this pretious worke,
The neck, in which ſtrange graces lurke.
Such be I thinke the ſumptuous towers
Which skill dooth make in Princes bowers.
So good a ſay inuites the eye,
A little downward to eſpie,
The liuelie cluſters of her breſts,
Of Venus *babe the wanton neſts:*
Like pomels round of Marble cleere:
Where azurde veines well mixt appeere.
With deareſt tops of porphyrie.
Betwixt theſe two a way doth lie,

Away more worthie beauties fame,
Then that which beares the Milkie name.
This leades into the ioyous field,
Which onely ſtill doth Lillies yeeld:
But Lillies ſuch whoſe natiue ſmell
The Indian odours doth excell.
Waſte it is calde, for it doth waſte
Mens liues, vntill it be imbraſte.
There may one ſee, and yet not ſee
Her ribbes in white all armed be.
More white then Neptunes ſomie face,
When ſtrugling rocks he would imbrace.
In thoſe delights the wandring thought
Might of each ſide aſtray be brought,
But that her nauel doth vnite,
In curious circle, buſie ſight:
A daintie ſeale of virgin-waxe,
Where nothing but impreſsion lackes.
Her bellie then gladde ſight doth fill,
Iuſtly entitled Cupids hill.
A hill moſt fitte for ſuch a maſter,
A ſpotleſſe mine of Alablaſter.
Like Alablaſter faire and ſleeke,
But ſoft and ſupple ſatten like.
In that ſweete ſeate the Boy doth ſport:
Loath, I muſt leaue his chiefe reſort.
" For ſuch a vſe the world hath gotten,
" The beſt things ſtill muſt be forgotten.
Yet neuer ſhall my ſong omitte
Thighes, for Ouids ſong more fitte;
Which flanked with two ſugred flankes,
Liſt vp their ſtately ſwelling bankes;

That

That Albion cliues in whitenes paſſe:
With hanches ſmooth as looking glaſſe.
But bow all knees, now of her knees
My tongue doth tell what fancie ſees.
The knottes of ioy, the gemmes of loue,
Whoſe motion makes all graces moue.
Whoſe bought incau'd doth yeeld ſuch ſight,
Like cunning Painter ſhadowing white.
The gartring place with child-like ſigne,
Shewes eaſie print in mettall fine.
But then againe the fleſh doth riſe
In her braue calues, like chriſtall skies.
Whoſe Atlas is a ſmalleſt ſmall,
More white then whiteſt bone of all.
Thereout ſteales out that round cleane foote
This noble Cedars pretious roote:
In ſhewe and ſent pale violets,
Whoſe ſteppe on earth all beautie ſets.
But back vnto her back, my Muſe,
Where Ledas ſwanne his feathers mewes,
Along whoſe ridge ſuch bones are met,
Like comfits round in marchpane ſet.
Her ſhoulders be like two white Doues,
Pearching within ſquare royall rooues,
Which leaded are with ſiluer skinne,
Paſsing the hate-ſport Ermelin.
And thence thoſe armes deriued are;
The Phœnix wings are not ſo rare
For faultleſſe length, and ſtaineleſſe hewe,
Ah woe is me, my woes renewe;
Now courſe doth leade me to her hand,
Of my firſt loue the fatall band.

Where whitenes dooth for euer ſitte:
Nature *her ſelfe enameld it.*
For there with ſtrange compact dooth lie
Warme ſnow, moyſt pearle, ſofte iuorie.
There fall thoſe Saphir-coloured brookes,
Which conduit-like with curious crookes,
Swecte Ilands make in that ſweete land.
As for the fingers of the hand,
The bloudy ſhaftes of Cupids *warre,*
With amatiſts they headed are.
Thus hath each part his beauties part,
But how the Graces doo impart
To all her limmes a ſpetiall grace,
Becomming euery time and place.
Which doth euen beautie beautifie,
And moſt bewitch the wretched eye.
How all this is but a faire Inne
Of fairer gueſtes, which dwell within.
Of whoſe high praiſe, and praiſefull bliſſe,
Goodnes the penne, heauen paper is.
The inke immortall fame dooth lende:
As I began, ſo muſt I ende.
No tongue can her perfections tell,
In whoſe each part all tongues may dwell.

But as *Zelmane* was cõming to the latter end of her ſong, ſhe might ſee the ſame water-ſpaniell which before had hũted, come and fetch away one of *Philocleas* gloues; whoſe fine proportion, ſhewed well what a daintie gueſt was wont there to be lodged. It was a delight to *Zelmane*, to ſee that the dogge was therewith delighted, and ſo let him goe a little way withall, who quickly

quickly caried it out of ſight among certaine trees and buſhes, which were very cloſe together. But by & by he came againe, & amongſt the raiments (*Miſo* and *Mopſa* being preparing ſheets againſt their comming out) the dog lighted vpon a little booke of foure or fiue leaues of paper, & was bearing that away to. But then *Zelmane* (not knowing what importãce it might be of) ran after the dog, who going ſtreight to thoſe buſhes, ſhe might ſee the dog deliuer it to a Gentleman who ſecretly lay there. But ſhe haſtily cõming in, the Gẽtleman roſe vp, & with a courteous (though ſad) countenance preſented himſelfe vnto her. *Zelmanes* eies ſtreight willed her mind to marke him: for ſhe thought, in her life ſhe had neuer ſeene a mã of a more goodly preſence, in whom ſtrong making tooke not away delicacie, nor beautie fierceneſſe: being indeed ſuch a right manlike man, as Nature often erring, yet ſhewes ſhe would faine make. But when ſhe had a while (not without admiration) vewed him, ſhe deſired him to deliuer backe the gloue & paper, becauſe they were the Ladie *Philocleas*; telling him withall, that ſhe would not willingly let thẽ know of his cloſe lying in that prohibited place, while they were bathing thẽſelues; becauſe ſhe knew they would be mortally offended withall. Faire Ladie (anſwered he) the worſt of the complaint is already paſſed, ſince I feele of my fault in my ſelf the puniſhmẽt. But for theſe things I aſſure you, it was my dogs wanton boldneſſe, not my preſumption. With that he gaue her backe the paper: But for the gloue (ſaid he) ſince it is my Ladie *Philocleas*, giue me leaue to keepe it, ſince my hart cãnot perſuade it ſelfe to part from it. And I pray you tell the Lady (Lady indeed of all my deſires) that owes it, that

I will direct my life to honour this gloue with ſeruing her. O villain (cried out *Zelmane*, madded with finding an vnlooked-for Riuall, and that he would make her a meſſenger) diſpatch (ſaid ſhe) and deliuer it, or by the life of her that owes it, I wil make thy ſoul (though too baſe a price) pay for it. And with that drewe out her ſworde, which (*Amazon*-like) ſhe euer ware about her. The Gentlemã retired himſelf into an open place frõ among the buſhes; & thẽ drawing out his too, he offred to deliuer it vnto her, ſaying withall, God forbid I ſhould vſe my ſworde againſt you, ſince (if I be not deceiued) you are the ſame famous *Amazon*, that both defended my Ladies iuſt title of beautie againſt the valiant *Phalantus*, & ſaued her life in killing the Lion: therfore I am rather to kiſſe your hands, with acknowledging my ſelfe boũd to obey you. But this courteſie was worſe then a baſtonado to *Zelmane*: ſo that againe with ragefull eyes ſhe bad him defend himſelfe, for no leſſe then his life ſhould anſwere it. A hard caſe (ſaid he) to teach my ſworde that leſſon, which hath euer vſed to turne it ſelf to a ſhield in a Ladies preſence. But *Zelmane* harkening to no more wordes, began with ſuch wittie furie to purſue him with blowes & thruſts, that Nature & Vertue commanded the Gentleman to looke to his ſafetie. Yet ſtil courteſie, that ſeemed incorporate in his hart, would not be perſwaded by daunger to offer any offence, but only to ſtand vpon the beſt defenſiue gard he could; ſomtimes going backe, being content in that reſpect to take on the figure of cowardiſe; ſometime with ſtrong and well-met wards; ſometime cunning auoidings of his body; and ſometimes faining ſome blowes, which himſelf puld backe before they needed

to

to be withſtood. And ſo with play did he a good while fight againſt the fight of *Zelmane*, who (more ſpited with that curteſie, that one that did nothing ſnould be able to reſiſt her) burned away with choller any motions, which might grow out of her owne ſweet diſpoſitiõ, determining to kill him if he fought no better; & ſo redoubling her blowes, draue the ſtranger to no other ſhift, then to warde, and go backe; at that time ſeeming the image of innocencie againſt violence. But at length he found, that both in publike and priuate reſpectes, who ſtandes onely vpon defence, ſtands vpon no defence: For *Zelmane* ſeeming to ſtrike at his head, and he going to warde it, withall ſtept backe as he was accuſtomed, ſhe ſtopt her blow in the aire, and ſuddenly turning the point, ranne full at his breaſt; ſo as he was driuen with the pommell of his ſworde (hauing no other weapon of defence) to beate it downe: but the thruſt was ſo ſtrong, that he could not ſo wholy beate it awaie, but that it met with his thigh, thorow which it ranne. But *Zelmane* retiring her ſworde, and ſeeing his bloud, victorious anger was conquered by the before-conquered pittie; and hartily ſorie, and euen aſhamed with her ſelfe ſhe was, conſidering how little he had done, who well ſhe found could haue done more. In ſo much that ſhe ſaid, truly I am ſorie for your hurt, but your ſelfe gaue the cauſe, both in refuſing to deliuer the gloue, and yet not fighting as I knowe you could haue done. But (ſaide ſhee) becauſe I perceaue you diſdayne to fight with a woman, it may be before a yeare come about, you ſhall meete with a neere kinſman of mine, *Pyrocles* Prince of *Macedon*, and I giue you my worde, he for me ſhall maintaine

I will direct my life to honour this gloue with ſeruing her. O villain (cried out *Zelmane*, madded with finding an vnlooked-for Riuall, and that he would make her a meſſenger) diſpatch (ſaid ſhe) and deliuer it, or by the life of her that owes it, I wil make thy ſoul (though too baſe a price) pay for it. And with that drewe out her ſworde, which (*Amazon*-like) ſhe euer ware about her. The Gentlemã retired himſelf into an open place frõ among the buſhes; & thẽ drawing out his too, he offred to deliuer it vnto her, ſaying withall, God forbid I ſhould vſe my ſworde againſt you, ſince (if I be not deceiued) you are the ſame famous *Amazon*, that both defended my Ladies iuſt title of beautie againſt the valiant *Phalantus*, & ſaued her life in killing the Lion: therfore I am rather to kiſſe your hands, with acknowledging my ſelfe boũd to obey you. But this courteſie was worſe then a baſtonado to *Zelmane*: ſo that againe with ragefull eyes ſhe bad him defend himſelfe, for no leſſe then his life ſhould anſwere it. A hard caſe (ſaid he) to teach my ſworde that leſſon, which hath euer vſed to turne it ſelf to a ſhield in a Ladies preſence. But *Zelmane* harkening to no more wordes, began with ſuch wittie furie to purſue him with blowes & thruſts, that Nature & Vertue commanded the Gentleman to looke to his ſafetie. Yet ſtil courteſie, that ſeemed incorporate in his hart, would not be perſwaded by daunger to offer any offence, but only to ſtand vpon the beſt defenſiue gard he could; ſomtimes going backe, being content in that reſpect to take on the figure of cowardiſe; ſometime with ſtrong and well-met wards; ſometime cunning auoidings of his body; and ſometimes faining ſome blowes, which himſelf puld backe before they needed

to

to be withſtood. And ſo with play did he a good while fight againſt the fight of *Zelmane*, who (more ſpited with that curteſie, that one that did nothing ſhould be able to reſiſt her) burned away with choller any motions, which might grow out of her owne ſweet diſpoſitiō, determining to kill him if he fought no better; & ſo redoubling her blowes, draue the ſtranger to no other ſhift, then to warde, and go backe; at that time ſeeming the image of innocencie againſt violence. But at length he found, that both in publike and priuate reſpectes, who ſtandes onely vpon defence, ſtands vpon no defence: For *Zelmane* ſeeming to ſtrike at his head, and he going to warde it, withall ſtept backe as he was accuſtomed, ſhe ſtopt her blow in the aire, and ſuddenly turning the point, ranne full at his breaſt; ſo as he was driuen with the pommell of his ſworde (hauing no other weapon of defence) to beate it downe: but the thruſt was ſo ſtrong, that he could not ſo wholy beate it awaie, but that it met with his thigh, thorow which it ranne. But *Zelmane* retiring her ſworde, and ſeeing his bloud, victorious anger was conquered by the before-conquered pittie; and hartily ſorie, and euen aſhamed with her ſelfe ſhe was, conſidering how little he had done, who well ſhe found could haue done more. In ſo much that ſhe ſaid, truly I am ſorie for your hurt, but your ſelfe gaue the cauſe, both in refuſing to deliuer the gloue, and yet not fighting as I knowe you could haue done. But (ſaide ſhee) becauſe I perceaue you diſdayne to fight with a woman, it may be before a yeare come about, you ſhall meete with a neere kinſman of mine, *Pyrocles* Prince of *Macedon*, and I giue you my worde, he for me ſhall maintaine

this quarell againſt you. I would (anſwered *Amphialus*) I had many more ſuch hurtes to meete and know that worthy Prince, whoſe vertue I loue & admire, though my good deſtiny hath not bene to ſee his perſon.

B But as they were ſo ſpeaking, the yong Ladies came, to whō *Mopſa* (curious in any thing, but her own good behauiour) hauing followed & ſeene *Zelmane* fighting, had cried, what ſhe had ſeene, while they were drying themſelues, & the water (with ſome drops) ſeemed to weepe, that it ſhould parte from ſuch bodies. But they carefull of *Zelmane* (aſſuring themſelues that any *Arcadian* would beare reuerence to them) *Pamela* with a noble mind, and *Philoclea* with a louing (haſtily hiding the beauties, whereof Nature was prowde, and they aſhamed) they made quicke worke to come to ſaue *Zelmane*. But already they found them in talke, & *Zelmane* careful of his wound. But whē they ſaw him they knew it was their couſin germain, the famous *Amphialus*; whom yet with a ſweete-graced bitternes they blamed for breaking their fathers commaundement, eſpecially while themſelues were in ſuch ſort retired. But he craued pardon, proteſting vnto them that he had onely bene to ſeeke ſolitary places, by an extreme melancholy that had a good while poſſeſt him, and guided to that place by his ſpaniell, where while the dog hunted in the riuer, he had withdrawne himſelfe to pacifie with ſleepe his ouer-watched eyes: till a dreame waked him, and made him ſee that whereof he had dreamed, & withall not obſcurely ſignified that he felt the ſmart of his owne doings. But *Philoclea* (that was euen iealous of her ſelf for *Zelmane*) would needs haue her gloue, and not without ſo mighty a loure as that

face

face could yeeld. As for *Zelmane* when ſhe knew, it was *Amphialus*, Lord *Amphialus* (ſaid ſhe) I haue lõg deſired to know you, heretofore I muſt confeſſe with more good will, but ſtill with honoring your vertue, though I loue not your perſon: & at this time I pray you let vs take care of your wound, vpon cõdition you ſhal hereafter promiſe, that a more knightly combat ſhalbe performed betweene vs. *Amphialus* anſwered in honorable ſort, but with ſuch excuſing himſelfe, that more and more accuſed his loue to *Philoclea*, & prouoked more hate in *Zelmane*. But *Mopſa* had already called certaine ſhepheards not far of (who knew & wel obſerued their limits) to come and helpe to carrie away *Amphialus*, whoſe wound ſuffered him not without daunger to ſtraine it: and ſo he leauing himſelfe with them, departed from them, faſter bleeding in his hart, then at his wound: which bound vp by the ſheetes, wherwith *Philoclea* had bene wrapped, made him thanke the wound, and bleſſe the ſword for that fauour.

CHAP. 12.

How Baſilius *found* Plangus: *his lamẽtation.* Philoclea *entreated by* Zelmane *to relate the ſtorie of* Erona.

HE being gone, the Ladies (with mery anger talking, in what naked ſimplicitie their couſin had ſeene thẽ) returned to the lodge-warde: yet thinking it too early (as long as they had any day) to breake of ſo pleaſing a company, with going to performe a cũberſome obediẽnce, 1

Zelmane inuited them to the little arbour, only reſerued for her, which they willingly did: and there ſitting, *Pamela* hauing a while made the lute in his lāguage, ſhew how glad it was to be touched by her fingers, *Zelmane* deliuered vp the paper, which *Amphialus* had at firſt yeelded vnto her: and ſeeing written vpon the backſide of it, the complaint of *Plangus*, remembring what *Dorus* had told her, and deſiring to know how much *Philoclea* knew of her eſtate, ſhe tooke occaſion in the preſenting of it, to aske whether it were any ſecret, or no. No truely (anſwered *Philoclea*) it is but euen an exerciſe of my fathers writing, vpon this occaſion: He was one day (ſomwhile before your comming hether) walking abroade, hauing vs two with him, almoſt a mile hence; and croſſing a hie way, which comes from the cittie of *Megalopolis*, he ſaw this Gentleman, whoſe name is there written, one of the propreſt and beſt-graced men that euer I ſawe, being of middle age, and of a meane ſtature. He lay as then vnder a tree, while his ſeruaunts were getting freſh poſt-horſes for him. It might ſeeme he was tired with the extreme trauaile he had taken, and yet not ſo tyred, that he forced to take any reſt; ſo haſty he was vpon his iourney: and withall ſo ſorrowfull, that the very face thereof was painted in his face; which with pitifull motions, euen groanes, teares, and paſſionate talking to him ſelfe, moued my Father to fall in talke with him: who at firſt not knowing him, anſwered him in ſuch a deſperate phraſe of griefe, that my Father afterward tooke a delight to ſet it downe in ſuch forme as you ſee: which if you read, what you doubt of, my ſiſter and I are hable to declare vnto you. *Zelmane* willingly opened

the

the leaues, and read it, being written Dialogue-wise in this manner.

Plangus. Basilius.

Plangus.

ALas how long this pilgrimage doth last?
What greater ills haue now the heauens in store,
To couple comming harmes with sorrowes past?
Long since my voice is hoarce, and throte is sore,
With cries to skies, and curses to the ground,
But more I plaine, I feele my woes the more.
Ah where was first that cruell cunning found,
To frame of Earth a vessell of the minde,
Where it should be to selfe-destruction bound?
What needed so high sprites such mansions blind?
Or wrapt in flesh what do they here obtaine,
But glorious name of wretched humaine-kind?
Balles to the starres, and thralles to Fortunes raigne;
Turnd from themselues, infected with their cage,
Where death is feard, and life is held with paine.
Like players pla'st to fill a filthy stage,
Where chaunge of thoughts one foole to other shewes,
And all but iests, saue onely sorrowes rage.
The child feeles that; the man that feeling knowes,
With cries first borne, the presage of his life,
Where wit but scrues, to haue true tast of woes.
A Shop of shame, a Booke where blots be rife
This bodie is: this bodie so composed,
As in it selfe to nourish mortall strife.
So diuers be the Elements disposed
In this weake worke, that it can neuer be
Made vniforme to any state reposed.
Griefe onely makes his wretched state to see

(*Euen like a toppe which nought but whipping moues*)
This man, this talking beaſt, this walking tree.
Griefe is the ſtone which fineſt iudgement proues:
For who grieues not hath but a blockiſh braine,
Since cauſe of griefe no cauſe from life remoues.

Baſilius. *How long wilt thou with monefull muſicke ſtaine*
The cheerefull notes theſe pleaſant places yeeld,
Where all good haps a perfect ſtate maintaine?

Plangus. *Curſt be good haps, and curſt be they that build*
Their hopes on haps, and do not make deſpaire
For all theſe certaine blowes the ſureſt ſhield.
Shall I that ſaw Eronaes *ſhining haire*
Torne with her hands, and thoſe ſame hands of ſnow
With loſſe of pureſt blood themſelues to teare?
Shall I that ſaw thoſe breſts, where beauties flow,
Swelling with ſighes, made pale with mindes diſeaſe,
And ſaw thoſe eyes (thoſe Sonnes) ſuch ſhoures to ſhew,
Shall I, whoſe eares her mournefull words did ſeaze,
Her words in ſyrup laid of ſweeteſt breath,
Relent thoſe thoughts, which then did ſo diſpleaſe?
No, no: Deſpaire my dayly leſſon ſaith,
And ſaith, although I ſeeke my life to flie,
Plangus *muſt liue to ſee* Eronaes *death.*
Plangus *muſt liue ſome helpe for her to trie*
Though in deſpaire, ſo Loue enforceth me;
Plangus *doth liue, and muſt* Erona *dye?*
Erona *dye? O heauen (if heauen there be)*
Hath all thy whirling courſe ſo ſmall effect?
Serue all thy ſtarrie eyes this ſhame to ſee?
Let doltes in haſte ſome altars faire erect

To thoſe high powers, which idly ſit aboue,
And vertue do in greateſt need neglect.

Basilius.

O man, take heed, how thou the Gods do moue
To ireſull wrath, which thou canſt not reſiſt.
Blaſphemous words the ſpeaker vaine do proue.
Alas while we are wrapt in foggie miſt
Of our ſelfe-loue (ſo paſsions do deceaue)
We thinke they hurt, when moſt they do aſsiſt.
To harme vs wormes ſhould that high Iuſtice leaue
His nature? nay, himſelfe? for ſo it is.
What glorie from our loſſe can he receaue?
But ſtill our dazeled eyes their way do miſſe,
While that we do at his ſweete ſcourge repine,
The kindly way to beate vs to our bliſſe.
If ſhe muſt dye, then hath ſhe paſt the line
Of lothſome dayes, whoſe loſſe how canſt thou mone,
That dooſt ſo well their miſeries define?
But ſuch we are with inward tempeſt blowne
Of mindes quite contrarie in waues of will:
We mone that loſt, which had we did bemone.

Plangus.

And ſhall ſhee dye? ſhall cruell fier ſpill
Thoſe beames that ſet ſo many harts on fire?
Hath ſhe not force euen death with loue to kill?
Nay euen cold Death enflamde with hot deſire
Her to enioy, where ioy it ſelfe is thrall,
Will ſpoile the earth of his moſt rich attire.
Thus Death becomes a riuall to vs all,
And hopes with foule embracements her to get,
In whoſe decay Vertues faire ſhrine muſt fall.
O Vertue weake, ſhall death his triumph ſet

Vpon

Vpon thy ſpoiles, which neuer ſhould lye waſte?
Let Death firſt dye; be thou his worthy let.
By what eclipſe ſhall that Sonne be defaſte?
What myne hath erſt throwne downe ſo faire a tower?
What ſacriledge hath ſuch a ſaint diſgra'ſt?
The world the garden is, ſhe is the flower
That ſweetens all the place; ſhe is the gueſt
Of rareſt price, both heau'n and earth her bower.
And ſhall (o me) all this in aſhes reſt?
Alas, if you a Phœnix *new will haue*
Burnt by the Sunne, ſhe firſt muſt build her neſt.
But well you know, the gentle Sunne would ſaue
Such beames ſo like his owne, which might haue might
In him, the thoughts of Phaëtons *damme to graue.*
Therefore, alas, you vſe vile Vulcans *ſpight,*
Which nothing ſpares, to melt that Virgin-waxe
Which while it is, it is all Aſias *light.*
O Mars, *for what doth ſerue thy armed axe?*
To let that wit-old beaſt conſume in flame
Thy Venus *child, whoſe beautie* Venus *lackes?*
O Venus (*if her praiſe no enuy frames,*
In thy high minde) *get her thy husbands grace.*
Sweete ſpeaking oft a curriſh hart reclaimes.
O eyes of mine, where once ſhe ſaw her face,
Her face which was more liuely in my hart;
O braine, where thought of her hath onely place;
O hand, which toucht her hand when ſhe did part;
O lippes, that kiſt her hand with my teares ſprent;
O toonge, then dumbe, not daring tell my ſmart;
O ſoule, whoſe loue in her is onely ſpent,
What ere you ſee, thinke, touch, kiſſe, ſpeake, or loue,
Let all for her, and vnto her be bent.

Thy

Thy wailing words do much my ſpirits moue, Baſilius.
They vttred are in ſuch a feeling faſhion,
That ſorrowes worke againſt my will I proue.
Me-thinkes I am partaker of thy paſsion,
And in thy caſe do glaſſe mine owne debilitie:
Selfe-guiltie folke moſt prone to feele compaſsion.
Yet Reaſon ſaith, Reaſon ſhould haue abilitie,
To hold theſe worldly things in ſuch proportion,
As let them come or go with euen facilitie.
But our Deſires tyrannicall extortion
Doth force vs there to ſet our chiefe delightfulnes,
Where but a baiting place is all our portion.
But ſtill, although we faile of perfect rightfulnes,
Seeke we to tame the childiſh ſuperfluities:
Let vs not winke though void of pureſt ſightfulnes.
For what can breed more peeuiſh incongruities,
Then man to yeeld to female lamentations?
Let vs ſome grammar learne of more congruities.

If through mine eares pearce any conſolation Plangus.
By wiſe diſcourſe, ſweete tunes, or Poets fiction;
If ought I ceaſe theſe hideous exclamations,
While that my ſoule, ſhe, ſhe liues in affliction;
Then let my life long time on earth maintained be,
To wretched me, the laſt worſt malediction.
Can I, that know her ſacred parts reſtrained be,
For any ioy, know fortunes vile diſplacing her,
In morall rules let raging woes contained be?
Can I forget, when they in priſon placing her,
With ſwelling hart in ſpite and due diſdainfulnes
She lay for dead, till I helpt with vnlaſing her?
Can I forget, from how much mourning plainfulnes

With

With Diamond in window-glaſſe ſhe graued,
Erona *dye, and end thy ougly painefulnes?*
Can I forget in how ſtraunge phraſe ſhe craued
That quickly they would her burne, drowne, or ſmother,
As if by death ſhe onely might be ſaued?
Then let me eke forget one hand from other:
Let me forget that Plangus *I am called:*
Let me forget I am ſonne to my mother,
But if my memory muſt thus be thralled
To that ſtrange ſtroke which conquer'd all my ſenſes,
Can thoughts ſtill thinking ſo reſt vnappalled?

Baſilius. *Who ſtill doth ſeeke againſt himſelfe offences,*
What pardon can auaile? or who employes him
To hurt himſelfe, what ſhields can be defenſes?
Woe to poore man: ech outward thing annoyes him
In diuers kinds; yet as he were not filled,
He heapes in inward griefe, which moſt deſtroyes him.
Thus is our thought with paine for thiſtles tilled:
Thus be our nobleſt parts dryed vp with ſorrow:
Thus is our mind with too much minding ſpilled.
One day layes vp ſtuffe of griefe for the morrow:
And whoſe good haps do leaue him vnprouided,
Condoling cauſe of friendſhip he will borrow.
Betwixt the good and ſhade of good diuided,
We pittie deeme that which but weakenes is:
So are we from our high creation ſlided.
But Plangus *leſt I may your ſickneſſe miſſe*
Or rubbing hurt the ſore, I here doo end.
The aſſe did hurt when he did thinke to kiſſe.

When

When *Zelmane* had read it ouer, marueyling verie much of the ſpeeche of *Eronas* death, and therefore deſirous to know further of it, but more deſirous to heare *Philoclea* ſpeake, Moſt excellent Ladie (ſaid ſhe) one may be little the wiſer for reading the Dialogue, ſince it nether ſets foorth what this *Plangus* is, nor what *Erona* is, nor what the cauſe ſhould be which threatens her with death, and him with ſorow: therefore I woulde humbly craue to vnderſtand the particular diſcourſe thereof: becauſe (I muſt confeſſe) ſome thing in my trauaile I haue heard of this ſtrange matter, which I would be glad to find by ſo ſweet an authoritie confirmed. The trueth is (anſwered *Philoclea*) that after he knew my father to be Prince of this countrie, while he hoped to preuaile ſomething with him in a great requeſt he made vnto him, he was content to open fully vnto him the eſtate both of himſelfe, and of that Ladie; which with my ſiſters help (ſaid ſhe) who remembers it better then I, I will declare vnto you: and firſt of *Erona*, (being the chiefe Subiect of this diſcourſe) this ſtorie (with more teares and exclamations then I liſte to ſpende about it) he recounted. 3

CHAP. 13.

Erona [1] *irreligious gainſt Loue*, [2] *muſt loue the baſe* Antiphilus, [3] *is loued, purſued, and beleaguered by the great* Tiridates. [4] *The two Greeke Princes ayde her.* [5] *They combatte with two Kings*; Antiphilus *with* Plangus; *they conquerors, he priſoner.* [6] Eronas *hard-choice to redeeme him.* [7] Tiridates *ſlaine,* Antiphilus *deliuered,* Artaxia *chaſed by the two Princes,* [8] *and her hate to them.*

Of

1 OF late there raigned a King in *Lycia*, who had for the bleſſing of his mariage, this onely daughter of his, *Erona*; a Princeſſe worthie for her beautie, as much praiſe, as beautie may be praiſe-worthy. This Princeſſe *Erona*, being 19. yeres of age, ſeeing the countrie of *Lycia* ſo much deuoted to *Cupid*, as that in eueryplace his naked pictures & images were ſuperſtitiouſly adored (ether moued therũto, by the eſteeming that could be no Godhead, which could breed wickednes, or the ſhamefaſt conſideration of ſuch nakednes) procured ſo much of her father, as vtterly to pull downe, and deface all thoſe ſtatues and pictures. Which how terriblie he puniſhed (for to that the *Lycians* impute it) quickly after appeared.

2 For ſhe had not liued a yeare longer, when ſhe was ſtriken with moſt obſtinate Loue, to a yong man but of mean parentage, in her fathers court, named *Antiphilus*: ſo meane, as that he was but the ſonne of her Nurſe, & by that meanes (without other deſert) became knowen of her. Now ſo euill could ſhe conceale her fire, and ſo wilfully perſeuered ſhe in it, that her father offering her the mariage of the great *Tiridates*, king of *Armenia* (who deſired her more then the ioyes of heauen) ſhe for *Antiphilus* ſake refuſed it. Many wayes her father ſought to withdrawe her from it; ſometimes perſwaſions, ſometimes threatnings; once hiding *Antiphilus*, & giuing her to vnderſtand that he was fled the countrie: Laſtly, making a ſolemne execution to be done of another, vnder the name of *Antiphilus*, whom he kept in priſon. But nether ſhe liked perſwaſions, nor feared threateninges, nor changed for abſence: and when ſhe thought him dead,

dead, ſhe ſought all meanes (as well by poyſon as by knife) to ſend her ſoule, at leaſt, to be maried in the eternall church with him. This ſo brake the tender fathers hart, that (leauing things as he found them) he ſhortly after died. Then foorthwith *Erona* (being ſeazed of the crowne, and arming her will with authoritie) ſought to aduance her affection to the holy title of matrimonie.

But before ſhe could accõpliſh all the ſolẽnities, ſhe 3
was ouertakẽ with a war the King *Tiridates* made vpon her, only for her perſon; towards whom (for her ruine) Loue had kindled his cruel hart; indeed cruell & tyrannous: for (being far too ſtrõg in the field) he ſpared not man, woman, and child, but (as though there could be found no foile to ſet foorth the extremitie of his loue, but extremity of hatred) wrote (as it were) the ſonets of his Loue, in the bloud, & tuned thẽ in thẽ cries of her ſubiects; although his fair ſiſter *Artaxia* (who would accõpany him in the army) ſought all meanes to appeaſe his fury: till laſtly, he beſieged *Erona* in her beſt citie, vowing to winne her, or loſe his life. And now had he brought her to the point ether of a wofull conſent, or a ruinous deniall; whẽ there came thether (following the courſe which Vertue & Fortune led thẽ) two excellent yoũg Princes, *Pyrocles* and *Muſidorus*, the one Prince of *Macedõ*, the other of *Theſſalia*: two princes, as *Plãgus* ſaid, (and he witneſſed his ſaying with ſighes & teares) the moſt accnopliſhed both in body & mind, that the Sun euer lookt vpon. While *Philoclea* ſpake thoſe words, O ſweete wordes (thought *Zelmane* to her ſelf) which are not onely a praiſe to me, but a praiſe to praiſe it ſelfe, which out of that mouth iſſueth.

Theſe 2. princes (ſaid *Philoclea*) aſwel to help the weaker 4
(eſpe-

(eſpecially being a Ladie) as to ſaue a Greeke people from being ruined by ſuch, whom we call and count Barbarous, gathering together ſuch of the honeſteſt *Lycians*, as woulde venture their liues to ſuccour their Princeſſe: giuing order by a ſecreat meſſage they ſent into the Citie, that they ſhould iſſue with all force at an appointed time; they ſet vpon *Tiridates* campe, with ſo well-guided a fiercenes, that being of both ſides aſſaulted, he was like to be ouerthrowen: but that this *Plangus* (being Generall of *Tiridates* horſ-men) eſpecially ayded by the two mightie men, *Euardes* and *Barzanes*, reſcued the foot-men, euen almoſt defeated: but yet could not barre the Princes (with their ſuccoures both of men and victuall) to enter the Citie.

5 Which when *Tiridates* found would make the war long, (which length ſeemed to him worſe then a languiſhing conſumption) he made a challenge of three Princes in his retinue, againſt thoſe two Princes and *Antiphilus:* and that thereupon the quarrell ſhould be decided; with compact, that neither ſide ſhould helpe his felow: but of whoſe ſide the more ouercame, with him the victorie ſhould remaine. *Antiphilus* (though *Erona* choſe rather to bide the brunt of warre, then venture him, yet) could not for ſhame refuſe the offer, eſpecially ſince the two ſtrangers that had no intereſt in it, did willingly accept it: beſides that, he ſawe it like enough, that the people (werie of the miſeries of war) would rather giue him vp, if they ſaw him ſhrinke, then for his ſake venture their ruine: conſidering that the challengers were farre of greater worthineſſe then him ſelfe. So it was agreed vpon; and againſt *Pyrocles* was *Euardes*, King of *Bithinia*; *Barzanes* of *Hircania*, againſt

Muſi-

Muſidorus, two men, that thought the world ſcarſe able to reſiſt them: & againſt *Antiphilus* he placed this ſame *Plangus*, being his own couſin germain, & ſonne to the King of *Iberia*. Now ſo it fell out that *Muſidorus* ſlewe *Barzanes*, & *Pyrocles Euardes*; which victory thoſe Princes eſteemed aboue all that euer they had: but of the other ſide *Plãgus* tooke *Antiphilus* priſoner: vnder which colour (as if the matter had bene equal, though indeed it was not, the greater part being ouercome of his ſide) *Tiridates* continued his war: & to bring *Erona* to a cõpelled yeelding, ſent her word, that he would the third morrow after, before the walles of the towne ſtrike of *Antiphilus* head; without his ſuite in that ſpace were graunted: adding withall (becauſe he had heard of her deſperate affectiõ) that if in the meane time ſhe did her ſelfe any hurt, what tortures could be deuiſed ſhould be layed vpon *Antiphilus*.

Then lo if *Cupid* be a God, or that the tyranny of our own thoughts ſeeme as a God vnto vs. But whatſoeuer it was, then it did ſet foorth the miſerablenes of his effectes: ſhe being drawne to two contraries by one cauſe. For the loue of him cõmaunded her to yeeld to no other: the loue of him cõmaunded him to preſerue his life: which knot might well be cut, but vntied it could not be. So that Loue in her paſſions (like a right makebate) whiſpered to both ſides arguments of quarrell. What (ſaid he of the one ſide) dooſt thou loue *Antiphilus*, ô *Erona*? and ſhal *Tiridates* enioy thy bodie? with what eyes wilt thou looke vpon *Antiphilus*, when he ſhall know that another poſſeſſeth thee? But if thou wilt do it, canſt thou do it? canſt thou force thy hart? Thinke with thy ſelfe, if this man haue thee, thou ſhalt neuer haue more part of *Antiphilus* thẽ if he were dead. 6

But thus much more, that the affectiõ ſhalbe gnawing, & the remorſe ſtill preſent. Death perhaps will coole the rage of thy affection: where thus, thou ſhalt euer loue, and euer lacke. Thinke this beſide, if thou marrie *Tiridates*, *Antiphilus* is ſo excellent a man, that long he cannot be from being in ſome high place maried: canſt thou ſuffer that too? If an other kill him, he doth him the wrong: if thou abuſe thy body, thou dooſt him the wrong. His death is a worke of nature, and either now, or at another time he ſhall die. But it ſhalbe thy worke, thy ſhamefull worke, which is in thy power to ſhun, to make him liue to ſee thy faith falſified, and his bed defiled. But when Loue had well kindled that parte of her thoughts, then went he to the other ſide. What (ſaid he) O *Erona*, and is thy Loue of *Antiphilus* come to that point, as thou dooſt now make it a queſtion, whether he ſhall die, or no? O excellent affection, which for too much loue, will ſee his head of. Marke well the reaſons of the other ſide, and thou ſhalt ſee, it is but loue of thy ſelfe which ſo diſputeth. Thou canſt not abide *Tiridates*: this is but loue of thy ſelfe: thou ſhalt be aſhamed to looke vpõ him afterward; this is but feare of ſhame, & loue of thy ſelfe: thou ſhalt want him as much then; this is but loue of thy ſelfe: he ſhalbe married; if he be well, why ſhould that grieue thee, but for loue of thy ſelfe? No, no, pronounce theſe wordes if thou canſt, let *Antiphilus* die. Then the images of each ſide ſtood before her vnderſtanding; one time ſhe thought ſhe ſaw *Antiphilus* dying: an other time ſhe thought *Antiphilus* ſaw her by *Tiridates* enioyed: twenty times calling for a ſeruaunt to carry meſſage of yeelding, but before he came the minde was altered. She bluſht when ſhe conſidered the effect of granting; ſhe was pale, whé

ſhe

ſhe remẽbred the fruits of denial. As for weeping, ſighing, wringing her hãds, & tearing her haire, were indifferẽt of both ſides. Eaſily ſhe wold haue agreed to haue broken al diſputatiõs with her owne death, but that the feare of *Antiphilus* furder torments ſtaied her. At lẽgth, euẽ the euening before the day apointed of his death, the determinatiõ of yeelding preuailed, eſpecially, growing vpõ a meſſage of *Antiphilus*; who with all the coniuring termes he could deuiſe, beſought her to ſaue his life, vpon any cõdition. But ſhe had no ſooner ſent her meſſenger to *Tiridates*, but her mind changed, and ſhe went to the two yong Princes, *Pyrocles* & *Muſidorus*, & falling downe at their feet, deſired thẽ to trie ſome way for her deliuerance; ſhewing her ſelfe reſolued, not to ouer-liue *Antiphilus*, nor yet to yeeld to *Tiridates*.

They that knew not what ſhe had done in priuate, prepared that night accordingly: & as ſometimes it fals out, that what is incõſtancy, ſeemes cũning; ſo did this chãge indeed ſtand in as good ſteed as a witty diſſimulatiõ. For it made the King as reckles, as them diligẽt: ſo that in the dead time of the night, the Princes iſſued out of the towne; with whõ ſhe would needs go, either to die her ſelf, or reskew *Antiphilus*, hauing no armour, nor weapon, but affection. And I cannot tell you how, by what deuiſe (though *Plangus* at large deſcribed it) the concluſion was, the wonderfull valour of the two Princes ſo preuailed, that *Antiphilus* was ſuccoured, and the King ſlaine. *Plangus* was then the chiefe man left in the campe; and therefore ſeeing no other remedie, cõueied in ſafety into her country *Artaxia*, now Queene of *Armenia*; who with truelamẽtations, made known to the world, that her new greatnes did no way 7 8

cõfort her in reſpect of her brothers loſſe, whõ ſhe ſtudied all meanes poſſible to reuenge vpon euery one of the occaſioners, hauing (as ſhe thought) ouerthrowne her brother by a moſt abominable treaſon. In ſomuch, that being at home, ſhe proclaimed great rewards to any priuate man, and her ſelfe in mariage to any Prince, that would deſtroy *Pyrocles* and *Muſidorus*. But thus was *Antiphilus* redeemed, and (though againſt the conſent of all her nobility) married to *Erona*; in which caſe the two Greeke Princes (being called away by an other aduenture) left them.

CHAP. 14.

' Philocleas *narration broken of by* Miſo. ' *Her old-wiues tale,* ' *and ballad againſt* Cupid. ' *Their drawing cuts for tales.* ' Mopſas *tale of the old cut:* ' *cut of by the Ladies to returne to their ſtories.*

BVt now me thinkes as I haue read ſome Poets, who when they intẽd to tell ſome horrible matter, they bid men ſhun the hearing of it: ſo if I do not deſire you to ſtop your eares frõ me, yet may I well deſire a breathing time, before I am to tell the execrable treaſon of *Antiphilus*, that brought her to this miſery; and withall wiſh you al, that frõ al mankind indeed you ſtop your eares. O moſt happy were we, if we did ſet our loues one vpon another. (And as ſhe ſpake that worde, her checkes in red letters writ more, then her tongue did ſpeake.) And therefore ſince I haue named *Plangus*, I pray you

ſiſter

ſiſter (ſaid ſhe) helpe me with the reſt, for I haue helde the ſtage long inough; and if it pleaſe you to make his fortune knowne, as I haue done *Eronas*, I will after take hart againe to go on with his falſhood; & ſo betweene vs both, my Ladie *Zelmane* ſhall vnderſtand both the cauſe and parties of this Lamentation. Nay I beſhrow me then (ſaid *Miſo*) I wil none of that, I promiſe you, as lõg as I haue the gouernmẽt, I will firſt haue my tale, & thẽ my Lady *Pamela*, my Lady *Zelmane*, & my daughter *Mopſa* (for *Mopſa* was then returned frõ *Amphialus*) may draw cuts, & the ſhorteſt cut ſpeake firſt. For I tell you, and this may be ſuffred, when you are married you wil haue firſt, and laſt word of your husbands. The Ladies laughed to ſee with what an eger earneſtneſſe ſhe looked, hauing threatning not onely in her Ferret eies, but while ſhe ſpake, her noſe ſeeming to threaten her chin, & her ſhaking lims one to threaten another. But there was no remedy, they muſt obey: & *Miſo* (ſitting on the groũd with her knees vp, & her hands vpon her knees) tuning her voice with many a quauering cough, thus diſcourſed vnto thẽ. I tel you true (ſaid ſhe) whatſoeuer you thinke of me, you will one day be as I am; & I, ſimple though I ſit here, thought once my pennie as good ſiluer, as ſome of you do: and if my father had not plaid the haſty foole (it is no lie I tell you) I might haue had an other-gaines husbãd, thẽ *Dametas*. But let that paſſe, God amend him: and yet I ſpeake it not without good cauſe. You are ful of your tittle tattling of *Cupid*: here is *Cupid*, & there is *Cupid*. I will tell you now, what a good old womã told me, what an old wiſe mã told her, what a great learned clerke told him, and gaue it him in writing; and here I haue it in my praier booke. I pray you

(ſaid *Philoclea*) let vs ſee it, & read it. No haſt but good (ſaid *Miſo*) you ſhal firſt know how I came by it. I was a young girle of a ſeuen and twenty yeare old, & I could not go thorow the ſtreate of our village, but I might heare the young mẽ talke; O the pretie little eies of *Miſo*; O the fine thin lips of *Miſo*; O the goodly fat hands of *Miſo*: beſides, how well a certaine wrying I had of my necke, became me. Then the one would wincke with one eye, & the other caſt daiſeys at me: I muſt cõfeſſe, ſeing ſo many amorous, it made me ſet vp my peacocks tayle with the hieſt. Which when this good old womã perceiued (O the good wold woman, well may the bones reſt of the good wold womã) ſhe cald me to her into her houſe. I remember full well it ſtood in the lane as you go to the Barbers ſhop, all the towne knew her, there was a great loſſe of her: ſhe called me to her, and taking firſt a ſoppe of wine to comfort her hart (it was of the ſame wine that comes out of *Candia*, which we pay ſo deere for now a daies, and in that good worlde was very good cheape) ſhe cald me to her; Minion ſaid ſhe, (indeed I was a pretie one in thoſe daies thongh I ſay it) I ſee a nũber of lads that loue you; Wel (ſaid ſhe) I ſay no more: doo you know what Loue is? With that ſhe broght me into a corner, where ther was painted a foule fiẽd I trow: for he had a paire of hornes like a Bull, his feete clouen, as many eyes vpon his bodie, as my gray-mare hath dappels, & for all the world ſo placed. This mõſter ſat like a hãgman vpõ a paire of gallowes, in his right hand he was painted holding a crowne of Laurell, in his left hand a purſe of mony, & out of his mouth honge a lace of two faire pictures, of a mã & a womã, & ſuch a coũtenance he ſhewed, as if he would

would perſwade folks by thoſe alurem̃ets to come thither & be hanged. I, like a tẽder harted wench, skriked out for feare of the diuell. Well (ſayd ſhe) this ſame is euen Loue: therefore do what thou liſt with all thoſe fellowes, one after another; & it recks not much what they do to thee, ſo it be in ſecreat; but vpon my charge, neuer loue none of them. Why mother (ſaid I) could ſuch a thing come frõ the belly of the faire *Venus?* for a few dayes before, our (prieſt betweene him & me) had tolde me the whole ſtorie of *Venus*. Tuſh (ſaid ſhe) they are all deceaued: and therewith gaue me this Booke, which ſhe ſaid a great maker of ballets had giuen to an old painter, who for a litle pleaſure, had beſtowed both booke and picture of her. Reade there (ſaid ſhe) & thou ſhalt ſee that his mother was a cowe, and the falſe *Argus* his father. And ſo ſhe gaue me this Booke, & there now you may reade it. With that the remembrance of the good old woman, made her make ſuch a face to weepe, as if it were not ſorrow, it was the carkaſſe of ſorrow that appeared there. But while her teares came out, like raine falling vpon durtie furrowes, the latter end of her praier booke was read among theſe Ladies, which contained this.

POore Painters oft with ſilly Poets ioyne,
To fill the world with ſtrange but vaine conceits:
One brings the ſtuffe, the other ſtamps the coine,
Which breeds nought elſe but gloſes of deceits.
Thus Painters Cupid *paint, thus Poets do*
A naked god, young blind, with arrowes two.
Is he a God, that euer flies the light?
Or naked he, diſguis'd in all vntruth?

If he be blind, how hitteth he ſo right?
How is he young, that tam'de old Phœbus *youth?*
But arrowes two, and tipt with gold or leade:
Some hurt accuſe a third with horny head.
No, nothing ſo; an old falſe knaue he is
By Argus *got on* Io, *then a cow:*
What time for her Iuno *her* Ioue *did miſſe,*
And charge of her to Argus *did allow.*
Mercury kill'd his falſe ſire for this act,
His damme a beaſt was pardon'd beaſtly fact.
With fathers death, and mothers guiltie ſhame,
With Ioues *diſdaine at ſuch a riuals ſeed,*
The wretch compell'd a runnagate became,
And learn'd what ill a miſer ſtate doth breed,
To lye, faine, gloze, to ſteale, pry, and accuſe,
Naught in himſelfe ech other to abuſe.
Yet beares he ſtill his parents ſtately gifts,
A horned head, clouen foote, and thouſand eyes,
Some gazing ſtill, ſome winking wilye ſhiftes,
With long large eares where neuer rumour dyes.
His horned head doth ſeeme the heauen to ſpight:
His clouen foote doth neuer treade aright.
Thus halfe a man, with man he dayly haunts,
Cloth'd in the ſhape which ſooneſt may deceaue:
Thus halfe a beaſt, ech beaſtly vice he plants,
In thoſe weake harts that his aduice receaue.
He proules ech place ſtil in new colours deckt,
Sucking ones ill, another to infect.
To narrow breſts he comes all wrapt in gaine:
To ſwelling harts he ſhines in honours fire:
To open eyes all beauties he doth raine;
Creeping to ech with flattering of deſire.

But for that Loues deſire moſt rules the eyes,
Therein his name, there his chiefe triumph lyes.
Millions of yeares this old driuell Cupid *liues;*
While ſtill more wretch, more wicked he doth proue:
Till now at length that Ioue *him office giues,*
(At Iunos *ſuite who much did* Argus *loue)*
In this our world a hang-man for to be,
Of all thoſe fooles that will haue all they ſee.

Theſe Ladies made ſport at the deſcription and ſto- 4
rie of *Cupid*. But *Zelmane* could ſcarce ſuffer thoſe blaſphemies (as ſhe tooke them) to be read, but humbly beſought *Pamela* ſhe would perfourme her ſiſters requeſt of the other part of the ſtorie. Noble Lady (anſwered ſhe, beautifying her face with a ſweete ſmiling, and the ſweetnes of her ſmiling with the beautie of her face) ſince I am borne a Princes daughter, let me not giue example of diſobedience. My gouerneſſe will haue vs draw cuts, and therefore I pray you let vs do ſo: and ſo perhaps it will light vpon you to entertaine this company with ſome ſtorie of your owne; and it is reaſon our eares ſhould be willinger to heare, as your tongue is abler to deliuer. I will thinke (anſwered *Zelmane*) excellent Princeſſe my tongue of ſome value, if it can procure your tongue thus much to fauour me. But *Pamela* pleaſantly perſiſting to haue fortune their iudge, they ſet hands, and *Mopſa* (though at the firſt for ſqueamiſhnes going vp & downe, with her head like a boate in a ſtorme) put to her golden gols among them, and blind Fortune (that ſaw not the coulor of them) gaue her the preheminence: and ſo being her time to ſpeake (wiping her mouth, as there was good cauſe) ſhe thus tumbled

tumbled into her matter. In time paſt (ſayd ſhe) there
5 was a King, the mightieſt man in all his country, that had by his wife, the faireſt daughter that euer did eate pappe. Now this King did keepe a great houſe, that euery body might come and take their meat freely. So one day, as his daughter was ſitting in her window, playing vpon a harpe, as ſweete as any Roſe; and combing her head with a combe all of precious ſtones, there came in a Knight into the court, vpō a goodly horſe, one haire of gold, & the other of ſiluer; *and ſo* the Knight caſting vp his eyes to the window, did fall into ſuch loue with her, that he grew not worth the bread he eate; till many a ſorry day going ouer his head, with Dayly Diligence and Griſly Grones, he wan her affection, ſo that they agreed to run away togither. *And ſo in May, when all true hartes reioyce*, they ſtale out of the Caſtel, without ſtaying ſo much as for their breakfaſt. Now forſooth, as they went togither, often all to kiſſing one another, the Knight told her, he was brought vp among the water Nymphes, who had ſo bewitched him, that if he were euer askt his name, he muſt preſently vaniſh away: and therefore charged her vpon his bleſſing, that ſhe neuer aſke him what he was, nor whether he would. *And ſo* a great while ſhe kept his commandement; til once, paſſing through a cruell wildernes, as darke as pitch; her mouth ſo watred, that ſhe could not chooſe but aſke him the queſtion. And then, he making the greeuouſeſt cōplaints that would haue melted a tree to haue heard them, vaniſht quite away: & ſhe lay down, caſting forth as pitifull cries as any ſhrich-owle. But hauing laien ſo, (wet by the raine, and burnt by the Sun) fiue dayes, & fiue nights, ſhe gat vp and went ouer many a high hil, &

many

many a deepe riuer; till ſhe came to an Aunts houſe of hers;and came,& cried to her for helpe:and ſhe for pittie gaue her a Nut,and bad her neuer open her Nut, til ſhe was come to the extremeſt miſery that euer tongue could ſpeake of. *And ſo* ſhe went, & ſhe went,& neuer reſted the euening,wher ſhe wēt in the morning;til ſhe came to a ſecond Aunt; and ſhe gaue her another Nut.

Now good *Mopſa* (ſaid the ſweete *Philoclea*) I pray 6
thee at my requeſt keepe this tale, till my marriage day, & I promiſe thee that the beſt gowne I weare that day ſhalbe thine. *Mopſa* was very glad of the bargaine,eſpecially that it ſhuld grow a feſtiual Tale:ſo that *Zelmane*, who deſired to finde the vttermoſt what theſe Ladies vnderſtood touching her ſelfe,and hauing vnderſtood the danger of *Erona* (of which before ſhe had neuer heard) purpoſing with her ſelfe (as ſoone as this purſuit ſhe now was in, was brought to any effect) to ſuccour her, entreated againe, that ſhe might know as well the ſtory of *Plangus*, as of *Erona*. *Philoclea* referred it to her ſiſters perfecter remēbrāce, who with ſo ſweet a voice, and ſo winning a grace, as in themſelues were of moſt forcible eloquence to procure attention, in this maner to their earneſt requeſt ſoone condiſcended,

CHAP. 15.

[1]Plangus-*his parentage.*[2] *His trick of youth,* [3]*eſpied,* [4]*& turned ouer by,and to his old father.* [5] *An inueagling-womans arts.*[6] *A guilty ſtepmothers diuelliſh practiſes againſt* Plangus.[7] *Her miniſters falſe informations.*[8] Plangus *perplexities.*[9] *His fathers ielouſies.The Queenes complots*[10] *to feede the ones ſuſpicion,*[11] *& work the others ouerthrow.*[12] Plangus *taken;*[13] *deliuered flieth:*[14] *is purſued with old hate, & new treaſon.*[15] *Yet muſt he ſerue abroad, while a new heire is made at home.*[16] *This ſtory broken off by* Baſilius.

The

1 THe father of this Prince *Plangus* as yet liues, and is King of *Iberia:* a man (if the iudgement of *Plangus* may be accepted) of no wicked nature, nor willingly doing euill, without himſelfe miſtake the euill, ſeeing it diſguiſed vnder ſome forme of goodneſſe. This Prince, being married at the firſt to a Princeſſe (who both from her aunceſters, and in her ſelfe was worthy of him) by her had this ſon, *Plangus.* Not long after whoſe birth, the Queene (as though ſhe had perfourmed the meſſage for which ſhe was ſent into the world) returned again vnto her maker. The King (ſealing vp al thoughts of loue vnder the image of her memorie) remained a widdower many yeares after; recompencing the griefe of that disioyning from her, in conioyning in himſelfe both a fatherly and a motherly care toward her onely child, *Plangus.* Who being growne to mans age, as our owne eies may iudge, could not but fertilly requite his fathers fatherly education.

2 This Prince (while yet the errors in his nature were excuſed by the greenenes of his youth, which tooke all the fault vpon it ſelfe) loued a priuate mans wife of the principal Citie of that Kingdome, if that may be called loue, which he rather did take into himſelfe willingly. then by which he was takē forcibly. It ſufficeth, that the yong man perſwaded himſelf he loued her: ſhe being a woman beautiful enough, if it be poſſible, that the outſide onely can iuſtly entitle a beauty. But finding ſuch a chaſe as onely fledde to be caught, the young Prince broght his affectiō with her to that point, which ought to engraue remorſe in her harte, & to paint ſhame vpon her

her face. And ſo poſſeſt he his deſire without any interruption; he conſtantly fauouring her, and ſhe thinking, that the enameling of a Princes name, might hide the ſpots of a broken wedlock. But as I haue ſeene one that was ſick of a ſleeping diſeaſe, could not be made wake, but with pinching of him: ſo out of his ſinfull ſleepe his minde (vnworthie ſo to be loſte) was not to be cald to it ſelfe, but by a ſharpe accident.

It fell out, that his many-times leauing of the court (in vndue times) began to be noted; and (as Princes eares be manifolde) from one to another came vnto the King; who (carefull of his onely ſonne) ſought, and found by his ſpies (the neceſſarie euill ſeruauntes to a King) what it was, whereby he was from his better delights ſo diuerted. 3

Whereupon, the King (to giue his fault the greater blow) vſed ſuch meanes, by diſguiſing himſelfe, that he found them (her huſband being abſent) in her houſe together: which he did, to make him the more feelingly aſhamed of it. And that way he tooke, laying threatnings vpon her, and vpon him reproaches. But the poore young Prince (deceiued with that young opinion, that if it be euer lawfull to lie, it is for ones Louer,) employed all his witte to bring his father to a better opinion. And becauſe he might bende him from that (as he counted it) crooked conceit of her, he wreſted him, as much as he coulde poſſiblie, to the other ſide: not ſticking with prodigall proteſtations to ſet foorth her chaſtitie; not denying his own attempts, but thereby the more extolling her vertue. His Sophiſtrie preuayled, his father beleeued; and ſo beleeued, that ere long (though he were alredy ſtept into the winter of 4

his

his age) he founde himſelfe warme in thoſe deſires, which were in his ſonne farre more excuſable. To be ſhort, he gaue himſelfe ouer vnto it; and (becauſe he would auoide the odious compariſon of a yong riuall) ſent away his ſonne with an armie, to the ſubduing of a Prouince lately rebelled againſt him, which he knewe could not be a leſſe worke, thē of three or foure yeares. Wherein he behaued him ſo worthilie, as euen to this country the fame therof came, long before his own cō. ming: while yet his father had a ſpeedier ſucces, but in a far vnnobler conqueſt. For while *Plangus* was away, the old man (growing onely in age & affectiō) folowed his ſuite with all meanes of vnhoneſt ſeruants, large promiſes, and each thing els that might help to counteruaile his owne vnlouelines.

5 And ſhe (whoſe huſband about that time died) forgetting the abſent *Plangus*, or at leſt not hoping of him to obtaine ſo aſpiring a purpoſe, lefte no arte vnuſed, which might keepe the line from breaking, wherat the fiſhe was alredy taken; not drawing him violently, but letting him play himſelf vpon the hooke, which he had greedely ſwalowed. For, accompanying her mourning with a dolefull countenaunce, yet neither forgetting hanſomnes in her mourning garments, nor ſweetenes in her dolefull countenance; her wordes were euer ſeaſoned with ſighes; and any fauour ſhe ſhewed, bathed in teares, that affection might ſee cauſe of pity; and pity might perſwade cauſe of affection. And being growen ſkilfull in his humors, ſhe was no leſſe ſkilfull in applying his humors: neuer ſuffering his feare to fall to a deſpaire, nor his hope to haſten to an aſſurance: ſhe was content he ſhould thinke that ſhe loued him; and a certaine

taine ſtolne looke ſhould ſometimes (as though it were againſt her will) bewray it: But if thereupon he grewe bolde, he ſtraight was encountred with a maſke of vertue. And that which ſeemeth moſt impoſſible vnto me, (for as neere as I can I repeate it as *Plangus* tolde it) ſhe could not onely ſigh when ſhe would, as all can doo; & weep when ſhe would, as (they ſay) ſome can doo; but (being moſt impudent in her hart) ſhe could, when ſhe would, teach her chekes bluſhing, and make ſhamefaſtnes the cloake of ſhameleſnes. In ſumme, to leaue out many particularities which he recited, ſhe did not onely vſe ſo the ſpurre, that his Deſire ran on, but ſo the bit, that it ran on, euē in ſuch a careere as ſhe would haue it; that within a while, the king, ſeeing with no other eyes but ſuch as ſhe gaue him, & thinking no other thoghts but ſuch as ſhe taught him; hauing at the firſt liberall meaſure of fauors, then ſhortned of thē, when moſt his Deſire was inflamed; he ſaw no other way but mariage to ſatisfie his longing, and her mind (as he thought) louing, but chaſtly louing. So that by the time *Plangus* returned from being notably victorious of the Rebels, he foūd his father, not only maried, but alredy a father of a ſonne & a daughter by this womā. Which though *Plāgus* (as he had euery way iuſt cauſe) was grieued at; yet did his grief neuer bring forth ether cōtemning of her, or repining at his father. But ſhe (who beſides ſhe was 6
growen a mother, and a ſtepmother, did read in his eies her owne fault, and made his conſcience her guiltines) thought ſtill that his preſence caried her condēnation: ſo much the more, as that ſhe (vnchaſtly attempting his wōted fācies) foūd (for the reuerēce of his fathers bed) a bitter refuſall: which breeding rather ſpite then ſhame

in

in her, or if it were a ſhame, a ſhame not of the fault, but of the repulſe, ſhe did not onely (as hating him) thirſt for a reuenge, but (as fearing harm from him) endeuoured to doo harme vnto him. Therefore did ſhe trie the vttermoſt of her wicked wit, how to ouerthrow him in the foundation of his ſtrength, which was, in the fauour of his father: which becauſe ſhe ſaw ſtrong both in nature and deſert, it required the more cũning how to vndermine it. And therfore (ſhunning the ordinary trade of hireling ſycophants) ſhe made her praiſes of him, to be accuſations; and her aduauncing him, to be his ruine. For firſt with words (neerer admiration then liking) ſhe would extoll his excellẽcies, the goodlines of his ſhape, the power of his witte, the valiantnes of his courage, the fortunatenes of his ſucceſſes: ſo as the father might finde in her a ſingular loue towardes him: nay, ſhe ſhunned not to kindle ſome fewe ſparkes of ielouſie in him. Thus hauing gotten an opinion in his father, that ſhe was farre from meaning miſchiefe to the ſonne, then fell ſhe to praiſe him with no leſſe vehemencie of affection, but with much more cunning of malice. For then ſhe ſets foorth the liberty of his mind, the high flying of his thoughts, the fitneſſe in him to beare rule, the ſingular loue the Subiects bare him; that it was doubtfull, whether his wit were greater in winning their fauors, or his courage in employing their fauours: that he was not borne to liue a ſubiect-life, each action of his bearing in it Maieſtie, ſuch a Kingly entertainement, ſuch a Kingly magnificence, ſuch a Kingly harte for enterpriſes: eſpecially remembring thoſe vertues, which in a ſucceſſor are no more honoured by the ſubiects, then ſuſpected of the Princes. Then would ſhe

by

by putting-of obiectiõs, bring in obiectiõs to her husbands head, alredy infected with ſuſpitiõ. Nay (would ſhe ſay) I dare take it vpon my death, that he is no ſuch ſonne, as many of like might haue bene, who loued greatnes ſo well, as to build their greatnes vpon their fathers ruine. Indeed Ambition, like Loue, can abide no lingring, & euer vrgeth on his own ſucceſſes; hating nothing, but what may ſtop thẽ. But the Gods forbid, we ſhould euer once dreame of any ſuch thing in him, who perhaps might be content, that you & the world ſhould know, what he can do: but the more power he hath to hurte, the more admirable is his praiſe, that he wil not hurt. Then euer remembring to ſtrengthen the ſuſpition of his eſtate with priuate ielouſie of her loue, doing him exceſſiue honour when he was in preſence, and repeating his pretie ſpeaches and graces in his abſence; beſides, cauſing him to be imployed in all ſuch dangerous matters, as ether he ſhould periſh in them, or if he preuailed, they ſhould increaſe his glory: which ſhe made a weapon to woũd him, vntill ſhe found that ſuſpition began already to ſpeake for it ſelfe, and that her husbands eares were growne hungry of rumours, and his eies prying into euery accident.

Then tooke ſhe help to her of a ſeruant neere about her husband, whom ſhe knew to be of a haſty ambitiõ, and ſuch a one, who wanting true ſufficiencie to raiſe him, would make a ladder of any miſchiefe. Him ſhe vſeth to deale more plainely in alleaging cauſes of iealouſie, making him know the fitteſt times when her husband already was ſtirred that way. And ſo they two, with diuers wayes, nouriſhed one humour, like Muſitians, that ſinging diuers parts, make one muſicke. He ſometime with fearefull countenaunce would deſire 7

ſire the King to looke to himſelfe; for that all the court and Cittie were full of whiſperings, and expectation of ſome ſuddaine change, vpon what ground himſelfe knew not. Another time he would counſell the King to make much of his ſonne, and holde his fauour, for that it was too late now to keepe him vnder. Now ſeeming to feare himſelfe, becauſe (he ſaid) *Plangus* loued none of them that were great about his father. Laſtly, breaking with him directly (making a ſorrowful countenance, & an humble geſture beare falſe witneſſe for his true meaning) that he foũd, not only ſouldiery, but people weary of his gouernment, & al their affections bent vpon *Plangus*. Both he and the Queene concurring in ſtrange dreames, & each thing elſe, that in a mind (already perplexed) might breed aſtoniſhment: ſo that within a while, all *Plangus* actions began to be tranſlated into the language of ſuſpition.

8 Which though *Plangus* foũd, yet could he not auoid, euen cõtraries being driuen to draw one yoke of argumẽt: if he were magnificẽt, he ſpent much with an aſpiring intent: if he ſpared, he heaped much with an aſpiring intent: if he ſpake curteouſly, he angled the peoples harts: if he were ſilent, he muſed vpon ſome daungerous plot. In ſumme, if he could haue turned himſelf to as many formes as *Proteus*, euery forme ſhould haue bene made tedious.

9 But ſo it fell out, that a meere trifle gaue thẽ occaſion of further proceeding. The King one morning, going to a vineyard that lay a long the hill where his caſtle ſtood, he ſaw a vine-labourer, that finding a bowe broken, tooke a branch of the ſame bowe for want of another thing, and tied it about the place broken. The King asking the fellow what he did, Marry (ſaid he) I make

make the ſonne binde the father. This word (finding the King alredy ſuperſticious through ſuſpitiō) amazed him ſtreight, as a preſage of his owne fortune: ſo that, returning, and breaking with his wife how much he miſdoubted his eſtate, ſhe made ſuch gaine-ſaying anſweres, as while they ſtraue, ſtraue to be ouercome. But euen while the doubtes moſt boiled, ſhe thus nouriſhed them.

She vnder-hand dealt with the principall mē of that coūtry, that at the great Parliamēt (which was then to be held) they ſhould in the name of all the eſtates perſwade the King (being now ſtept deeply into old age) to make *Plangus*, his aſſociate in gouernmēt with him: aſſuring thē, that not only ſhe would ioine with them, but that the father himſelf would take it kindly; chargeing thē not to acquaint *Plangus* withal; for that perhaps it might be harmeful vnto him, if the King ſhould find, that he were a party. They (who thought they might do it, not only willingly, becauſe they loued him, & truly, becauſe ſuch indeed was the minde of the people, but ſafely, becauſe ſhe who ruled the King was agreed therto) accōpliſhed her coūſell: ſhe indeed keeping promiſe of vehement perſwading the ſame: which the more ſhe & they did, the more ſhe knew her husbād would fear, & hate the cauſe of his feare. *Plangus* foūd this, & hūbly proteſted againſt ſuch deſire, or wil to accept. But the more he proteſted, the more his father thought he diſſēbled, accoūting his integritie to be but a cūning face of falſhood: and therfore delaying the deſire of his ſubiects, attended ſome fit occaſion to lay hands vpon his ſonne: which his wife thus brought to paſſe. 10

She cauſed that ſame miniſter of hers to go vnto *Plā-* 11

gus,&(enabling his words with great ſhew of faith, & endearing them with deſire of ſecreſie) to tell him, that he found his ruine conſpired by his ſtepmother, with certain of the noble men of that coũtry, the King himſelfe giuing his conſent, and that few daies ſhould paſſe,before the putting it in practize: with all diſcouering the very truth indeed,with what cunning his ſtepmother had proceeded. This agreing with *Plangus* his owne opiniõ,made him giue him the better credit:yet not ſo far,as to flie out of his country(according to the naughty fellowes perſuaſion) but to attend, and to ſee further. Wherupon the fellow (by the direction of his miſtreſſe)told him one day, that the ſame night, about one of the clocke, the King had appointed to haue his wife,& thoſe noble mẽ together, to deliberate of their manner of proceeding againſt *Plangus*: & therfore offered him,that if himſelfe would agree, he would bring him into a place where he ſhould heare all that paſſed; & ſo haue the more reaſon both to himſelfe, and to the world,to ſeeke his ſafetie. The poore *Plãgus* (being ſubiect to that only diſaduantage of honeſt harts,credulitie) was perſwaded by him: & arming himſelf (becauſe of his late going) was cloſely conueied into the place appointed. In the meane time his ſtepmother,making all her geſtures cunningly counterfait a miſerable afflictiõ,ſhe lay almoſt groueling on the flower of her chãber, not ſuffering any body to comfort her; vntill they calling for her husband, and he held of with long enquiry, at length, ſhe told him (euen almoſt crying out euery word)that ſhe was wery of her life,ſince ſhe was brought to that plunge,either to conceale her husbãds murther,or accuſe her ſonne,who had euer bene more deare,

deare, then a ſonne vnto her. Then with many interruptions and exclamations ſhe told him, that her ſonne *Plangus* (ſolliciting her in the old affection betweene them) had beſought her to put her helping hand to the death of the King; aſſuring her, that though all the lawes in the world were againſt it, he would marrie her when he were King.

She had not fully ſaid thus much, with many pitifull digreſſiõs, whẽ in comes the ſame fellow, that brought *Plãgus*: & rũning himſelf out of breath, fell at the Kings feet, beſeeching him to ſaue himſelf, for that there was a man with ſword drawen in the next roome. The King affrighted, wẽt out, & called his gard, who entring the place, foũd indeed *Plangus* with his ſword in his hand, but not naked, but ſtãding ſuſpiciouſly inough, to one already ſuſpicious. The King (thinking he had put vp his ſworde becauſe of the noiſe) neuer tooke leaſure to heare his anſwer, but made him priſoner, meaning the next morning to put him to death in the market place. 12

But the day had no ſooner opened the eies & eares of his friends & followers, but that there was a little army of them, who came, and by force deliuered him; although nũbers on the other ſide (abuſed with the fine framing of their report) tooke armes for the King. But *Plangus*, though he might haue vſed the force of his friends to reuenge his wrong, and get the crowne; yet the naturall loue of his father, and hate to make their ſuſpition ſeeme iuſt, cauſed him rather to chooſe a volũtarie exile, thẽ to make his fathers death the purchaſe of his life: & therefore went he to *Tiridates*, whoſe mother was his fathers ſiſter, liuing in his Court eleuen or twelue yeares, euer hoping by his interceſſion, and his 13

owne deſert, to recouer his fathers grace. At the end of which time, the warre of *Erona* happened, which my ſiſter with the cauſe thereof diſcourſed vnto you.

14 But his father had ſo deeply engraued the ſuſpicion in his hart, that he thought his flight rather to proceed of a fearefull guiltines, then of an humble faithfulnes; & therfore continued his hate, with ſuch vehemencie, that he did euer hate his Nephew *Tiridates*, and afterwards his neece *Artaxia*, becauſe in their Court he receiued countenance, leauing no meanes vnattẽpted of deſtroying his ſon; among other, employing that wicked ſeruant of his, who vndertooke to empoyſon him. But his cũning diſguiſed him not ſo well, but that the watchful ſeruãts of *Plãgus* did diſcouer him. Wherupõ the wretch was taken, & (before his wel-deſerued execution) by torture forced to confeſſe the particularities of this, which in generall I haue told you.

15 Which cõfeſſion autentically ſet downe (though *Tiridates* with ſolemne Embaſſage ſent it to the King) wrought no effect. For the King hauing put the reines of the gouernment into his wiues hande, neuer did ſo much as reade it; but ſent it ſtreight by her to be conſidered. So as they rather heaped more hatred vpon *Plangus*, for the death of their ſeruaunt. And now finding, that his abſence, and their reportes had much diminiſhed the wauering peoples affection towardes *Plangus*, with aduauncing fit perſons for faction, and graunting great immunities to the commons, they preuailed ſo farre, as to cauſe the ſonne of the ſecond wife, called *Palladius*, to be proclaymed ſucceſſour, and *Plangus* quite excluded: ſo that *Plangus* was driuen to continue his ſeruing *Tiridates*, as he did in the warre

warre againſt *Erona*, and brought home *Artaxia*, as my ſiſter tolde you; when *Erona* by the treaſon of *Antiphilus*, But at that word ſhe ſtopped. For *Baſilius* (not able longer to abide their abſence) came ſodainly among them, and with ſmiling countenance (telling *Zelmane* he was affraid ſhe had ſtollen away his daughters) inuited them to follow the Sunnes counſel in going then to their lodging; for indeed the Sun was readie to ſet. They yeelded, *Zelmane* meaning ſome other time to vnderſtand the ſtorie of *Antiphilus* treaſon, and *Eronas* daunger, whoſe caſe ſhe greatly tendred. But *Miſo* had no ſooner eſpied *Baſilius*, but that as ſpitefully, as her rotten voice could vtter it, ſhe ſet forth the ſawcineſſe of *Amphialus*. But *Baſilius* onely attended what *Zelmanes* opinion was, who though ſhe hated *Amphialus*, yet the nobilitie of her courage preuailed ouer it, and ſhe deſired he might be pardoned that youthfull error; conſidering the reputation he had, to be one of the beſt knights in the world; ſo as hereafter he gouerned himſelfe, as one remembring his fault. *Baſilius* giuing the infinite tearmes of praiſes to *Zelmanes* both valour in conquering, and pittifulneſſe in pardoning, commanded no more words to be made of it, ſince ſuch he thought was her pleaſure.

CHAP. 16.

[1] *The cumber of* Zelmanes *loue and louers.* [2] Gynecias *loue-lamentations.* [3] Zelmanes *paſsions* [4] *& ſonet.* [5] Baſilius-*his wooing, and* Zelmanes *anſweres.* [6] Philoclea *feed attturney to plead her fathers cauſe.*

1 SO brought he them vp to viſite his wife, where betweene her, & him, the poore *Zelmane* receaued a tedious entertainemēt; oppreſſed with being loued, almoſt as much, as with louing. *Baſilius* not ſo wiſe in couering his paſſion, could make his toong go almoſt no other pace, but to runne into thoſe immoderate praiſes, which the fooliſh Louer thinkes ſhort of his Miſtres, though they reach farre beyond the heauens. But *Gynecia* (whome womanly modeſtie did more outwardly bridle) yet did oftentimes vſe the aduantage of her ſexe in kiſſing *Zelmane*, as ſhe ſate vpon her bedde-ſide by her; which was but ſtill more and more ſweete incenſe, to caſt vpon the fire wherein her harte was ſacrificed: Once *Zelmane* could not ſtirre, but that, (as if they had bene poppets, whoſe motion ſtoode onely vpon her pleaſure) *Baſilius* with ſeruiceable ſteppes, *Gynecia* with greedie eyes would follow her. *Baſilius* mind *Gynecia* well knew, and could haue found in her hart to laugh at, if mirth could haue borne any proportion with her fortune. But all *Gynecias* actions were interpreted by *Baſilius*, as proceeding from iealouſie of his amorouſneſſe. *Zelmane* betwixt both (like the poore childe, whoſe father while he beates him, will make him beleeue it is for loue; or like the ſicke man, to whom the Phiſition ſweares, the ill-taſting wallowiſh medicine he profers, is of a good taſte) their loue was hatefull, their courteſie troubleſome, their preſence cauſe of her abſence thence, where not onely her light, but her life conſiſted. Alas (thought ſhe to her ſelfe) deare

Dorus

Dorus, what ods is there betweene thy deſtiny & mine? For thou haſt to doo in thy purſuite but with ſhepherdiſh folkes, who trouble thee with a little enuious care, and affected diligence. But I (beſides that I haue now *Miſo*, the worſt of thy diuels, let looſe vpon me) am waited on by Princes, and watched by the two wakefull eyes of Loue and Iealouſie. Alas, incomparable *Philoclea*, thou euer ſeeſt me, but doſt neuer ſee me as I am: thou heareſt willingly all that I dare ſay, and I dare not ſay that which were moſt fit for thee to heare. Alas who euer but I was impriſoned in libertie, and baniſhed being ſtill preſent? To whom but me haue louers bene iailours, and honour a captiuitie?

But the night comming on with her ſilent ſteps vp- 2
on thē, they parted ech from other (if at leſt they could be parted, of whom euery one did liue in another) and went about to flatter ſleepe with their beds, that diſdained to beſtow it ſelfe liberally vpon ſuch eies which by their will would euer be looking: and in leſt meaſure vpon *Gynecia*, who (when *Baſilius* after long toſſing was gotten a ſleepe, and the cheereful comfort of the lights remoued from her) kneeling vp in her bed, began with a ſoft voice, and ſwolne hart, to renue the curſes of her birth; & thē in a maner embracing her bed; Ah chaſteſt bed of mine (ſaid ſhe) which neuer heretofore couldſt accuſe me of one defiled thought, how canſt thou now receaue this deſaſtred changeling? Happie, happie be they onely which be not: and thy bleſſednes onely in this reſpect thou maiſt feele, that thou haſt no feeling. With that ſhe furiouſly tare off great part of her faire haire: Take here ô forgotten vertue (ſaid ſhe) this miſerable ſacrifice; while my ſoule was clothed with modeſtie,

ſtie, that was a comely ornament: now why ſhould nature crowne that head, which is ſo wicked, as her onely deſpaire is, ſhe cannot be enough wicked? More ſhe would haue ſaid, but that *Baſilius* (awaked with the noiſe) tooke her in his armes, & begā to cōfort her; the good-man thinking, it was all for a iealous loue of him: which humor if ſhe would a litle haue maintained, perchance it might haue weakned his new conceaued fancies. But he finding her anſweres wandring frō the purpoſe, left her to her ſelfe (glad the next morning to take the aduātage of a ſleepe, which a little before day, ouerwatched with ſorow, her teares had as it were ſealed vp in her eyes) to haue the more conference with *Zelmane*, who baited on this faſhion by theſe two louers, & euer kept from any meane to declare herſelfe, found in her ſelfe a dayly encreaſe of her violent deſires; like a riuer the more ſwelling, the more his current is ſtopped.

3 The chiefe recreation ſhe could find in her anguiſh, was ſomtime to viſite that place, where firſt ſhe was ſo happy as to ſee the cauſe of her vnhap. There would ſhe kiſſe the ground, and thanke the trees, bleſſe the aier, & do dutifull reuerence to euery thing that ſhe thought did accompany her at their firſt meeting: then returne again to her inward thoughts; ſomtimes deſpaire darkning all her imaginations, ſometimes the actiue paſſion of Loue cheering and cleering her inuention, how to vnbar that comberſome hinderance of her two ill-matched louers. But this morning *Baſilius* himſelf gaue her good occaſion to go beyond them. For hauing combd and trickt himſelf more curiouſly, then any time fortie winters before, comming where *Zelmane* was, he found her giuen ouer to her muſicall muſes, to the great plea-

ſure

ſure of the good old *Baſilius*, who retired himſelfe behinde a tree, while ſhe with a moſt ſweete voice did vtter theſe paſſionate verſes.

LOued I am, and yet complaine of Loue: 4
As louing not, accus'd, in Loue I die.
When pittie moſt I craue, I cruell proue:
Still ſeeking Loue, loue found as much I flie.
Burnt in my ſelfe, I muſe at others fire:
What I call wrong, I doo the ſame, and more:
Bard of my will, I haue beyond deſire:
I waile for want, and yet am chokte with ſtore.
This is thy worke, thou God for euer blinde:
Though thouſands old, a Boy entit'led ſtill.
Thus children doo the ſilly birds they finde,
With ſtroking hurt, and too much cramming kill.
Yet thus much Loue, O Loue, I craue of thee:
Let me be lou'd, or els not loued be.

Baſilius made no great haſte from behind the tree, till 5
he perceaued ſhe had fully ended her muſick. But then loth to looſe the pretious fruite of time, he preſented himſelfe vnto her, falling downe vpon both his knees, and holding vp his hands, as the old gouerneſſe of *Danae* is painted, when ſhe ſodainly ſaw the goldē ſhoure, O heauēly womā, or earthly Goddeſſe (ſaid he) let not my preſence be odious vnto you, nor my humble ſuit ſeeme of ſmall weight in your eares. Vouchſafe your eies to deſcend vpon this miſerable old-mā, whoſe life hath hitherto bene maintained but to ſerue as an encreaſe of your beautiful triumphs. You only haue ouer throwne me, & in my bondage cōſiſts my glory. Suffer not

not your owne worke to be deſpiſed of you: but looke vpon him with pittie, whoſe life ſerues for your praiſe. *Zelmane* (keeping a coũtenãce aſcanſes ſhe vnderſtood him not) told him, It became her euil to ſuffer ſuch exceſſiue reuerence of him, but that it worſe became her to correct him, to whom ſhe owed duetie: that the opinion ſhe had of his wiſedome was ſuch, as made her eſteeme greatly of his words; but that the words themſelues ſounded ſo, as ſhe could not imagine what they might intend. Intend? (ſaid *Baſilius*, proud that that was brought in queſtion) what may they intend, but a refreſhing of my ſoule, and a ſwaging of my heat, and enioying thoſe your excellencies, wherein my life is vpheld, and my death threatned? *Zelmane* lifting vp her face as if ſhe had receaued a mortall iniurie of him, And is this the deuotion your ceremonies haue bene bent vnto? ſaid ſhe: Is it the diſdaine of my eſtate, or the opinion of my lightneſſe, that haue emboldned ſuch baſe fancies towards me? enioying quoth you? now little ioy come to them that yeeld to ſuch enioying. Poore *Baſilius* was ſo appalled, that his legges bowed vnder him; his eyes lookt as though he would gladly hide himſelf; and his old blood going to his hart, a generall ſhaking all ouer his bodie poſſeſſed him. At length with a wanne mouth; he was about to giue a ſtammering anſwere, when it came into *Zelmanes* head by this deuiſe to make her profite of his folly; and therefore with a relented countenance, thus ſaid vnto him. Your words (mightie Prince) were vnfit either for me to heare, or you to ſpeake: but yet the large teſtimonie I ſee of your affection makes me willing to ſuppreſſe a great number of errors. Onely thus much

I thinke

I thinke good to ſay, that the ſame words in my Ladie *Philocleas* mouth, as from one woman to another (ſo as there were no other bodie by) might haue had a better grace; and perchance haue found a gentler receipt.

Baſilius (whoſe ſenſes by Deſire were held open, and conceipt was by Loue quickned) heard ſcarcely halfe her anſwere out, but that (as if ſpeedie flight might ſaue his life) he turned away, and ran with all the ſpeede his bodie would ſuffer him, towardes his daughter *Philoclea:* whom he found at that time duetifully watching by her mother, and *Miſo* curiouſlie watching her; hauing left *Mopſa* to doo the like ſeruice to *Pamela*. *Baſilius* foorthwith calling *Philoclea* aſide, (with all the coniuring words which Deſire could endite, and authoritie vtter) beſought her ſhe would preſerue his life, in whō her life was begonne; ſhe would ſaue his graye haires from rebuke, and his aged mind from deſpaire; that if ſhe were not cloyed with his companie, and that ſhe thought not the earth ouer-burdened with him, ſhe would coole his fierie griefe, which was to be done but by her breath. That in fine, whatſoeuer he was, he was nothing but what it pleaſed *Zelmane*; all the powers of his ſpirite depending of her: that if ſhe continued cruell, he could no more ſuſtaine his life, then the earth remaine fruitefull in the Sunnes continuall abſence. He concluded, ſhe ſhould in one payment requite all his deſerts: and that ſhe needed not diſdaine any ſeruice (though neuer ſo meane) which was warranted by the ſacred name of a father. *Philoclea* more glad then euer ſhe had knowen her ſelfe, that ſhe might by this occaſion, enioy the priuate conference of *Zelmane*, yet 6

had

had ſo ſweete a feeling of vertue in her minde, that ſhe would not ſuffer a vile colour to be caſt ouer her faire thoughts; but with humble grace anſwered her father: That there needed nether promiſe nor perſwaſion to her, to make her doo her vttermoſt for her fathers ſeruice. That for *Zelmanes* fauour, ſhe would in all vertuous ſort ſeeke it towards him: and that as ſhe woulde not pearce further into his meaning, then himſelfe ſhould declare, ſo would ſhe interprete all his doinges to be accompliſhed in goodnes: and therfore deſired, (if otherwiſe it were) that he woulde not imparte it to her, who then ſhould be forced to beginne (by true obedience) a ſhew of diſobedience: rather perfourming his generall commandement, which had euer beene, to embrace vertue, then any new particular, ſprong out of paſſion, and contrarie to the former. *Baſilius* content to take that, ſince he could haue no more (thinking it a great point, if by her meanes, he could get but a more free acceſſe vnto *Zelmane*) allowed her reaſons, & took her proffer thākfully, deſiring onely a ſpeedy returne of comfort. *Philoclea* was parting, and *Miſo* ſtreight behind her, like *Alecto* following *Proſerpina*. But *Baſilius* forced her to ſtay, though with much a doo, ſhe being ſharp-ſet vpon the fulfilling of a ſhrewde office, in ouer-looking *Philoclea:* and ſo ſaid to *Baſilius*, that ſhe did as ſhe was comanded, and could not anſwere it to *Gynecia*, if ſhe were any whitte from *Philoclea:* telling him true, that he did euill to take her charge from her. But *Baſilius*, (ſwearing he would put out her eyes, if ſhe ſtird a foote to trouble his daughter) gaue her a ſtoppe for that while.

CHAP.

CHAP. 17.

[1] Zelmanes *teares,* [2] *and teareſull dittie.* [1] Philoclea *enters conference with her.* [4] *She ſhues, and ſhewes her ſelfe Prince* Pyrocles. [5] Philoclea *feares much, but loues more.* [6] *Their concluſion,* [7] *with reentrie to their intermitted hiſtoriologie.*

SO away departed *Philoclea*, with a new field of fancies for her trauayling mind. For well ſhe ſawe, her father was growen her aduerſe partie, and yet her fortune ſuch, as ſhe muſt fauour her Riuall; and the fortune of that fortune ſuch, as neither that did hurt her, nor any contrarie meane helpe her.

But ſhe walkt but a little on, before ſhe ſaw *Zelmane* 1
lying vpon a banke, with her face ſo bent ouer *Ladon*, that (her teares falling into the water) one might haue thought, that ſhe began meltingly to be metamorphoſed to the vnder-running riuer. But by and by, with ſpeech ſhe made knowen, as well that ſhe liued, as that ſhe ſorrowed. Faire ſtreames (ſaid ſhe) that do vouchſafe in your cleerenes to repreſent vnto me my blubbered face, let the tribute-offer of my teares vnto you, procure your ſtay a while with me, that I may beginne yet at laſt, to finde ſome thing that pities me: and that all thinges of comfort and pleaſure doo not flie away from me. But if the violence of your ſpring commaund you to haſte away, to pay your dueties to your great prince, the Sea, yet carrie with you theſe fewe wordes, and let the vttermoſt ends of the world know them. A

Loue

Loue more cleer then your ſelues, dedicated to a Loue (I feare) more cold then your ſelues, with the cleerenes layes a night of ſorow vpon me; and with the coldenes enflames a worlde of fire within me. With that ſhe tooke a willowe ſtick, and wrote in a ſandie banke theſe fewe verſes.

2

OVer theſe brookes truſting to eaſe mine eyes,
(Mine eyes euen great in labour with their teares)
I layde my face; my face wherein there lyes
Cluſters of clowdes, which no Sunne euer clcares.
In watry glaſſe my watrie eyes I ſee:
Sorrowes ill eaſde, where ſorrowes painted be.

My thoughts impriſonde in my ſecreat woes,
With flamie breathes doo iſſue oft in ſound:
The ſound to this ſtrange aier no ſooner goes,
But that it dooth with Echoes *force rebound.*
And make me heare the plaints I would refraine:
Thus outward helps my inward griefes maintaine.

Now in this ſande I would diſcharge my minde,
And caſt from me part of my burdnous cares:
But in the ſand my tales foretolde I finde,
And ſee therein how well the writer fares.
Since ſtreame, aier, ſand, mine eyes and eares conſpire:
What hope to quench, where each thing blowes the fire?

3

And aſſoon as ſhe had written them (a new ſwarme of thoughts ſtinging her mind) ſhe was ready with her foot to giue the new-borne letters both death and buriall. But *Philoclea* (to whom delight of hearing and ſeeing

ing was before a ſtay from interrupting her) gaue her ſelf to be ſeen vnto her, with ſuch a lightning of Beauty vpō *Zelmane*, that nether ſhe could looke on, nor would looke of. At laſt *Philoclea* (hauing a little muſed how to cut the threede euen, betweene her owne hopeleſſe affection, and her fathers vnbridled hope) with eyes, cheekes, and lippes, (whereof each ſange their parte, to make vp the harmonie of baſhfulneſſe) began to ſay, My Father to whom I owe my ſelf, & therefore, When *Zelmane* (making a womaniſh habite to be the Armour of her boldneſſe, giuing vp her life to the lippes of *Philoclea*, and taking it againe by the ſweeteneſſe of thoſe kiſſes) humbly beſought her to keepe her ſpeach for a while within the Paradiſe of her minde. For well ſhe knew herf athers errād, who ſhould ſoon receiue a ſufficient anſwere. But now ſhe demaunded leaue not to looſe this long ſought-for commoditie of time, to eaſe her harte thus farre, that if in her agonies her deſtinie was to be condemned by *Philocleas* mouth, at leſt *Philoclea* might know, whom ſhe had condemned. *Philoclea* eaſily yeelded to graunt her owne deſire: and ſo making the greene banke the ſituation, and the riuer the proſpect of the moſt beautiful buildings of Nature, *Zelmane* doubting how to beginne, though her thoughts already had runne to the ende, with a minde fearing the vnworthineſſe of euery worde that ſhould be preſented to her eares, at length brought it forth in this manner.

Moſt beloued Ladie, the incomparable excellencies of your ſelfe, (waited-on by the greatneſſe of your eſtate) and the importaunce of the thing (whereon my life conſiſteth) doth require both many ceremo- 4

nies before the beginning, and many circumſtaunces in the vttering my ſpeech, both bolde, and fearefull. But the ſmall opportunitie of enuious occaſion (by the malicious eie hateful Loue doth caſt vpon me) and the extreme bent of my affection (which will eyther breake out in wordes, or breake my harte) compell me, not onely to embrace the ſmalleſt time, but to paſſe by reſpects due vnto you, in reſpect of your poore caitifes life, who is now, or neuer to be preſerued. I doo therefore vowe vnto you, hereafter neuer more to omit all dutifull forme: doo you onely now vouchſafe to heare the matter of a minde moſt perplexed. If euer the ſound of Loue haue come to your eares, or if euer you haue vnderſtood, what force it hath had to conquere the ſtrongeſt hartes, and change the moſt ſetled eſtates: receiue here an example of thoſe ſtraunge Tragedies; one, that in him ſelfe conteineth the particularities of all thoſe misfortunes: and from hencefoorth beleeue that ſuch a thing may be, ſince you ſhall ſee it is. You ſhall ſee (I ſay) a liuing image, and a preſent ſtorie of what Loue can doo, when he is bent to ruine.

But alas, whether goeſt thou my tongue? or how doth my harte conſent to aduenture the reuealing his neereſt touching ſecrete? But peace Feare, thou commeſt too late, when already the harme is taken. Therefore I ſay againe, O onely Princeſſe, attend here a miſerable miracle of affection. Behold here before your eyes *Pyrocles*, Prince of *Macedon*, whome you onely haue brought to this game of Fortune, and vnuſed *Metamorphoſis:* whome you onely haue made neglect his countrie, forget his Father, and laſtly, forſake

to

to be *Pyrocles*: the ſame *Pyrocles*, who (you heard) was betrayed by being put in a ſhip, which being burned, *Pyrocles* was drowned. O moſt true preſage: for theſe traytors, my eyes, putting me in a ſhippe of Deſire, which dayly burneth, thoſe eyes (I ſay) which betraied me, will neuer leaue till they haue drowned me. But be not, be not, (moſt excellent Lady) you that Nature hath made to be the Load-ſtarre of comfort, be not the Rocke of ſhipwracke: you whome vertue hath made the Princeſſe of felicitie, be not the miniſter of ruine: you, whom my choyſe hath made the Goddeſſe of my ſafetie, O let not, let not, from you be powred vpon me deſtruction. Your faire face hath manie tokens in it of amazement at my wordes: thinke then what his amazement is, from whence they come: ſince no wordes can carry with them the life of the inward feeling. I deſire, that my deſire may be waied in the ballances of Honour, and let Vertue hold them. For if the higheſt Loue in no baſe perſon may aſpire to grace, then may I hope your beautie will not be without pittie. If otherwiſe you be (alas but let it neuer be ſo) reſolued, yet ſhall not my death be comfortles, receiuing it by your ſentence.

The ioy which wrought into *Pygmalions* mind, while he found his beloued image was ſofter, & warmer in his folded armes, till at length it accõpliſhed his gladnes with a perfect womans ſhape (ſtill beautified with the former perfections) was euen ſuch, as by each degree of *Zelmanes* wordes creepingly entred into *Philoclea*: till her pleaſure was fully made vp with the manifeſting of his being; which was ſuch as in hope did ouer-come Hope. Yet Doubt would faine haue playd 5

his parte in her minde, and cald in queſtion, how ſhe ſhould be aſſured that *Zelmane* was *Pyrocles*. But Loue ſtreight ſtood vp & depoſed, that a lie could not come from the mouth of *Zelmane*. Beſides, a certain ſparke of honour, which roſe in her well-diſpoſed minde, made her feare to be alone with him, with whom alone ſhe deſired to be (with all the other cõtradictions growing in thoſe minds, which nether abſolutly clime the rocke of Vertue, nor freely ſinke into the ſea of Vanitie) but that ſparke ſoone gaue place, or at leſt gaue no more light in her mind, then a cãdle doth in the Sunnes preſence. But euen ſicke with a ſurfet of ioy, and fearefull of ſhe knewe not what (as he that newly findes huge treaſures, doubtes whether he ſleepe or no; or like a fearfull Deere, which then lookes moſt about, when he comes to the beſt feede) with a ſhrugging kinde of tremor through all her principall partes, ſhe gaue theſe affectionate wordes for anſwere. Alas, how painefull a thing it is to a deuided minde to make a wel-ioyned anſwere? how harde it is to bring inwarde ſhame to outward confeſſion? and what handſomnes trow you can be obſerued in that ſpeeche, which is made one knowes not to whom? Shall I ſay ô *Zelmane*? Alas your wordes be againſt it. Shall I ſay Prince *Pyrocles*? wretch that I am, your ſhew is manifeſt againſt it. But this, this I may well ſay; If I had continued as I ought, *Philoclea*, you had either neuer bene, or euer bene *Zelmane*: you had either neuer attempted this change, ſet on with hope, or neuer diſcouered it, ſtopt with deſpaire. But I feare me, my behauiour ill gouerned, gaue you the firſt comfort: I feare me, my affection ill hid, hath giuẽ you this laſt aſſurance: I feare indeed, the weakeneſſe of my

gouern-

gouernment before, made you thinke ſuch a maske would be gratefull vnto me: & my weaker gouernmẽt ſince, makes you to pull of the viſar. What ſhall I doo then? ſhal I ſeeke far-fetched inuentions? ſhall I labour to lay marble coulours ouer my ruinous thoughts? or rather, though the purenes of my virgin-minde be ſtained, let me keepe the true ſimplicitie of my word. True it is, alas, too true it is, ô *Zelmane* (for ſo I loue to call thee, ſince in that name my loue firſt began, and in the ſhade of that name my loue ſhall beſt lie hidden,) that euen while ſo thou wert, (what eye bewitched me I know not) my paſſions were fitter to deſire, then to be deſired. Shall I ſay then, I am ſory, or that my loue muſt be turned to hate, ſince thou art turned to *Pyrocles*? how may that wel be, ſince when thou wert *Zelmane*, the deſpaire thou mighteſt not be thus, did moſt torment me. Thou haſt then the victorie: vſe it with vertue. Thy vertue wan me; with vertue preſerue me. Dooſt thou loue me? keepe me then ſtill worthy to be beloued.

Then held ſhe her tongue, and caſt downe a ſelf-accuſing looke, finding, that in her ſelfe ſhe had (as it were) ſhot out of the bow of her affectiõ, a more quick opening of her minde, then ſhe minded to haue done. But *Pyrocles* ſo caried vp with ioy, that he did not enuy the Gods felicitie, preſented her with ſome iewels of right princely value, as ſome litle tokens of his loue, & qualitie: and withall ſhewed her letters from his father King *Euarchus*, vnto him, which euen in the Sea had amongſt his iewels bene preſerued. But little needed thoſe proofes to one, who would haue fallen out with her ſelfe, rather then make any contrarie coniectures to *Zelmanes* ſpeeches; ſo that with ſuch imbracements, 6

as it ſeemed their ſoules deſired to meete, and their harts to kiſſe, as their mouthes did: which faine *Pyrocles* would haue ſealed with the chiefe armes of his deſire, but *Philoclea* commaunded the contrary; and yet they paſſed the promiſe of mariage.

7 And then at *Philoclcas* entreaty, who was willing to purloine all occaſions of remayning with *Zelmane*, ſhe tolde her the ſtorie of her life, from the time of their departing from *Erona*, for the reſt ſhe had already vnderſtood of her ſiſter. For (ſaide ſhe) I haue vnderſtood, how you firſt in the companie of your Noble couſin *Muſidorus* parted from *Theſſalia*, and of diuers aduentures, which with no more daunger then glory you paſſed through, till your comming to the ſuccour of the Queene *Erona*; and the ende of that warre (you might perceiue by my ſelfe) I had vnderſtood of the Prince *Plangus*. But what ſince was the courſe of your doings, vntil you came, after ſo many victories, to make a conqueſt of poore me, that I know not, the fame thereof hauing rather ſhewed it by pieces; then deliuered any full forme of it. Therefore, deere *Pyrocles* (for what can mine eares be ſo ſweetly fed with as to heare you of you) be liberall vnto me of thoſe things which haue made you indeede pretious to the worlde, and now doubt not to tell of your perils; for ſince I haue you here out of them, euen the remembraunce of them is pleaſaunt. *Pyrocles* eaſily perceiued ſhe was content with kindneſſe, to put of occaſion of further kindneſſe; wherein Loue ſhewed himſelfe a cowardly boy, that durſt not attempt for feare of offending. But rather Loue prooued him ſelfe valiant, that durſt with the ſworde of reuerent dutie gaine-ſtand the force

force of ſo many enraged deſires. But ſo it was, that though he knewe this diſcourſe was to entertaine him from a more ſtreight parley, yet he durſt not but kiſſe his rod, and gladly make much of the entertainement which ſhe allotted vnto him: and therefore with a deſirous ſigh chaſtning his breſt for too much deſiring, Sweete Princeſſe of my life (ſaid he) what Trophees, what Triumph, what Monuments, what Hiſtories may euer make my fame yeeld ſo ſweete a Muſicke to my eares, as that it pleaſeth you to lend your minde to the knowledge of any thing touching *Pyrocles*, onely therefore of value, becauſe he is your *Pyrocles?* And therefore grow I now ſo proud, as to thinke it worth the hearing, ſince you vouchſafe to giue it hearing. Therefore (onely height of my hope) vouchſafe to know, that after the death of *Tiridates*, and ſetling *Erona* in her gouernement; for ſetled we left her, howſoeuer ſince (as I perceiued by your ſpeech the laſt day) the vngrateful treaſon of her ill-choſen huſband ouerthrew her (a thing in trueth neuer till this time by me either heard, or ſuſpected) for who could thinke without hauing ſuch a minde as *Antiphilus*, that ſo great a beautie as *Eronas* (indeed excellent) could not haue held his affection? ſo great goodnes could not haue bound gratefulneſſe? and ſo high aduancement could not haue ſatiſfied his ambition? But therefore true it is, that wickedneſſe may well be compared to a bottomleſſe pit, into which it is farre eaſier to keepe ones ſelfe from falling, then being fallen, to giue ones ſelfe any ſtay from falling infinitely. But for my Coſen, and me, vpon this cauſe we parted from *Erona*.

CHAP. 18.

[1]Anaxius-*his ſurcuidrie*; [2]*and challenge to* Pyrocles, *accepted.* [3] *The execution of Ladies done on a light-of-loue.* [4] Pyrocles-*his interceſsion in the cauſe.* [5] *The lewd parts of that light lecher.* [6] *His ſcoffing excuſes.* [7] Didos *reuenge on him ſtopped,* [8] *and his reuenge on her ſtayed by* Pyrocles.

1 *EVardes* (the braue & mighty Prince, whom it was my fortune to kill in the cõbat for *Erona*) had three Nephewes, ſonnes to a ſiſter of his; all three ſet among the foremoſt rãcks of Fame for great minds to attẽpt, and great force to perfourme what they did attempt; eſpecially the eldeſt, by name *Anaxius*; to whom al men would willingly haue yeelded the height of praiſe, but that his nature was ſuch, as to beſtow it vpon himſelfe, before any could giue it. For of ſo vnſupportable a pride he was, that where his deede might well ſtirre enuie, his demeanor did rather breed diſdain. And if it be true that the *Gyants* euer made war againſt heauen, he had bene a fit enſigne-bearer for that company. For nothing ſeemed hard to him, though impoſſible; and nothing vniuſt, while his liking was his iuſtice. Now he in theſe wars had flatly refuſed his aid; becauſe he could not brooke, that the worthy Prince *Plãgus* was by his coſen *Tiridates* preferred before him. For allowing no other weights, but the ſword & ſpeare in iudging of deſert, how-much he eſteemed himſelfe before

before *Plangus* in that, ſo much would he haue had his allowance in his ſeruice.

But now that he vnderſtood that his vncle was ſlaine 2
by me, I thinke rather ſcorne that any ſhould kil his vncle, then any kindneſſe (an vn-vſed gueſt to an arrogant ſoule) made him ſeeke his reuenge; I muſt confeſſe in manner gallant enough. For he ſent a challenge to me to meete him at a place appointed, in the confines of the kingdome of *Lycia*; where he would proue vpon me, that I had by ſome trecherie ouercome his vncle, whom els many hundreds ſuch as I, could not haue withſtood. Youth & ſucceſſe made me willing enough to accept any ſuch bargaine; eſpecially, becauſe I had heard that your coſen *Amphialus* (who for ſome yeares hath vniuerſally borne the name of the beſt Knight in the world) had diuers times fought with him, & neuer bene able to maſter him; but ſo had left him, that euery man thought *Anaxius* in that one vertue of curteſie far ſhort of him, in al other his match; *Anaxius* ſtil deeming himſelfe for his ſuperiour. Therefore to him I would goe, and I would needs goe alone, becauſe ſo I vnderſtood for certaine, he was; and (I muſt confeſſe) deſirous to do ſomething without the company of the incomparable Prince *Muſidorus*, becauſe in my hart I acknowledge that I owed more to his preſence, then to any thing in my ſelf, whatſoeuer before I had done. For of him indeed (as of any worldly cauſe) I muſt grant, as receiued, what euer there is, or may be good in me. He taught me by word, and beſt by example, giuing me in him ſo liuely an Image of vertue, as ignorance could not caſt ſuch miſt ouer mine eyes, as not to ſee, and to loue it, and all with ſuch deare friendſhip and care, as (ô heauens)

heauens) how cā my life euer requite vnto him? which made me indeed find in my ſelfe ſuch a kind of depending vpon him, as without him I found a weakeneſſe, and a miſtruſtfulnes of my ſelfe, as one ſtrayed from his beſt ſtrength, when at any time I miſt him. Which humour perceiuing to ouer-rule me, I ſtraue againſt it; not that I was vnwilling to depend vpon him in iudgemēt, but by weakeneſſe I would not; which though it held me to him, made me vnworthy of him. Therfore I deſired his leaue, and obtained it: ſuch confidence he had in me, preferring my reputation before his owne tenderneſſe; and ſo priuately went from him, he determining (as after I knew) in ſecreat maner, not to be far from the place, where we appointed to meete, to preuent any foule play that might be offered vnto me. Full loth was *Erona* to let vs depart from her, (as it were) forefeeling the harmes which after fell to her. But I, (ridde fully from thoſe combers of kindneſſe, and halfe a dayes iourney in my way toward *Anaxius*) met an aduenture, (though in it ſelfe of ſmall importance) I will tell you at large, becauſe by the occaſion thereof I was brought to as great comber and danger, as lightly any might eſcape.

3 As I paſt through a Laund (ech ſide whereof was ſo bordred both with high tymber trees, and copſes of farre more humble growth, that it might eaſily bring a ſolitarie minde to looke for no other companions then the wild burgeſſes of the forreſt) I heard certaine cries, which comming by pawſes to mine eares from within the wood of the right hand, made me well aſſured by the greatneſſe of the crie, it was the voice of a man, though it were a verie vnmanlike voice, ſo to crie. But making

making mine eare my guide, I left not many trees behind me, before I ſaw at the bottome of one of them a gentle-man bound (with many garters) hand & foot, ſo as well he might tomble and toſſe, but neither runne nor reſiſt he could. Vpõ him (like ſo many Eagles vpon an Oxe) were nine Gentle-women; truely ſuch, as one might well enough ſay, they were hanſome. Each of them helde bodkins in their handes, wherewith they continually pricked him; hauing bene before-hand vnarmed of any defence from the waſt vpward, but onely of his ſhirte: ſo as the poore man wept and bled, cryed and prayed, while they ſported themſelues in his paine, and delighted in his prayers, as the arguments of their victorie.

I was moued to compaſſion, and ſo much the more that he ſtraight cald to me for ſuccour, deſiring me at leſt to kill him, to deliuer him from thoſe tormenters. But before my-ſelf could reſolue, much leſſe any other tell what I would reſolue, there came in cholericke haſt towards me about ſeuẽ or eight knights; the foremoſt of which willed me to get me away, and not to trouble the Ladies, while they were taking their due reuenge, but with ſo ouer-maſtring a maner of pride, as truly my hart could not brooke it: & therfore (anſwering them, that how I would haue defended him from the Ladies I knew not, but from them I would) I began a combate firſt with him particularly, and after his death with the others (that had leſſe good maners) ioyntly. But ſuch was the end of it, that I kept the fielde with the death of ſome, and flight of others. In ſo much as the women (afraid, what angrie victorie would bring forth) ranne away; ſauing onely one; who was ſo fleſht in malice, that

that neither during, nor after the fight, ſhe gaue any truce to her crueltie, but ſtill vſed the little inſtrument of her great ſpight, to the well-witneſt paine of the impatient patient: and was now about to put out his eies, which all this while were ſpared, becauſe they ſhould do him the diſcomfort of ſeeing who preuailed ouer him. When I came in, and after much ado, brought her to ſome conference, (for ſome time it was before ſhe would harken, more before ſhe would ſpeake; & moſt, before ſhe would in her ſpeech leaue off that remembrance of her bodkin) but at length whē I puld off my head-peece, and humbly entreated her pardon, or knowledge why ſhe was cruell; out of breath more with choller (which increaſed in his owne exerciſe) thē with the paine ſhe tooke, much to this purpoſe ſhe gaue her griefe vnto my knowledge. Gentleman (ſaid ſhe) much it is againſt my will to forbeare any time the executing of my iuſt reuēge vpon this naughtie creature, a man in nothing, but in deceauing women; But becauſe I ſee you are young, and like enough to haue the power (if you would haue the mind) to do much more miſchiefe, then he, I am content vpon this bad ſubiect to reade a Lecture to your Vertue.

5 This man called *Pamphilus*, in birth I muſt confeſſe is noble (but what is that to him, if it ſhalbe a ſtaine to his deade aunceſtors to haue left ſuch an offspring?) in ſhape as you ſee not vncomely (indeed the fit maſke of his diſguiſed falſhood) in conuerſation wittily pleaſant, and pleaſantly gameſome; his eyes full of merie ſimplicitie, his words of hartie companableneſſe; and ſuch a one, whoſe head one would not think ſo ſtayed, as to thinke miſchieuouſly: delighted in al ſuch things,

which

which by imparting their delight to others, makes the vſer therof welcome; as, Muſicke, Daunſing, Hunting, Feaſting, Riding, & ſuch like. And to conclude, ſuch a one, as who can keepe him at armes ende, neede neuer wiſh a better cõpaniõ. But vnder theſe qualities lies ſuch a poyſonous addar as I will tell you. For by thoſe gifts of Nature and Fortune (being in all places acceptable) he creepes, nay (to ſay truely) he flies ſo into the fauour of poore ſillie women, that I would be too much aſhamed to confeſſe, if I had not reuenge in my hande, as well as ſhame in my cheekes. For his hart being wholy delighted in deceiuing vs, we could neuer be warned, but rather, one bird caught, ſerued for a ſtale to bring in more. For the more he gat, the more ſtill he ſhewed, that he (as it were) gaue away to his new miſtreſſe, whẽ he betrayed his promiſes to the former. The cunning of his flatterie, the readines of his teares, the infinitenes of his vowes, were but among the weakeſt threedes of his nette. But the ſtirring our owne paſſions, and by the entrance of them, to make himſelfe Lord of our forces; there lay his Maſters part of cunning, making vs now iealous, now enuious, now proud of what we had, deſirous of more; now giuing one the triumph, to ſee him that was Prince of many, Subiect to her; now with an eſtranged looke, making her feare the loſſe of that minde, which indeede could neuer be had: neuer ceaſing humblenes and diligence, till he had imbarked vs in ſome ſuch diſaduantage, as we could not return dryſhod; and then ſuddenly a tyrant, but a craftie tyrant. For ſo would he vſe his imperiouſnes, that we had a delightfull feare, and an awe which made vs loath to loſe our hope. And, which is ſtrangeſt (when ſometimes

times with late repentance I thinke of it) I muſt confeſſe, euen in the greateſt tempeſt of my iudgemēt was I neuer driuen to think him excellent, and yet ſo could ſet my minde, both to gette and keepe him, as though therein had laien my felicitie: like them I haue ſeene play at the ball, growe extremely earneſt, who ſhoulde haue the ball, and yet euery one knew it was but a ball. But in the end, the bitter ſauce of the ſport was, that we had ether our hartes broken with ſorrow, or our eſtates ſpoyled with being at his direction, or our honours for euer loſt, partly by our owne faults, but principally by his faultie vſing of our faults. For neuer was there man that could with more ſcornefull eyes beholde her, at whoſe feete he had lately laine, nor with a more vnmanlike brauerie vſe his tongue to her diſgrace, which lately had ſong Sonets of her praiſes: being ſo naturally inconſtant, as I maruell his ſoule findes not ſome way to kill his bodie, whereto it had beene ſo long vnited. For ſo hath he dealt with vs (vnhappie fooles,) as we could neuer tell, whether he made greater haſte after he once liked, to enioy, or after he once enioyed, to forſake. But making a glorie of his own ſhame, it delighted him to be challenged of vnkindneſſe: it was a triumph vnto him to haue his mercie called for: and he thought the freſh colours of his beautie were painted in nothing ſo well, as in the ruines of his Louers: yet ſo farre had we engaged our ſelues, (vnfortunate ſoules) that we liſted not complaine, ſince our complaintes could not but carrie the greateſt accuſation to our ſelues. But euerie of vs (each for her ſelfe,) laboured all meanes how to recouer him, while he rather daily ſent vs companions of our deceipt, then

euer

euer returned in any ſound and faithfull manner. Till at length he concluded all his wronges with betrothing himſelfe to one (I muſt confeſſe) worthie to be liked, if any worthineſſe might excuſe ſo vnworthie a changeableneſſe; leauing vs nothing but remorſe for what was paſt, and deſpaire of what might followe. Then indeede, the common iniurie made vs all ioyne in friendſhippe, who till that time, had employed our endeuours one againſt the other. For, we thought nothing was a more condemning of vs, then the iuſtifying of his loue to her by mariage: then Deſpaire made Feare valiant, and Reuenge gaue Shame countenance: whereupon, we (that you ſaw here) deuiſed how to get him among vs alone: which he (ſuſpecting no ſuch matter of them, whom he had by often abuſes he thought made tame to be ſtill abuſed) eaſilie gaue vs opportunitie to doo.

And a man may ſee, euen in this, how ſoone Rulers growe proude, and in their pride fooliſh: he came with ſuch an authoritie among vs, as if the Planets had done inough for vs, that by vs once he had beene delighted. And when we began in courteous manner, one after the other, to lay his vnkindneſſe vnto him, he ſeeing himſelfe confronted by ſo many (like a reſolute Orator,) went not to deniall, but to iuſtifie his cruell falſhoode, and all with ſuch ieſtes, and diſdainfull paſſages, that if the iniurie could not be made greater, yet were our conceiptes made the apter to apprehende it. 6

Among other of his anſweres (forſooth) I ſhall neuer forgette, how he woulde prooue it was no inconſtancie to chaunge from one Loue to an other, but

but a great constancie; and contrarie, that which we call constancie, to be most changeable. For (said he) I euer loued my Delight, & delighted alwayes in what was Louely: and where-soeuer I founde occasion to obtaine that, I constantly folowed it. But these constant fooles you speak of, though their Mistres grow by sickenes foule, or by fortune miserable, yet stil will loue her, and so committe the absurdest inconstancie that may be, in changing their loue from fairenes to foulenesse, and from louelines to his contrarie; like one not content to leaue a friend, but will streight giue ouer himself to his mortall enemie: where I (whom you call inconstant) am euer constant; to Beautie, in others; and Delight in my self. And so in this iollie scoffing brauerie he went ouer vs all, saying, He left one, because she was ouer-waiwarde; another, because she was too soone woon; a third, because she was not merie inough; a fourth, because she was ouer-gamesome; the fifth, because she was growen with griefe subiect to sickenesse; the sixt, because she was so fooliſh, as to be ielous of him; the seuenth, because she had refused to carie a letter for him, to another that he loued; the eight, because she was not secrete; the ninth, because she was not liberall: but to me, who am named *Dido*, (and indeede haue mette with a false *Ænæas*) to me, I say, (ô the vngratefull villaine) he could finde no other fault to obiect, but that (perdie) he met with many fayrer.

7 But when he had thus plaide the careleſſe Prince, we (hauing those seruants of ours in readines, whom you lately so manfully ouercame) laide holde of him; beginning at first but that trifling reuenge, in which you found vs busie; but meaning afterwarwardes to haue

haue mangled him ſo,as ſhould haue loſt his credit for euer abuſing more. But as you haue made my fellowes flie away,ſo for my part the greatneſſe of his wrong ouerſhadowes in my iudgement the greatneſſe of any daunger.For was it not inough for him,to haue deceiued me, & through the deceipt abuſed me, & after the abuſe forſaken me,but that he muſt now,of al the company,& before all the company lay want of beautie to my charge? Many fairer? I trow euẽ in your iudgemẽt, Sir,(if your eies do not beguile me)not many fairer; & I know(whoſoeuer ſaies the cõtrary)there are not many fairer. And of whom ſhould I receiue this reproch, but of him, who hath beſt cauſe to know there are not many fairer? And therefore how-ſoeuer my fellowes pardon his iniuries,for my parte I will euer remember, & remember to reuenge this ſcorne of al ſcornes. With that ſhe to him afreſh; & ſurely would haue put out his eies(who lay muet for ſhame, if he did not ſometimes crie for feare)if I had not lept from my horſe, & mingling force with intreaty,ſtaied her furie.

But,while I was perſwading her to meekenes,comes 8
a number of his friends, to whom he forthwith cried, that they ſhould kill that womã, that had thus betraied and diſgraced him. But then I was faine to forſake the enſigne;vnder which I had before ſerued,and to ſpend my vttermoſt force in the protecting of the Ladie; which ſo well preuailed for her, that in the ende there was a faithfull peace promiſed of all ſides. And ſo I leauing her in a place of ſecuritie (as ſhe thought) went on my iourney towards *Anaxius*,for whom I was faine to ſtay two daies in the apointed place, he diſdaining to waite for me,till he was ſure I were there.

CHAP. 19.

[1] *The monomachie betweene* Anaxius *and* Pyrocles; [2] *adiourned by* Pyrocles *to reſuccour* Dido. [3] *The courſe of* Didos *daunger.* [4] *The miſerableneſſe of her father.* [5] *His carliſh entertainement to* Pyrocles; [6] *and his treaſon againſt him.* [7] Pyrocles *hard beſtead.* [8] *ſuccoured by* Muſidorus: [9] *both ſaued by the King of* Iberia. [10] *The execution of the traitors, and death of* Dido.

1 I Did patientlie abide his angrie pleaſure, till about that ſpace of time he came (indeede, according to promiſe) alone: and (that I may not ſay too little, becauſe he is wont to ſay too much) like a man, whoſe courage was apt to clime ouer any daunger. And aſſoone as euer he came neere me, in fit diſtaunce for his purpoſe, he with much fury, (but with fury skilfully guided) ran vpon me; which I (in the beſt ſort I could) reſiſted, hauing kept my ſelfe ready for him, becauſe I had vnderſtood, that he obſerued but few complements in matters of armes, but ſuch as a proud anger did indite vnto him. And ſo putting our horſes into a full careere, we hit ech other vpon the head with our Launces: I think he felte my blowe; for my parte (I muſt confeſſe) I neuer receiued the like: but I thinke though my ſenſes were aſtoniſhed, my minde forced them to quicken themſelues, becauſe I had learned of him, how little fauour he is woont to ſhow in any matter of aduantage.

And

And indeede he was turned, and comming vpon me with his ſworde drawne, both our ſtaues hauing bene broken at that encounter. But I was ſo ready to anſwere him, that truely I know not who gaue the firſt blowe. But whoſoeuer gaue the firſt, it was quickly ſeconded by the ſecond. And indeed (excellenteſt Ladie) I muſt ſay truely, for a time it was well fought betweene vs; he vndoubtedly being of ſingular valour, (I would to God, it were not abaſed by his too much loftineſſe) but as by the occaſion of the combate, winning and looſing ground, we chaunged places, his horſe happened to come vpon the point of the broken ſpeare, which fallen to the ground chaunced to ſtand vpward; ſo as it lighting vpon his hart, the horſe died. He driuen to diſmount, threatned, if I did not the like, to doo as much for my horſe, as Fortune had done for his. But whether for that, or becauſe I would not be beholding to Fortune for any part of the victorie, I deſcended.

So began our foote-fight in ſuch ſort, that we were well entred to bloud of both ſides, when there comes by, that vnconſtant *Pamphilus*, whom I had deliuered (eaſie to be knowne, for he was bare faced) with a doſen armed men after him; but before him he had *Dido* (that Ladie, who had moſt ſharpely puniſhed him) riding vpon a palfrey, he following her with moſt vnmanlike crueltie; beating her with wandes he had in his hande, ſhe crying for ſenſe of payne, or hope of ſuccour: which was ſo pittifull a ſight vnto me, that it mooued me to require *Anaxius* to deferre our combate, till an other day, and now to perfourme the duties of Knighthood in helping this diſtreſſed Ladie.

But he that diſdaines to obey any thing but his paſſion (which he cals his mind) bad me leaue of that thought; but when he had killed me, he would then (perhaps) go to her ſuccour. But I well finding the fight would be long betweene vs (longing in my hart to deliuer the poore *Dido*) giuing him ſo great a blowe, as ſomewhat ſtaied him, (to terme it a right) I flatly ran away from him toward my horſe, who trotting after the cõpanie, in mine armour I was put to ſome paine, but that vſe made me nimble vnto it. But as I followed my horſe, *Anaxius* followed me: but his prowde harte did ſo diſdaine that exerciſe, that I had quickly ouer-run him, & ouer-taken my horſe; being (I muſt cõfeſſe) aſhamed to ſee a number of country folks, who happened to paſſe thereby, who hallowed & howted after me as at the arranteſt coward, that euer ſhewed his ſhoulders to his enemie. But when I had leapt on my horſe (with ſuch ſpeedy agility, that they all cried, O ſee how feare giues him wings) I turned to *Anaxius*, & aloud promiſed him to returne thether again, as ſoone as I had relieued the iniuried Ladie. But he railing at me, with all the baſe wordes angry contempt could endite; I ſaid no more, but, *Anaxius*, aſſure thy ſelf, I nether feare thy force, nor thy opinion. And ſo vſing no weapon of a Knight as at that time, but my ſpurres, I ranne in my knowledge after *Pamphilus*, but in al their conceipts from *Anaxius*, which as far as I could heare, I might well heare teſtified with ſuch laughters and games, that I was ſome few times moued to turne backe againe.

3 But the Ladies miſery ouer-balanced my reputation ſo that after her I went, & with ſix houres hard riding (through ſo wild places, as it was rather the cunning of my

my horſe ſometimes,then of my ſelfe, ſo rightly to hit the way)I ouergat thē a little before night, neere to an old il-fauoured caſtle,the place where I perceiued they meant to perfourme their vnknightly errand.For there they began to ſtrip her of her clothes, when I came in among them,& running through the firſt with a laūce, the iuſtneſſe of the cauſe ſo enhabled me againſt the reſt (falſharted in their owne wrong doing) that I had, in as ſhort time almoſt as I had bene fighting with only *Anaxius*, deliuered her from thoſe iniurious wretches:moſt of whom carried newes to the other world, that amongſt men ſecret wronges are not alwaies left vnpuniſhed.As for *Pamphilus*,he hauing once ſeene,& (as it ſhould ſeeme) remembred me,euen from the beginning began to be in the rereward, and before they had left fighting,he was too far of to giue them thanks for their paines. But when I had deliuered to the Ladie a ful libertie,both in effect,& in opinion,(for ſome time it was before ſhe could aſſure her ſelfe ſhe was out of their handes,who had layd ſo vehement apprehenſion of death vpon her) ſhe then tolde me, how as ſhe was returning toward her fathers, weakely accompanied (as too ſoone truſting to the falſhood of reconcilement) *Pamphilus* had ſet vpon her,and killing thoſe that were with her, carried her ſelfe by ſuch force, and with ſuch māner as I had ſeene, to this place, where he meant in cruell and ſhamefull manner to kill her,in the ſight of her owne Father;to whom he had already ſent worde of it,that out of his caſtle windowe (for this caſtle, ſhe ſaid, was his) he might haue the proſpect of his onely childes deſtruction, if my comming, whom (ſhe ſaid) he feared (as ſoone as he knew me by the

armour) had not warraunted her from that neere approching crueltie. I was glad I had done ſo good a deede for a Gentlewoman not vnhandſome, whome before I had in like ſorte helped. But the night beginning to perſwade ſome retiring place, the Gentlewoman, euen out of countenaunce before ſhe began her ſpeach, much after this manner inuited me to lodge that night with her father.

4 Sir (ſaid ſhe) how much I owe you, can be but abaſed by wordes, ſince the life I haue, I holde it now the ſecond time of you: and therefore neede not offer ſeruice vnto you, but onely to remember you, that I am your ſeruaunt: and I would, my being ſo, might any way yeeld any ſmall contentment vnto you. Now onely I can but deſire you to harbour your ſelfe this night in this caſtle; becauſe the time requires it; and in truth this countrie is very daungerous for murthering theeues, to truſt a ſleeping life among them. And yet I muſt confeſſe, that as the loue I beare you makes me thus inuite you, ſo the ſame loue makes me aſhamed to bring you to a place, where you ſhalbe ſo (not ſpokē by ceremonie but by truth) miſerably entertained. With that ſhe tolde me, that though ſhe ſpake of her father (whom ſhe named *Chremes*) ſhe would hide no truth from me, which was in ſumme, that as he was of all that region the man of greateſt poſſeſſions, and riches, ſo was he either by nature, or an euill receiued opinion, giuen to ſparing, in ſo vnmeaſurable a ſorte, that he did not onely barre him ſelfe from the delightfull, but almoſt from the neceſſarie vſe thereof; ſcarſely allowing him ſelfe fitte ſuſtenaunce of life, rather then he would ſpende of thoſe goods, for whoſe ſake onely

onely he ſeemed to ioye in life. Which extreame dealing (deſcending from himſelfe vpon her) had driuen her to put her ſelfe with a great Lady of that countrie, by which occaſion ſhe had ſtumbled vpon ſuch miſchance, as were little for the honour either of her, or her familie. But ſo wiſe had he ſhewed himſelfe therein, as while he found his daughter maintained without his coſt, he was content to be deafe to any noiſe of infamie: which though it had wronged her much more then ſhe deſerued, yet ſhe could not denie, but ſhe was driuen thereby to receaue more then decent fauours. She concluded, that there at leſt I ſhould be free from iniuries, & ſhould be aſſured to her-wards to abound as much in the true cauſes of welcomes, as I ſhould want of the effects thereof.

I, who had acquainted my ſelfe to meaſure the delicacie of foode and reſt, by hunger and wearineſſe, at that time well ſtored of both, did not abide long entreatie; but went with her to the Caſtle: which I found of good ſtrength, hauing a great mote rounde about it; the worke of a noble Gentleman, of whoſe vnthriftie ſonne he had bought it. The bridge drawne vp, where we were faine to crie a good while before we coulde haue anſweare, and to diſpute a good while before anſweare would bee brought to acceptance. At length a willingneſſe, rather then a ioy to receaue his daughter, whome hee had lately ſeene ſo neere death, and an opinion rather brought into his heade by courſe, becauſe he heard himſelfe called a father; rather then any kindneſſe that hee found in his owne harte, made him take vs in; for my part by that time growne ſo wearie of ſuch entertainement, that no

regard of my ſelfe, but onely the importunitie of his daughter made me enter. Where I was met with this *Chremes*, a driueling old fellow, leane, ſhaking both of head and hands, alredie halfe earth, and yet then moſt greedie of Earth: who ſcarcely would giue me thankes for that I had done, for feare I ſuppoſe, that thankefulneſſe might haue an introduction of reward. But with a hollow voice, giuing me a falſe welcome, I might perceaue in his eye to his daughter, that it was hard to ſay, whether the diſpleaſure of her company did not ouer-way the pleaſure of her owne comming. But on he brought me, into ſo bare a houſe, that it was the picture of miſerable happineſſe, and rich beggerie (ſerued onely by a company of ruſticall villaines, full of ſweate and duſt, not one of them other, then a labourer) in ſumme (as he counted it) profitable drudgerie: and all preparations both for foode and lodging ſuch, as would make one deteſt nigardneſſe, it is ſo ſluttiſh a vice. His talke nothing but of his pouertie, for feare belike leſt I ſhould haue proued a young borrower. In ſumme, ſuch a man, as any enemy could not wiſh him worſe, then to be himſelfe. But there that night bidde I the burthen of being a tedious gueſt to a loathſome hoſt; ouer-hearing him ſometimes bitterly warne his daughter of bringing ſuch coſtly mates vnder his roofe: which ſhe grieuing at, deſired much to know my name, I thinke partly of kindneſſe to remember who had done ſome-thing for her, and partly becauſe ſhe aſſured her ſelfe I was ſuch a one as would make euen his miſer-minde contented, with what he had done. And accordingly ſhe demaunded my name, and eſtate, with ſuch earneſtneſſe, that I whom Loue had

not

not as then ſo robbed me of my ſelfe, as to be another then I am, told her directly my name and condition: whereof ſhe was no more gladde then her father, as I might well perceaue by ſome ill-fauoured cheerefulneſſe, which then firſt began to wrinckle it ſelfe in his face.

But the cauſes of their ioyes were farre different; for 6
as the ſhepheard and the butcher both may looke vpon one ſheepe with pleaſing conceipts, but the ſhepheard with minde to profite himſelfe by preſeruing, the butcher with killing him: So ſhe reioyced to finde that mine owne benefits had tyed me to be her friend, who was a Prince of ſuch greatneſſe, and louingly reioyced: but his ioy grew, (as I to my danger after perceiued) by the occaſion of the Queene *Artaxias* ſetting my head to ſale, for hauing ſlaine her brother *Tiridates*; which being the ſumme of an hundreth thouſand crownes (to whoſoeuer brought me aliue into her hands) that old wretch, (who had ouer-liued all good nature) though he had lying idly by him much more then that, yet aboue all things louing money, for monies owne ſake determined to betray me, ſo well deſeruing of him, for to haue that which he was determined neuer to vſe. And ſo knowing that the next morning I was reſolued to go to the place where I had left *Anaxius*, he ſent in all ſpeed to a Captaine of a Garriſon hard by; which though it belonged to the King of *Iberia*, (yet knowing the Captaines humor to delight ſo in riotous ſpending; as he cared not how he came by the meanes to maintaine it) doubted not, that to be halfe with him in the gaine, he would play his quarters part in the treaſon. And therefore that night agreeing

of

of the fitteſt places where they might ſurpriſe me in the morning, the old caitiffe was growne ſo ceremonious, as he would needs accompanie me ſome myles in my way; a ſufficient token to me, if Nature had made me apte to ſuſpect; ſince a churles curteſie rathely comes but either for gaine, or falſhood. But I ſuffered him to ſtumble into that point of good manner: to which purpoſe he came out with all his clownes, horſt vpon ſuch cart-iades, and ſo furniſhed, as in good faith I thought with my ſelfe, if that were thrift, I wiſht none of my friends or ſubiectes euer to thriue. As for his daughter (the gentle *Dido*) ſhe would alſo (but in my conſcience with a farre better minde) prolong the time of farewell, as long as he.

7 So we went on togither: he ſo old in wickednes, that he could looke me in the face, and freely talke with me, whoſe life he had alreadie contracted for: till comming into the falling of a way which ledde vs into a place, of each-ſide whereof men might eaſily keepe themſelues vndiſcouered, I was encompaſſed ſodainly by a great troupe of enimies, both of horſe and foote, who willed me to yeelde my ſelfe to the Queene *Artaxia*. But they coulde not haue vſed worſe eloquence to haue perſwaded my yeelding, then that; I knowing the little good will *Artaxia* bare me. And therefore making neceſſitie and iuſtice my beſt ſword and ſhield, I vſed the other weapons I had as well as I could; I am ſure to the little eaſe of a good number, who truſting to their number more then to their valure, and valewing money higher then equitie, felt, that guiltleſneſſe is not alwayes with eaſe oppreſſed. As for *Chremes*, he withdrew himſelfe, yet ſo guilding his

his wicked conceipts with his hope of gaine, that he was content to be a beholder, how I ſhould be taken to make his pray.

But I was growne ſo wearie, that I ſupported my 8
ſelfe more with anger then ſtrength, when the moſt excellent *Muſidorus* came to my ſuccour; who hauing followed my trace as well as he could, after he had found I had left the fight with *Anaxius*, came to the niggards Caſtell, where he found all burnd and ſpoiled by the countrie people, who bare mortall hatred to that couetous man, and now tooke the time, when the caſtell was left almoſt without garde, to come in, and leaue monuments of their malice therein: which *Muſidorus* not ſtaying either to further, or impeach, came vpon the ſpurre after me (becauſe with one voice many told him, that if I were in his company, it was for no good meant vnto me) and in this extremitie found me. But when I ſaw that Coſen of mine, me thought my life was doubled, and where before I thought of a noble death, I now thought of a noble victorie. For who can feare that hath *Muſidorus* by him? who, what he did there for me, how many he killed, not ſtraunger for the number, then for the ſtraunge blowes wherwith he ſent them to a wel-deſerued death, might well delight me to ſpeake off, but I ſhould ſo holde you too long in euery particular. But in trueth, there if euer, and euer, if euer any man, did *Muſidorus* ſhew himſelfe ſecond to none in able valour.

Yet what the vnmeaſurable exceſſe of their num- 9
ber woulde haue done in the ende I knowe not, but the triall thereof was cutte off by the chaunceable com-

comming thither of the King of *Iberia*, that ſame father of that worthy *Plangus*, whom it hath pleaſed you ſomtimes to mention: who, (not yeelding ouer to old age his country delights, eſpecially of hauking) was at that time (following a Merline) brought to ſee this iniurie offred vnto vs: and hauing great numbers of Courtiers waiting vpon him, was ſtraight known by the ſouldiers that aſſaulted vs, to be their King, and ſo moſt of them with-drew themſelues.

He by his authoritie knowing of the Captaines owne conſtrained confeſſion, what was the motiue of this miſchieuous practiſe; miſliking much ſuch violẽce ſhould be offred in his countrie to men of our ranke: but chiefely diſdaining it ſhould be done in reſpect of his Niece, whom (I muſt confeſſe wrongfully) he hated, becauſe he interpreted that her brother and ſhe had maintained his ſonne *Plangus* againſt him, cauſed the Captaines head preſently to be ſtriken off, and the old bad *Chremes* to be hanged: though truely for my part, I earneſtly laboured for his life, becauſe I had eaten of his bread. But one thing was notable for a concluſion of his miſerable life, that neither the death of his daughter, who (alas the poore Gentlewoman) was by chaunce ſlaine among his clownes, while ſhe ouerboldly for her weake ſex ſought to hold thẽ from me, nor yet his owne ſhamefull ende was ſo much in his mouth as he was ledde to execution, as the loſſe of his goods, and burning of his houſe: which often, with more laughter then teares of the hearers, he made pittifull exclamations vpon.

CHAP.

CHAP. 20.

1 *The two Princes paſſage to the* Iberian *Court.* 2 Andromanas *omniregencie.* 3 *Her parti-loue to them both.* 4 *Her faire and foule meanes to inueigle them.* 5 Palladius *loue to* Zelmane. 6 Zelmanes *loue to* Pyrocles, *and practiſe with her Louer to releaſe her beloued.*

THis iuſtice thus done, and we deliucred, the King indeede in royall ſorte inuited vs to his Court, not farre thence: in all points entertaining vs ſo, as truely I muſt euer acknowledge a beholdingneſſe vnto him: although the ſtreame of it fell out not to be ſo ſweet as the ſpring. 1
For after ſome dayes being there (curing our ſelues of ſuch wounds as we had receiued, while I, cauſing diligent ſearch to be made of *Anaxius*, could learne nothing, but that he was gone out of the countrie, boaſting in euerie place, how he had made me run away) we were brought to receiue the fauour of acquaintãce with this Queene *Andromana*, whom the Princeſſe *Pamela* did in ſo liuely colours deſcribe the laſt day, as ſtill me thinkes the figure therof poſſeſſeth mine eyes, confirmed by the knowledge my ſelfe had.

And therefore I ſhall neede the leſſe to make you know what kinde of woman ſhe was; but this onely, that firſt with the rarenes of affection, and after with the very vſe of directing, ſhe had made her ſelfe ſo abſolute a maiſter of her huſbands minde, that a-while he would 2

would not,and after,he could not tell how to gouern, without being gouerned by her: but finding an eaſe in not vnderſtanding, let looſe his thoughtes wholly to pleaſure, entruſting to her the entire conduct of all his royall affaires. A thing that may luckely fall out to him that hath the bleſſing, to match with ſome Heroicall minded Ladie.But in him it was nether guided by wiſdome,nor followed by Fortune,but thereby was ſlipte inſenſiblie into ſuch an eſtate, that he liued at her vndiſcreete diſcretion: all his ſubiectes hauing by ſome yeares learned,ſo to hope for good, and feare of harm, onely frō her,that it ſhould haue neded a ſtronger vertue thē his, to haue vnwound ſo deeply an entred vice. So that either not ſtriuing (becauſe he was contented) or contented (becauſe he would not ſtriue) he ſcarcelie knewe what was done in his owne chamber, but as it pleaſed her Inſtrumentes to frame the relation.

3 Now we being brought knowen vnto her(the time that we ſpent in curing ſome very dangerous wounds) after once we were acquainted, (and acquainted we were ſooner then our ſelues expected)ſhe continuallie almoſt haunted vs,till(and it was not long a doing)we diſcouered a moſt violent bent of affection:and that ſo ſtrangely,that we might well ſee,an euill minde in au-
« thoritie,dooth not onely folow the ſway of the deſires
« alreadie within it,but frames to it ſelfe new deſires,not before thought of. For,with equall ardour ſhe affected vs both: and ſo did her greatnes diſdaine ſhamefaſtnes, that ſhe was content to acknowledge it to both. For, (hauing many times torne the vaile of modeſtie)it ſeemed, for a laſte delight, that ſhe delighted in infamy: which often ſhe had vſed to her huſbands ſhame,filling

all

all mens eares (but his) with reproch; while he (hoodwinkt with kindnes) left of al mẽ knew who ſtrake him. But her firſt degree was, by ſetting foorth her beauties, (truely in nature not to be miſliked, but as much aduãced to the eye, as abaſed to the iudgemẽt by arte) thereby to bring vs (as willingly-caught fiſhes) to bite at her baite. And thereto had ſhe that ſcutchion of her deſires ſupported by certain badly-diligẽt miniſters, who oftẽ cloyed our eares with her praiſes, & would needs teach vs a way of felicitie by ſeeking her fauor. But when ſhe found, that we were as deaf to thẽ, as dumb to her; then ſhe liſted no lõger ſtay in the ſuburbs of her fooliſh deſires, but directly entred vpõ thẽ; making her ſelf an impudent ſuter, authorizing her ſelfe very much with making vs ſee that all fauor & power in that realm, ſo depẽded vpon her, that now (being in her hands) we were ether to keep, or loſe our liberty, at her diſcretiõ; which yet ſhe ſo tẽpred, as that we might rather ſuſpect, thẽ ſhe threatẽ. But whẽ our woũds grew ſo, as that they gaue vs leaue to trauell, & that ſhe found we were purpoſed to vſe all meanes we could to depart thence, ſhe (with more & more importunatnes) craued that, which in all good maners was ether of vs to be deſired, or not granted. Truely (moſt faire & euery way excellẽt Lady) you would haue wondred to haue ſeene, how before vs ſhe would confes the contentiõ in her own mind, between that louely (indeed moſt louely) broũnes of *Muſidorus* his face, & this colour of mine, which ſhe (in the deceiuable ſtile of affection) would intitle beautifull: how her eyes wandered (like a glutton at a feaſt) from the one to the other; and how her wordes would beginne halfe of the ſentence to *Muſidorus*, & end the other half

to

to *Pyrocles*: not aſhamed (ſeeing the friendſhippe betweene vs) to deſire either of vs to be a mediator to the other; as if we ſhould haue played a requeſt at Tennis betweene vs: and often wiſhing, that ſhe might be the angle, where the lines of our friendſhippe might meet; and be the knotte which might tie our hartes together. Which proceeding of hers I doo the more largely ſet before you (moſt deare Lady) that by the foyle therof, you may ſee the noblenes of my deſire to you, & the warrantablenes of your fauour to me.

4 At that *Philoclea* ſmiled, with a little nod. But (ſaide *Pyrocles*) when ſhe perceiued no hope by ſuite to preuaile, then (perſwaded by the rage of affection, and encouraged by daring to doo any thing) ſhe founde meanes to haue vs accuſed to the King, as though we went about ſome practiſe to ouerthrowe him in his owne eſtate. Which, becauſe of the ſtraunge ſucceſſes we had in the kingdomes of *Phrigia*, *Pontus* & *Galatia*) ſeemed not vnlikely to him, who (but ſkimming any thing that came before him) was diſciplined to leaue the through-handling of all, to his gentle wife: who foorthwith cauſed vs to be put in priſon, hauing (while we ſlept) depriued vs of our armour: a priſon, indeede iniurious, becauſe a priſon, but els well teſtifying affection, becauſe in all reſpectes as commodious, as a priſon might be: and indeede ſo placed, as ſhe might at all houres, (not ſeene by many; though ſhe cared not much how many had ſeene her) come vnto vs. Then fell ſhe to ſauſe her deſires with threatnings, ſo that we were in a great perplexitie, reſtrained to ſo vnworthie a bondage, and yet reſtrained by Loue, which (I cannot tell how) in noble mindes, by a certain duety, claimes

an

an anſwering. And how much that loue might mooue vs, ſo much, and more that faultines of her mind remoued vs; her beautie being balanced by her ſhameleſnes. But that which did (as it were) tie vs in captiuitie, was, that to graunt, had ben wickedly iniurious to him, that ſaued our liues: and to accuſe a Ladie that loued vs, of her loue vnto vs, we eſteemed almoſt as diſhonorable: & but by one of thoſe waies we ſawe no likelihood of going out of that place, where the words would be iniurious to your eares, which ſhould expreſſe the manner of her ſuite: while yet many times earneſtnes died her cheekes with the colour of ſhamefaſtnes; and wanton languiſhing borrowed of her eies the downe-caſt looke of modeſtie. But we in the meane time far from louing her, and often aſſuring her, that we would not ſo recompence her husbandes ſauing of our liues; to ſuch a ridiculous degree of truſting her, ſhe had brought him, that ſhe cauſed him ſende vs worde, that vpon our liues, we ſhould doo whatſoeuer ſhe commaunded vs: good man, not knowing any other, but that all her pleaſures bent to the preſeruation of his eſtate. But when that made vs rather pittie, then obey his folly, then fel ſhe to ſeruile entreating vs, as though force could haue bene the ſchoole of Loue, or that an honeſt courage would not rather ſtriue againſt, then yeelde to iniurie. All which yet could not make vs accuſe her, though it made vs almoſt pine awaie for ſpight, to looſe any of our time in ſo troubleſome an idleneſſe.

But while we were thus full of wearineſſe of what was paſt, and doubt of what was to follow, Loue (that I thinke in the courſe of my life hath a ſporte ſometimes

to poiſon me with roſes, ſometimes to heale me with wormewood) brought forth a remedy vnto vs: which though it helped me out of that diſtres, alas the cõcluſion was ſuch, as I muſt euer while I liue, think it worſe then a wracke, ſo to haue bene preſerued. This King by this Queene had a ſonne of tender age, but of great expectation, brought vp in the hope of themſelues, & already acceptation of the inconſtant people, as ſucceſſour of his fathers crowne: whereof he was as worthy, conſidering his partes, as vnworthie, in reſpect of the wrong was therby done againſt the moſt worthy *Plangus*: whoſe great deſertes now either forgotten, or vngratefully remembred, all men ſet their ſayles with the fauourable winde, which blewe on the fortune of this young Prince, perchaunce not in their harts, but ſurely not in their mouths, now giuing *Plangus* (who ſome yeares before was their only chãpion) the poore cõfort of calamitie, pittie. This youth therefore accounted Prince of that regiõ, by name *Palladius*, did with vehement affection loue a young Ladie, brought vp in his fathers court, called *Zelmane*, daughter to that miſchieuouſly vnhappie Prince *Plexirtus* (of whom already I haue, and ſometimes muſt make, but neuer honorable mention) left there by her father, becauſe of the intricate changeablenes of his eſtate; he by the motherſide being halfe brother to this Queene *Andromana*, and therefore the willinger committing her to her care. But as Loue (alas) doth not alwaies reflect it ſelfe, ſo fel it out that this *Zelmane*, (though truely reaſon there was inough to loue *Palladius*) yet could not euer perſwade her harte to yeelde thereunto: with that paine to *Palladius*, as they feele, that feele an vnloued loue.

Yet

Yet louing indeede, and therefore conſtant, he vſed ſtill the interceſſion of diligẽce and faith, euer hoping, becauſe he would not put him ſelfe into that hell, to be hopeleſſe: vntill the time of our being come, and captiued there, brought foorth this ende, whiche truely deſerues of me a further degree of ſorrow then teares.

Such was therein my ill deſtinie, that this young 6
Ladie *Zelmane* (like ſome vnwiſely liberall, that more delight to giue preſentes, then pay debtes) ſhe choſe (alas for the pittie) rather to beſtowe her loue (ſo much vndeſerued, as not deſired) vpon me, then to recõpence him, whoſe loue (beſides many other things) might ſeeme (euen in the court of Honour) iuſtly to claime it of her. But ſo it was (alas that ſo it was) whereby it came to paſſe, that (as nothing doth more naturally follow his cauſe, then care to preſerue, and benefite doth follow vnfained affection) ſhe felt with me, what I felte of my captiuitie, and ſtreight laboured to redreſſe my paine, which was her paine: which ſhe could do by no better meanes, then by vſing the helpe therein of *Palladius*: who (true Louer) conſidering what, and not why, in all her commaundements; and indeed ſhe concealing from him her affection (which ſhe intituled compaſſion,) immediatly obeyed to imploy his vttermoſt credite to relieue vs: which though as great, as a beloued ſon with a mother, faulty otherwiſe, but not hard harted toward him, yet it could not preuaile to procure vs libertie. Wherefore he ſought to haue that by practiſe, which he could not by praier. And ſo being allowed often to viſit vs (for indeed our reſtraints were more, or leſſe, according as the ague of

her paſſion was either in the fit, or intermiſſion) he vſed the opportunitie of a fit time thus to deliuer vs.

CHAP. 21.

[1] The cauſe of the Iberian *yearely iuſtes. [2] Queene* Helens *prayſes. [3] The prize borne by her Knights, which* Palladius *and the Princes ſet them to reuerſe. [4] The inuentions and actions of ſeuen tilters. [5]* Palladius *and the Princes entry into the field, honour in it, and flight from it. [6]* Andromanas *purſuite of them [7] to the death of her ſonne [8] and her ſelfe.*

1 THe time of the maryinge that Queene was euery year, by the extreame loue of her husband, & the ſeruiceable loue of the Courtiers, made notable by ſome publike honours, which indeede (as it were) proclaymed to the worlde, how deare ſhe was to the people. Among other, none was either more gratefull to the beholders, or more noble in it ſelfe, then iuſts, both with ſword and launce, mainteined for a ſeuen-night together: wherein that Nation dooth ſo excell, bothe for comelines and hablenes, that from neighbour-countries they ordinarily come, ſome to ſtriue, ſome to learne, and ſome to behold.

2 This day it happened that diuers famous Knights came thither frō the court of *Helen*, Queene of *Corinth*; a Ladie, whom Fame at that time was ſo deſirous to honor, that ſhe borrowed all mens mouthes to ioyne with

with the ſounde of her Trumpet. For as her beautie hath wonne the prize from all women, that ſtande in degree of compariſon (for as for the two ſiſters of *Arcadia*, they are farre beyond all conceipt of compariſon) ſo hath her gouernment bene ſuch, as hath bene no leſſe beautifull to mens iudgements, then her beautie to the eieſight. For being brought by right of birth, a woman, a yong woman, a faire woman, to gouerne a people, in nature mutinouſly prowde, and alwaies before ſo vſed to hard gouernours, as they knew not how to obey without the ſworde were drawne. Yet could ſhe for ſome yeares, ſo carry her ſelfe among them, that they found cauſe in the delicacie of her ſex, of admiration, not of cõtempt: & which was notable, euen in the time that many countries were full of wars (which for old grudges to *Corinth* were thought ſtill would conclude there) yet ſo hãdled ſhe the matter, that the threatens euer ſmarted in the threatners; ſhe vſing ſo ſtraũge, and yet ſo well-ſucceeding a temper, that ſhe made her people by peace, warlike; her courtiers by ſports, learned; her Ladies by Loue, chaſt. For by continuall martiall exerciſes without bloud, ſhe made them perfect in that bloudy art. Her ſportes were ſuch as caried riches of Knowledge vpõ the ſtreame of Delight: & ſuch the behauiour both of her ſelfe, and her Ladies, as builded their chaſtitie, not vpon waywardnes, but by choice of worthines: So as it ſeemed, that court to haue bene the mariage place of Loue and Vertue, & that her ſelfe was a *Diana* apparelled in the garments of *Venus*. And this which Fame onely deliuered vnto me, (for yet I haue neuer ſeene her) I am the willinger to ſpeake of to you, who (I knowe) knowe her better, being your neere

neighbour, becauſe you may ſee by her example (in her ſelfe wiſe, and of others beloued) that neither follie is the cauſe of vehement Loue, nor reproch the effect. For neuer (I thinke) was there any woman, that with more vnremoueable determinatiõ gaue her ſelf to the coũcell of Loue, after ſhe had once ſet before her mind the worthines of your couſin *Amphialus*; & yet is nether her wiſedome doubted of, nor honour blemiſhed. For (O God) what doth better become wiſdome, then to diſcerne, what is worthy the louing? what more agreable to goodnes, then to loue it ſo diſcerned? and what to greatneſſe of hart, then to be conſtant in it once loued? But at that time, that Loue of hers was not ſo publikely knowne, as the death of *Philoxenus*, and her ſearch of *Amphialus* hath made it: but then ſeemed to haue ſuch leaſure to ſende thither diuerſe choyſe Knights of her court, becauſe they might bring her, at leſt the knowledge, perchaunce the honour, of that Triumph.

3 Wherein ſo they behaued themſelues as for three daies they caried the prize; which being come from ſo farre a place to diſgrace her ſeruaunts, *Palladius* (who himſelfe had neuer vſed armes) perſuaded the Queene *Andromana* to be content (for the honour ſake of her court) to ſuffer vs two to haue our horſe and armour, that he with vs might vndertake the recouerie of their loſt honour: which ſhe graunted; taking our oth to go no further then her ſonne, and neuer to abandon him. Which ſhe did not more for ſauing him, then keeping vs: and yet not ſatisfied with our oth, appointed a band of horſemen to haue eye, that we ſhould not go beyond appointed limits. We were willing to gratifie

the

the young Prince, who (we ſaw) loued vs. And ſo the fourth day of that exerciſe, we came into the fielde: where (I remember) the manner was, that the forenoone they ſhould run at tilt, one after the other: the afternoone in a broad field, in manner of a battell, till either the ſtrangers, or that countrie Knights wan the field.

The firſt that ran was a braue Knight, whoſe deuiſe 4
was to come in, all chayned with a Nymph leading him: his *Impreſa* was

Againſt him came forth an *Iberian* whoſe manner of entring was, with bagpipes in ſteed of trumpets; a ſhepheards boy before him for a Page, and by him a doſen apparelled like ſhepherds for the faſhion, though rich in ſtuffe, who caried his launces, which though ſtrong to giue a launcely blow indeed, yet ſo were they couloured with hooks neere the mourn, that they pretily repreſẽted ſhephooks. His own furniture was dreſt ouer with wooll, ſo enriched with Iewels artificially placed, that one would haue thought it a mariage betweene the loweſt and the higheſt. His *Impreſa* was a ſheepe marked with pitch, with this word *Spotted to be knowne*. And becauſe I may tell you out his conceipt (though that were not done, till the running for that time was ended) before the Ladies departed from the windowes, among them there was one (they ſay) that was the *Star*, wherby his courſe was only directed. The ſhepherds attending vpõ *PHILISIDES* went amõg thẽ, & ſãg an eclogue; one of thẽ anſwering another, while the other ſhepheards pulling out recorders (which poſſeſt the place of pipes) accorded their muſick to the others voice. The Eclogue had great praiſe:

I onely remember ſixe verſes, while hauing queſtioned one with the other, of their fellow-ſhepheards ſodaine growing a man of armes, and the cauſe of his ſo doing, they thus ſaid.

ME thought ſome ſtaues he miſt: if ſo, not much amiſſe:
For where he moſt would hit, he euer yet did miſſe.
One ſaid he brake acroſſe; full well it ſo might be:
For neuer was there man more croſſely croſt then he.
But moſt cryed, O well broke: O foole full gaily bleſt:
Where failing is a ſhame, and breaking is his beſt.

Thus I haue digreſt, becauſe his maner liked me wel: But when he began to run againſt *LElius*, it had neere growne (though great loue had euer bene betwixt them) to a quarrell. For *Philiſides* breaking his ſtaues with great commendation, *Lelius* (who was knowne to be ſecond to none in the perfection of that Art) ranne euer ouer his head, but ſo finely to the ſkilfull eyes, that one might well ſee, he ſhewed more knowledge in miſſing, then others did in hitting. For with ſo gallant a grace his ſtaffe came ſwimming cloſe ouer the creſt of the Helmet, as if he would repreſent the kiſſe, and not the ſtroke of *Mars*. But *Philiſides* was much moued with it, while he thought *Lelius* would ſhew a contempt of his youth: till *Lelius* (who therefore would ſatiſfie him, becauſe he was his friend) made him know, that to ſuch bondage he was for ſo many courſes tyed by her, whoſe diſgraces to him were graced by her excellency, and whoſe iniuries he could neuer otherwiſe returne, then honours.

But ſo by *Lelius* willing-miſſing was the odds of the

Iberian

Iberian ſide, and continued ſo in the next by the excellent rũning of a Knight, though foſtred ſo by the *Muſes*, as many times the verie ruſtick people left both their delights and profites to harken to his ſongs, yet could he ſo well perfourme all armed ſports, as if he had neuer had any other pen, then a Launce in his hand. He came in like a wild man; but ſuch a wildnes, as ſhewed his eye-ſight had tamed him, full of withered leaues, which though they fell not, ſtill threatned falling. His *Impreſa* was, a mill-horſe ſtill bound to goe in one circle; with this word, *Data fata ſequutus*. But after him the *Corinthian* Knights abſolutely preuailed, eſpecially a great noble man of *Corinth*; whoſe deuiſe was to come without any deuiſe, all in white like a new knight, as indeed he was; but ſo new, as his newnes ſhamed moſt of the others long exerciſe. Then another from whoſe tent I remember a birde was made flie, with ſuch art to carry a written embaſſage among the Ladies, that one might ſay, If a liue bird, how ſo taught? if a dead bird, how ſo made? Then he, who hidden, man and horſe in a great figure liuely repreſenting the *Phœnix*: the fire tooke ſo artificially, as it conſumed the birde, and left him to riſe as it were, out of the aſhes thereof. Againſt whom was the fine froſen Knight, froſen in deſpaire; but his armor ſo naturally repreſenting Ice, and all his furniture ſo liuely anſwering therto, as yet did I neuer ſee any thing that pleaſed me better.

But the delight of thoſe pleaſing ſights haue carried me too farre in an vnneceſſary diſcourſe. Let it then ſuffice (moſt excellent Ladie) that you know the *Corinthians* that morning in the exerciſe (as they had done the dayes before) had the better; *Palladius* neither ſuffring

vs,

vs, nor himſelfe to take in hand that partie till the after-noone; when we were to fight in troopes, not differing otherwiſe from earneſt, but that the ſharpeneſſe of the weapons was taken away. But in the triall *Palladius* (eſpecially led by *Muſidorus*, and ſomewhat aided by me) himſelfe truely behauing himſelfe nothing like a beginner, brought the honor to reſt it ſelfe that night of the *Iberian* ſide: And the next day, both morning, and after-noone being kept by our party, He (that ſaw the time fitte for that deliuerie he intended) called vnto vs to follow him; which we both bound by oth, and willing by good-wil, obeyed: and ſo the gard not daring to interrupt vs (he commanding paſſage) we went after him vpon the ſpur to a little houſe in a forreſt neere by: which he thought would be the fitteſt reſting place, till we might go further from his mothers fury, whereat he was no leſſe angry, & aſhamed, then deſirous to obay *Zelmane*.

6 But his mother (as I learned ſince) vnderſtanding by the gard her ſonnes conuaying vs away (forgetting her greatnes, & reſining modeſty to more quiet thoughts) flew out from her place, and cried to be accompanied, for ſhe her-ſelfe would follow vs. But what ſhe did (being rather with vehemency of paſſion, then conduct of reaſon) made her ſtumble while ſhe ran, & by her owne confuſion hinder her owne deſires. For ſo impatiently ſhe commanded, as a good while no body knew what ſhe cõmanded; ſo as we had gotten ſo far the ſtart, as to be alredy paſt the confines of her kingdome before ſhe ouertooke vs: and ouertake vs ſhe did in the kingdome of *Bythinia*, not regarding ſhame, or daunger of hauing entred into anothers dominions: but (hauing with her about

about a three ſcore horſ-men) ſtreight commaunded to take vs aliue, and not to regard her ſonnes threatening therein: which they attempted to do, firſt by ſpeach, & then by force. But neither liking their eloquence, nor fearing their might, we eſteemed few ſwordes in a iuſt defence, able to reſiſt any vniuſt aſſaulters. And ſo *Muſidorus* incredible valour (beating downe all lets) made both me, and *Palladius*, ſo good way, that we had little to doo to ouercome weake wrong.

And now had the victorie in effect without bloud, 7
when *Palladius* (heated with the fight, and angrie with his mothers fault) ſo purſued our aſſaylers, that one of them (who as I heard ſince had before our comming bene a ſpeciall minion of *Andromana*, and hated vs for hauing diſpoſſeſt him of her hart) taking him to be one of vs, with a traiterous blow ſlew his yoũg Prince: who falling downe before our eyes, whom he ſpecially had deliuered, iudge (ſweeteſt Lady) whether anger might not be called iuſtice in ſuch a caſe: once, ſo it wroght in vs, that many of his ſubiects bodies we left there dead, to wait on him more faithfully to the other world.

All this while diſdaine, ſtrengthened by the furie of 8
a furious loue, made *Andromana* ſtay to the laſt of the combat: & whẽ ſhe ſaw vs light down, to ſee what help we might do to the helpleſſe *Palladius*, ſhe came rũning madly vnto vs, then no leſſe threatning, when ſhe had no more power to hurt. But when ſhe perceiued it was her onely ſonne that lay hurt, and that his hurt was ſo deadly, as that alredy his life had loſte the vſe of the reaſonable, and almoſt ſenſible part; then onely did misfortune lay his owne ouglineſſe vpon his faulte, and make her ſee what ſhe had done, and to what ſhe was come: eſpeciallie, finding in vs rather deteſtation

then

then pittie (conſidering the loſſe of that young Prince) and reſolution preſently to depart, which ſtil ſhe laboured to ſtay. But depriued of all comfort, with eyes full of death, ſhe ranne to her ſonnes dagger, and before we were aware of it (who elſe could haue ſtayed it) ſtrake her ſelfe a mortall wound. But then her loue, though not her perſon, awaked pittie in vs, and I went to her, while *Muſidorus* labored about *Palladius*. But the wound was paſt the cure of a better ſurgeon then my ſelfe, ſo as I could but receaue ſome few of her dying words; which were curſings of her ill ſet affection, and wiſhing vnto me many croſſes & miſchances in my loue, whē-ſoeuer I ſhould loue, wherin I feare, and only feare that her prayer is from aboue granted. But the noiſe of this fight, & iſſue thereof being blazed by the country people to ſome noble-mē there-abouts, they came thither, and finding the wrong offered vs, let vs go on our iourney, we hauing recommended thoſe royal bodies vnto thē to be conueyed to the King of *Iberia*. With that *Philoclea*, ſeeing the teares ſtand in his eyes with remembrance of *Palladius*, but much more of that which thervpon grew, ſhe would needs drinke a kiſſe from thoſe eyes, and he ſucke another from her lippes; whereat ſhe bluſhed, & yet kiſſed him againe to hide her bluſhing. Which had almoſt brought *Pyrocles* into another diſcourſe, but that ſhe with ſo ſweete a rigor forbad him, that he durſt not rebell, though he found it a great war to keepe that peace, but was faine to go on his ſtorie: for ſo ſhe abſolutely badde him, and he durſt not know how to diſobey.

CHAP.

CHAP. 22.

[1] *A new complaint of* Pamphilus *new change,* [2] *to a graceleſſe curtiſan.* [3] Zelmane *loues, and as a Page ſerues* Pyrocles. [4] *The two Princes policie to reconcile two warring brothers.* [5] *The vnbrotherly braue combat of* Tydeus *and* Telenor. [6] Plexirtus *his viperine vnkindnes to the kindeſt* Leonatus. [7] *His conqueſt by the two brothers,* [8] *and his dogtrick to deſtroy them by themſelues.* [9] *The regreete of the dying brothers.*

SO (ſaid he) parting from that place before the Sunne had much abaſed himſelfe of his greateſt height, we ſawe ſitting vpon the drie ſandes (which yeelded at that time a verie hotte reflection) a faire Gentlewoman, whoſe geſture accuſed her of much ſorow, & euery way ſhewed ſhe cared not what paine ſhe put her body to, ſince the better parte (her minde) was laide vnder ſo much agonie: and ſo was ſhe dulled withall, that we could come ſo neare, as to heare her ſpeeches, and yet ſhe not perceiue the hearers of her lamentation. But wel we might vnderſtand her at times, ſay, Thou dooſt kill me with thy vnkind falſhood: and, It greeues me not to die, but it greeues me that thou art the murtherer: neither doth mine owne paine ſo much vexe me, as thy errour. For God knowes, it would not trouble me to be ſlaine for thee, but much it torm̃ets me to be ſlain by thee. Thou art vntrue, *Pamphilus*, thou art vntrue, and woe is me there- 1

therefore. How oft didſt thou ſweare vnto me, that the Sun ſhould looſe his light,and the rocks runne vp and down like little kiddes,before thou wouldſt falſifie thy faith to me? Sunne therefore put out thy ſhining,& rockes runne mad for ſorrow,for *Pamphilus* is falſe.But alas,the Sun keepes his light,though thy faith be darckned;the rockes ſtand ſtill, though thou change like the wethercocke. O foole that I am, that thought I coulde graſpe water, and binde the winde. I might well haue knowē thee by others,but I would not;&rather wiſhed to learne poiſon by drinking it my ſelfe, while my loue helped thy wordes to deceiue me. Well, yet I would thou hadſt made a better choiſe, when thou didſt forſake thy vnfortunate *Leucippe*.But it is no matter,*Baccha* (thy new miſtres)will reuenge my wrongs. But do not *Baccha*,let *Pamphilus* liue happie,though I die.

2 And much more to ſuch like phraſe ſhe ſpake, but that I(who had occaſion to know ſome-thing of that *Pamphilus*)ſtept to comfort her: & though I could not doo that,yet I gotte thus much knowledge of her, that this being the ſame *Leucippe*, to whom the vnconſtante *Pāphilus* had betrothed himſelfe,which had moued the other Ladies to ſuch indignation as I tolde you: nether her woorthineſſe (which in truthe was great) nor his owne ſuffering for her (which is woont to endeare affection)could fetter his ficklenes, but that before his mariage-day appointed, he had taken to wife that *Baccha*, of whom ſhe complayned; one,that in diuers places I had heard before blazed,as the moſt impudentlie vnchaſte woman of all *Aſia*; and withall,of ſuch an imperiouſnes therein, that ſhe would not ſtick to employ them (whom ſhe made vnhappie with her fauour) to draw

draw more companions of their follie: in the multitude of whom ſhe did no leſſe glorie, then a Captaine would doo, of being followed by braue ſouldiers: waiwardly proud; and therefore bold, becauſe extreamely faultie: and yet hauing no good thing to redeeme both theſe, and other vnlouely parts, but a little beautie, diſgraced with wandring eyes, and vnwaied ſpeeches; yet had *Pamphilus* (for her) left *Leucippe*, and withall, left his faith: *Leucippe*, of whom one looke (in a cleere iudgement) would haue bene more acceptable, then all her kindeneſſes ſo prodigallie beſtowed. For my ſelfe, the remembrance of his crueltie to *Dido*, ioyned to this, ſtirred me to ſeeke ſome reuenge vpon him, but that I thought, it ſhoulde be a gayne to him to loſe his life, being ſo matched: and therefore (leauing him to be puniſhed by his owne election) we conueyed *Leucippe* to a houſe thereby, dedicated to *Veſtall* Nunnes, where ſhe reſolued to ſpende all her yeares (which her youth promiſed ſhoulde be many) in bewayling the wrong, and yet praying for the wrong-dooer.

But the next morning, we (hauing ſtriuen with the 3
Sunnes earlines) were ſcarcely beyond the proſpect of the high turrets of that building, when there ouertoke vs a young Gentleman, for ſo he ſeemed to vs, but indeede (ſweete Ladie) it was the faire *Zelmane*, *Plexirtus* daughter; whom vnconſulting affection (vnfortunately borne to me-wards) had made borrowe ſo much of her naturall modeſtie, as to leaue her more-decent rayments, and taking occaſion of *Andromanas* tumultuous purſuing vs, had apparrelled her ſelfe like a Page, with a pittifull crueltie cutting of her golden haire, leauing nothing, but the ſhort curles, to couer that noble head,

but

but that ſhe ware vpon it a faire head-peece, a ſhielde at her back, and a launce in her hand, els diſarmed. Her apparrell of white, wrought vpon with broken knots, her horſe, faire & luſtie, which ſhe rid ſo, as might ſhew a fearefull boldnes, daring to doo that, which ſhe knew that ſhe knew not how to doo: and the ſweetnes of her countenance did giue ſuch a grace to what ſhe did, that it did make hanſome the vnhanſomnes, and make the eye force the minde to beleeue, that there was a praiſe in that vnſkilfulneſſe. But ſhe ſtraight approached me, and with fewe words, (which borowed the help of her countenance to make themſelues vnderſtood) ſhe deſired me to accept her in my ſeruice; telling me, ſhe was a noble-mans ſonne of *Iberia*, her name *Daiphantus*, who hauing ſeene what I had done in that court, had ſtolne from her father, to follow me. I enquired the particularities of the maner of *Andromanas* following me, which by her I vnderſtood, ſhe hiding nothing (but her ſexe) from me. And ſtill me thought I had ſeen that face, but the great alteration of her fortune, made her far diſtant from my memorie: but liking very well the yong Gentleman, (ſuch I tooke her to be) admitted this *Daiphantus* about me: who well ſhewed, there is no ſeruice like his, that ſerues becauſe he loues. For, though borne of Princes bloud, brought vp with tendereſt education, vnapt to ſeruice (becauſe a woman) & full of thoughts (becauſe in a ſtrange eſtate;) yet Loue enioyned ſuch diligence, that no apprentiſe, no, no bondſlaue could euer be by feare more readie at all commaundementes, then that yong Princeſſe was. How often (alas) did her eyes ſay vnto me, that they loued? and yet, I (not looking for ſuch a matter) had not my conceipt open, to vnder-

vnderſtand them. How oftē would ſhe come creeping to me, betweene gladnes to be neere me, & feare to offend me? Truly I remember, that then I maruailing, to ſee her receiue my cōmandements with ſighes, & yet do them with cheerefulnes: ſometimes anſwering me in ſuch riddles, as I then thought childiſh in experiēce: but ſince returning to my remēbrance, they haue come more neere vnto my knowledge: & pardon me (onely deare Lady) that I vſe many words: for her affection to me deſerues of me an affectionate ſpeach.

In ſuch ſort did ſhe ſerue me in that kingdom of *Bythinia*, for two moneths ſpace. In which time we brought to good end, a cruell warre long maintained betweene the King of *Bythinia* and his brother. For my excellent couſin, and I (diuiding our ſelues to either ſide) found meanes (after ſome triall we had made of our ſelues) to get ſuch credite with them, as we brought them to as great peace betweene thēſelues, as loue towards vs, for hauing made the peace. Which done, we intended to returne through the Kingdome of *Galatia*, towarde *Thrace*, to eaſe the care of our father and mother, who (we were ſure) firſt with the ſhipwracke; and then with the other daungers we dayly paſt, ſhould haue litle reſt in their thoughts, till they ſaw vs. 4

But we were not entred into that Kingdome, whē by the noiſe of a great fight, we were guided to a pleaſaunt valey, which like one of thoſe Circuſſes, which in great cities ſome-where doth giue a pleaſant ſpectacle of rūning horſes; ſo of either ſide ſtretching it ſelfe in a narrow length was it hemd in by wooddy hilles; as if indeed Nature had meant therein to make a place for beholders. And there we behelde one of the cruelleſt 5

fights betweene two Knights, that euer hath adorned the martial ſtorie. So as I muſt cõfeſſe, a while we ſtood wondring, another while delighted with the rare brauery therof; till ſeing ſuch ſtreames of bloud, as threatned a drowning of life, we galloped towarde them to part them. But we were preuented by a doſen armed Knights, or rather villains, who vſing this time of their extreame feebleneſſe, all together ſet vpon them. But common daunger brake of particular diſcorde, ſo that (though with a dying weakenes) with a liuely courage they reſiſted, and by our help draue away, or ſlue thoſe murdering attempters: among whom we hapt to take aliue the principall. But going to diſarme thoſe two excellent Knights, we found with no leſſe wonder to vs, then aſtoniſhment to themſelues, that they were the two valiaunt, and indeede famous Brothers, *Tydeus* and *Telenor*; whoſe aduenture (as afterwarde we made that vngratious wretch confeſſe) had thus fallen out.

6 After the noble Prince *Leonatus* had by his fathers death ſucceeded in the kingdome of *Galatia*, he (forgetting all former iniuries) had receiued that naughtie *Plexirtus* into a ſtreight degree of fauour, his goodneſſe being as apt to be deceiued, as the others crafte was to deceiue. Till by plaine proofe finding, that the vngratefull man went about to poyſon him, yet would not ſuffer his kindneſſe to be ouercome, not by iuſtice it ſelfe: but calling him to him, vſed wordes to this purpoſe. *Plexirtus* (ſaid he) this wickedneſſe is founde by thee. No good deedes of mine haue bene able to keepe it downe in thee. All men counſell me to take away thy life, likely to bring foorth nothing, but as

daunge-

daungerous, as wicked effects. But I cannot finde it in my harte, remembring what fathers ſonne thou arte. But ſince it is the violence of ambition, which perchaunce puls thee from thine owne iudgement, I will ſee, whether the ſatisfying that, may quiet the ill working of thy ſpirites. Not farre hence is the great cittie of *Trebiſonde*; which, with the territorie about it, aunciently pertained vnto this crowne, now vniuſtly poſſeſſed, and as vniuſtly abuſed by thoſe, who haue neither title to holde it, nor vertue to vſe it. To the conqueſt of that for thy ſelfe I will lende thee force, and giue thee my right. Go therfore, and with leſſe vnnaturalneſſe glut thy ambition there; and that done, if it be poſſible, learne vertue.

Plexirtus, mingling forſworne excuſes with falſe- 7
meant promiſes, gladly embraced the offer: and haſtilie ſending backe for thoſe two Brothers (who at that time were with vs ſuccouring the gratious Queen *Erona*) by their vertue chiefly (if not onely) obteyned the conqueſt of that goodly dominion. Which indeede done by them, gaue them ſuch an authoritie, that though he raigned, they in effect ruled, moſt men honouring them, becauſe they onely deſerued honour; and many, thinking therein to pleaſe *Plexirtus*, conſidering how much he was bound vnto them: while they likewiſe (with a certaine ſincere boldeneſſe of ſelfe-warranting friendſhip) accepted all openly and plainely, thinking nothing ſhould euer by *Plexirtus* be thought too much in them, ſince all they were, was his.

But he (who by the rules of his own mind, could cõ- 8
ſtrue no other end of mẽs doings, but ſelf ſeking) ſodẽly

feared what they could doo; and as ſodainely ſuſpected, what they would doo, and as ſodainely hated them, as hauing both might, and minde to doo. But dreading their power, ſtanding ſo ſtrongly in their owne valour,& others affection,he durſt not take open way againſt them: and as harde it was to take a ſecrete, they being ſo continually followed by the beſt, & euery way hableſt of that region:and therfore vſed this diueliſh ſleight(which I wil tel you) not doubting(moſt wicked man)to turne their owne friēdſhip toward him to their owne deſtruction. He,(knowing that they wel knew, there was no friendſhip betweene him and the new King of *Pontus*, neuer ſince he ſuccoured *Leonatus* and vs,to his ouerthrow) gaue them to vnderſtand that of late there had paſſed ſecrete defiance betweene them, to meete priuately at a place apointed. Which though not ſo fit a thing for men of their greatnes, yet was his honour ſo engaged, as he could not go backe. Yet faining to find himſelf weake by ſome counterfait infirmitie,the day drawing neere,he requeſted each of them to go in his ſtead; making either of thē ſweare,to keep the matter ſecret,euer ech frō other,deliuering the ſelfe ſame particularities to both, but that he told *Tydeus*,the King would meet him in a blew armour; & *Telenor*,that it was a black armour: & with wicked ſubtiltie (as if it had bene ſo apointed) cauſed *Tydeus* to take a black armour,&*Telenor* a blew;appointing them waies how to go,ſo as he knew they ſhould not meet,til they came to the place appointed, where each had promiſed to keep ſilence, leſt the King ſhould diſcouer it was not *Plexirtus*:and there in await had he laied theſe murtherers, that who ouerliued the other,ſhould by them

be

be diſpatched: he not daring truſt more then thoſe, with that enterpriſe,and yet thinking them too few,till themſelues by themſelues were weakened.

This we learned chiefly, by the chiefe of thoſe way- 9
beaters, after the death of thoſe worthie brothers, whoſe loue was no leſſe,then their valour: but well we might finde much thereof by their pitifull lamentation, when they knew their miſmeeting, and ſaw each other (in deſpite of the Surgerie we could doo vnto them)ſtriuing who ſhould runne faſteſt to the goale of death: each bewailing the other, and more dying in the other, then in himſelfe: curſing their owne hands for doing, and their breaſtes for not ſooner ſuffering: deteſting their vnfortunately-ſpent time in hauing ſerued ſo vngrateful a Tyraunt:and accuſing their folly in hauing beleeued,he could faithfully loue,who did not loue faithfulnes: wiſhing vs to take heed, how we placed our good wil vpon any other ground, then proofe of vertue: ſince length of acquaintance,mutuall ſecrecies, nor height of benefits could binde a ſauage harte; no man being good to other, that is not good in himſelf. Then(while any hope was)beſeeching vs to leaue the cure of him that beſought, and onely looke to the other. But when they found by themſelues,and vs,no poſſibilitie,they deſired to be ioined;and ſo embracing and crauing that pardon each of other, which they denied to themſelues, they gaue vs a moſt ſorrowfull ſpectacle of their death; leauing fewe in the world behind them, their matches in any thing, if they had ſoone inough knowne the ground and limits of friendſhip. But with wofull hartes, we cauſed thoſe bodies to be conueyed to the nexte towne of *Bythinia*, where we

learning thus much (as I haue tolde you) cauſed the wicked Hiſtorian to cõclude his hiſtory, with his owne well-deſerued death.

CHAP. 23.

[1] Zelmanes *griefe for* Plexirtus *fault.* [2] Otaues, *and his Gyants warre on* Pontus. [3] Plexirtus *endaungered, needes helpe of the dead brothers.* [4] Zelmane *thought-ſicke, vnmaskes her ſelfe.* [5] *Her dying teares* [6] *and laſt requeſtes.* [7] Muſidorus *to* Pontus, Pyrocles *hardly partes to ſaue* Plexirtus. [8] *The ſourſe and courſe of his deaths-doome,* [9] *ſtayed by* Pyrocles. [10] *The combat of* Pontus *well ended.* [11] *The* Aſian *Princes meeting, to honour the two* Greekes.

1 BVt then (I muſt tell you) I found ſuch wofull countenances in *Daiphantus*, that I could not but much maruaile (finding them continew beyond the firſt aſſault of pittie) how the cauſe of ſtrangers (for further I did not conceiue) could ſo deepely pearce. But the truth indeed is, that partly with the ſhame & ſorrow ſhe tooke of her fathers faultineſſe, partly with the feare, that the hate I cõceiued againſt him, would vtterly diſgrace her in my opinion, whenſoeuer I ſhould know her, ſo vehemently perplexed her, that her fayre colour decaied; and dayly, and haſtily grew into the very extreme working of ſorowfulneſſe: which oft I ſought to learne, & helpe. But ſhe, as fearefull as louing, ſtill concealed it;

and

and ſo decaying ſtill more and more, in the excellencie of her faireneſſe, but that whatſoeuer weakeneſſe took away, pitie ſeemed to adde: yet ſtill ſhe forced her ſelfe to waite on me, with ſuch care and diligence, as might well ſhew had bene taught in no other ſchoole, but Loue.

2 While we returning againe to embarke our ſelues for *Greece*, vnderſtood that the mighty *Otanes* (brother to *Barzanes* ſlaine by *Muſidorus*, in the battaile of the ſix Princes) had entred vpõ the kingdome of *Pontus*, partly vpon the pretences he had to the crowne, but principally, becauſe he would reuenge vpon him (whom he knew we loued) the loſſe of his brother: thincking (as indeede he had cauſe) that whereſoeuer we were, hearing of his extremitie, we would come to relieue him; in ſpite whereof he doubted not to preuaile, not onely vpon the confidence of his owne vertue and power, but eſpecially becauſe he had in his cõpany two mighty *Giants*, ſonnes to a couple whom we ſlue in the ſame realme: they hauing bene abſent at their fathers death, and now returned, willingly entered into his ſeruice, hating (more then he) both vs, and that King of *Pontus*. We therefore withall ſpeede went thetherwarde, but by the way this fell out, which whenſoeuer I remember without ſorrow, I muſt forget withall, all humanitie.

3 Poore *Daiphantus* fell extreme ſick, yet would needs conquere the delicacie of her conſtitution, and force her ſelfe to waite on me: till one day going towarde *Pontus*, we met one, who in great haſt went ſeeking for *Tydeus* & *Telenor*, whoſe death as yet was not knowne vnto the meſſenger; who (being their ſeruaunt and

knowing how deerely they loued *Plexirtus*) brought them word, how ſince their departing, *Plexirtus* was in prent daunger of a cruel death, if by the valiantneſſe of one of the beſt Knightes of the world, he were not reſkewed: we enquired no further of the matter (being glad he ſhould now to his loſſe finde what an vnprofitable treaſon it had bene vnto him, to diſmember himſelfe of two ſuch friendes) and ſo let the meſſenger part, not ſticking to make him know his maſters deſtruction, by the falſhood of *Plexirtus*.

4 But the griefe of that (finding a bodie alreadie brought to the laſt degree of weakeneſſe) ſo ouerwhelmed the little remnant of the ſpirits left in *Daiphantus*, that ſhe fell ſodainely into deadly ſoundings; neuer comming to her ſelfe, but that withall ſhe returned to make moſt pittifull lamentations; moſt ſtraunge vnto vs, becauſe we were farre from gheſſing the ground thereof. But finding her ſickneſſe ſuch, as beganne to print death in her eyes, we made al haſt poſſible to conuey her to the next towne: but before we could lay her on a bed, both we, & ſhe might find in herſelfe, that the harbinger of ouer-haſtie death, had prepared his lodging in that daintie body, which ſhe vndoubtedly feeling, with a weake chearefulnes, ſhewed cõfort therin; and then deſiring vs both to come neere her, & that no bodie els might be preſent; with pale, and yet (euen in palenes) louely lippes, Now or neuer, and neuer indeed, but now it is time for me (ſaid ſhe) to ſpeake: and I thanke death which gaue me leaue to diſcouer that, the ſuppreſſing whereof perchance hath bene the ſharpeſt ſpur, that hath haſted my race to this end. Know then my Lords, and eſpecially you my Lord and maſter,

ſter, *Pyrocles*, that your page *Daiphantus* is the vnfortunat *Zelmane*, who for your ſake cauſed my (as vnfortunate) louer, and coſen, *Palladius*, to leaue his fathers court, and cõſequently, both him & my Aunt his mother, to looſe their liues. For your ſake my ſelfe haue become, of a Princeſſe a Page: and for your ſake haue put off the apparell of a woman, & (if you iudge not more mercifully) modeſtie. We were amazed at her ſpeach, and thẽ had (as it were) new eyes giuẽ vs to perceue that which before had bene a preſent ſtrãger to our minds. For indeed, we forthwith knew it to be the face of *Zelmane*, whõ before we had knowen in the court of *Iberia*. And ſorrow and pittie laying her paine vpon me, I comforted her the beſt I could by the tendernes of good-will, pretending indeed better hope then I had of her recouery.

But ſhe that had inward ambaſſadors from the tyrãt that ſhould ſhortly oppreſſe her, No, my deere maſter (ſaid ſhe) I neither hope nor deſire to liue. I know you would neuer haue loued me (&with that ſhe wept) nor, alas, had it bene reaſon you ſhould, conſidering manie wayes my vnworthines. It ſufficeth me that the ſtrange courſe I haue takẽ, ſhall to your remembrance, witneſſe my loue: and yet this breaking of my harte, before I would diſcouer my paine, will make you (I hope) think I was not altogether vnmodeſt. Thinke of me ſo, deare Maſter, and that thought ſhal be my life: and with that, languiſhingly looking vpon me; And I pray you (ſaid ſhe) euen by theſe dying eies of mine (which are onely ſorrie to dye, becauſe they ſhall loſe your ſight) and by theſe pouled lockes of mine (which while they were long, were the ornament of my ſex, now in their ſhort curles

curles, the testimonie of my seruitude) and by the seruice I haue done you (which God knowes hath beene full of loue) thinke of me after my death with kindnes, though ye cannot with loue. And whensoeuer ye shall make any other Ladie happie with your placed affectiō, if you tell her my folly, I pray you speake of it, not with scorne, but with pitie. I assure you (deare Princesse of my life, for how could it be otherwise?) her words and her manners, with the liuely consideration of her loue, so pearced mē, that I, though I had diuerse griefes before, yet me thought I neuer felt till then, how much sorow enfeebleth all resolution. For I coulde not chuse, but yeeld to the weakenes of abundant weeping; in trueth with such griefe, that I could willingly at that time haue chaunged liues with her.

6 But when she saw my teares, O God (said she) howe largely am I recompenced for my losses? why then (said shee) I may take boldnesse to make some requests vnto you. I besought her to doo, vowing the performance, though my life were the price therof. She shewed great ioy: The first (said she) is this, that you will pardon my father the displeasure you haue iustly conceiued against him, and for this once succour, him out of the daunger wherin he is: I hope he will amende: and I pray you, whensoeuer you remember him to be the faultie *Plexirtus*, remember withall that he is *Zelmanes* father. The second is, that when you come into *Greece*, you will take vnto your selfe this name (though vnlucky) of *Daiphantus*, and vouchsafe to be called by it: for so shal I be sure, you shall haue cause to remember me: and let it please your noble cousin to be called *Palladius*, that I doo that right to that poore Prince, that his name may yet liue

vpon

vpon the earth in ſo excellent a perſon: and ſo betwene you, I truſt ſometimes your vnluckie page ſhall be (perhaps with a ſigh) mencioned. Laſtly, let me be buried here obſcurely, not ſuffering my friends to knowe my fortune, till (when you are ſafely retu[r]ned to your own countrie) you cauſe my bones to be conueied thither, and laid (I beſeech you) in ſome place, where your ſelfe vouchſafe ſometimes to reſort. Alas, ſmall petitions for ſuch a ſuter; which yet ſhe ſo earneſtly craued, that I was faine to ſweare the accompliſhment. And then kiſſing me, & often deſiring me not to condemne her of lightneſſe, in mine armes ſhe deliuered her pure ſoule to the pureſt place: leauing me as full of agonie, as kindnes, pitie, and ſorow could make an honeſt harte. For I muſt confeſſe for true, that if my ſtarres had not wholy reſerued me for you, there els perhaps I might haue loued, & (which had bene moſt ſtrange) begun my loue after death: whereof let it be the leſſe maruaile, becauſe ſomwhat ſhee did reſemble you: though as farre ſhort of your perfectiō, as her ſelfe dying, was of her flouriſhing: yet ſomthing there was, which (when I ſaw a picture of yours) brought againe her figure into my remēbrance, and made my harte as apte to receiue the wounde, as the power of your beauty with vnreſiſtable force to peance.

But we in wofull (& yet priuat) manner burying her, performed her commandement: & then enquiring of her fathers eſtate, certainly learned that he was preſentlie to be ſuccoured, or by death to paſſe the neede of ſuccour. Therfore we determined to diuide our ſelues; I, according to my vowe, to helpe him, and *Muſidorus* toward the King of *Pontus*, who ſtood in no leſſe need 7

then

then immediate ſuccour, and euen readie to depart one from the other, there came a meſſenger from him, who after ſome enquirie found vs, giuing vs to vnderſtand, that he truſting vpon vs two, had apointed the combat betweene him & vs, againſt *Otaues*, and the two *Gyants*. Now the day was ſo accorded, as it was impoſſible for me both to ſuccour *Plexirtus*, & be there, where my honour was not onely gaged ſo far, but (by the ſtraunge working of vniuſt fortune) I was to leaue the ſtanding by *Muſidorus*, whom better then my ſelfe I loued, to go ſaue him whom for iuſt cauſes I hated. But my promiſe giuen, & giuen to *Zelmane*, & to *Zelmane* dying, preuailed more with me, then my friendſhip to *Muſidorus*: though certainely I may affirme, nothing had ſo great rule in my thoughts, as that. But my promiſe caried me the eaſier, becauſe *Muſidorus* himſelfe would not ſuffer me to breake it. And ſo with heauy mindes (more careful each of others ſucceſſe, thē of our owne) we parted; I towarde the place, where I vnderſtood *Plexirtus* was priſoner to an auncient Knight, abſolutely gouerning a goodly Caſtle, with a large territory about it, whereof he acknowledged no other ſoueraigne, but himſelfe: whoſe hate to *Plexirtus*, grew for a kinſman of his, whō he malitiouſly had murdered, becauſe in the time that he raigned in *Galatia*, he foūd him apt to practiſe for the reſtoring of his vertuous brother *Leonatus*. This old Knight, ſtill thirſting for reuenge, vſed (as the way to it) a pollicie, which this occaſion I will tell you, prepared for him. *Plexirtus* in his youth had maried *Zelmanes* mother, who dying of that only child-birth, he a widdower, and not yet a King, haunted the Court of *Armenia*; where (as he was cunning to winne fauour)

uour) he obteined great good liking of *Artaxia*, which he purſued, till (being called home by his father) he falſly got his fathers kingdome; and then neglected his former loue: till throwen out of that (by our meanes) before he was deeply rooted in it, and by and by again placed in *Trebiſonde*, vnderſtanding that *Artaxia* by her brothers death was become Queen of *Armenia*, he was hotter then euer, in that purſuit, which being vnderſtood by this olde Knight, he forged ſuch a letter, as might be written from *Artaxia*, entreating his preſent (but very priuie) repaire thether, giuing him faithfull promiſe of preſente mariage: a thing farre from her thought, hauing faithfully, and publiquely proteſted, that ſhe would neuer marrie any, but ſome ſuch Prince who woulde giue ſure proofe, that by his meanes we were deſtroyed. But he (no more wittie to frame, then blinde to iudge hopes) bitte haſtely at the baite, and in priuate maner poaſted toward her, but by the way he was met by this Knight, far better accompanied, who quickly laid holde of him, & condemned him to death, cruell inough, if any thing may be both cruell and iuſt. For he cauſed him to be kept in a miſerable priſon, till a day appointed, at which time he would deliuer him to be deuoured by a monſtrous beaſt, of moſt vgly ſhape, armed like a *Rhinoceros*, as ſtrong as an Elephant, as fierce as a Lion, as nimble as a Leopard, and as cruell as a Tigre: whom he hauing kept in a ſtrong place, from the firſt youth of it, now thought no fitter match, then ſuch a beaſtly monſter with a monſtrous Tyrant: proclaiming yet withall, that if any ſo well loued him, as to venture their liues againſt this beaſt, for him, if they ouercame, he ſhould be ſaued: not caring how many

they

they were (ſuch confidence he had in the monſters ſtrength) but eſpecially hoping to entrappe therby the great courages of *Tydeus* and *Telenor*, whom he no leſſe hated, becauſe they had bene principall inſtruments of the others power.

9 I dare ſay, if *Zelmane* had knowen what daunger I ſhould haue paſſed, ſhe would rather haue let her father periſhe, then me to haue bidden that aduenture. But my word was paſt, and truely, the hardnes of the enterpriſe, was not ſo much a bitte, as a ſpurre vnto me; " knowing well, that the iorney of high honor lies not in plaine wayes. Therefore, going thether, and taking ſufficient ſecuritie, that *Plexirtus* ſhould be deliuered if I were victorious, I vndertooke the combatte: and (to make ſhorte, excellent Ladie, and not trouble your eares with recounting a terrible matter) ſo was my weakenes bleſſed from aboue, that without dangerous wounds I ſlewe that monſter, which hundreds durſte not attempt: to ſo great admiration of many (who from a ſafe place might looke on) that there was order giuen, to haue the fight, both by ſculpture and picture, celebrated in moſt parts of *Aſia*. And the olde nobleman ſo well liked me, that he loued me; onely bewayling, my vertue had beene imployed to ſaue a worſe monſter then I killed: whom yet (according to faith giuen) he deliuered, and accompanied me to the kingdome of *Pontus*, whether I would needes in all ſpeede go, to ſee whether it were poſſible for me (if perchance the day had bene delaied) to come to the combat. But that (before I came) had bene thus finiſhed.

10 The vertuous *Leonatus* vnderſtanding two ſo good friends of his were to be in that danger, would perforce

be

be one him ſelfe: where he did valiantly, and ſo did the King of *Pontus*. But the truthe is, that both they being ſore hurt, the incomparable *Muſidorus* finiſhed the combat by the death of both the Giants, and the taking of *Otaues* priſoner. To whom as he gaue his life, ſo he gotte a noble friend: for ſo he gaue his worde to be, and he is well knowen to thinke him ſelfe greater in being ſubiect to that, then in the greatnes of his principalitie.

But thither (vnderſtanding of our being there) 11
flocked great multitudes of many great perſons, and euen of Princes; eſpecially thoſe, whom we had made beholding vnto vs: as, the Kings of *Phrygia*, *Bythinia*, with thoſe two hurte, of *Pontus* and *Galatia*, and *Otaues* the priſoner, by *Muſidorus* ſet free; and thither came *Plexirtus* of *Trebiſonde*, and *Antiphilus*, then King of *Lycia*; with as many mo great Princes, drawen ether by our reputation, or by willingnes to acknowledge them ſelues obliged vnto vs, for what we had done for the others. So as in thoſe partes of the world, I thinke, in many hundreds of yeares, there was not ſeene ſo royall an aſſemblie: where nothing was let paſſe to doo vs the higheſt honors, which ſuch perſons (who might commaund both purſes and inuentions) could perfourme. All from all ſides bringing vnto vs right royall preſents (which we to auoide both vnkindnes, and importunitie, liberally receiued,) & not content therewith, would needes accept, as from vs, their crownes, and acknowledge to hold them of vs: with many other exceſſiue honors, which would not ſuffer the meaſure of this ſhort leiſure to deſcribe vnto you.

CHAP.

CHAP. 24.

[1] The cauſes and prouiſions of the Princes embarking for Arcadia. [2] Plexirtus *his treaſon againſt them diſcloſed by one, [3] attempted by another of his miniſters. [4] Sedition and ſlaughter in the ſhippe about it. [5] Their ſhipwrack by fire.* [6] Pyrocles *fight with the Captaine, and eſcape from ſea.* [7] *The amarous concluding the olde, and beginning a newe ſtorie, both broken of by* Miſo.

BVt wee quickely aweary thereof, haſted to *Greece*-ward, led thither partly with the deſire of our parents, but haſtened principally, becauſe I vnderſtoode that *Anaxius* with open mouth of defamation had gone thither to ſeeke mee, and was nowe come to *Peloponneſus* where from Court to Court he made enquyrie of me, doing yet himſelfe ſo noble deedes, as might hap to auᵭhorize an ill opinion of me. We therefore ſuffred but ſhort delayes, deſiring to take this countrey in our way, ſo renowmed ouer the worlde, that no Prince coulde pretend height, nor begger lowneſſe, to barre him from the ſound thereof: renowmed indeede, not ſo much for the ancient prayſes attributed thereunto, as for the hauing in it *Argalus* and *Amphialus* (two knights of ſuch rare prowes, as we deſired eſpecially to know) and yet by farre, not ſo much for that, as without ſuffering of compariſon for the beautie of you and your ſiſter, which makes all indifferent iudges, that ſpeake

ſpeake thereof, account this countrie as a temple of deities. But theſe cauſes indeed mouing vs to come by this land, we embarked our ſelues in the next porte, whether all thoſe Princes (ſauing *Antiphilus*, who returned, as he pretended, not able to tarry long from *Erona*) conueied vs. And there found we a ſhip moſt royally furniſhed by *Plexirtus*, who made all thinges ſo proper (as well for our defence, as eaſe) that all the other Princes greatly commended him for it: who (ſeeming a quite altered man) had nothing but repẽtance in his eies, friendſhip in his geſture, & vertue in his mouth: ſo that we who had promiſed the ſweete *Zelmane* to pardon him, now not onely forgaue, but began to fauour; perſwading our ſelues with a youthfull credulitie, that perchance things were not ſo euil as we tooke them, & as it were deſiring our owne memorie, that it might be ſo. But ſo were we licenſed from thoſe Princes, truly not without teares, eſpecially of the vertuous *Leonatus*, who with the king of *Põtus*, would haue come with vs, but that we (in reſpect of the ones young wife, & both their new ſettled kingdomes) would not ſuffer it. Then would they haue ſent whole fleets to guard vs: but we, that deſired to paſſe ſecretely into *Greece*, made them leaue that motion, when they found that more ſhips, then one, would be diſpleaſing vnto vs. But ſo cõmitting our ſelues to the vncertaine diſcretiõ of the wind, we (then determining as ſoone as we came to *Greece*, to take the names of *Daiphantus* and *Palladius*, as well for our owne promiſe to *Zelmane*, as becauſe we deſired to come vnknowne into *Greece*) left the *Aſian* ſhore full of Princely perſons, who euen vpon their knees, recommended our ſafeties to the deuotion of

their chiefe deſires: among whom none had bene ſo officious (though I dare affirme, all quite contrarie to his vnfaithfulnes) as *Plexirtus*.

2 So hauing ſailed almoſt two daies, looking for nothing but when we might looke vpon the land, a graue man (whom we had ſeene of great truſt with *Plexirtus*, and was ſent as our principall guide) came vnto vs, and with a certaine kinde manner, mixt with ſhame, and repentaunce, began to tell vs, that he had taken ſuch a loue vnto vs (conſidering our youth and fame) that though he were a ſeruaunt, and a ſeruaunt of ſuch truſt about *Plexirtus*, as that he had committed vnto him euen thoſe ſecretes of his hart, which abhorde all other knowledge; yet he rather choſe to reueale at this time a moſt pernitious counſell, then by concealing it bring to ruin thoſe, whom he could not chooſe but honour. So went he on, and tolde vs, that *Plexirtus* (in hope thereby to haue *Artaxia*, endewed with the great Kingdome of *Armenia*, to his wife) had giuen him order, when we were neere *Greece*, to finde ſome opportunitie to murder vs, bidding him to take vs a ſleepe, becauſe he had ſeene what we could do waking. Now ſirs (ſaid he) I would rather a thouſand times looſe my life, then haue my remembrance (while I liued) poyſoned with ſuch a miſchiefe: and therefore if it were onely I, that knewe herein the Kings order, then ſhould my diſobedience be a warrant of your ſafetie. But to one more (ſaid he) namely the Captaine of the ſhippe, *Plexirtus* hath opened ſo much touching the effect of murdering you, though I think, laying the cauſe rather vpon old grudge, then his hope of *Artaxia*. And my ſelfe, (before the conſideration

of

of your excellencies had drawne loue and pittie into minde) imparted it to ſuch, as I thought fitteſt for ſuch a miſchiefe. Therefore, I wiſhe you to ſtand vpon your garde, aſſuring you, that what I can doo for your ſafetie, you ſhall ſee (if it come to the puſhe) by me perfourmed. We thanked him, as the matter indeed deſerued, and from that time would no more diſarme our ſelues, nor the one ſleepe without his friendes eyes waked for him: ſo that it delaied the going forwarde of their bad enterprize, while they thought it rather chaunce, then prouidence, which made vs ſo behaue our ſelues.

But when we came within halfe a daies ſayling of 3
the ſhore, ſoone they ſaw it was ſpeedily, or not at all to be done. Then (and I remember it was about the firſt watch in the night) came the Captaine and whiſpered the councellour in the eare: But he (as it ſhould ſeem) diſſwading him from it, the Captaine (who had bene a pyrate from his youth, and often blouded in it) with a lowde voice ſware, that if *Plexirtus* bad him, he would not ſticke to kill God him ſelfe. And therewith cald his mates, and in the Kings name willed them to take vs, aliue or dead; encouraging thē with the ſpoile of vs, which he ſaid, (& indeed was true) would yeeld many exceeding rich iewels. But the Councellour (according to his promiſe) commanded them they ſhould not cōmit ſuch a villany, proteſting that he would ſtād betweene them and the Kings anger therein. Wherewith the Captaine enraged: Nay (ſaid he) thē we muſt begin with this traitor him ſelfe: and therewith gaue him a ſore blow vpon the head, who honeſtly did the beſt he could to reuenge himſelfe.

4 But then we knew it time rather to encounter, then waite for miſchiefe. And ſo againſt the Captaine we went, who ſtraight was enuironned with moſt parte of the Souldiers and Mariners. And yet the truth is, there were ſome, whom either the authoritie of the councellour, doubt of the Kings minde, or liking of vs, made draw their ſwords of our ſide: ſo that quickly it grew a moſt confuſed fight. For the narrowneſſe of the place, the darkeneſſe of the time, and the vncertainty in ſuch a tumult how to know frieds from foes, made the rage of ſwordes rather guide, then be guided by their maiſters. For my couſin and me, truly I thinke we neuer perfourmed leſſe in any place, doing no other hurte, then the defence of our ſelues, and ſuccouring them who came for it, draue vs to: for not diſcerning perfectlie, who were for, or againſt vs, we thought it leſſe euill to ſpare a foe, then ſpoyle a friend. But from the hieſt to the loweſt parte of the ſhippe there was no place lefte, without cries of murdring, and murdred perſons. The Captaine I hapt a while to fight withall, but was driuen to parte with him, by hearing the crie of the Councellour, who receiued a mortall wounde, miſtaken of one of his owne ſide. Some of the wiſer would call to parley, & wiſh peace, but while the wordes of peace were in their mouthes, ſome of their auditours gaue them death for their hire. So that no man almoſt could conceiue hope of liuing, but being lefte aliue: and therefore euery one was willing to make him ſelfe roome, by diſpatching almoſt any other: ſo that the great number in the ſhip was reduced to exceeding few, when of thoſe few the moſt part weary of thoſe troubles leapt into the boate,

which

which was faſt to the ſhip : but while they that were firſt, were cutting of the rope that tied it, others came leaping in, ſo diſorderly, that they drowned both the boate, and themſelues.

But while euen in that little remnant (like the chil- 5
dren of *Cadmus*) we continued ſtill to ſlay one an o-
ther, a fire, which (whether by the deſperate malice of ſome, or intention to ſeparate, or accidentally while all things were caſt vp and downe) it ſhould ſeeme had taken a good while before, but neuer heeded of vs, (who onely thought to preſerue, or reuenge) now vio-
lently burſt out in many places, and began to maiſter the principall partes of the ſhip. Then neceſſitie made vs ſee, that, a common enimy ſets at one a ciuill warre: for that little all we were (as if we had bene waged by one man to quench a fire) ſtreight went to reſiſt that furious enimie by all art and labour: but it was too late, for already it did embrace and deuoure from the ſterne, to the waſt of the ſhip: ſo as labouring in vaine, we were driuen to get vp to the prowe of the ſhip, by the worke of nature ſeeking to preſerue life, as long as we could: while truely it was a ſtraunge and ougly ſight, to ſee ſo huge a fire, as it quickly grew to be, in the Sea, and in the night, as if it had come to light vs to death. And by and by it had burned off the maſte, which all this while had prowdly borne the ſayle (the winde, as might ſeeme, delighted to carrie fire and bloud in his mouth) but now it fell ouer boord, and the fire growing neerer vs, it was not onely terrible in reſpect of what we were to attend, but inſupportable through the heat of it.

So that we were conſtrained to bide it no longer, 6

but diſarming and ſtripping our ſelues, and laying our ſelues vpon ſuch things, as we thought might help our ſwimming to the lande (too far for our owne ſtrength to beare vs) my couſin and I threw our ſelues into the Sea. But I had ſwomme a very little way, when I felt (by reaſon of a wound I had) that I ſhould not be able to bide the trauaile, and therefore ſeeing the maſte (whoſe tackling had bene burnt of) flote cleare from the ſhip, I ſwamme vnto it, and getting on it, I found mine owne ſworde, which by chaunce, when I threw it away (caught by a peece of canuas) had honge to the maſte. I was glad, becauſe I loued it well; but gladder, when I ſaw at the other end, the Captaine of the ſhip, and of all this miſchiefe; who hauing a long pike, belike had borne him ſelfe vp with that, till he had ſet him ſelfe vpon the maſt. But when I perceiued him, Villaine (ſaid I) dooſt thou thinke to ouerliue ſo many honeſt men, whom thy falſehood hath brought to deſtruction? with that beſtriding the maſt, I gat by little and little towards him, after ſuch a manner as boies are wont (if euer you ſaw that ſport) when they ride the wild mare. And he perceiuing my intention, like a fellow that had much more courage then honeſtie, ſet him ſelfe to reſiſt. But I had in ſhort ſpace gotten within him, and (giuing him a ſound blowe) ſent him to feede fiſhes. But there my ſelfe remainde, vntill by pyrates I was taken vp, and among them againe taken priſoner, and brought into *Laconia*.

7 But what (ſaid *Philoclea*) became of your couſin *Muſidorus?* Loſt ſaid *Pyrocles*. Ah my *Pyrocles*, ſaid *Philoclea*, I am glad I haue take you. I perceiue you louers do not alwaies ſay truely: as though I know not your couſin

Dorus,

Dorus, the ſheepeheard? Life of my deſires (ſaide *Pyrocles*) what is mine, euen to my ſoule is yours: but the ſecret of my friend is not mine. But if you know ſo much, then I may truely ſay, he is loſt, ſince he is no more his owne. But I perceiue, your noble ſiſter & you are great friends, and well doth it become you ſo to be. But go forward deare *Pyrocles*, I lõg to heare out till your meeting me: for there to me-warde is the beſt part of your ſtorie. Ah ſweet *Philoclea* (ſaid *Pyrocles*) do you thinke I can thinke ſo precious leyſure as this well ſpent in talking. Are your eyes a fit booke (thinke you) to reade a tale vpon? Is my loue quiet inough to be an hiſtorian? Deare Princeſſe, be gracious vnto me. And then he faine would haue remembred to haue forgot himſelfe. But ſhe, with a ſweetly diſobeying grace, deſired that her deſire (once for euer) might ſerue, that no ſpotte might diſgrace that loue which ſhortly ſhe hoped ſhold be to the world warrantable. Faine he would not haue heard, til ſhe threatned anger. And then the poore louer durſt not, becauſe he durſt not. Nay I pray thee, deare *Pyrocles* (ſaid ſhe) let me haue my ſtory. Sweet Princeſſe (ſaid he) giue my thoughts a litle reſpite: and if it pleaſe you, ſince this time muſt ſo be ſpoiled, yet it ſhall ſuffer the leſſe harme, if you vouchſafe to beſtow your voice, and let me know, how the good Queene *Erona* was betraied into ſuch dãger, and why *Plangus* ſought me. For in deede, I ſhould pitie greatly any miſchance fallen to that Princeſſe. I will, ſaid *Philoclea* ſmiling, ſo you giue me your worde, your handes ſhall be quiet auditours. They ſhal, ſaid he, becauſe ſubiect. Then began ſhe to ſpeake, but with ſo prettie and delightfull a maieſtie, when ſhe ſet her countenaunce to tell the matter, that *Pyrocles* could not chuſe but rebell ſo far, as to kiſſe her.

She would haue puld her head away, and ſpeake, but while ſhe ſpake he kiſt, and it ſeemed he fedde vpon her wordes: but ſhee gate away. Howe will you haue your diſcourſe (ſaid ſhe) without you let my lips alone? He yeelded and tooke her hand. On this (ſaid he) will I reuenge my wrong: and ſo began to make much of that hand, when her tale, & his delight were interrupted by *Miſo:* who taking her time, while *Baſilius* backe was turned, came vnto them: and told *Philoclea*, ſhe deſerued ſhe knewe what, for leauing her mother, being euill at eaſe, to keepe companie with ſtraungers. But *Philoclea* telling her, that ſhe was there by her fathers commandemẽt, ſhe went away muttering, that though her back, and her ſhoulders, and her necke were broken, yet as long as her tongue would wagge, it ſhould do her errand to her mother.

CHAP. 25.

[1] Gynecias diuining dreame. [2] Her paſsionate ielouſie in actions, [3] ſpeach, and [4] ſong deſcribed [5] Her troubling Philoclea *and* Zelmane, *[6] The rebels troubling her. [7] Rebels reſiſted by* Zelmane. *[8]* Zelmane *aſsiſted by* Dorus. *[9]* Dorus *and* Zelmanes *fiue memorable ſtrokes.*

1. SO went vp *Miſo* to *Gynecia*, who was at that time miſerably vexed with this manner of dreame. It ſeemed vnto her to be in a place full of thornes, which ſo moleſted her, as ſhe could neither abide ſtanding ſtill, nor treade ſafely going forward. In this caſe ſhe thought *Zelmane*,

mane, being vpon a faire hill, delightfull to the eye, and eaſie in apparance, called her thither: whither with much anguiſh being come, *Zelmane* was vaniſhed, and ſhe found nothing but a dead bodie like vnto her husband, which ſeeming at the firſt with a ſtrange ſmell to infect her, as ſhe was redie likewiſe within a while to die, the dead bodie, ſhe thought, tooke her in his armes, and ſaid, *Gynecia*, leaue all; for here is thy onely reſt.

With that ſhe awaked, crying very loud, *Zelmane, Zelmane*. But remembring her ſelfe, and ſeeing *Baſilius* by, (her guiltie conſcience more ſuſpecting, then being ſuſpected) ſhe turned her call, and called for *Philoclea*. *Miſo* forthwith like a valiant ſhrew, (looking at *Baſilius*, as though ſhe would ſpeake though ſhe died for it) tolde *Gynecia*, that her daughter had bene a whole houre togither in ſecrete talke with *Zelmane*: And (ſayes ſhe) for my part I coulde not be heard (your daughters are brought vp in ſuch awe) though I tolde her of your pleaſure ſufficiently. *Gynecia*, as if ſhe had heard her laſt doome pronounced agaynſt her, with a ſide-looke and chaunged countenance, O my Lorde (ſaid ſhe) what meane you to ſuffer theſe yong folkes together? *Baſilius* (that aymed nothing at the marke of her ſuſpition) ſmilingly tooke her in his armes, ſweete wife (ſaid he) I thanke you for your care of your childe: but they muſt be youthes of other mettall, then *Zelmane*, that can endaunger her. O but; cryed *Gynecia*, and therewith ſhe ſtayed: for then indeede ſhe did ſuffer a right conflict, betwixt the force of loue, and rage of iealouſie. Manie times was ſhe about to ſatiſfie the ſpite of her minde, and tell *Baſilius*, how ſhe knewe *Zelmane* to be farre otherwiſe then the out- 2

ward

warde appearance. But thoſe many times were all put backe, by the manifolde obiections of her vehement loue. Faine ſhe would haue barde her daughters happe, but loth ſhe was to cut off her owne hope. But now, as if her life had bene ſet vppon a wager of quicke ryſing, as weake as ſhe was, ſhe gat vp; though *Baſilius*, (with a kindneſſe flowing onely from the fountaine of vnkindneſſe, being in deede deſirous to winne his daughter as much time as might be) was loth to ſuffer it, ſwearing he ſawe ſickeneſſe in her face, and therefore was loath ſhe ſhould aduenture the ayre.

3 But the great and wretched Ladie *Gynecia*, poſſeſſed with thoſe deuils of Loue and Iealouſie, did rid herſelfe from her tedious husbande: and taking no body with her, going toward thē; O Iealouſie (ſaid ſhe) the phrenſie of wiſe folkes, the well-wiſhing ſpite, and vnkinde carefulneſſe, the ſelfe-puniſhment for others faults, and ſelfe-miſerie in others happineſſe, the couſin of enuie, daughter of loue, & mother of hate, how couldeſt thou ſo quietly get thee a ſeate in the vnquiet hart of *Gynecia*, *Gynecia* (ſaid ſhe ſighing) thought wiſe, and once vertuous? Alas it is thy breeders power which plantes thee there: it is the flaming agonie of affection, that works the chilling acceſſe of thy feuer, in ſuch ſort, that nature giues place; the growing of my daughter ſeemes the decay of my ſelfe; the bleſſings of a mother turne to the curſes of a cōpetitor; and the faire face of *Philoclea*, appeares more horrible in my ſight, then the image of death. Then remembred ſhe this ſong, which ſhe thought tooke a right meaſure of her preſent mind.

With

VVTth two ſtrange fires of equall heate poſſeſt,
The one of Loue, the other Iealouſie,
Both ſtill do worke, in neither finde I reſt:
For both, alas, their ſtrengthes together tie:
The one aloft doth holde, the other hie.
Loue wakes the iealous eye leaſt thence it moues:
The iealous eye, the more it lookes, it loues.

Theſe fires increaſe: in theſe I dayly burne: 4
They feede on me, and with my wings do flie:
My louely ioyes to dolefull aſhes turne:
Their flames mount vp, my powers proſtrate lie:
They liue in force, I quite conſumed die.
One wonder yet farre paſſeth my conceate:
The fuell ſmall: how be the fires ſo great?

But her vnleaſured thoughtes ran not ouer the ten 5
firſt wordes; but going with a pace, not ſo much too faſt for her bodie, as ſlowe for her minde, ſhe found them together, who after *Miſos* departure, had left their tale, and determined what to ſay to *Baſilius*. But full abaſhed was poore *Philoclea*, (whoſe conſcience nowe began to knowe cauſe of bluſhing) for firſt ſalutation, receyuing an eye from her mother, full of the ſame diſdainefull ſcorne, which *Pallas* ſhewed to poore *Arachne*, that durſt contende with her for the prize of well weauing: yet did the force of loue ſo much rule her, that though for *Zelmanes* ſake ſhe did deteſt her, yet for *Zelmanes* ſake ſhe vſed no harder words to her, then to bid her go home, and accompany her ſolitarie father.

Then

6 Then began ſhe to diſplay to *Zelmane* the ſtorehouſe of her deadly deſires, when ſodainly the confuſed rumor of a mutinous multitude gaue iuſt occaſion to *Zelmane* to breake of any ſuch conference, (for well ſhe found, they were not friendly voices they heard) and to retire with as much diligence as conueniently they could, towards the lodge. Yet before they could winne the lodge by twentie paces, they were ouertaken by an vnruly ſort of clownes, and other rebels, which like a violent floud, were caried, they themſelues knewe not whether. But aſſoone as they came within perfect diſcerning theſe Ladies, like enraged beaſtes, without reſpect of their eſtates, or pitie of their ſexe, they began to runne againſt them, as right villaines, thinking abilitie to doo hurt, to be a great aduancement: yet ſo many as they were, ſo many almoſt were their mindes, all knitte together onely in madnes. Some cried, Take; ſome, Kill; ſome, Saue: but euen they that cried ſaue, ran for companie with them that meant to kill. Euerie one commaunded, none obeyed, he only ſeemed chief Captain, that was moſt ragefull.

7 *Zelmane* (whoſe vertuous courage was euer awake) drew out her ſword, which vpon thoſe il-armed churls giuing as many wounds as blowes, & as many deathes almoſt as wounds (lightning courage, and thundering ſmart vpon them) kept them at a bay, while the two Ladies got thēſelues into the lodge: out of the which, *Baſilius* (hauing put on an armour long vntried) came to proue his authoritie among his ſubiects, or at leſt, to aduenture his life with his deare miſtreſſe, to whō he brought a ſhield, while the Ladies tremblingly attended the iſſue of this dangerous aduenture. But *Zelmane*

mane made them perceiue the ods betweene an Eagle and a Kight, with ſuch a nimble ſtayednes, and ſuch an aſſured nimblenes, that while one was running backe for feare, his fellow had her ſword in his guts.

And by and by was both her harte and helpe well encreaſed by the comming of *Dorus*, who hauing been making of hurdles for his maſters ſheepe, hearde the horrible cries of this madde multitude; and hauing ſtreight repreſented before the eies of his carefull loue, the perill wherein the ſoule of his ſoule might be, he went to *Pamelas* lodge, but found her in a caue hard by, with *Mopſa* and *Dametas*, who at that time would not haue opened the entrie to his father. And therfore leauing them there (as in a place ſafe, both for being ſtrong, and vnknowen) he ranne as the noiſe guyded him. But when he ſaw his friend in ſuch danger among them, anger and contempt (aſking no counſell but of courage) made him roome among them, with no other weapon but his ſheephooke, and with that ouerthrowing one of the villaines, took away a two-hand ſword from him, and withall, helpt him from euer being aſhamed of loſing it. Then lifting vp his braue head, and flaſhing terror into their faces, he made armes & legs goe complaine to the earth, how euill their maſters had kept them. Yet the multitude ſtill growing, and the verie killing wearying them (fearing, leſt in long fight they ſhould be conquered with cõquering) they drew back toward the lodge; but drew back in ſuch ſort, that ſtill their terror went forwarde: like a valiant maſtiffe, whom when his maſter pulles backe by the taile from the beare (with whom he hath alreadie interchanged a hatefull imbracement) though his pace be backwarde, his 8

his geſture is foreward, his teeth and eyes threatening more in the retiring, then they did in the aduancing: ſo guided they themſelues homeward, neuer ſtepping ſteppe backward, but that they proued themſelues maſters of the ground where they ſtept.

9 Yet among the rebels there was a dapper fellowe, a tayler by occupation, who fetching his courage onelie from their going back, began to bow his knees, & very fencer-like to draw neere to *Zelmane*. But as he came within her diſtãce, turning his ſword very nicely about his crown, *Baſilius*, with a ſide blow, ſtrake of his noſe. He (being a ſuiter to a ſeimſters daughter, and therfore not a little grieued for ſuch a diſgrace) ſtouped downe, becauſe he had hard, that if it were freſh put to, it would cleaue on againe. But as his hand was on the grounde to bring his noſe to his head, *Zelmane* with a blow, ſent his head to his noſe. That ſaw a butcher, a butcherlie chuffe indeed (who that day was ſworn brother to him in a cup of wine) & lifted vp a great leauer, calling *Zelmane* all the vile names of a butcherly eloquence. But ſhe (letting ſlippe the blowe of the leauer) hitte him ſo ſurely on the ſide of his face, that ſhe lefte nothing but the nether iawe, where the tongue ſtill wagged, as willing to ſay more, if his maſters remẽbrance had ſerued. O (ſaid a miller that was halfe dronke) ſee the lucke of a good fellow, and with that word, ran with a pitchforke at *Dorus*: but the nimblenes of the wine caried his head ſo faſt, that it made it ouer-runne his feet, ſo that he fell withall, iuſt betwene the legs of *Dorus*: who ſetting his foote on his neck (though he offered two milche kine, and foure fatte hogs for his life) thruſt his ſword quite through, from one eare to the other; which toke it very vn-

vnkindlie, to feele ſuch newes before they heard of them, in ſtead of hearing, to be put to ſuch feeling. But *Dorus* (leauing the miller to vomit his ſoul out in wine and bloud) with his two-hand ſword ſtrake of another quite by the waſte, who the night before had dreamed he was growen a couple, and (interpreting it he ſhould be maried) had bragd of his dreame that morning among his neighbors. But that blow aſtoniſhed quite a poore painter, who ſtood by with a pike in his handes. This painter was to counterfette the ſkirmiſhing betwene the *Centaures* and *Lapithes*, and had bene very deſirous to ſee ſome notable wounds, to be able the more liuely to expreſſe them; and this morning (being caried by the ſtreame of this companie) the fooliſh felow was euen delighted to ſee the effect of blowes. But this laſt, (hapning neere him) ſo amazed him, that he ſtood ſtill, while *Dorus* (with a turne of his ſword) ſtrake of both his hands. And ſo the painter returned, well ſkilled in wounds, but with neuer a hand to performe his ſkill.

CHAP. 26.

[1] Zelmanes *confident attempt to appeaſe the mutinie.* [2] *A bone of diuiſion caſt by her,* [3] *and caught by them.* [4] *Her pacificatorie oration.* [5] *The acceptation and iſſue of it.*

IN this manner they recouered the lodge, and gaue the rebels a face of wood of the out-ſide. But they then (though no more furious, yet more couragious when they ſaw no reſiſter) went about with pickaxe to the wall, and fire to the gate, to gette themſelues entrance. 1

trance. Then did the two Ladies mixe feare with loue, eſpecially *Philoclea*, who euer caught hold of *Zelmane*, ſo (by the follie of loue) hindering the help which ſhe deſired. But *Zelmane* ſeeing no way of defence, nor time to deliberate (the number of thoſe villaines ſtill encreaſing, and their madneſſe ſtill encreaſing with their number) thought it onely the meanes to goe beyond their expectation with an vnuſed boldeneſſe, and with danger to auoide danger: and therfore opened againe the gate, and (*Dorus* and *Baſilius* ſtanding redie for her defence) ſhe iſſued againe among them. The blowes ſhe had dealt before (though all in generall were haſtie) made each of them in particular take breath, before they brought them ſodainly ouer-neere her, ſo that ſhe had time to gette vp to the iudgement-ſeate of the Prince, which (according to the guiſe of that countrie) was before the gate. There ſhe pauſed a while, making ſigne with her hand vnto them, & withall, ſpeaking aloud, that ſhe had ſomething to ſay vnto them, that would pleaſe them. But ſhe was anſwered a while with nothing but ſhouts and cries; and ſome beginning to throw ſtones at her, not daring to approach her. But at length, a young farmer (who might do moſt among the countrie ſort, and was caught in a little affection towardes *Zelmane*) hoping by this kindeneſſe to haue ſome good of her, deſired them, if they were honeſt men, to heare the woman ſpeake. Fie fellowes, fie, (ſaid he) what will all the maides in our towne ſay, if ſo many tall men ſhall be afraide to heare a faire wench? I ſweare vnto you by no little ones, I had rather giue my teeme of oxen, then we ſhould ſhewe our ſelues ſo vnciuill wights. Beſides, I tell you true, I haue heard it

of

of old men counted wiſdome, to heare much,& ſay little. His ſententious ſpeech ſo preuailed, that the moſt parte began to liſten. Then ſhe, with ſuch efficacie of gracefulnes, & ſuch a quiet magnanimitie repreſented in her face in this vttermoſt perill, as the more the barbarous people looked, the more it fixed their looks vpon her,in this ſorte began vnto them.

It is no ſmall comfort vnto me (ſaid ſhe) hauing to 2
ſpeake ſomething vnto you for your owne behoofs,to find that I haue to deale with ſuch a people, who ſhew indeed in thēſelues the right nature of valure,which as it leaues no violence vnattempted, while the choller is nouriſhed with reſiſtance; ſo when the ſubiect of their wrath, doth of it ſelf vnloked-for offer it ſelf into their hands, it makes thē at leſt take a pauſe before they determine cruelty. Now then firſt (before I come to the principall matter) haue I to ſay vnto you; that your Prince *Baſilius* himſelfe in perſon is within this Lodge, & was one of the three, whō a few of you went about to fight withall: (& this ſhe ſaid,not doubting but they knew it well inough;but becauſe ſhe would haue them imagine, that the Prince might think that they did not know it) by him am I ſent vnto you, as frō a Prince to his well approoued ſubiects,nay as from a father to beloued children, to know what it is that hath bred iuſt quarrell among you,or who they be that haue any way wrōged you: what it is with which you are diſpleaſed, or of whic' you are deſirous? This he requires:and indeed(for he knowes your faithfulnes)he commaunds you preſently to ſet downe, & to chooſe among your ſelues ſome one, who may relate your griefes or demaundes vnto him.

3 This (being more then they hoped for from their Prince) aſſwaged well their furie, & many of them conſented (eſpecially the young farmer helping on, who meant to make one of the demaũds that he might haue *Zelmane* for his wife) but when they began to talke of their grieues, neuer Bees made ſuch a cõfuſed hũming: the towne dwellers demanding putting downe of impoſts: the country felowes laying out of cõmons: ſome would haue the Prince keepe his Court in one place, ſome in another. Al cried out to haue new coũcellors: but when they ſhould think of any new, they liked thẽ as well as any other, that they could remẽber, eſpecially they would haue the treaſure ſo looked vnto, as that he ſhould neuer neede to take any more ſubſidies. At length they fel to direct contrarieties. For the Artiſans, they would haue corne & wine ſet at a lower price, and bound to be kept ſo ſtil: the plowmen, vine-laborers, & farmers would none of that. The coũtrimen demaunded that euery man might be free in the chief townes: that could not the Burgeſſes like of. The peaſãts would haue the Gentlemẽ deſtroied, the Citizens (eſpecially ſuch as Cookes, Barbers, & thoſe other that liued moſt on Gentlemen) would but haue them refourmed. And of ech ſide were like diuiſions, one neighbourhood beginning to find fault with another. But no confuſion was greater then of particular mens likings and diſlikings: one diſpraiſing ſuch a one, whõ another praiſed, & demanding ſuch a one to be puniſhed, whom the other would haue exalted. No leſſe ado was there about chooſing him, who ſhould be their ſpokes-man. The finer ſort of Burgeſſes, as Marchants Prentiſes, & Clothworkers, becauſe of their riches, diſdaining the baſer occupations, & they becauſe of their number as much

diſdaining

diſdaining them: all they ſcorning the countrimens ignorance, & the countrymen ſuſpecting as much their cũning: So that *Zelmane* (finding that their vnited rage was now growne, not only to a diuiding, but to a croſſing one of another, & that the miſlike growne among thẽſelues did wel allay the heat againſt her) made tokẽs againe vnto thẽ (as though ſhe tooke great care of their wel doing, and were afraid of their falling out) that ſhe would ſpeake vnto thẽ. They now growne iealous one of another (the ſtay hauing ingẽdred diuiſiõ, & diuiſiõ hauing manifeſted their weaknes) were willing inough to heare, the moſt part ſtriuing to ſhow themſelues willinger then their fellowes: which *Zelmane* (by the acquaintaunce ſhe had had with ſuch kinde of humors) ſoone perceiuing, with an angerles brauery, & an vnabaſhed mildnes, in this manner ſpake vnto them.

An vnuſed thing it is, & I think not heretofore ſeene, 4
ô *Arcadians*, that a womã ſhould giue publike coũſel to men, a ſtrãger to the coũtry people, & that laſtly in ſuch a preſence by a priuate perſon, the regall throne ſhould be poſſeſſed. But the ſtraungenes of your action makes that vſed for vertue, which your violent neceſſitie impoſeth. For certainely, a woman may well ſpeake to ſuch men, who haue forgotté al manl[illegible]ouernment: a ſtraunger may with reaſon inſtruct [illegible]iects, that neglect due points of ſubiection: a[illegible]it maruaile this place is entred into by another, ſince your owne Prince (after thirtie yeares gouernment) dare not ſhew his face vnto his faithfull people? Heare therfore ô *Arcadians*, & be aſhamed: againſt whõ hath this rage bene ſtirred? whether haue bene bent theſe mãfull weapons of yours? In this quiet harmles lodge are harbourd no

Argians your ancient enimies, nor *Laconians* your now feared neighbours. Here be nether hard landlords, nor biting vſurers. Here lodge none, but ſuch, as either you haue great cauſe to loue, or no cauſe to hate: here being none, beſides your *Prince*, *Princeſſe*, and their children, but my ſelf. Is it I then, ô *Arcadians*, againſt whom your anger is armed? Am I the marke of your vehemẽt quarrell? if it be ſo, that innocencie ſhall not be a ſtop for furie; if it be ſo, that the law of hoſpitalitie (ſo long & holily obſerued among you) may not defend a ſtraunger fled to your armes for ſuccour: if in fine it be ſo, that ſo many valiaunt mens courages can be enflamed to the miſchiefe of one ſilly woman; I refuſe not to make my life a ſacrifice to your wrath. Exerciſe in me your indignatiõ, ſo it go no further, I am content to pay the great fauours I haue receiued amõg you, with my life, not ill deſeruing I preſent it here vnto you, ô *Arcadians*, if that may ſatisfie you; rather thẽ you (called ouer the world the wiſe and quiet *Arcadians*) ſhould be ſo vaine, as to attempt that alone, which all the reſt of your countrie wil abhor; thẽ you ſhould ſhew your ſelues ſo vngratefull, as to forget the fruite of ſo many yeares peaceable gouernment; or ſo vnnaturall, as not to haue with the holy name of your naturall Prince, any furie ouer-maiſtred. For ſuch a helliſh madnes (I know) did neuer enter into your harts, as to attẽpt any thing againſt his perſon; which no ſucceſſor, though neuer ſo hatefull, wil euer leaue (for his owne ſake) vnreuenged. Neither can your wonted valour be turned to ſuch a baſenes, as in ſtead of a Prince, deliuered vnto you by ſo many roiall anceſtors, to take the tyrannous yoke of your fellow ſubiect, in whom the innate meanes will bring forth rauenous

uenous couetouſnes,and the newnes of his eſtate, ſuſpectfull cruelty. Imagine, what could your enimies more wiſh vnto you,then to ſee your owne eſtate with your owne handes vndermined? O what would your fore-fathers ſay,if they liued at this time,& ſaw their offspring defacing ſuch an excellent principalitie, which they with ſo much labour & bloud ſo wiſely haue eſtabliſht?Do you thinke them fooles,that ſaw you ſhould not enioy your vines, your cattell, no not your wiues & children,without gouernment; and that there could be no gouernment without a Magiſtrate,and no Magiſtrate without obedience,and no obediēce where euery one vpon his owne priuate paſſion, may interprete the doings of the rulers? Let your wits make your preſent exāple to you.What ſweetnes (in good faith) find you in your preſent condition? what choiſe of choiſe finde you,if you had loſt *Baſilius?* vnder whoſe enſigne would you go, if your enimies ſhould inuade you? If you cannot agree vpon one to ſpeake for you, how wil you agree vpō one to fight for you? But with this feare of I cannot tel what,one is troubled,and with that paſſed wrong another is grieued. And I pray you did the Sunne euer bring you a fruitfull hārueſt,but that it was more hote then pleaſant?Haue any of you childrē,that be not ſometimes cumberſome? Haue any of you fathers, that be not ſometime weeriſh? What, ſhall we curſe the Sonne,hate our children,or diſobey our fathers? But what need I vſe theſe wordes, ſince I ſee in your countenances (now vertuouſly ſettled) nothing els but loue and dutie to him, by whom for your only ſakes the gouernmēt is embraced. For al what is done, he doth not only pardon you,but thanke you;iudging the action by the minds,& not the minds by the actiō.

Your grieues, and deſires, whatſoeuer,& whenſoeuer you liſt,he wil conſider of,and to his conſideration it is reaſon you ſhould refer them. So then,to cõclude; the vncertainty of his eſtate made you take armes; now you ſee him well, with the ſame loue lay them downe. If now you end (as I know you will) he will make no other account of this matter, but as of a vehement, I muſt cõfeſſe ouer-vehement affection: the only continuaunce might proue a wickednes. But it is not ſo, I ſee very wel, you begã with zeale,& wil end with reuerẽce.

The action *Zelmane* vſed, being beautified by nature and apparelled with skill, her geſtures beyng ſuch, that as her wordes did paint out her minde, ſo they ſerued as a ſhadow, to make the picture more liuely and ſenſible, with the ſweete cleerneſſe of her voice, riſing & falling kindly as the nature of the worde, and efficacie of the matter required, altogether in ſuch admirable perſon, whoſe incomparable valour they had well felte, whoſe beautie did pearce through the thicke dulnes of their ſenſes, gaue ſuch a way vnto her ſpeach through the rugged wilderneſſe of their imaginations, who (beſides they were ſtriken in admiration of her, as of more then a humane creature) were coold with taking breath, and had learned doubts out of leaſure, that in ſteed of roaring cries, there was now heard nothing, but a cõfuſed muttring, whether her ſaying were to be followed, betwixt feare to purſue, & lothneſſe to leaue: moſt of them could haue bene cõtent, it had neuer bene begun, but how to end it (each afraid of his companion,) they knew not, finding it far eaſier to tie then to looſe knots. But *Zelmane* thinking it no euil way in ſuch mutinies, to giue the mutinous ſome occaſiõ of ſuch ſeruice, as they might thinke (in their own iudge-

ment)

ment would counteruaile their treſpaſſe, withal, to take the more aſſured poſſeſſion of their mindes, which ſhe feared might begin to wauer, Loiall *Arcadians* (ſaid ſhe) now do I offer vnto you the manifeſting of your duties: all thoſe that haue taken armes for the Princes ſafetie, let thē turne their backs to the gate, with their weapons bent againſt ſuch as would hurt his ſacred perſon. O weak truſt of the many-headed multitude, whom inconſtancie onely doth guide to well doing: who can ſet confidence there, where company takes away ſhame, and ech may lay the fault of his fellow? So ſaid a craftie ſelow among them, named *Clinias*, to himſelfe, when he ſaw the worde no ſooner out of *Zelmanes* mouth, but that there were ſome ſhouts of ioy, with, God ſaue *Baſilius*, and diuers of them with much iollity growne to be his guard, that but litle before mēt to be his murderers.

CHAP. 27.

[a] *A verball craftie coward purtrayed in* Clinias. [b] *His firſt raiſing, and with the firſt, relenting in this mutinie,* [c] *puniſhed by the farmer.* [d] *The vprore reenforced, & weakned by themſelues.* [e] Clinias *his* Sinon-*like narration of this drūken rebellions original.* [f] *The kings order init.*

THis *Clinias* in his youth had bene a ſcholler ſo farre, as to learne rather wordes then maners, and of words rather plentie then order; and oft had vſed to be an actor in Tragedies, where he had learned, beſides a ſlidingneſſe of language, acquain- 1

tance with many paſſions, and to frame his face to beare the figure of them: long vſed to the eyes and eares of men, and to recken no fault, but ſhamefaſtneſſe; in nature, a moſt notable Coward, and yet more ſtrangely then rarely venturous in priuie practiſes.

2 This fellowe was become of neere truſt to *Cecropia*, *Amphialus*-his mother, ſo that he was priuy to al the miſchieuous deuiſes, wherewith ſhe went about to ruine *Baſilius*, and his children, for the aduauncing of her ſonne: and though his education had made him full of tongue, yet his loue to be doing, taught him in any euill to be ſecret; and had by his miſtreſſe bene vſed (euer ſince the ſtrange retiring of *Baſilius*) to whiſper rumors into the peoples eares: and this time (finding great aptnes in the multitude) was one of the chiefe that ſet them in the vprore (though quite without the cõſent of *Amphialus*, who would not for all the Kingdoms of the world ſo haue aduẽtured the life of *Philoclea*.) But now perceiuing the flood of their furie began to ebbe, he thought it policie to take the firſt of the tide, ſo that no mã cried lowder then he, vpon *Baſilius*. And ſom of the luſtieſt rebels not yet agreeing to the reſt, he cauſed two or three of his mates that were at his cõmandement to lift him vp, & then as if he had had a prologue to vtter, he began with a nice grauitie to demand audience. But few attending what he ſaid, with vehement geſture, as if he would teare the ſtars from the skies, he fell to crying out ſo lowde, that not onely *Zelmane*, but *Baſilius* might heare him. O vnhappie men, more madde then the Giants that would haue plucked *Iupiter* out of heauen, how long ſhal this rage continue? why do you not all throw downe your weapons, and ſubmit your

ſelues

ſelues to our good Prince, our good *Baſilius*, the *Pelops* of wiſdom, & *Minos* of all good gouernmēt? when will you begin to beleue me, and other honeſt and faithfull ſubiects, that haue done all we could to ſtop your furie?

3 The farmer that loued *Zelmane* could abide him no longer. For as at the firſt he was willing to ſpeake of cōditions, hoping to haue gotten great ſoueraintie, & among the reſt *Zelmane*: ſo now perceiuing, that the people, once any thing downe the hill from their furie, would neuer ſtop till they came to the bottom of abſolute yeelding, and ſo that he ſhould be nearer feares of puniſhment, then hopes of ſuch aduancement, he was one of them that ſtood moſt againſt the agreement: and to begin withall, diſdaining this fellow ſhould play the preacher, who had bin one of the chiefeſt make-bates, ſtrake him a great wound vpon the face with his ſword. The cowardly wretch fell down, crying for ſuccour, & (ſcrambling through the legs of them that were about him) gat to the throne, where *Zelmane* tooke him, and comforted him, bleeding for that was paſt, and quaking for feare of more.

4 But as ſoone as that blow was giuen (as if *Æolus* had broke open the doore to let all his winds out) no hand was idle, ech one killing him that was next, for feare he ſhould do as much to him. For being diuided in minds & not diuided in cōpanies, they that would yeeld to *Baſilius* were intermingled with thē that would not yeeld. Theſe men thinking their ruine ſtood vpō it; thoſe men to get fauor of their Prince, conuerted their vngracious motion into their owne bowels, & by a true iudgement grew their owne puniſhers. None was ſooner killed thē thoſe that had bene leaders in the diſobedience: who

by

by being ſo, had taught them, that they did leade diſobediēce to the ſame leaders. And many times it fel out that they killed them that were of their owne faction, anger whetting, and doubt haſtening their fingers. But then came downe *Zelmane*; and *Baſilius* with *Dorus* iſſued, and ſomtimes ſeeking to draw together thoſe of their party, ſomtimes laying indifferently among them, made ſuch hauocke (amōg the reſt *Zel-mane* ſtriking the farmer to the hart with her ſworde, as before ſhe had done with her eyes) that in a while all they of the contrary ſide were put to flight, and fled to certaine woods vpon the frontiers; where feeding coldly, and drinking onely water, they were diſciplined for their dronken riots; many of them being ſlaine in that chaſe, about a ſcore onely eſcaping. But when theſe late rebels, nowe ſouldiers, were returned from the chaſe, *Baſilius* calling them togither, partly for policy ſake, but principally becauſe *Zelmane* before had ſpoken it (which was to him more thē a diuine ordinance) he pronounced their generall pardon, willing them to returne to their houſes, and therafter be more circūſpect in their proceedings: which they did moſt of them with ſhare-marks of their folly. But imagining *Clinias* to be one of the chiefe that had bred this good alteration, he gaue him particular thanks, and withall willed him to make him know, how this frenzie had entred into the people.

5 *Clinias* purpoſing indeede to tell him the trueth of al, ſauing what did touch himſelf, or *Cecropia*, firſt, dipping his hand in the blood of his woūd, Now by this blood (ſaid he) which is more deare to me, then al the reſt that is in my body, ſince it is ſpent for your ſafety: this tōgue (perchance vnfortunate, but neuer falſe) ſhall not now begin to lie vnto my Prince, of me moſt beloued. Then ſtret-

ſtretching out his hand,and making vehement counte-nãces the vſhers to his ſpeches,in ſuch maner of tearms recounted this accident. Yeſterday (ſaid he) being your birth-day,in the goodly greene two mile hence before the city of *Eniſpus*,to do honour to the day, were a four or fiue thouſand people (of all conditions, as I thinke) gathered together,ſpending al the day in dancings and other exerciſes: and when night came, vnder tents and bowes making great cheare, and meaning to obſerue a waſſaling watch all that night for your ſake. *Bacchus* (the learned ſay) was begot with thunder: I think,that made him euer ſince to full of ſtur & debate. *Bacchus* indeed it was which ſoũded the firſt tũpet to this rude alarũ. For that barbarous opinion being generally amongthem,to thinke with vice to do honor, & with actiuitie in beaſt-lines to ſhew abundãce of loue,made moſt of thẽ ſeeke to ſhew the depth of their affectiõ in the depth of their draught. But being once wel chafed with wine (hauing ſpent al the night,& ſome peece of the morning in reuelling) & imboldned by your abſented man[illegible] uing,there was no matter their eares had euer hea[illegible] that grew not to be a ſubiect of their winie conference. I ſpeake it by proofe: for I take witnes of the gods (who neuer leaue periuries vnpuniſhed) that I oftẽ cried out againſt their impudency,&(whẽ that would not ſerue) ſtopt mine eares,becauſe I wold not be partaker of their blaſphemies, till with buffets they forced me to haue mine eares & eies defiled. Publike affairs were minlegd with priuate grudges,neither was any man thought of wit,that did not pretende ſome cauſe of miſlike. Rayling was counted the fruite of freedome, and ſaying nothing had his vttermoſte prayſe in ignoraunce. At the length, your ſacred perſon (alas why did I

liue

liue to heare it? alas how do I breath to vtter it? But your cõmandement doth not onely enioine obedience, but giue me force: your ſacred perſon (I ſay) fell to be their table-talke: a proud word ſwelling in their ſtomacks, & diſdainfull reproches againſt ſo great a greatnes, hauing put on the ſhew of greatnes in their little mindes: till at length the very vnbrideled vſe of words hauing increaſed fire in their mindes (which God knowes thought their knowledge notable, becauſe they had at all no knowledge to cõdemne their own want of knowledge) they deſcended (O neuer to be forgotten preſumption) to a direct miſlike of your liuing from among them. Whereupon it were tedious to remember their far-fetched conſtructions. But the ſumme was, you diſdained them: and what were the pompes of your eſtate, if their armes mainteyned you not? Who woulde call you a Prince, if you had not a people? When certaine of them of wretched eſtates, and worſe mindes (whoſe fortunes, change could not impaire) began to ſay, that your gouernment was to be looked into; how the great treaſures (you had leuied amõg thẽ) had bene ſpent; why none but great men & gentlemen could be admitted into counſel, that the cõmons (forſooth) were to plain headed to ſay their opiniõs: but yet their blood & ſweat muſt maintain all. Who could tell whether you were not betraied in this place, where you liued? nay whether you did liue or no? Therefore that it was time to come & ſee; and if you were here, to know (if *Arcadia* were growne lothſome in your ſight) why you did not ridde your ſelfe of the trouble? There would not want thoſe that would take ſo faire a cumber in good part. Since the Countrie was theirs, and the gouerne-

ment

ment an adherent to the countrie, why ſhould they not conſider of the one, as well as inhabite the other? Nay rather (ſaid they) let vs beginne that, which all *Arcadia* will followe. Let vs deliuer our Prince from daunger of practiſes, and our ſelues from want of a Prince. Let vs doo that, which all the reſt thinke. Let it be ſaid, that we onely are not aſtoniſhed with vaine titles, which haue their force but in our force. Laſtly, to haue ſaide & heard ſo much, was as dãgerous, as to haue attẽpted: & to attẽpt they had the name of glorious liberty with them. Theſe words being ſpokẽ (like a furious ſtorme) preſently caried away their wel inclined braines. What I, and ſome other of the honeſter ſort could do, was no more, then if with a puffe of breath, one ſhould goe about to make a ſaile goe againſt a mightie winde: or, with one hand, ſtay the ruine of a mightie wall. So generall grewe this madnes among them, there needed no drumme, where each man cried, each ſpake to other that ſpake as faſt to him, and the diſagreeing ſounde of ſo many voices, was the chiefe token of their vnmeete agreement. Thus was their banquette turned to a battaile, their winie mirthes to bloudie rages, and the happie prayers for your life, to monſtrous threatning of your eſtate; the ſolemnizing your birth-day, tended to haue been the cauſe of your funerals. But as a dronken rage hath (beſides his wickednes) that follie, that the more it ſeekes to hurt, the leſſe it conſiders how to be able to hurt: they neuer weyed how to arme thẽſelues, but tooke vp euery thing for a weapon, that furie offered to their handes. Many ſwordes, pikes, and billes there were: others tooke pitchforkes and rakes, conuerting huſbandrie to ſouldierie: ſome caught hold

of

of ſpittes (thinges ſeruiceable for life) to be the inſtruments of death. And there was ſome ſuch one, who held the ſame pot wherein he drank to your health, to vſe it (as he could) to your miſchiefe. Thus armed, thus gouerned, forcing the vnwilling, and hartening the willing, adding furie to furie, and encreaſing rage with running, they came headlong towarde this lodge: no man (I dare ſay) reſolued in his own hart, what was the vttermoſt he would doo when he came hether. But as miſchief is of ſuch nature, that it cannot ſtand but with ſtrengthning one euill by an other, and ſo multiplie in it ſelfe, till it come to the higheſt, and then fall with his owne weight: ſo to their mindes (once paſſed the bounds of obedience) more and more wickednes opened it ſelfe, ſo that they who firſt pretended to preſerue you, then to reforme you, (I ſpeak it in my conſcience, and with a bleeding hart) now thought no ſafetie for them, without murdering you. So as if the Gods (who preſerue you for the preſeruation of *Arcadia*) had not ſhewed their miraculous power, and that they had not vſed for inſtruments, both your owne valour (not fit to be ſpoken of by ſo meane a mouth as mine) and ſome (I muſt confeſſe) honeſt minds, (whō alas why ſhould I mention, ſince what we did, reached not the hundred part of our duetie?) our hands (I tremble to think of it) had deſtroyed all that, for which we haue cauſe to reioyce that we are *Arcadians*.

6 With that the fellow did wring his hands, & wrang out teares: ſo as *Baſilius*, that was not the ſharpeſt pearcer into maſked minds, toke a good liking to him; & ſo much the more as he had tickled him with praiſe in the hearing of his miſtres. And therfore pitying his woūd, willed

willed him to get him home, and looke well vnto it, & make the beſt ſearch he could, to know if there were any further depth in this matter, for which he ſhould be well rewarded. But before he went away, certain of the ſhepheards being come (for that day was appointed for their paſtorals) he ſent one of them to *Philanax*, and an other to other principal noble-men, and cities there abouts, to make through-inquirie of this vprore, and withall, to place ſuch garriſons in all the townes & villages neere vnto him, that he might thereafter keep his ſolitary lodge in more ſecurity, vpō the making of a fire, or ringing of a bell, hauing them in a redines for him.

CHAP. 28.

[1] *The praiſes of* Zelmanes *act.* [2] Dametas *his caroll for ſauing himſelf, and his charge.* [3] Baſilius *his conference with* Philanax *of the Oracle (the ground of all this ſtorie.)* [4] *His wrong-conſtruction of it.* [5] *His hymne to* Apollo. [6] *His courting turnde ouer to tale-telling.*

THis, *Clinias* (hauing his eare one way when his eye was an other) had perceiued, & therefore haſted away, with mind to tell *Cecropia* that ſhe was to take ſome ſpeedie reſolution, or els it were daunger thoſe examinations would both diſcouer, & ruine her: and ſo went his way, leauing that little companie with embracements, and praiſing of *Zelmanes* excellent proceeding, to ſhew, that no decking ſets foorth any thing ſo much, as affection. For as, while ſhe ſtoode at the diſcretion of thoſe indiſcreete rebelles, euerie angry 1

angrie countenance any of them made, ſeemed a knife layde vpon their owne throates; ſo vnſpeakable was now their ioy, that they ſaw (beſides her ſafetie & their owne) the ſame wrought, and ſafely wrought by her meanes, in whom they had placed all their delightes. What examples *Greece* could euer alledge of witte and fortitude, were ſet in the ranke of trifles, being compared to this action.

2 But as they were in the midſt of thoſe vnfained ceremonies, a Gitterne, ill-played on, accompanied with a hoarce voice (who ſeemed to ſing maugre the Muſes, and to be merie in ſpite of Fortune) made them looke the way of the ill-noyſed ſong. The ſong was this.

A Hatefull cure with hate to heale:
A blooddy helpe with blood to ſaue:
A fooliſh thing with fooles to deale:
Let him be bold that bobs will haue.
But who by meanes of wiſdome hie
Hath ſau'd his charge? it is euen I.

Let other deck their pride with skarres,
And of their wounds make braue lame ſhowes:
Firſt let them die, then paſſe the ſtarres,
When rotten Fame will tell their blowes.
But eye from blade, and eare from crie:
Who hath ſau'd all? it is euen I.

They had ſo one found it was *Dametas*, who came with no leſſe lifted vp countenance, then if he had paſſed ouer the bellies of all his enemies: ſo wiſe a point he thought he had perfourmed, in vſing the naturall ſtrength

ſtrength of a caue. But neuer was it his dooing to come ſo ſoone thence, till the coaſt were more aſſuredly cleare: for it was a rule with him, that after a great ſtorme there euer fell a fewe droppes before it be fully finiſhed. But *Pamela* (who had now experienced how much care doth ſollicite a Louers hart) vſed this occaſion of going to her parents and ſiſter, indeed aſwel for that cauſe, as being vnquiet, till her eye might be aſſured, how her ſhepheard had gone through the daunger. But *Baſilius* with the ſight of *Pamela* (of whom almoſt his head otherwiſe occupied, had left the wonted remembrance) was ſodainly ſtriken into a deuout kind of admiration, remembring the oracle, which (according to the fauning humour of falſe hope) he interpreted now his owne to his owne beſt, and with the willing blindneſſe of affection (becauſe his minde ran wholly vpon *Zelmane*) he thought the Gods in their oracles did principally minde her.

But as he was deepely thinking of the matter, one of the ſhepheards tolde him, that *Philanax* was already come with a hundred horſe in his company. For hauing by chaunce rid not farre of the little deſert, he had heard of this vprore, and ſo was come vpon the ſpurre (gathering a company of Gentlemen as faſt as he could) to the ſuccour of his Maſter. *Baſilius* was glad of it; but (not willing to haue him, nor any other of the Noble men, ſee his Miſtreſſe) he himſelfe went out of the Lodge, and ſo giuing order vnto him of placing garriſons, and examining theſe matters; and *Philanax* with humble earneſtneſſe beginning to entreate him to leaue of his ſolitarie courſe (which already had bene ſo daungerous vnto him) Well (ſaid *Baſilius*) it may be

ere long I wil cõdiſcend vnto your deſire. In the meane time, take you the beſt order you can to keepe me ſafe in my ſolitarincſſe. But, (ſaid he) doo you remember, how earneſtly you wrote vnto me, that I ſhould not be moued by that Oracles authoritie, which brought me to this reſolution? Full well Sir (anſwered *Philanax*) for though it pleaſed you not as then to let me knowe, what the Oracles words were, yet all Oracles holding (in my conceipt) one degree of reputatiõ, it ſuffiſed me to know, it was but an Oracle, which led you frõ your owne courſe. Well (ſaid *Baſilius*) I will now tell you the wordes; which before I thought not good to doo; becauſe when al the euents fall out (as ſome already haue done) I may charge you with your incredulitie. So he repeated them in this ſorte.

THy elder care ſhall from thy carefull face
By princely meane be ſtolne, and yet not loſt.
Thy yonger ſhall with Natures bliſſe embrace
An vncouth loue, which Nature hateth moſt.
Both they themſelues vnto ſuch two ſhall wed,
Who at thy beer, as at a barre, ſhall plead;
Why thee (a liuing man) they had made dead.
In thy owne ſeate a forraine ſtate ſhall ſit.
And ere that all theſe blowes thy head doo hit,
Thou, with thy wife, adultry ſhall commit.

For you forſoth (ſaid he) when I told you, that ſome ſupernaturall cauſe ſent me ſtrange viſiõs, which being cõfirmed with preſagious chaunces, I had gone to *Del-*

phos,

phos,& there receiued this anſwere: you replied to me, that the onely ſupernaturall cauſes were the humors of my body, which bred ſuch melancholy dreames; and that both they framed a mind full of conceipts, apt to make preſages of things, which in thēſelues were meerly chaungeable: & with all as I ſay, you remēber what you wrot vnto me, touching authoritie of the Oracle: but now I haue ſome notable triall of the truth therof, which herafter I wil more largly cōmunicate vnto you. Only now, know that the thing I moſt feared is alredy performed; I mean that a forraine ſtate ſhould poſſeſſe my throne. For that hath ben done by *Zelmane*, but not as I feared, to my ruine, but to my preſeruatiō. But whē he had once named *Zelmane*, that name was as good as a pully, to make the clocke of his praiſes run on in ſuch ſort, that (*Philanax* found) was more exquiſite then the only admiration of vertue breedeth: which his faithful hart inwardly repining at, made him ſhrinke away as ſoone as he could, to go about the other matters of iimportance, which *Baſilius* had enioyned vnto him.

Baſilius returned into the Lodge, thus by him ſelfe 4
conſtruing the oracle, that in that he ſaid, his elder care ſhould by Princely meane be ſtolne away from him, and yet not loſt, it was now perfourmed, ſince *Zelmane* had as it were robd from him the care of his firſt begotten childe, yet was it not loſt, ſince in his harte the ground of it remained. That his younger ſhould with Natures bliſſe embrace the loue of *Zelmane*, becauſe he had ſo commaunded her for his ſake to doo; yet ſhoulde it be with as much hate of Nature, for being ſo hatefull an oppoſite to the iealouſie hee thought her mother had of him. The ſitting in his

ſeate he deemed by her already perfourmed: but that which moſt cõforted him, was his interpretation of the adulterie, which he thought he ſhould commit with *Zelmane*, whom afterwards he ſhould haue to his wife. The point of his daughters marriage, becauſe it threatned his death withall, he determined to preuent, with keeping them vnmaried while he liued. But hauing as he thought, gotten thus much vnderſtanding of the Oracle, he determined for three daies after to perfourme certaine rites to *Apollo*: and euen then began with his wife and daughters to ſinge this Hymne, by them yearely vſed.

5 APollo *great, whoſe beames the greater world do light,*
And in our little world do cleare our inward ſight,
Which euer ſhine, though hid from earth by earthly ſhade,
Whoſe lights do euer liue, but in our darkeneſſe fade;
Thou God, whoſe youth was deckt with ſpoiles of Pythõs *skin:*
" *(So humble knowledge can throw downe the ſnakiſh kinne)*
Latonas *ſonne, whoſe birth in paine and trauaile long*
Doth teach, to learne the good what trauailes do belong:
" *In trauaile of our life (a ſhort but tedious ſpace)*
While brickle houreglas runnes, guide thou our panting pace:
Giue vs foreſightfull mindes: giue vs minds to obaye
What foreſight tels; our thoughts vpon thy knowledge ſtaye.
Let ſo our fruites grow vp, that nature be maintainde:
But ſo our hartes keepe downe, with vice they be not ſtainde.
Let this aſſured holde our iudgements ouertake,
" *That nothing winnes the heauen, but what doth earth forſake.*

6 Aſſone as he had ended his deuotion (all the priuiledged ſhepheards being now come) knowing well inough

inough he might lay all his care vpon *Philanax*,he was willing to ſweeten the taſt of this paſſed tumult, with ſome rurall paſtimes. For which while the ſhepheards prepared themſelues in their beſt mãner, *Baſilius* tooke his daughter *Philoclea* aſide, and with ſuch haſt,as if his eares hunted for wordes,deſired to know how ſhe had found *Zelmane*. She humbly anſwered him,according to the agreement betwixt them,that thus much for her ſake *Zelmane* was content to deſcend from her former reſolutiõ,as to heare him,whẽſoeuer he would ſpeake; & further then that(ſhe ſaid)as *Zelmane* had not graunted,ſo ſhe nether did,nor euer would deſire.*Baſilius* kiſt her with more then fatherly thanks, and ſtraight(like a hard-kept warde new come to his lands) would faine haue vſed the benefite of that graunt,in laying his ſicknes before his onely phyſition. But *Zelmane* (that had not yet fully determined with her ſelfe, how to beare her ſelfe toward him)made him in a few words vnderſtand, that the time in reſpect of the cõpanie was vnfit for ſuch a parley,& therfore to keep his braines the buſier,letting him vnderſtand what ſhe had learned of his daughters,touching *Eronas* diſtreſſe (whom in her trauaile ſhe had knowne, and bene greatly beholding to) ſhe deſired him to finiſh the reſt,for ſo far as *Plãgus* had told him;Becauſe ſhe ſaid(& ſhe ſaid truly)ſhe was full of care for that Ladie, whoſe deſart(onely except an ouer-baſe choiſe) was nothing agreable to misfortune. *Baſilius* glad that ſhe would commaund him any thing, but more glad, that in excuſing the vnfitneſſe of that time,ſhe argued an intention to graunt a fitter, obeyed her in this manner.

CHAP. 29.

[1] Antiphilus *his baſe-borne pride borne high by flatterie.* [2] *His vnkinde hating the louing* Erona, *and fond louing of hating* Artaxia. [3] Artaxias *trap to take them both.* [4] *The mans weakeneſſe, and the womans ſtrength in bearing captiuitie.* [5] Plangus *loue to her, employed by her to ſaue* Antiphilus, [6] *who againe betraies himſelfe and them.* [7] *His execution by women.* [8] Plangus *hardy attempts to ſaue* Erona. [9] *The conditions of her death.* [10] *Her ſorrow for* Antiphilus, [11] *and* Plangus *trauaile for her: with his croſſes, and courſe therein.*

MAdame (ſaid he) it is very true, that ſinçe yeares enhabled me to iudge what is, or is not to be pitied, I neuer ſaw anything that more moued me to iuſtifie a vehemẽt compaſſion in my ſelf, then the eſtate of that Prince, whom ſtrong againſt al his owne afflictions (which yet were great, as I perceaue you haue heard) yet true and noble loue had ſo pulled downe, as to lie vnder ſorrow for another. In ſo much as I could not temper my long idle pen in that ſubiect, which I perceiue you haue ſeene. But then to leaue that vnrepeated, which I finde my daughters haue told you, It may pleaſe you to vnderſtãd, ſince it pleaſeth you to demaũd, that *Antiphilus* being crowned, & ſo left by the famous Princes *Muſidorus* & *Pyrocles* (led thẽce by the challenge of *Anaxius*, who is now in theſe prouinces of *Greece*, making a diſhonorable

honorable enquirie after that excellent prince *Pyrocles* alreadie periſhed) *Antiphilus* (I ſay) being crowned, and deliuered from the preſence of thoſe two, whoſe vertues (while they were preſent, good ſchoolmaſters) ſuppreſſed his vanities, he had not ſtrēgth of mind enough in him to make long delay, of diſcouering what maner of man he was. But ſtreight like one caried vp to ſo hie a place, that he looſeth the diſcerning of the ground ouer which he is; ſo was his mind lifted ſo far beyōd the leuell of his owne diſcourſe, that remembring only that himſelfe was in the high ſeate of a King, he coulde not perceiue that he was a king of reaſonable creatures, who would quickly ſcorne follies, and repine at iniuries. But imagining no ſo true propertie of ſouereigntie, as to do what he liſted, and to liſt whatſoeuer pleaſed his fanſie, he quickly made his kingdome a Teniſcourt, where his ſubiects ſhould be the balles; not in truth cruelly, but licenciouſly abuſing them, preſuming ſo far vpon himſelfe, that what he did was liked of euery bodie: nay, that his diſgraces were fauours, and all becauſe he was a King. For in Nature not able to conceyue the bonds of great matters (ſuddenly borne into an vnknowne Ocean of abſolute power) he was ſwayed withall (he knewe not howe) as euerie winde of paſſions puffed him. Whereto nothing helped him better, then that poyſonous ſugar of flatterie: which ſome vſed, out of the innate baſeneſſe of their hart, ſtraight like dogges fawning vppon the greateſt; others ſecretely hating him, and diſdayning his great riſing ſo ſuddenly, ſo vndeſeruedly (finding his humour) bent their exalting him only to his ouerthrow; like the bird that caries the ſhell-fiſh high, to breake him the eaſier with his fall.

But his minde (being an apt matter to receiue what forme their amplifying ſpeeches woulde lay vpon it) daunced ſo prettie a muſicke to their falſe meaſure, that he thought himſelfe the wyſeſt, the woorthyeſt, and beſt beloued, that euer gaue honour to a royall tytle. And being but obſcurely borne, he had found out vnbluſhing pedegrees, that made him not onely of the blood royall, but true heyre, vniuſtly diſpoſſeſt by *Eronas* aunceſtours. And like the fooliſh birde, that when it ſo hides the heade that it ſees not it ſelfe, thinkes no bodie elſe ſees it: ſo did he imagine, that no bodie knew his baſeneſſe, while he himſelfe turned his eyes from it.

2 Then vaineneſſe (a meager friend to gratefulneſſe) brought him ſo to deſpiſe *Erona*, as of whom he had receiued no benefit, that within halfe a yeeres mariage he began to pretend barrenneſſe: and making firſt an vnlawfull law of hauing mo wiues then one, he ſtill keeping *Erona*, vnder-hād, by meſſage ſought *Artaxia*, who no leſſe hating him, then louing (as vnluckie a choiſe) the naughtie King *Plexirtus*, yet to bring to paſſe what he purpoſed, was content to train him into falſe hopes, till alreadie his imagination had crowned him King of *Armenia*, & had made that, but the foundation of more, and more monarchies; as if fortune had only gottē eies to cheriſh him. In which time a great aſſembly of moſt part of al the Princes of *Aſia* being to do honour to the neuer ſufficiently praiſed *Pyrocles* & *Muſidorus*, he would be one not to acknowledge his obligation (which was as great as any of the others,) but looking to haue bene yong maſter among thoſe great eſtates, as he was amōg his abuſing vnderlings. But ſo many valorous Princes,

in

in-deed farre neerer to diſdaine him then otherwiſe, he was quickly (as ſtanding vpon no true ground, inwardly) out of countenance with himſelfe, till his ſeldom-cõfortleſſe flatterers (perſwading him, it was enuie & feare of his expected greatnes) made him haſt away frõ that company, & without further delay appointed the meeting with *Artaxia*; ſo incredibly blinded with the ouer-bright ſhining of his roialty, that he could thinke ſuch a Queene could be content to be ioined-patent with an other to haue ſuch an husband. Poore *Erona* to all this obeied, either vehemẽcy of affection making her ſtoop to ſo ouerbaſe a ſeruitude, or aſtoniſhed with an vnlooked-for fortune, dull to any behoofeful reſolutiõ, or (as many times it falles out euen in great harts when they can accuſe none but thẽſelues) deſperatly bent to maintaine it. For ſo went ſhe on in that way of her loue, that (poore Lady) to be beyond all other examples of ill-ſet affection, ſhe was brought to write to *Artaxia*, that ſhe was content; for the publike good, to be a ſecond wife, and yeeld the firſt place to her: nay to extoll him, and euen woo *Artaxia* for him.

But *Artaxia* (mortally hating them both for her brothers ſake) was content to hide her hate, til ſhe had time to ſhewe it: and pretending that all her grudge was againſt the two paragons of vertue, *Muſidorus* & *Pyrocles*, euen met them halfe way in excuſing her brothers murder, as not being principall actors; and of the other-ſide, driuen to what they did by the euer-pardonable neceſſitie: and ſo well handled the matter, as, though ſhe promiſed nothing, yet *Antiphilus* promiſed himſelfe all that ſhe woulde haue him thinke. And ſo a ſolemne enteruiew was appointed. But (as the Poets ſay) *Hymen* 3

had

had not there his ſaffron-coloured cote. For *Artaxia* laying men ſecretly (and eaſily they might be ſecret, ſince *Antiphilus* thought ſhe ouerran him in loue) when he came euen readie to embrace her, ſhewing rather a countenaunce of accepting then offering, they came forth, and (hauing much aduauntage both in number, valure, and fore-preparation) put all his companie to the ſword; but ſuch as could flie away. As for *Antiphilus* ſhe cauſed him and *Erona* both to be put in irons, haſting backe toward her brothers tombe, vpõ which ſhe ment to ſacrifice them; making the loue of her brother ſtand betwene her and all other motions of grace, from which by nature ſhe was alienated.

4 But great diuerſitie in them two quickely diſcouered it ſelfe for the bearing of that affliction. For *Antiphilus* that had no greatneſſe but outwarde, that taken away, was readie to fall faſter then calamitie could thruſt him; with fruitleſſe begging (where reaſon might well aſſure him his death was reſolued) and weake bemoning his fortune, to giue his enemies a moſt pleaſing muſique, with manie promiſes, and proteſtations, to as little purpoſe, as from a little minde. But *Erona* ſadde in-deede, yet like one rather vſed, then new fallen to ſadneſſe (as who had the ioyes of her hart alreadie broken) ſeemed rather to welcome then to ſhunne that ende of miſerie, ſpeaking little, but what ſhe ſpake was for *Antiphilus*, remembring his guiltleſneſſe, being at that time priſoner to *Tiridates*, when the valiant princes ſlue him: to the diſgrace of men, ſhewing that there are women more wiſe to iudge what is to be expected, and more conſtant to beare it when it is happened.

5 But her witte endeared by her youth, her affliction by

by her birth, and her ſadneſſe by her beautie, made this noble prince *Plangus*, who (neuer almoſt from his couſin *Artaxia*) was nowe preſent at *Eronaes* taking, to perceyue the ſhape of louelineſſe more perfectly in wo, then in ioyfulneſſe (as in a picture which receiues greater life by the darkeneſſe of ſhadowes, then by more glittering colours) and ſeeing to like; and liking to loue; and louing ſtraight to feele the moſt incident effects of loue, to ſerue and preſerue. So borne by the haſtie tide of ſhort leyſure, he did haſtily deliuer together his affection, and affectionate care. But ſhe (as if he had ſpoken of a ſmall matter, when he mencioned her life, to which ſhe had not leiſure to attend) deſired him if he loued her, to ſhew it, in finding ſome way to ſaue *Antiphilus*. For her, ſhe found the world but a weariſom ſtage vnto her, where ſhe played a part againſt her will: and therefore beſought him, not to caſt his loue in ſo vnfruitfull a place, as could not loue it ſelfe: but for a teſtimonie of conſtancie, and a ſutablenes to his word, to do ſo much comfort to her minde, as that for her ſake *Antiphilus* were ſaued. He tolde me how much he argued againſt her tendering him, who had ſo vngratefully betraied her, and fooliſhly caſt away himſelfe. But perceiuing ſhe did not only bend her very goodwits to ſpeake for him againſt her-ſelfe, but when ſuch a cauſe could be allied to no reaſō, yet loue would needs make it-ſelf a cauſe, & barre her rather frō hearing, then yeeld that ſhe ſhould yeeld to ſuch arguments: he likewiſe in whō the power of Loue (as they ſay of ſpirits) was ſubiect to the loue in her, with griefe cōſented, & (though backwardly) was diligēt to labor the help of *Antiphilus:* a man whom he not onely hated, as a traitour to *Erona*;

but

but enuied as a poſſeſſor of *Erona*. Yet Loue ſware, his hart, in ſpite of his hart, ſhould make him become a ſeruant to his riuall. And ſo did he, ſeeking all the meanes of perſwading *Artaxia*, which the authority of ſo neere, and ſo vertuous a kinſmã would giue vnto him. But ſhe to whom the eloquence of hatred had giuen reuenge the face of delight, reiected all ſuch motions; but rather the more cloſely impriſoning them in her chiefe citie, where ſhe kept them with intention at the birth-day of *Tiridates* (which was very nere) to execute *Antiphilus*, & at the day of his death (which was about halfe a yeere after) to vſe the ſame rigor towars *Erona*. *Plangus* much grieued (becauſe much louing) attempted the humors of the *Lycians*, to ſee, whether they would come in with forces to ſuccor their Princeſſe. But there the next inheritor to the crowne (with the true play that is vſed in the game of kingdõs) had no ſooner his miſtres in captiuity, but he had vſurped her place, & making her odious to her people, becauſe of the vnfit electiõ ſhe had made, had ſo left no hope there: but which is worſe, had ſent to *Artaxia*, perſwading the iuſticing her, becauſe that vniuſtice might giue his title the name of iuſtice. Wãting that way, *Plangus* practiſed with ſome deere friends of his, to ſaue *Antiphilus* out of priſon, whoſe day becauſe it was much neerer then *Eronaes*, & that he wel found, ſhe had twiſted her life vpõ the ſame threed with his, he determined firſt to get him out of priſon: & to that end hauing prepared al matters as wel as in ſuch caſe he could, where *Artaxia* had ſet many of *Tiridates* old ſeruants to haue well-marking eyes, he cõferred with *Antiphilus*, as (by the auᵭhoritie he had) he found meanes to do; & agreed with him of the time and maner, how he ſhould

by

by the death of ſome of his iaylors eſcape.

But all being well ordered, and *Plangus* willinglie 6
putting himſelfe into the greateſt danger, *Antiphilus* (who, like a bladder, ſweld redie to breake, while it was full of the winde of proſperitie, that being out, was ſo abiected, as apt to be trode on by euery bodie) when it came to the point, that with ſome hazard, he might be in apparant likelihoode to auoide the vttermoſt harm, his harte fainted, and (weake foole, neither hoping, nor fearing as he ſhould) gat a conceite, that with bewraying his practiſe, he might obtaine pardon: and therefore, euen a little before *Plangus* ſhould haue come vnto him, opened the whole practiſe to him that had the charge, with vnpittyed teares idly proteſting, he had rather die by *Artaxias* commaundement, then againſt her will eſcape: yet begging life vpon any the hardeſt, and wretchedeſt conditions that ſhe woulde lay vpon him. His keeper prouided accordingly, ſo that when *Plangus* came, he was like, himſelf to haue bene entrappud: but that finding (with a luckie in-ſight) that it was diſcouered, he retired; and (calling his friendes about him) ſtood vpon his guard, as he had good cauſe. For, *Artaxia* (accounting him moſt vngrateful conſidering that her brother and ſhe, had not onely preſerued him againſt the malice of his father, but euer vſed him much liker his birth, then his fortune) ſent forces to apprehend him. But he among the martiall men had gotten ſo great loue, that he could not onely keep himſelf from the malice, but worke in their mindes a compaſſion of *Eronas* aduerſitie.

But for the ſuccour of *Antiphilus* he could gette no 7
bodie to ioyne with him, the contempt of him hauing

uing not bene able to qualifie the hatred; ſo that *Artaxia* might eaſilie vpon him perfourme her will; which was (at humble ſuite of all the women of that citie) to deliuer him to their cenſure, who mortally hating him for hauing made a lawe of *Polygamie*, after many tortures, forſte him to throwe himſelfe from a high *Pyramis*, which was built ouer *Tiridates* tombe, and ſo to end his fallſe-harted life, which had planted no ſtrong thought in him, but that he could be vnkinde.

8 But *Plangus* well perceiuing that *Artaxia* ſtaied onely for the appointed day, that the faire *Eronas* bodie, (conſumed to aſhes) ſhould make a notorious teſtimonie, how deepely her brothers death was engrauen in her breſt, he aſſembled good numbers of friendes, whō his vertue (though a ſtranger) had tied vnto him, by force to giue her libertie. Contrariwiſe, *Artaxia*, to whom Anger gaue more courage then her ſexe did feare, vſed her regall authoritie (the moſt ſhe could) to ſuppreſſe that ſedition, and haue her will: which (ſhe thought) is the moſt princely thing that may be. But *Plangus*, who indeede (as all men witnes) is one of the beſt captains (both for policie and valour) that are trained in the ſchoole of *Mars*, in a conflict ouerthrew *Artaxias* power, though of far greater number: and there toke priſoner a baſe ſonne of her brothers, whom ſhe deerly affected, & then ſent her word that he ſhould run the ſame race of fortune (whatſoeuer it was) that *Erona* did: & happy was that threatning for her; for els *Artaxia* had haſtened the day of her death, in reſpecte of thoſe tumults.

9 But now (ſome principal noble-mē of that countrie interpoſing thēſelues) it was agreed, that all perſons els

fullie

fullie pardoned, and all priſoners (except *Erona*) deliuered, ſhe ſhould be put into the hands of a principall nobleman, who had a caſtle of great ſtrength, vpon oath, that if by the day two yeare frō *Tiridates* death, *Pyrocles* and *Muſidorus* did not in perſon combat, & ouercome two knights, whō ſhe appointed to maintain her quarrell againſt *Erona* and them, of hauing by treaſon deſtroyed her brother, that thē *Erona* ſhould be that ſame day burned to aſhes: but if they came, and had the victorie, ſhe ſhould be deliuered; but vpon no occaſion, neither freed, nor executed, till that day. And hereto of both ſides, all toke ſolemne oath, and ſo the peace was concluded; they of *Plangus* partie forcing him to agree, though he himſelfe the ſooner condiſcended, knowing the courteſie of thoſe two excellent Princes, not to refuſe ſo noble a quarrell, and their power ſuch, as two more (like the other two) were not able to reſiſt. *But Artaxia* was more, and vpon better ground, pleaſed with this action; for ſhe had euen newly receiued newes frō *Plexirtus*, that vpon the ſea he had cauſed them both to periſh, and therefore ſhe held her ſelf ſure of the match.

But poore *Plangus* knew not ſo much, and therefore 10
ſeeing his partie (as moſt times it falles out in like caſe) hungry of conditions of peace, accepted them; & then obteined leaue of the Lord, that indifferently kept her, to viſite *Erona*, whom he founde full of deſperate ſorowe, not ſuffering, neither his vnwoorthineſſe, nor his wronges, nor his death (which is the naturall concluſion of all worldly acts) either to cover with forgetfulnes, or diminiſh with conſideration, the affection ſhe had borne him: but euen glorying in affliction, and ſhunning all comforte, ſhe ſeemed to haue no delight, but in making her ſelfe the picture of miſerie.

So

So that when *Plangus* came to her, ſhe fell in deadlie traunces, as if in him ſhe had ſeene the death of *Antiphilus*, becauſe he had not ſuccoured him: and yet (her vertue ſtriuing) ſhe did at one time acknowledge her ſelfe bound, and profeſſe her ſelfe iniured; in ſteede of allowing the concluſion they had made, or writing to the Princes (as he wiſht her to doo) crauing nothing but ſome ſpeedie death to followe, her (in ſpite of iuſt hate) beloued *Antiphilus*.

11 So that *Plangus* hauing nothing but a rauiſht kiſſe from her hande at their parting', went away towarde *Greece*, whetherward he vnderſtoode the Princes were embarked. But by the way it was his fortune to intercept letters, written by *Artaxia* to *Plexirtus*: wherein ſhe ſignified her accepting him to her huſband, whom ſhe had euer fauoured, ſo much the rather, as he had perfourmed the conditions of her mariage, in bringing to their deſerued end, her greateſt enemies: withall, thanking the ſea, in ſuch tearmes, as he might well perceiue, it was by ſome treaſon wrought in *Plexirtus* ſhippe. Whereupon (to make more diligent ſearch) he tooke ſhippe himſelfe, and came into *Laconia*, enquiring, and by his enquirie finding, that ſuch a ſhippe was indeede with fight, and fire, periſhed, none (almoſt) eſcaping. But for *Pyrocles* and *Muſidorus*, it was aſſuredly determined that they were caſt away: for the name of ſuch Princes (eſpecially in *Greece*) would quickly els haue bene a large witneſſe to the contrarie. Full of griefe with that, for the loſſe of ſuch, who left the world poor of perfection: but more ſorie for *Eronas* ſake, who now by them could not be relieued. A new aduertiſement from *Armenia* ouertooke him, which multiplied the

force

force of his anguiſh. It was a meſſage from the Nobleman who had *Erona* in ward, giuing him to vnderſtād, that ſince his departure, *Artaxia* (vſing the benefite of time) had beſieged him in his caſtell, demaunding preſent deliuery of her, whom yet for his faith giuen, he would not, before the day appointed, if poſſibly he could reſiſt, which he foreſaw, lōg he ſhould not do for want of victuall, which he had not ſo wiſely prouided, becauſe he truſted vpon the generall oth taken for two yeares ſpace: & therfore willed him to make haſt to his ſuccour, & come with no ſmall forces; for all they that were of his ſide in *Armenia*, were conſumed, & *Artaxia* had encreaſed her might by mariage of *Plexirtus*, who now crowned King there, ſtickt not to glory in the murder of *Pyrocles* and *Muſidorus*, as hauing iuſt cauſe thereto, in reſpect of the deaths of his ſiſter *Andromana*, her ſonne his nephew, and his own daughter *Zelmane*, all whoſe loſſe he vniuſtly charged them withal, & now openly ſtickt not to cōfeſſe, what a reuenge his wit had brought forth. *Plangus* much aſtoniſhed herewith, bethought himſelfe what to doo. For to returne to *Armenia* was vaine, ſince his friends there were vtterly ouerthrowne. Thē thought he of going to his father; but he had already (euen ſince the death of his ſtepmother, & brother) attempted the recouering his fauour, & all in vaine. For they, that had before ioined with *Andromana* to do him the wrong, thought now no life for thē if he returned, & therfore kept him ſtil (with new forged ſuſpicions) odious to his father. So that *Plangus* reſeruing that for a worke of longer time, then the ſauing of *Erona* could beare, determined to go to the mighty and good King *Euarchus*: who lately hauing (to his eternall fame) fully, not onely conquered his enimies, but eſta-

bliſhed good gouernment in their countries, he hoped he might haue preſent ſuccour of him, both for the iuſtnes of the cauſe, & reuenge of his childrens death, by ſo hainous a treaſon murthered. Therefore with diligence he went to him; & by the way (paſſing through my country) it was my hap to find him, the moſt ouerthrowne mā with griefe, that euer I hope to ſee againe. For ſtil it ſeemed he had *Erona* at a ſtake before his eies; ſuch an apprehenſion he had taken of her daunger; which in deſpite of all the comfort I could giue him, he poured out in ſuch lamentations, that I was moued not to let him paſſe, till he had made full declaration, which by peeces my daughters & I haue deliuered vnto you. Fayne he would haue had ſuccour of my ſelfe, but the courſe of my life being otherwiſe bent, I onely accompanied him with ſome that might ſafely guide him to the great *Euarchus*: for my parte hauing had ſome of his ſpeeches ſo feelingly in my memory, that at an idle time (as I tolde you) I ſet them downe Dialogue-wiſe, in ſuch manner as you haue ſeene. And thus, excellent Ladie, I haue obeyed you in this ſtorie; wherein if it well pleaſe you to conſider, what is the ſtraunge power of Loue, and what is due to his authoritie, you ſhall exerciſe therein the true nobleneſſe of your iudgement, and doo the more right to the vnfortunate Hiſtorian. *Zelmane* (ſighing for *Eronaes* ſake, yet inwardly comforted in that ſhe aſſured her ſelfe, *Euarchus* would not ſpare to take in hande the iuſt deliuering of her, ioyned with the iuſt reuenge of his childrens loſſe) hauing now what ſhe deſired of *Baſilius*, to auoide his further diſcourſes of affection, encouraged the ſhepheards to begin, whom ſhe ſaw all ready for them.

The

The ſecond Eclogues.

THe rude tumulte of the *Eniſpians* gaue occaſion to the honeſt ſhepheards to beginne their paſtorals this day with a daũce, which they called the skirmiſh betwixt *Reaſon* and *Paſſion*. For ſeuen ſhepheards (which were named the Reaſonable ſhepheards) ioined thẽſelues; foure of them making a ſquare, and the other two going a litle wide of either ſide, like winges for the maine battell; and the ſeuenth man formoſt, like the forlorne hope to begin the skirmiſh. In like order came out the ſeuen appaſſionated ſhepheards; all keeping the paſe of their foote by their voice, and ſundry conſorted inſtrumẽts they held in their armes. And firſt, the formoſt of Reaſonable ſide began to ſing.

R. *Thou Rebell vile, come, to thy maſter yelde.*

And the other that met with him anſwered.

P. *No, Tyrant, no: mine, mine ſhall be the fielde.*
Reaſon. *Can* Reaſon *then a Tyraunt counted be?*
Paſſion. *If* Reaſon *will, that* Paſſions *be not free.*
R. *But* Reaſon *will, that* Reaſon *gouerne moſt.*
P. *And* Paſſion *will, that* Paſſion *rule the roſt.*
R. *Your will is will; but* Reaſon *reaſon is.*
P. *Will hath his will, when* Reaſons *will doth miſſe.*
R. *Whom* Paſſion *leades vnto his death is bent.*
P. *And let him die, ſo that he die content.*
R. *By nature you to* Reaſon *faith haue ſworne.*

P, *Not ſo, but fellowlike together borne.*
R. *Who* Paſſion *doth enſue, liues in annoy.*
P. *Who* Paſſion *doth forſake, liues void of ioy.*
R. Paſſion *is blinde, and treades an vnknowne trace*
P. Reaſon *hath eyes to ſee his owne ill caſe.*

Then as they approched neerer, the two of *Reaſons* ſides, as if they ſhot at the other, thus ſange.

R. *Dare* Paſſions *then abide in* Reaſons *light?*
P. *And is not* Reaſon *dimde with* Paſſions *might?*
R. *O fooliſh thing, which glory doth deſtroye.*
P. *O glorious title of a fooliſh toye.*
R. *Weakencs you are, dare you with our ſtrength fight?*
P. *Becauſe our weaknes weakeneth all your might.*
R. *O ſacred* Reaſon, *helpe our vertuous toiles.*
P. *O* Paſſion, *paſſe on feeble* Reaſons *ſpoiles.*
R. *We with ourſelues abide a daily ſtrife.*
P. *We gladly vſe the ſweetnes of our life.*
R. *But yet our ſtrife ſure peace in end doth breede.*
P. *We now haue peace, your peace we doo not neede.*

Then did the two ſquare battailes meete, & in ſteed of fighting embrace one another, ſinging thus.

R. *We are too ſtrong: but* Reaſon *ſeekes no blood.*
P. *Who be too weake, do feigne they be too good.*
R. *Though we cannot orecome, our cauſe is iuſt.*
P. *Let vs orecome, and let vs be vniuſt.*
R. *Yet* Paſſion, *yeeld at length to* Reaſons *ſtroke.*
P. *What ſhall we winne by taking* Reaſons *yoke?*
R. *The ioyes you haue ſhall be made permanent.*
P. *But ſo we ſhall with griefe learne to repent.*
R. *Repent indeed, but that ſhall be your bliſſe.*
P. *How know we that, ſince preſent ioyes we miſſe?*
R. *You know it not: of* Reaſon *therefore know it.*

P. *No* Reaſon *yet had euer skill to ſhow it.*
R. P. *Then let vs both to heauenly rules giue place,*
Which Paſſions *skill, and* Reaſon *do deface.*

THen embraced they one another, and came to the King, who framed his praiſes of thē according to *Zelmanes* liking; whoſe vnreſtrained parts, the minde & eie, had their free courſe to the delicate *Philoclea*, whoſe looke was not ſhort in well requiting it, although ſhe knew it was a hatefull ſight to her iealous mother. But *Dicus* (that had in this time taken a great liking of *Dorus* for the good partes he found aboue his age in him) had a delight to taſte the fruites of his wit, though in a ſubiect which he him ſelfe moſt of all other deſpiſed: and ſo entred to ſpeach with him in the manner of this following Eclogue.

Dicus. Dorus.

DOrus, *tell me, where is thy wonted motion* Dicus.
To make theſe woods reſounde thy lamentation?
Thy ſainte is dead, or dead is thy deuotion.
For who doth holde his loue in eſtimation,
To witnes, that he thinkes his thoughts delicious,
Thinks to make ech thing badge of his ſweet paſsion.

But what doth make thee Dicus *ſo ſuſpicious* Dorus.
Of my due faith, which needs muſt be immutable?
Who others vertue doubt, themſelues are vicious.
Not ſo; although my mettall were moſt mutable,
Her beames haue wrought therin moſt faire impreſsion:
To ſuch a force ſome chaunge were nothing ſutable.

Dicus. *The harte well ſet doth neuer ſhunne confeſſion :*
If noble be thy bandes, make them notorious:
Silence doth ſeeme the maske of baſe oppreſſion.
Who glories in his loue, doth make Loue glorious :
But who doth feare, or bideth muet wilfully,
Showes, guilty harte doth deeme his ſtate opprobrious.
Thou then, that framſte both words & voice moſt skilfully,
Yeeld to our eares a ſweet and ſound relation,
If Loue tooke thee by force, or caught thee guilefully.

Dorus. *If Sunnie beames ſhame heau'nly habitation ;*
If three-leau'd graſſe ſeeme to the ſheepe vnſauorie,
Then baſe and ſower is Loues moſt high vocation.
Or if ſheepes cries can helpe the Sunnes owne brauerie,
Then may I hope, my pipe may haue abilitie,
To helpe her praiſe, who decks me in her ſlauerie.
No, no. no wordes ennoble ſelfe-nobilitie.
As for your doubts ; her voice was it deceaued me,
Her eye the force beyond all poſsibilitie.

Dicus. *Thy words well voic'd, well gra'ſte had almoſt heaued me*
Quite from my ſelfe to loue Loues contemplation ;
Till of theſe thoughts thy ſodaine ende bereaued me.
Goe on therefore, and tell vs, by what faſhion
In thy owne proofe he gets ſo ſtraunge poſſeſſion,
And how poſſeſt he ſtrengthens his inuaſion ?

Dorus. *Sight is his roote, in thought is his progreſſion,*
His childhood woonder, prenticeſhip attention,
His youth delight, his age the ſoules oppreſſion :
Doubte is his ſleepe, he waketh in inuention ;
Fancie his foode, his clothing is of carefulnes ;

Beautie

Beautie his boote, his play louers diſſention:
His eyes are curious ſearch, but vailde with wareſulneſſe:
His wings deſire oft clipt with deſperation:
Largeſſe his hands could neuerskill of ſpareſulneſſe.
But how he doth by might, or by perſuaſion
To conquere, and his conqueſt how to ratifie,
Experience doubts, and ſchooles holde diſputation.

But ſo thy ſheepe may thy good wiſhes ſatisfie Dicus.
With large encreaſe, and wooll of fine perfection,
So ſhe thy loue, her eyes thy eyes may gratifie,
As thou wilt giue our ſoules a deare refection,
By telling how ſhe was, how now ſhe framed is
To helpe, or hurt in thee her owne infection.

Bleſt be the name, wherewith my miſtres nameḋ is: Dorus.
Whoſe wounds are ſalues, whoſe yokes pleaſe more then pleaſure
Her ſtaines are beames; vertue the fault ſhe blamed is. (doth:
The hart, eye, eare here onely find his treaſure doth:
All numbring artes her endleſſe graces number not:
Time, place, life, wit ſcarcely her rare gifts meaſure doth.
Is ſhe in rage? ſo is the Sunne in ſommer hot,
Yet harueſt brings. Doth ſhe alas abſent herſelfe?
The Sunne is hid; his kindly ſhadows cumber not.
But when to giue ſome grace ſhe doth content herſelfe,
O then it ſhines; then are the heau'ns diſtributed,
And Venus ſeemes, to make vp her, ſhe ſpent herſelfe.
Thus then (I ſay) my miſchiefes haue contributed
A greater good by her diuine reflection;
My harmes to me, my bliſſe to her attributed,
Thus ſhe is framde: her eyes are my direction;
Her loue my life; her anger my deſtruction.

Lastly what so she is, that's my protection.

Dicus. *Thy safetie sure is wrapped in destruction:*
For that construction thine owne wordes do beare.
A man to feare a womans moodie eye,
Makes Reason lie a slaue to seruile Sense.
A weake defence where weakenesse is thy force:
So is remorse in follie dearely bought.

Dorus. *If I had thought to heare blasphemous wordes,*
My brest to swords, my soule to hell haue solde
I rather would, then thus mine eares defile
With words so vile, which viler breath doth breed.
O heards take heed; for I a woolfe haue found;
Who hunting round the strongest for to kill,
His breast doth fill with earth of others ioyes,
And loden so puls downe, pild downe destroyes.
O sheepheards boyes, eschue these tongues of venome,
Which do enuenome both the soule and senses.
Our best defenses are to flie these adders.
O tongues like ladders made to clime dishonour,
Who iudge that honour, which hath scope to slander.

Dicus. Dorus *you wander farre in great reproches;*
So loue encroches on your charmed reason,
But it is season for to end our singing.
Such anger bringing: as for me, my fancie
In sicke-mans frenzie rather takes compassion,
Then rage for rage: rather my wish I send to thee,
Thou soone may haue some helpe, or change of passion.
She oft her lookes, the starres her fauour bend to thee:
Fortune store, Nature health, Loue grant perswasion.

A quiet

A quiet mind none but thy ſelfe can lend to thee, „
Thus I commend to thee all our former loue,

Well do I proue, errour lies oft in zeale, „ Dorus.
Yet it is ſeale, though errour, of true hart. „
Nought could impart ſuch heates to friendly mind.
But for to find thy words did her diſgrace,
Whoſe onely face the little heauen is,
Which who doth miſſe his eyes are but deluſions,
Barr'd from their chiefeſt obiect of delightfulneſſe,
Throwne on this earth the Chaos of confuſions.
As for thy wiſh to my enraged ſpiteſulneſſe,
The lowely blowne with rare reward, my prayer is ✻
Thou mayeſt loue her that I may ſee thy ſightfulneſſe.
The quiet mind (whereof my ſelfe empairer is,
As thou doeſt thinke) ſhould moſt of all diſquiet me
Without her loue, then any mind who fairer is.
Her onely cure from ſurfet-woes can diet me:
She holdes the ballance of my contentation:
Her cleared eyes, nought els, in ſtormes can quiet me.
Nay rather then my eaſe diſcontentation
Should breed to her, let me for aye deiected be
From any ioy, which might her griefe occaſion.
With ſo ſweete plagues my happie harmes infected be:
Paine willes me die, yet will of death I mortifie:
For though life irkes, in life my loues protected be.
Thus for ech change my changeleſſe hart I fortifie.

WHen they had ended to the good pleaſing of the aſſiſtants, eſpecially of *Zelmane*, who neuer forgat to giue due cõmẽdations to her friend *Dorus*, the more to aduance him in his purſute (although therein he had brought

brought his matters to a more wiſhed concluſion then yet ſhe knew of) out ſtarte a iolly yonker, his name was *Nico*, whoſe tongue had borne a very itching ſilence all this while. And hauing ſpied one *Pas*, a mate of his, as mad as himſelfe (both indeed lads to clime any tree in the world) he beſtowed this maner of ſalutation vpon him, and was with like reuerence requited.

Nico. Dorus.

Nico. *AND are you there old* Pas *? in troth I euer thought,*
Among vs all we ſhould find out ſome thing of nought.

Pas. *And I am here the ſame, ſo mote I thriue and thee,*
Deſpairde in all this flocke to find a knaue, but thee.

Nico. *Ah now I ſee, why thou art in thy ſelfe ſo blind:*
Thy gray-hood hides the thing, that thou deſpairſt to find.

Pas. *My gray-hood is mine owne, all be it be but gray,*
Not like the ſcrippe thou ſtol'ſte, while Dorcas *ſleeping lay.*

Nico. *Mine was the ſcrippe: but thou, that ſeeming raid with loue,*
Didſt ſnatch from Coſmas *hand her greeny wroughtē gloue.*

Pas. *Ah foole: ſo Courtiers do. But who did liuely skippe,*
When for a treene-diſh ſtolne, thy father did thee whippe?

Nico. *In deed the witch thy dam her crouch from ſhoulder ſpred,*
For pilfring Lalus *lambe, with crouch to bleſſe thy head.*

Pas. *My voice the lambe did winne,* Menalcas *was our iudge:*
Of ſinging match was made, whence he with ſhame did trudge.

Couldſt

Couldst thou make Lalus *flie? so nightingales auoide,* Nico.
When with the kawing crowes their musicke is annoide.

Nay like to nightingales the other birds giue eare: Pas.
My pipe and song made him both pipe and song forsweare.

I thinke it well: such voice would make one musicke hate: Nico.
But if I had bene there, th'adst met another mate.

Another sure as is a gander from a goose: Pas.
But still when thou dost sing, me thinkes a colt is loose.

Well aimed by my hat: for as thou sangst last day; Nico.
The neighbours all did crie, alas what asse doth bray?

But here is Dicus *old; let him then speake the woord,* Pas.
Towhether with best cause the Nymphes faire flowers affoord.

Content: but I will lay a wager hereunto, Nico.
That profit may ensue to him that best can do.
I haue (and long shall haue) a white great nimble cat,
A king vpon a mouse, a strong foe to the rat,
Fine eares, long taile he hath, with Lions curbed clawe,
Which oft he listeth vp, and stayes his lifted pawe,
Deepe musing to himselfe, which after-mewing showes,
Till with lickt beard, his eye of fire espie his foes.
If thou (alas poore if) do winne, then winne thou this,
And if I better sing, let me thy Colma *kisse.*

Kisse her? now mayst thou kisse. I haue a better match; Pas.
A prettie curre it is; his name iwis is Catch,
No eare nor taile he hath, least they should him disgrace,

A ruddie

A ruddie haire his cote, with fine long ſpectled face:
He neuer muſing ſtandes, but with himſelfe will play
Leaping at euery flie, and angrie with a flea:
He eſt would kill a mouſe, but he diſdaines to fight,
And makes our home good ſport with dauncing bolt vpright.
This is my pawne; the price let Dicus *iudgement ſhow:*
Such oddes I willing lay: for him and you I know.

Dicus. *Sing then my lads, but ſing with better vaine then yet,*
Or elſe who ſingeth worſt, my skill will hardly hit.

Nico. *Who doubts but* Pas *fine pipe againe will bring*
The auncient prayſe to Arcad *ſhepheards skill?*
Pan *is not dead, ſince* Pas *beginnes to ſing.*

Pas. *Who euermore will loue* Apollos *quill,*
Since Nico *doth to ſing ſo widely gape?*
Nico *his place farre better furniſh will.*

Nico. *Was not this he, who did for* Syrinx *ſcape*
Raging in woes teach paſtors firſt to plaine?
Do you not heare his voice, and ſee his ſhape?

Pas. *This is not he that failed her to gaine,*
Which made a Bay, made Bay a holy tree:
But this is one that doth his muſicke ſtaine.

Nico. *O* Faunes, *O* Fairies *all, and do you ſee,*
And ſuffer ſuch a wrong? a wrong I trowe,
That Nico *muſt with* Pas *compared be?*

Pas. *O Nymphes, I tell you newes, for* Pas *you knowe:*

While

While I was warbling out your woonted praiſe,
Nico *would needes with* Pas *his bagpipe blowe.*

If neuer I did faile your holy-dayes, Nico.
With daunces, carols, or with barlybreake:
Let Pas *now know, how* Nico *makes the layes.*

If each day hath bene holy for your ſake, Pas.
Vnto my pipe, O Nimphes, helpe now my pipe,
For Pas *well knowes what layes can* Nico *make.*

Alas how oft I looke on cherries ripe, Nico.
Me thinkes I ſee the lippes my Leuca *hath,*
And wanting her, my weeping eyes I wipe.

Alas, when I in ſpring meete roſes rathe, Pas.
And thinke from Coſmas *ſweet red lips I liue,*
I leaue mine eyes vnwipte my cheekes to bathe.

As I of late, neer buſhes vſde my ſiue, Nico.
I ſpied a thruſh where ſhe did make her neſt,
That will I take, and to my Leuca *giue.*

But long haue I a ſparrow gailie dreſt, Pas.
As white as milke, and comming to the call,
To put it with my hand in Coſmas *breſt.*

I oft doo ſue, and Leuca *ſaith, I ſhall,* Nico.
But when I did come neere with heate and hope,
She ranne away, and threw at me a ball.

Coſma *once ſaid, ſhe left the wicket ope,* Pas.

For

For me to come, and ſo ſhe did: I came,
But in the place found nothing but a rope.

Nico. *When* Leuca *dooth appeare, the Sunne for ſhame*
Dooth hide himſelfe: for to himſelfe he ſayes,
If Leuca *liue, ſhe darken will my fame.*

Pas. *When* Coſma *doth come forth, the Sun diſplaies*
His vtmoſt light: for well his witte doth know,
Coſmas *faire beames emblemiſh much his raies.*

Nico. Leuca *to me did yeſter-morning ſhowe*
In perfect light, which could not me deceaue,
Her naked legge, more white then whiteſt ſnowe.

Pas. *But yeſternight by light I did receaue*
From Coſmas *eyes, which full in darkenes ſhine,*
I ſawe her arme, where pureſt Lillies cleaue.

Nico. *She once ſtarke nak'd did bathe a little time;*
But ſtill (me thought) with beauties from her fell,
She did the waters waſh, and make more fine.

Pas. *She once, to coole her ſelfe, ſtood in a well,*
But euer ſince that well is well beſought,
And for Roſe-water ſould of rareſt ſmell.

Nico. *To riuers banke, being on walking brought,*
She bad me ſpie her babie in the brooke,
Alas (ſaid I) this babe dooth nurce my thought.

Pas. *As in a glaſſe I held ſhe once did looke,*

I ſaid,

I ſaid, my hands well paide her for mine eyes,
Since in my hands ſelfe goodly ſight ſhe tooke.

O if I had a ladder for the skies, Nico.
I would climbe vp, and bring a prettie ſtarre,
To weare vpon her neck, that open lies.

O if I had Apollos golden carre, Pas.
I would come downe, and yeeld to her my place,
That (ſhining now) ſhe then might ſhine more farre.

Nothing (O Leuca) ſhall thy fame deface, Nico.
While ſhepheards tunes be heard, or rimes be read,
Or while that ſhepheards loue a louely face.

Thy name (O Coſma) ſhall with praiſe be ſpread, Pas.
As farre as any ſhepheards piping be:
As farre as Loue poſſeſſeth any head.

Thy monument is layd in many a tree, Nico.
With name engrau'd: ſo though thy bodie die,
The after-folkes ſhall wonder ſtill at thee.

So oft theſe woods haue heard me Coſma crie, Pas.
That after death, to heau'n in woods reſound,
With Echoes help, ſhall Coſma, Coſma flie.

Peace, peace good Pas, thou weerieſt euen the ground Nico.
With ſluttiſh ſong: I pray thee learne to blea,
For good thou mayſt yet prooue in ſheepiſh ſound.

My father hath at home a prettie Iay, Pas.

Goe winne of him (for chattering) praiſe or ſhame:
For ſo yet of a conqueſt ſpeake thou may.

Nico. *Tell me (and be my* Pan*) the monſters name,*
That hath foure legs, and with two onely goes,
That hath foure eyes, and onely two can frame.

Pas. *Tell me (and* Phœbus *be) what monſter growes*
With ſo ſtrong liues, that bodie cannot reſt
In eaſe, vntill that bodie life forgoes.

Dicus. *Enough, enough: ſo ill hath done the beſt,*
That ſince the hauing them to neither's due,
Let cat and dog fight which ſhall haue both you.

SOme ſpeech there ſtreight grew among the hearers, what they ſhould meane by the riddles of the two monſters. But *Zelmane*, whoſe harte better delighted in wailefull ditties, as more according to her fortune, ſhe deſired *Lamon*, he would againe repeate ſome other lamentation of the ſtill-abſent *Strephon* and *Klaius*. *Baſilius* (as ſoone as he vnderſtood *Zelmanes* pleaſure) commaunded *Lamon* vpon paine of his life (as though euery thing were a matter of life and death, that pertained to his miſtreſſe ſeruice) immediately to ſing it: who with great cunning, varying his voice according to the diuerſitie of the perſons, began this Dizaine, anſwered in that kinde of verſe, which is called the Crowne.

Strephon. Klaius.

Strephon. I *Ioye in griefe, and doo deteſt all ioyes:*
Deſpiſe delight, and tyrde with thought of eaſe

I turne

I turne my minde to all formes of anneyes,
And with the chaunge of them my fancie pleaſe.
I ſtudie that which may me moſt diſpleaſe,
And in deſpite of that diſpleaſures might,
Embrace that moſt, that moſt my ſoule deſtroyes.
Blinded with beames, fell darkenes is my ſight:
Dole on my ruine ſcedes, with ſucking ſmarte,
I thinke from me, not from my woes to parte.

I thinke from me, not from my woes to parte, Klaius.
And loth this time, calld life, nay thinke, that life
Nature to me for torment did emparte;
Thinke, my harde haps haue blunted deaths ſharpe knife,
Not ſparing me, in whom his workes be rife:
And thinking this, thinke Nature, Life, and Death
Place Sorrowes triumph on my conquered breſt:
Whereto I yeeld, and ſeeke none other breath,
But from the ſent of ſome infectious graue:
Nor of my fortune ought, but miſchieue craue.

Nor of my fortune ought but miſchiefe craue, Strephon.
And ſeeke to nouriſh that, which now contaynes
All what I am: if I my ſelfe will ſaue,
Then muſt I ſaue, what in me chiefly raignes,
Which is the hatefull web of Sorowes paines.
Sorow then cheriſh me, for I am ſorowe:
No being now, but ſorowe I can haue:
Then decke me as thine owne, thy helpe I borowe,
Since thou my riches arte, and that thou haſte
Enough to make a fertill minde lie waſte.

Enough to make a fertill minde lie waſte Klaius.

Is that huge ſtorme, which powres it ſelfe on me:
Haileſtones of teares, of ſighes a monſtrous blaſt,
Thunders of cries; lightnings my wilde lookes be,
The darkened heau'n my ſoule which nought can ſee;
The flying ſprites which trees by rootes vp teare
Be thoſe deſpaires, which haue my hopes quite waſt.
The diffrence is; all folkes thoſe ſtormes forbeare:
But I cannot; who then my ſelfe ſhould flie
So cloſe vnto my ſelfe my wrackes doo lie.

Strephon. *So cloſe vnto my ſelfe my wrackes doo lie;*
Both cauſe, effect, beginning, and the ende
Are all in me: what helpe then can I trie?
My ſhip, my ſelfe; whoſe courſe to loue doth bende,
Sore beaten doth her maſt of Comforte ſpende:
Her cable, Reaſon, *breakes from anchor,* Hope:
Fancie, *her tackling, torne away doth flie:*
Ruine, *the winde, hath blowne her from her ſcope:*
Bruſed with waues of Cares, *but broken is*
On rocke, Deſpaire, *the buriall of my bliſſe.*

Klaius. *On rocke,* Deſpaire, *the buriall of my bliſſe*
I long doo plowe with plough of deepe Deſire:
The ſeed Faſt-meaning *is, no truth to miſſe:*
I harowe it with Thoughts, *which all conſpire*
Fauour *to make my chiefe and onely hire.*
But, woe is me, the yeare is gone about,
And now I faine would reape, I reape but this,
Hate *fully growne,* Abſence *new ſprongen out.*
So that I ſee, although my ſight empaire,
Vaine is their paine, who labour in Deſpaire.

Vaine

Vaine is their paine, who labour in Despaire. Strephon.
For so did I, when with my angle, Will,
I sought to catch the fish Torpedo faire.
Euen then Despaire did Hope already kill:
Yet Fancie would perforce employ his skill,
And this hath got; the catcher now is caught,
Lamde with the angle, which it selfe did beare,
And vnto death, quite drownde in Dolours, brought
To death, as then disguisde in her faire face.
Thus, thus I had, alas, my losse in chase.

Thus, thus I had, alas, my losse in chase, Klaius.
When first that crowned Basiliske I knewe,
Whose footesteps I with kisses oft did trace,
Till by such hap, as I must euer rewe,
Mine eyes did light vpon her shining hewe,
And hers on me, astonisht with that sight.
Since then my harte did loose his wonted place,
Infected so with her sweet poysons might,
That, leauing me for dead, to her it went:
But ah her flight hath my dead reliques spent.

But ah her flight hath my dead reliques spent, Strephon.
Her flight from me, from me, though dead to me,
Yet liuing still in her, while her beames lent
Such vitall sparke, that her mine eyes might see.
But now those liuing lights absented be,
Full dead before, I now to dust should fall,
But that eternall paines my soule should hent,
And keepe it still within this body thrall:
That thus I must, while in this death I dwell,
In earthly fetters feele a lasting hell.

Klaius. *In earthly fetters feele a laſting hell*
Alas I doo; from which to finde releaſe,
I would the earth, I would the heauens fell.
But vaine it is to thinke theſe paines ſhould ceaſe,
Where life is death, and death cannot breed peace.
O faire, ô onely faire, from thee, alas,
Theſe foule, moſt foule, diſtreſſes to me fell;
Since thou from me (ô me) ô Sunne didſt paſſe.
Therefore eſteeming all good bleſſings toyes
I ioy in griefe, and doo deteſt all ioyes.

Strephon. *I ioye in griefe, and doo deteſt all ioyes.*
And now an ende, (ô Claius) *now an ende*
For euen the hearbes our mournefull muſique ſtroyes,
And from our burning breath the trees doo bende.

SO wel did *Lamons* voice expreſſe the paſſiõs of thoſe ſhepheards, that all the Princely beholders were ſtriken in a ſilent cõſideration of them; indeed euery one making, that he heard of another the balãce of his own troubles. And *Baſilius* perceiuing ſuch melancholique muſique beſt conſorted to the humor of his miſtreſſe, entreated againe the young melancholy ſhepheard, that he would emparte ſome part of the ſorow his coũtenaunce ſo well witneſſed vnto them. Which he in parte to ſatisfie, began an Eclogue betwixt himſelf and the *Echo*: framing his voice in thoſe deſerte places, as what words he would haue the *Echo* replie, vnto thoſe he would ſinge higher then the reſt, and ſo kindly framed a diſputation betwixt himſelfe and it. Which with theſe *Hexameters* in the following order he vttered.

Goodly

Echo.

FAire rocks, goodly riuers, ſweet woods, when ſhall I ſee peace? *Peace.*
Peace? who debars me my tongue? who is it that comes me ſo nie? *I.*
O I doo know what gueſt I doo meete: it is Echo. *T'is* Echo.
Well mett Echo; aproch, and tell me thy will too. *I will too.*
Echo, what doo I get yeelding my ſprite to my grieues? *Grieues.*
What medicine may I finde for a paine that drawes me to death? *Death.*
O poiſ'nous medicine: what worſe to me can be then it? *It.*
In what ſtate was I then, when I tooke this deadly diſeaſe? *Eaſe.*
And what maner a minde, which had to that humor a vaine? *Vaine.*
Hath not reaſon enough vehemence the deſire to reproue? *Proue.*
Oft proue I: but what ſalue, when Reaſon ſeeks to be gone? *One.*
O what is it? what is it, that may be a ſalue to my loue? *Loue.*
What doo louers ſeeke for, long ſeeking for t'enioye? *Ioyè.*
What be the ioyes, for which t'enioye they went to the paines? *Paines.*
Then to an earneſt loue what doth beſt victorie lende? *Ende.*
Ende? but I can neuer ende: Loue will not giue me the leaue. *Leaue.*
How be the mindes diſpoſde, that cannot taſte the Phyſicke? *Sicke.*
Yet ſay againe th'aduice for th'ils that I tolde thee. *I told thee.*
Doth th'infected wretch of his ill th'extremitie know? *No.*
But if he know not his harmes, what guids hath he whilſt he be blind? *Blinde.*
What blinde guides can he haue that leades to a fancie? *A fancie.*
Can fancies wante eyes? or he fall that ſteppeth aloft? *Oft.*
What cauſes firſt made theſe torments on me to light? *Light.*
Can then a cauſe be ſo light, that forceth a man to goe die? *I.*
Yet tell, what light thing I had in me to drawe me to die? *Eye.*
Eie-ſight made me to yeeld: but what firſt pearſt to my eyes? *Eyes.*
Eyes hurters? eyes hurte? but what from them to me falls? *Falls.*
But when I firſt did fall, what brought moſt fall to my harte? *Arte.*
Arte? what can be that arte, which thou dooſt meane by thy ſpeach? *Speach.*
What be the fruites of ſpeaking arte, what growes by the wordes? *Wordes.*
O much more then wordes: thoſe wordes ſeru'd more me to bleſſe. *Leſſe.*

O when ſhall I be knowne, where moſt to be known I doo long?	*Longe.*
Long be thy woes for ſuch bad newes: how recks ſhe my thoughts?	*Oughts.*
Then, then what doo I gayne, ſince vnt' her will I doo winde?	*Winde.*
Winde, tempeſts, and ſcornes: yet in ende what giues ſhe deſire?	*Ire.*
Silly rewarde: yet aboue women hath ſhe a title.	*A tittle.*
What great name may I giue to ſo heau'nly a woman?	*A wo-man.*
Woe, but ſeems to me ioye, that agrees to my thought ſo.	*I thought ſo.*
Thinke ſo: for of my deſired bliſſe it is onely the courſe.	*Courſe.*
Curſt be thy ſelfe for curſing that, which leades me to ioyes.	*T'oyes.*
What be the ſweete creatures where lowly demaundes be not harde?	*Harde.*
Harde to be gott, but got conſtant, to be helde very ſteeles.	*Eeles.*
How be they helde vnkinde? ſpeake, for th' haſt narrowly pry'de.	*Pride.*
How can pride come there ſince ſprings of beautie be thence?	*Thence.*
Horrible is this blaſphemie vnto the moſt holie.	*O lye.*
Thou li'ſt, falſe Echo; *their mindes, as vertue, be iuſte.*	*Iuſte.*
Mockſt thou thoſe Diamonds, which onely bematcht by the Godds?	*Odds.*
Odds? what an odds is there, ſince them to the heau'ns I preferre?	*Erre.*
Tell yet againe, how name ye the goodly made euill?	*A deuill.*
Deuill? where hell if ſuch Deuill is, to that hell I doo goe.	*Goe.*

AFter this well placed *Echo*, the other ſhepheards were offring themſelues to haue continued the ſports: But the night had ſo quietly ſpent moſt part of her ſelfe, that the King for that time licenſed them: & ſo bringing *Zelmane* to her lodging, who would much rather haue done the ſame for *Philoclea*, of all ſides they went to counterfait a ſleep in their beds, for a true one their agonies could not afoord them. Yet there lay they (for ſo might they be moſt ſolitarie) for the foode of their thoughts, till it was neere noone the next day. After which *Baſilius* was to continue his *Apollo* deuotions, and the other to meditate vpon their priuate deſires.

The end of the ſecond Booke.

THE THIRDE BOOKE
OF THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA.

CHAP. 1.

Dorus-*his* [1] *faire and* [2] *foule weather in his loue.* [3] *His forlorne agonies.* [4] *His doubts to write,* [5] *and* Pamelaes *to reade,* [6] *his elegie.*

THis laſt dayes daunger, 1
hauing made *Pamelaes* loue diſcerne, what a loſſe it ſhould haue ſuffered, if *Dorus* had bene deſtroyed, bredde ſuch tenderneſſe of kindnes in her toward him: that ſhe coulde no longer keepe Loue from looking through her eyes, and going forth in her words; whom before as a cloſe priſoner ſhe had to her hart onely committed; ſo as finding not only by his ſpeeches & letters, but by the pitifull oratiõ of a languiſhing behauior, & the eaſily diſcyphered character of a ſorowful face, that Deſpair began nowe to threaten him deſtruction, ſhe grewe content both to pitie him, and let him ſee ſhe pityed him: as well by making her owne beautifull beames thawe away the former icineſſe of her behauiour, as

by entertaining his diſcourſes (whenſoeuer he did vſe them) in the third perſon of *Muſidorus*; to ſo farre a degree, that in the ende ſhe ſaid, that if ſhe had bene the Princeſſe, whom that diſguiſed Prince had vertuouſly
„ loued, ſhe would haue requited his faith with faithfull affection: finding in her hart, that nothing could ſo hartily loue as vertue: with many mo words to the ſame ſenſe of noble fauour, & chaſt plainneſſe. Which when at the firſt it made that expected bliſſe ſhine vpon *Dorus*; he was like one frozen with extremitie of colde, ouer-haſtily brought to a great fire, rather oppreſſed, then relieued with ſuch a lightning of felicitie. But after the ſtrength of nature had made him able to feel the ſweetneſſe of ioyfulnes, that again being a child of Paſſion, & neuer acquainted with mediocrity, could not ſet boũds vpon his happines, nor be cõtent to giue Deſire a kingdome, but that it muſt be an vnlimited Monarchy. So that the ground he ſtood vpon being ouer-high in happines, & ſlipperie through affection, he could not hold himſelfe frõ falling into ſuch an error, which with ſighs blew all cõfort out of his breſt, & waſht away all cheerfulnes of his cheere, with teares. For this fauour filling him with hope, Hope encouraging his deſire, & Deſire conſidering nothing, but oportunitie: one time (*Mopſa* being called away by her mother, & he left alone with *Pamela*) the ſudden occaſion called Loue, & that neuer ſtaid to aske Reaſons leaue; but made the too-much louing *Dorus* take her in his armes, offering to kiſſe her, and, as it were, to eſtabliſh a trophee of his victorie.

2 But ſhe, as if ſhe had bin ready to drinke a wine of excellent taſt & colour, which ſuddenly ſhe perceiued had poiſon in it, ſo did ſhe put him away frõ her: loking firſt

vnto

vnto heauen, as amazed to find herſelfe ſo beguiled in him; then laying the cruel puniſhment vpon him of angry Loue, and lowring beautie, ſhewing diſdain, & a deſpiſing diſdain, Away (ſaid ſhe) vnworthy man to loue, or to be loued. Aſſure thy ſelfe, I hate my ſelfe for being ſo deceiued; iudge then what I doo thee, for deceiuing me. Let me ſee thee no more, the only fall of my iudgement, and ſtaine of my conſcience. With that ſhe called *Mopſa*, not ſtaying for any anſwer (which was no other, but a flood of tears, which ſhe ſemed not to mark (much leſſe to pity) & chid her for hauing ſo left her alone.

It was not an amazement, it was not a ſorrow, but it 3
was euen a death, which then laid hold of *Dorus:* which certainly at that inſtant would haue killed him, but that the feare to tary longer in her preſence (contrary to her cõmandement) gaue him life to cary himſelfe away frõ her ſight, and to run into the woods, where, throwing himſelfe downe at the foot of a tree, he did not fall to lamentation (for that proceeded of pitying) or grieuing for himſelfe (which he did no way) but to curſes of his life, as one that deteſted himſelfe. For finding himſelfe not onely vnhappy, but vnhappie after being falne from all happineſſe: and to be falne from all happines, not by any miſconceiuing, but by his own fault, and his fault to be done to no other but to *Pamela:* he did not tender his owne eſtate, but deſpiſed it; greedily drawing into his minde, all conceipts which might more and more torment him. And ſo remained he two dayes in the woods, diſdaining to giue his bodie food, or his mind comfort, louing in himſelfe nothing, but the loue of her. And indeed that loue onely ſtraue with the fury of his anguiſh, telling it, that if it deſtroyed *Do-*

rus

rus,it ſhould alſo deſtroy the image of her that liued in *Dorus*:and when the thought of that was crept in vnto him,it begã to win of him ſome cõpaſſion to the ſhrine of the image,& to bewaile not for himſelfe(whõ he hated)but that ſo notable a loue ſhould periſh.Thẽ began he onely ſo farre to wiſh his owne good,as that *Pamela* might pardon him the fault, though not the puniſhment:& the vttermoſt height he aſpired vnto,was, that after his death,ſhe might yet pittie his error, and know that it proceeded of loue,and not of boldneſſe.

4 That conceipt found ſuch friendſhip in his thoughts, that at laſt he yelded,ſince he was baniſhed her preſẽce, to ſeeke ſome meanes by writing to ſhew his ſorrow,& teſtifie his repentance.Therfore getting him the neceſſarie inſtruments of writing,he thought beſt to coũterfaite his hand(fearing that as alreadie ſhe knew his, ſhe would caſt it away as ſoone as ſhe ſaw it)and to put it in verſ,hoping,that would draw her on to read the more, chuſing the *Elegiae* as fitteſt for mourning. But pen did neuer more quakingly performe his office; neuer was paper more double moiſtned with inke & teares; neuer words more ſlowly maried together,& neuer the *Muſes* more tired,then now with changes & rechanges of his deuiſes:fearing howe to ende, before he had reſolued how to begin,miſtruſting ech word,condemning eche ſentence.This word was not ſignificant, that word was too plain:this would not be cõceiued;the other would be il conceiued.Here Sorow was not inoughexpreſſed; there he ſeemed too much for his owne ſake to be ſory. This ſentence rather ſhewed art,then paſſion; that ſentence rather fooliſhly paſſionate,then forcibly mouing. At laſt,marring with mending, and putting out better,

then

then he left, he made an end of it; & being ended, & diuerſe times ready to teare it: till his reaſon aſſuring him, the more he ſtudied, the worſe it grew, he folded it vp, deuoutly inuoking good acceptation vnto it; and watching his time, when they were all gone one day to dinner (ſauing *Mopſa*) to the other lodge, ſtale vp into *Pamelaes* chamber, and in her ſtādiſh (which firſt he kiſſed; and craued of it a ſafe and friendly keeping) left it there, to be ſeene at her next vſing her inke (himſelfe returning againe to be true priſoner to deſperate ſorrow) leauing her ſtandiſh vpon her beds head, to giue her the more occaſion to marke it: which alſo fell out.

For ſhe finding it at her after noone-returne, in another place then ſhe left it, opened it. But when ſhe ſaw the letter, her hart gaue her from whence it came. And therefore clapping it to againe, ſhe went away from it, as if it had bin a contagious garment of an infected perſon: and yet was not long away, but that ſhe wiſhed ſhe had read it, though ſhe were loth to reade it. Shall I (ſaid ſhe) ſecond his boldneſſe ſo farre, as to reade his preſumptuous letters? And yet (ſaid ſhe) he ſees me not to growe the bolder thereby: And how can I tell, whether they be preſumptuous? The paper came from him, and therefore not worthie to be receyued; and yet the paper (ſhe thought) was not guiltie. At laſt, ſhe concluded, it were not much amiſſe to looke it ouer, that ſhe might out of his wordes picke ſome further quarrell againſt him. Then ſhe opened it, and threwe it away, and tooke it vp againe, till (ere ſhe were aware) her eyes woulde needes reade it, conteining this matter.

Vnto

6 VNto a caitiſe wretch, whom long affliction holdeth,
and now fully beleeues helpe to be quite periſhed;
Grant yet, grant yet a looke, to the laſt monumẽt of his anguiſh,
O you (alas ſo I find) cauſe of his onely ruine.
Dread not a whit (O goodly cruell) that pittie may enter
into thy hart by the ſight of this Epiſtle I ſend:
And ſo refuſe to behold of theſe ſtrange wounds the recitall,
leaſt it might th'allure home to thy ſelfe to returne,
(Vnto thy ſelfe I do meane thoſe graces dwell ſo within thee,
grateſulnes, ſweetnes, holy loue, hartie regard)
Such thing cannot I ſeeke (Deſpaire hath giu'n me my anſwer
deſpaire moſt tragicall clauſe to a deadly requeſt)
Such thing cãnot he hope, that knowes thy determinat hardnes;
hard like a rich marble: hard, but a faire Diamond.
Can thoſe eyes that of eyes drownd in moſt harty flowing teares,
(teares and teares of a man) had no returne to remorſe;
Can thoſe eyes now yeeld to the kind conceit of a ſorow,
which inke onely relates, but ne laments, ne replies?
Ah, that, that I do I not conceiue (though that to my bliſſe were)
more then Neſtors yeares, more then a Kings diademe.
Ah, that, that I do not cõceiue; to the heauẽ when a mouſe climes
then may I hope t'atchieue grace of a heauenly tiger.
But, but alas, like a man cõdemn'd doth craue to be heard ſpeake
not that he hopes for amends of the deſaſter he feeles,
But finding th'approch of death with an ougly relenting,
giues an adieu to the world, as to his onely delight:
Right ſo my boiling hart, enflam'de with fire of a faire eye,
bubling out doth breath ſignes of his hugie dolours:
Now that he finds to what end his life and loue be reſerued,
and that he hence muſt part where to liue onely he lou'd.
O faire, O faireſt, are ſuch thy triumphs to thy ſairneſſe?
can death beautie become? muſt be ſuch a monument?

Muſt

Muſt I be onely the marke, ſhall proue that Vertue is angrie?
ſhall proue that fiercenes can with a white doue abide?
Shall to the world appeare that faith and loue be rewarded
with mortall diſdaine, bent to vnendly reuenge?
Vnto reuenge? O ſweete, on a wretch wilt thou be reuenged?
ſhall ſuch high Plannets ende to the loſſe of a worme?
And to reuenge who doo bend, would in that kind be reuenged,
as th'offence was done, and goe beyond if he can.
All my' offence was Loue: with Loue then muſt I be chaſtned,
and with more, by the lawes that to Reuenge doo belong.
If that loue be a fault, more fault in you to be louely:
Lone neuer had me oppreſt, but that I ſaw to be lou'd.
You be the cauſe that I lou'd: what Reaſon blameth a ſhadowe,
that with a body't goes? ſince by a body it is.
If that Loue you did hate, you ſhould your beautie haue hidden:
you ſhould thoſe faire eyes haue with a veile coucred.
But foole, foole that I am, thoſe eyes would ſhine frõ a dark caue.
what veiles then doo preuaile, but to a more miracle?
Or thoſe golden lockes, thoſe lockes which lock me to bondage,
torne you ſhould diſperſe vnto the blaſts of a winde.
But foole, foole that I am, tho I had but a hair of her head foũd,
euen as I am, ſo I ſhould vnto that haire be a thrall.
Or with fair hãds-nailes (ô hãd which nailes me to this death)
you ſhould haue your face (ſince Loue is ill) blemiſhed.
O wretch, what do I ſay? ſhould that faire face be defaced?
ſhould my too-much ſight cauſe ſo true a Sunne to be loſt?
Firſt let Cimmerian *darknes be my onel habitacion:*
firſt be mine eyes pulde out, firſt be my braine periſhed;
Ere that I ſhould conſent to doo ſuch exceſsiue a dammage
vnto the earth, by the hurt of this her heauenly iewell.
O no: but ſuch loue you ſay you could haue afoorded,
as might learne Temp'rance voyde of a rages euents.

O ſweete

O ſweet ſimplicitie: from whence ſhould Loue ſo be learned?
vnto Cupid *that boy ſhall a Pedante be found?*
Well: but faultie I was: Reaſon to my Paſsion yeelded,
Paſsion vnto my rage, Rage to a haſtie reuenge.
But what's this for a fault, for which ſuch fault is aboliſht,
ſuch faith, ſo ſtaineles, inuiolate, violent?
Shall I not? o may I not thus yet refreſh the remembrance,
what ſweete ioyes I had once, and what a place I did hold?
Shall I not once obiect, that you, you graunted a fauour
vnto the man, whom now ſuch miſeries you awarde? (were:
Bẽd your thoghts to the dear ſweet words which thẽ to me giu'n
think what a world is now, think who hath altred her hart.
What? was I then worthie ſuch good, now worthie ſuch euill?
now fled, then cheriſhed? then ſo nie, now ſo remote?
Did not a roſed breath, from lips more roſie proceeding,
ſay, that I ſhould well finde in what a care I was had?
With much more: now what doo I finde, but Care to abhor me,
Care that I ſinke in griefe, Care that I liue baniſhed?
And baniſhed doo I liue, nor now will ſeeke a recouerie,
ſince ſo ſhe will, whoſe will is to me more then a lawe.
If then a man in moſt ill caſe may giue you a farewell;
farewell, long farewell, all my woe, all my delight.

CHAP. 2.

[1] *The young Ladies mette:* [2] *inuited to the countrie-wenches ſports,* [3] *goe thether,* [4] *there are taken, and thence caried to* Amphialus *caſtle.* [5] *Their entertainement there.* [6] Cecropias *auricular confeſsion of her proud cariage in proſperitie,* [7] *and ambitious practiſes in aduerſitie.* [8] Amphialus *his affection in theſe actions.*

What

WHat this would haue wrought in her, ſhe her ſelfe could not tell: for, 1
before her Reaſon could moderate the diſputation betwene Fauour & Faultines, her ſiſter, and *Miſo*, called her downe to entertaine *Zelmane*, who was come to viſite the two ſiſters; about whom, as about two Poles, the Skie of Beautie was turned: while *Gynecia* wearied her bed with her melancholie ſicknes, and made *Miſos* ſhrewdneſſe (who like a ſprite, ſette to keep a treaſure, barde *Zelmane* from any further conference) to be the Lieutenant of her iealouſie: Both ſhe and her huſband, driuing *Zelmane* to ſuch a ſtreit of reſolution, either of impoſſible graunting, or dangerous refuſing, as the beſt eſcape ſhe had, was (as much as ſhe coulde) to auoyde their companie. So as, this day, being the fourth day after the vprore, (*Baſilius* being with his ſicke wife, conferring vpon ſuch examinations, as *Philanax*, and other of his noble-men had made of this late ſeditiō, all touching *Cecropia* with vehemēt ſuſpition of giuing either flame or fuell vnto it) *Zelmane* came with her bodie, to find her mind, which was gone long before her, & had gotten his ſeate in *Philoclea*: who now with a baſhfull cheerefulneſſe (as though ſhe were aſhamed, that ſhe could not chooſe but be glad) ioyned with her ſiſter, in making much of *Zelmane*.

And ſo as they ſate deuiſing how to giue more fea- 2
thers to the winges of Time, there came to the lodge dore, ſixe maides, all in one liuerie of ſkarlette petticotes, which were tuckt vp almoſte to their knees, the petticoates them ſelues beinge in many places garni-

garniſhed with leaues, their legges naked, ſauing that aboue the anckles they had little black ſilke laces, vpon which did hang a few ſiluer belles: like which they had a little aboue their elbowes, vpon their bare armes. Vpon their haire they ware garlands of roſes and gilliflowers; and the haire was ſo dreſt, as that came againe aboue the garlandes; enterchaunging a mutuall couering: ſo as it was doubtfull, whether the haire dreſt the garlandes, or the garlandes dreſt the haire. Their breaſts liberall to the eye: the face of the formoſte of of them, in excellencie faire; and of the reſt louely, if not beautifull: and beautifull would haue bene, if they had not ſuffered greedy *Phœbus*, ouer-often, and harde, to kiſſe them. Their countenaunces full of a gracefull grauitie; ſo as the geſture matcht with the apparrell, it might ſeem a wanton modeſtie, and an entiſing ſobernes. Each of them had an inſtrument of muſick in their hands, which conſorting their wel-pleaſing tunes, did charge each eare with vnſenſiblenes, that did not lende it ſelfe vnto them. The Muſicke entring alone into the lodge, the Ladies were all deſirous to ſee from whence ſo pleaſant a gueſt was come: and therefore went out together; where, before they coulde take the paines to doubt, much leſſe to aſke the queſtion of their qualitie, the faireſt of them (with a gay, but yet diſcreete demeanour) in this ſort ſpake vnto them. Moſt excellent Ladies, (whoſe excellencies haue power to make cities enuie theſe woods, and ſolitarines to be accounted the ſweeteſt companie) vouchſafe our meſſage your gracious hearing, which as it comes from Loue, ſo comes it from louely perſons. The maides of all this coaſt of *Arcadia*, vnderſtanding the often acceſſe that certaine

ſhep-

ſhepheards of theſe quarters, are allowed to haue in this forbidden place; and that their rurall ſports are not diſdained of you, haue bene ſtird with emulation to them, and affection to you, to bring forth ſome thing, which might as well breede your contentment: and therefore hoping that the goodnes of their intention, & the hurtleſnes of their ſex ſhall excuſe the breach of the commandemẽt in cõming to this place vnſent for, they choſe out vs, to inuite both your princely parents, & your ſelues, to a place in the woods about half a mile hence: where they haue prouided ſome ſuch ſports, as they truſt your gratious acceptatiõs will interpret to be deliteful. We haue bene at the other lodge, but finding them there, buſied in weightier affaires, our truſt is, that you yet will not denie the ſhining of your eies vpõ vs.

The Ladies ſtood in ſome doubte, whether they ſhould goe or not, leſt *Baſilius* might be angry withall. But *Miſo* (that had bene at none of the paſtorals, and had a great deſire to lead her old ſenſes abroad to ſome pleaſure) told them plainely, they ſhould nor will nor chooſe, but go thether, and make the honeſt countrie people know, that they were not ſo ſqueamiſh as folkes thought of them. The Ladies glad to be warranted by her authoritie; with a ſmiling humbleneſſe obeied her: *Pamela* only caſting a ſeeking looke, whether ſhe could ſee *Dorus* (who poore wretch wandred halfe mad for ſorrow in the woods, crying for pardon of her, who could not heare him) but indeed was grieued for his abſence, hauing giuen the wound to him through her owne harte. But ſo the three Ladies & *Miſo* went with thoſe ſix *Nymphes*, conquering the length of the way with the force of muſique, leauing only *Mopſa* behind; 3

who diſgraced weeping with her countenaunce, becauſe her mother would not ſuffer her to ſhewe her newskoured face among them. But the place apointed (as they thought) met them halfe in their way, ſo well were they pleaſed with the ſweete tunes and prettie conuerſation of their inuiters. There founde they in the midſt of the thickeſt part of the wood, a litle ſquare place, not burdened with trees, but with a boord couered, & beautified with the pleaſanteſt fruites, that Sunburnd *Autumne* could deliuer vnto thē. The maids beſought the Ladies to ſit downe, and taſt of the ſwelling grapes, which ſeemed great with child of *Bacchus*: & of the diuers coloured plums, which gaue the eye a pleaſant taſt before they came to the mouth. The Ladies would not ſhew to ſcorne their prouiſion, but eat, and dranke a little of their coole wine, which ſeemed to laugh for ioy to come to ſuch lips.

4 But after the collation was ended, and that they looked for the cōming foorth of ſuch deuiſes, as were prepared for them, there ruſht out of the woods twentie armed men, who round about enuironed them, & laying hold of *Zelmane* before ſhe could draw her ſword, and taking it from her, put hoods ouer the heads of all fower, and ſo muffled, by force ſet them on horſebacke and carried them away; the ſiſters in vaine crying for ſuccour, while *Zelmanes* harte was rent in peeces with rage of the iniurie, and diſdaine of her fortune. But when they had caried them a foure or fiue mile further, they lefte *Miſo* with a gagge in her mouth, and bound hande and foote, ſo to take her fortune: and brought the three Ladies (by that time that the Night ſeemed with her ſilence to conſpire to their treaſon)

to

to a caſtle about ten mile of from the Lodges: where they were fayne to take a boate whiche wayted for them. For the caſtle ſtood in the midſt of a great lake, vppon a high rocke, where partly by Arte, but principallie by Nature, it was by all men eſteemed impregnable.

But at the Caſtle gate their faces were diſcouered, and there were mett with a great number of torches, after whome the ſiſters knewe their aunt in lawe, *Cecropia*. But that ſight increaſed the deadly terrour of the Princeſſes, looking for nothing but death, ſince they were in the power of the wicked *Cecropia:* who yet came vnto them, making curteſie the outſide of miſchiefe, and deſiring them not to be diſcomforted: for they were in a place dedicated to their ſeruice. *Philoclea* (with a looke where Loue ſhined through the miſte of Feare) beſought her to be good vnto them, hauing neuer deſerued euill of her. But *Pamelas* high harte diſdayning humbleneſſe to iniurie, Aunt, (ſaid ſhe) what you haue determined of vs I pray you doo it ſpeedily: for my part I looke for no ſeruice, where I finde violence.

But *Cecropia* (vſing no more wordes with them) conueyed them all three to ſeuerall lodgings (*Zelmanes* harte ſo ſwelling with ſpite, that ſhe coulde not bring foorth a worde) and ſo lefte them: firſt taking from them their kniues, becauſe they ſhould do themſelues no hurte, before ſhe had determined of them: and then giuing ſuch order that they wanted nothing but libertie, & comfort, ſhe went to her ſonne, who yet kept his bed, becauſe of his wound he had receiued of *Zelmane*, & told him, whom now he had in his power.

Amphialus was but euen then returned from far countries, where he had wonne immortall fame, both of courage & curteſie, when he met with the Princeſſes, and was hurt by *Zelmane*, ſo as he was vtterly ignorant of all his mothers wicked deuiſes; to which he would neuer haue conſented, being (like a roſe out of a brier) an excellent ſonne of an euill mother: and now when he heard of this, was as much amazed, as if he had ſeen the Sunne fall to the earth. And therefore deſired his mother that ſhe would tell him the whole diſcourſe, how all theſe matters had happened.

6 Sonne (ſaid ſhe) I will doo it willingly, and ſince all is done for you, I will hide nothing from you. And howſoeuer I might be aſhamed to tell it ſtrangers, who would thinke it wickedneſſe, yet what is done for your ſake (how euill ſoeuer to others) to you is vertue. To begin then euen with the beginning, this doting foole *Baſilius* that now raignes, hauing liued vnmarried till he was nigh threeſcore yeares old (and in all his ſpeaches affirming, and in all his dooings aſſuring, that he neuer would marrie) made all the eyes of the country to be bent vpon your father, his onely brother (but then younger by thirty yeares) as vpon the vndoubted ſucceſſour: being indeed a man worthy to raigne, thinking nothing enough for himſelfe: where this gooſe (you ſee) puts downe his head, before there be any thing neere to touch him. So that he holding place and eſtimation as heyre of *Arcadia*, obteyned me of my father the King of *Argos*, his brother helping to the concluſion, with proteſting his bachelerly intention: for elſe you may be ſure the King of *Argos*, nor his daughter would haue ſuffered their Royall bloud

to

to be ſtained with the baſe name of ſubiection. So that I came into this countrie as apparant Princeſſe therof, and accordingly was courted, and followed of all the Ladies of this countrie. My porte and pompe did well become a King of *Argos* daughter: in my preſence their tongues were turned into eares, & their eares were captiues vnto my tongue. Their eyes admired my Maieſtie, & happy was he or ſhe, on whom I would ſuffer the beames thereof to fall. Did I goe to church? it ſeemed the very Gods wayted for me, their deuotions not being ſolemnized till I was ready. Did I walke abroad to ſee any delight? Nay, my walking was the delight it ſelfe: for to it was the concourſe; one thruſting vpon another, who might ſhewe him ſelfe moſt diligent and ſeruiceable towardes me: my ſleepes were inquired after, and my wakings neuer vnſaluted: the very gate of my houſe full of principall perſons, who were glad, if their preſents had receaued a gratefull acceptation. And in this felicitie wert thou borne, the very earth ſubmitting it ſelfe vnto thee to be troden on as by his Prince; and to that paſſe had my huſbandes vertue (by my good helpe) within ſhort time brought it, with a plot we laide, as we ſhould not haue needed to haue waited the tedious worke of a naturall end of *Baſilius*; when the heauēs (I thinke enuying my great felicity) thē ſtopt thy fathers breath, whē he breathed nothing but power and ſoueraigntie. Yet did not thy orphancie, or my widdowhood, depriue vs of the delightfull proſpect, which the hill of honour dooth yeeld, while expectation of thy ſucceſſion did bind dependencies vnto vs.

But before, (my ſonne) thou wert come to the age 7

to feele the ſweetneſſe of authoritie, this beaſt (whom I can neuer name with patience) falſely and fooliſhly married this *Gynecia*, then a young girle, and brought her to ſit aboue me in al feaſts, to turne her ſhoulder to me-ward in all our ſolemnities. It is certaine, it is not ſo
» great a ſpite to be ſurmounted by ſtraungers, as by ones owne allies. Thinke then what my minde was, ſince withall there is no queſtion: The fall is greater from the firſt to the ſecond, then from the ſecond to the vndermoſt. The rage did ſwell in my harte, ſo much the more as it was faine to be ſuppreſſed in ſilẽce, & diſguiſed with humblenes. But aboue al the reſt, the griefe of grieues was, whẽ with theſe daughters (now thy priſoners) ſhe cut of al hope of thy ſucceſſiõ. It was a tedious thing to me; that my eies ſhould looke lower then any bodies, that (my ſelfe being by) anothers voice then mine, ſhould be more reſpected. But it was inſupportable vnto me, to think that not only I, but thou ſhouldſt ſpend al thy time in ſuch miſery, & that the Sun ſhould ſee my eldeſt ſon leſſe then a Prince. And though I had ben a ſainct I could not chooſe, finding the chaũge this chaũge of fortune bred vnto me, for now frõ the multitude of followers, ſilẽce grew to be at my gate, & abſẽce in my preſence. The gueſſe of my mind could preuaile more before, then now many of my earneſt requeſts. And thou (my deare ſonne) by the fickle multitude no more then any ordinary perſon (borne of the mud of the people) regarded. But I (remẽbring that in all miſe-
» ries weeping becomes fooles, and practize wiſe folks)
» haue tried diuers meanes to pull vs out of the mire of ſubiectiõ. And though many times Fortune failed me, yet did I neuer faile my ſelf. Wild beaſts I kept in a caue

hard

hard by the lodges, which I cauſed by night to be fed in the place of their paſtorals, I as then liuing in my houſe hard by the place, and againſt the houre they were to meete (hauing kept the beaſts without meate) then let them looſe, knowing that they would ſeeke their food there, and deuoure what they founde. But blind Fortune hating ſharpe-ſighted inuentions, made them vnluckily to be killed. After, I vſed my ſeruant *Clinias* to ſtir a notable tumult of country people: but thoſe louts were too groſſe inſtruments for delicate conceits. Now laſtly, finding *Philanax* his examinations grow daungerous, I thought to play double or quit; & with a ſleight I vſed of my fine-witted wēch *Arteſia*, with other maids of mine, would haue ſent theſe good inheritrixes of *Arcadia*, to haue pleaded their cauſe before *Pluto*, but that ouer-fortunatly for thē, you made me know the laſt day how vehemently this childiſh paſſion of loue doth torment you. Therfore I haue brought them vnto you, yet wiſhing rather hate thē loue in you. For Hate often begetteth victory; Loue commonly is the inſtrument of ſubiection. It is true, that I would alſo by the ſame practiſe haue entrapped the parents, but my maids failed of it, not daring to tary long about it. But this ſufficeth, ſince (theſe being taken away) you are the vndoubted inheritor, and *Baſilius* will not long ouer-liue this loſſe.

O mother (ſaid *Amphialus*) ſpeake not of doing them hurt, no more then to mine eies, or my hart, or if I haue any thing more deare then eyes, or hart vnto me. Let others finde what ſweetneſſe they will in euer fearing, becauſe they are euer feared: for my part, I will thinke my ſelfe highly intitled, if I may be once by *Philoclea* accepted for a ſeruant. Well (ſaid *Cecropia*) I would I had borne you of my minde, as well as of my body:

then ſhould you not haue ſuncke vnder baſe weakeneſſes. But ſince you haue tied your thoughts in ſo wilfull a knot, it is happie I haue brought matters to ſuch a paſſe, as you may both enioy affection, and vppon that build your ſoueraigntie. Alas (ſaid *Amphialus*) my hart would faine yeeld you thanks for ſetting me in the way of felicitie, but that feare killes them in me, before they are fully borne. For if *Philoclea* be diſpleaſed, how can I be pleaſed? if ſhe count it vnkindnes, ſhal I giue tokens of kindnes? perchance ſhe cõdemnes me of this action, and ſhall I triumph? perchance ſhe drownes nowe the beauties I loue with ſorrowful teares, and where is then my reioicing? You haue reaſon (ſaid *Cecropia* with a feined grauitie) I will therefore ſend her away preſently, that her contentment may be recouered. No good mother (ſaid *Amphialus*) ſince ſhe is here, I would not for my life conſtraine preſence, but rather would I die then cõſent to abſence. Prety intricat follies (ſaid *Cecropia*) but get you vp, & ſee how you can preuaile with her, while I go to the other ſiſter. For after we ſhal haue our hands full to defend our ſelues, if *Baſilius* hap to beſiege vs. But remembring herſelf, ſhe turned back, & asked him what he woulde haue done with *Zelmane*, ſince nowe he might be reuenged of his hurt. Nothing but honorably, anſwered *Amphialus*, hauing deſerued no other of me, eſpecially being (as I heare) greatly cheriſhed of *Philoclea*. And therefore I could wiſh they were lodged together. O no (ſaid *Cecropia*) company confirmes reſo-
" lutiõs, & lonelines breeds a werines of ones thoughts,
" and ſo a ſooner conſenting to reaſonable profers.

CHAP.

CHAP. 3.

[a] Amphialus *addreſsing him to* Philoclea. [b] *Her melancholie habit.* [c] *His humble ſute.* [d] *Her pitifull anſwere:* [e] *and his compaſsionate replie.* [f] *Their parting with cold comfort.*

BVt *Amphialus* (taking of his mother *Philocleas* kniues, which he kept as a relique, ſince ſhe had worne them) gat vp, and calling for his richeſt apparell, nothing ſeemed ſumptuous inough for his miſtreſſes eyes: and that which was coſtly, he feared were not daintie: and though the inuention were delicat, he miſdoubted the making. As carefull he was too of the colour; leſt if gay, he might ſeeme to glorie in his iniury, and her wrong; if mourning, it might ſtrike ſome euill preſage vnto her of her fortune. At length he tooke a garment more rich then glaring, the ground being black veluet, richly embrodered with great pearle, & precious ſtones, but they ſet ſo among certaine tuffes of cypres, that the cypres was like blacke clowds, through which the ſtarrs might yeeld a darke luſter. About his necke he ware a brode & gorgeous coller; whereof the pieces enterchangeably anſwering; the one was of Diamonds and pearle, ſet with a white enamell, ſo as by the cunning of the workman it ſeemed like a ſhining ice, and the other piece being of Rubies, and Opalles, had a fierie gliſtring, which he thought pictured the two paſſions of Feare and Deſire, I

Deſire, wherein he was enchayned. His hurt (not yet fully well) made him a little halt, but he ſtraue to giue the beſt grace he could vnto his halting.

2 And in that ſort he went to *Philocleas* chamber: whome he found (becauſe her chamber was ouerlightſome) ſitting of that ſide of her bedde which was from the windowe; which did caſt ſuch a ſhadow vpon her, as a good Painter woulde beſtowe vppon *Venus*, when vnder the trees ſhe bewayled the murther of *Adonis*: her handes and fingers (as it were) indented one within the other: her ſhoulder leaning to her beds head, and ouer her head a ſcarfe, which did eclipſe almoſt halfe her eyes, which vnder it fixed their beames vpon the wall by, with ſo ſteddie a maner, as if in that place they might well chaunge, but not mende their obiect: and ſo remayned they a good while after his comming in, he not daring to trouble her, nor ſhe perceyuing him, till that (a little varying her thoughts ſomething quickening her ſenſes) ſhe heard him as he happed to ſtirre his vpper garment: and perceyuing him, roſe vp, with a demeanure, where in the booke of Beautie there was nothing to be read but Sorrow: for Kindneſſe was blotted out, and Anger was neuer there.

3 But *Amphialus* that had entruſted his memorie with long and forcible ſpeeches, found it ſo locked vp in amazement, that he could pike nothing out of it, but the beſeeching her to take what was don in good part, and to aſſure herſelfe there was nothing but honour meant vnto her perſon. But ſhe making no other aunſwere, but letting her handes fall one from the other, which before

before were ioyned (with eyes ſomething caſt aſide, and a ſilent ſigh) gaue him to vnderſtande, that conſidering his dooings, ſhe thought his ſpeech as full of incongruitie, as her aunſwere would be voyde of purpoſe: whereuppon he kneeling downe, and kiſſing her hande, (which ſhe ſuffered with a countenaunce witneſſing captiuitie, but not kindneſſe) he beſought her to haue pitie of him, whoſe loue went beyonde the boundes of conceite, much more of vttering: that in her handes the ballance of his life or death did ſtande; whereto the leaſt motion of hers woulde ſerue to determine, ſhe being indeede the miſtreſſe of his life, and he her eternall ſlaue; and with true vehemencie beſought her that he might heare her ſpeake, whereupon ſhe ſuffered her ſweete breath to turne it ſelfe into theſe kind of words.

Alas couſin, (ſaide ſhe) what ſhall my tongue be 4
able to doo, which is infourmed by the eares one way, and by the eyes another? You call for pittie, and vſe crueltie; you ſay, you loue me, and yet do the effectes of enmitie. You affirme your death is in my handes, but you haue brought me to ſo neere a degree to death, as when you will, you may lay death vpon me: ſo that while you ſay I am miſtreſſe of your life, I am not miſtreſſe of mine owne. You entitle your ſelfe my ſlaue, but I am ſure I am yours. If then violence, iniurie, terror, and depriuing of that which is more dear then life it ſelfe, libertie, be fit orators for affection, you may expect that I will be eaſily perſwaded. But if the neareneſſe of our kinred breede any remorſe in you, or there be any ſuch thing in you, which you call loue toward

towarde me, then let not my fortune be diſgraced with the name of impriſonment: let not my hart waſte it ſelfe by being vexed with feeling euill, and fearing worſe. Let not me be a cauſe of my parents wofull deſtruction; but reſtore me to my ſelfe; and ſo doing I ſhall account I haue receyued my ſelfe of you. And what I ſay for my ſelfe, I ſay for my deare ſiſter, and my friend *Zelmane:* for I deſire no wel being, without they may be partakers. With that her teares rained downe from her heauenly eyes, and ſeemed to water the ſweet and beautifull flowers of her face.

But *Amphialus* was like the poore woman, who louing a tame Doe ſhe had, aboue all earthly things, hauing long played withall, and made it feede at her hand and lappe, is conſtrained at length by famine (all her flocke being ſpent, and ſhe fallen into extreeme pouertie) to kill the Deare, to ſuſtaine her life. Manie a pitifull looke doth ſhe caſt vpon it, and many a time doth ſhe draw backe her hand before ſhe can giue the ſtroke. For euen ſo *Amphialus* by a hunger-ſterued affection, was compelled to offer this iniurie, and yet the ſame affection made him with a tormenting griefe, thinke vnkindneſſe in himſelfe, that he could finde in his hart any way to reſtraine her freedome. But at length, neither able to grant, nor denie, he thus anſwered her. Deare ladie (ſaid he) I will not ſay vnto you (how iuſtly ſoeuer I may do it) that I am neither author, nor acceſſarie vnto this your withholding. For ſince I do not redres it, I am as faulty as if I had begun it. But this I proteſt vnto you (and this proteſtation of mine, let the heauens heare, and if I lie, let them anſwer me with a deadly thunderbolt) that in my ſoule I wiſh I had neuer

ſeene

ſeene the light, or rather, that I had neuer had a father to beget ſuch a child, thē that by my meanes thoſe eyes ſhould ouerflow their owne beauties, then by my meanes the ſkie of your vertue ſhould be ouerclowded with ſorrow. But woe is me, moſt excellent Ladie, I finde my ſelfe moſt willing to obey you: neither truely doo mine eares receaue the leaſt word you ſpeak, with any leſſe reuerence, then as abſolute, and vnreſiſtable commaundements. But alas, that Tyrant Loue, (which now poſſeſſeth the holde of all my life and reaſon) will no way ſuffer it. It is Loue, it is Loue, not I, which diſobey you. What then ſhall I ſay? but that I, who am redie to lie vnder your feete, to venture, nay to looſe my life at your leaſt commandement: I am not the ſtaye of your freedome, but Loue, Loue, which ties you in your owne knots. It is you your ſelfe, that impriſon your ſelfe: it is your beautie which makes theſe caſtle-walles embrace you: it is your owne eyes, which reflect vpon themſelues this iniurie. Then is there no other remedie, but that you ſome way vouchſafe to ſatisfie this Loues vehemencie; which (ſince it grewe in your ſelfe) without queſtion you ſhall finde it (far more then I) tractable.

But with theſe wordes *Philoclea* fell to ſo extreame a quaking, and her liuely whiteneſſe did degenerate to ſo dead a paleneſſe, that *Amphialus* feared ſome daungerous traunce: ſo that taking her hande, and feelinge that it (which was woonte to be one of the chiefe firebrands of *Cupid*) had all the ſenſe of it wrapt vp in coldnes, he began humblie to beſeech her to put away all feare, and to aſſure herſelfe vpon the vowe he made thereof vnto God, and her ſelfe, that the vttermoſt

moſt forces he would euer employ to conquere her affection, ſhould be Deſire, and Deſert. That promiſe brought *Philoclea* againe to her ſelfe, ſo that ſlowly lifting vp her eyes vpon him, with a countenaunce euer courteous, but then languiſhing, ſhe tolde him, that he ſhould doo well to do ſo, if indeede he had euer taſted what true loue was: for that where now ſhe did beare him good will, ſhe ſhould (if he tooke any other way) hate, and abhor the very thought of him: offering him withall, that though his mother had taken away her kniues, yet the houſe of Death had ſo many doores, as ſhe would eaſilie flie into it, if euer ſhe founde her honor endaungered.

6 *Amphialus* hauing the colde aſhes of Care caſt vpon the coales of Deſire, leauing ſome of his mothers Gentlewomen to waite vpon *Philoclea*, himſelfe indeede a priſoner to his priſoner, and making all his authoritie to be but a footeſtoole to Humblenes, went from her to his mother. To whom with words which Affection endited, but Amazement vttered, he deliuered what had paſſed betweene him and *Philoclea*: beſeeching her to trie what her perſwaſions could doo with her, while he gaue order for all ſuch things as were neceſſarie againſt ſuch forces, as he looked dayly *Baſilius* would bring before his caſtle. His mother bade him quiette him ſelfe, for ſhe doubted not to take fitte times. But that the beſt way was, firſt to let her owne Paſſion a little tire it ſelfe.

CHAP.

CHAP. 4.

[1] Amphialus *warlike preparations.* [2] *His iuſtification.* [3] *His fortifications.* [4] *His Arte of men.* [5] *His Loue-paſsions, and paſsionate complaints.*

SO they calling *Cliqias*, and ſome other of their counſell, aduiſed vpon their preſent affaires. Firſt, he diſpatched privat letters to al thoſe principall Lords and gentlemen of the country, whō he thought ether alliance, or friendſhip to himſelfe might drawe; with ſpeciall motions from the generall conſideration of duetie: not omitting all ſuch, whom either youthfull age, or youthlike mindes did fill with vnlimited deſires: beſides ſuch, whom any diſcontentment made hungry of change, or an ouer-ſpended wante, made want a ciuill warre: to each (according to the counſell of his mother) conforming himſelfe after their humors. To his friends, friendlines; to the ambitious, great expectations; to the diſpleaſed, reuenge; to the greedie, ſpoyle: wrapping their hopes with ſuch cunning, as they rather ſeemed giuen ouer vnto them as partakers: then promiſes ſprong of neceſſitie. Then ſent he to his mothers brother, the King of *Argos*: but he was as then ſo ouer-laide with warre himſelfe, as from thence he could attend ſmall ſuccour. 1

But becauſe he knewe, how violently rumors doo blow the ſailes of popular iudgemēts, & how few there be 2

be, that can diſcerne betweene trueth and truthlikenes, betweene ſhowes and ſubſtance; he cauſed a iuſtification of this his action to be written, wherof were ſowed abroad many copies, which with ſome gloſſes of probabilitie, might hide indeede the foulenes of his treaſon; and from true common-places, fetch downe moſt falſe applications. For, beginning how much the duetie which is owed to the countrie, goes beyond all other dueties, ſince in it ſelfe it conteines them all, and that for the reſpect therof, not onely all tender reſpects of kinred, or whatſoeuer other friendſhippes, are to be laide aſide, but that euen long-helde opinions (rather builded vpon a ſecreate of gouernement, then any groũd of truthe) are to be forſaken. He fell by degrees to ſhew, that ſince the ende whereto any thing is directed, is euer to be of more noble reckning, then the thing thereto directed: that therefore, the weale-publicke was more to be regarded, then any perſon or magiſtrate that thereunto was ordeined. The feeling conſideration whereof, had moued him (though as nere of kinne to *Baſilius* as could be, yet) to ſet principally before his eyes, the good eſtate of ſo many thouſands, ouer whom *Baſilius* raigned: rather then ſo to hoodwinke himſelfe with affection, as to ſuffer the realme to runne to manifeſt ruine. The care whereof, did kindly appertaine to thoſe, who being ſubalterne magiſtrates and officers of the crowne, were to be employed as frõ the Prince, ſo for the people; and of all other, eſpeciallie himſelfe, who being deſcended of the Royall race, and next heire male, Nature had no ſoner opened his eyes, but that the ſoyle where-upon they did looke, was to looke for at his hands a continuall carefulnes: which as

from

frō his childhood he had euer caried; ſo now finding that his vncle had not only giuē ouer al care of gouernment, but had put it into the hands of *Philanax*, (a man neither in birth comparable to many, nor for his corrupt, prowde, and partiall dealing, liked of any) but beſide, had ſet his daughters (in whom the whole eſtate, as next heires thereunto, had no leſſe intereſt thē himſelfe) in ſo vnfit & il-guarded a place, as it was not only dāgerous for their perſons, but (if they ſhould be conueied to any forraine country) to the whole commonwealth pernicious: that therfore he had brought them into this ſtrōg caſtle of his, which way, if it might ſeem ſtrange, they were to conſider, that new neceſſities require new remedies: but there they ſhould be ſerued & honored as belonged to their greatnes, vntil by the generall aſſembly of the eſtates, it ſhould be determined how they ſhould to their beſt (both priuate, and publique) aduantage be matched; vowing all faith & duty both to the father & children, neuer by him to be violated. But if in the meane time, before the eſtates could be aſsēbled, he were aſſailed, he would thē for his own defence take armes: deſiring all, that either tendred the dangerous caſe of their country, or in their harts loued iuſtice, to defēd him in this iuſt actiō. And if the Prince ſhould commaund them otherwiſe, yet to know, that therein he was no more to be obeied, then if he ſhould call for poiſon to hurt himſelf withall: ſince all that was done, was done for his ſeruice, howſoeuer he might (ſeduced by *Philanax*) interprete of it: he proteſting, that what ſoeuer he ſhould doo for his owne defence, ſhould be againſt *Philanax*, & no way againſt *Baſilius*.

To this effect, amplified with arguments and exam- 3

ples, and painted with rhetoricall colours, did he ſow abroad many diſcourſes : which as they preuayled with ſome of more quicke then ſounde conceipte, to runne his fortune with him; ſo in many did it breed a cooleneſſe, to deale violently againſt him, and a falſe-minded neutralitie to expect the iſſue. But beſides the waies he vſed to weaken the aduerſe partie, he omitted nothing for the ſtrengthning of his owne. The chiefe truſt whereof (becauſe he wanted men to keepe the field) he repoſed in the ſuretie of his caſtle; which at leſt would winne him much time, the mother of many mutations. To that therfore he bent his outward & inward eyes, ſtriuing to make Art ſtriue with Nature, to whether of them two that fortification ſhould be moſt beholding. The ſeat Nature beſtowed, but Arte gaue the building: which as his rocky hardneſſe would not yeeld to vndermining force, ſo to opē aſſaults he tooke counſell of skill, how to make all approches, if not impoſſible, yet difficult; as well at the foot of the caſtle, as round about the lake, to giue vnquiet lodgings to thē, whom onely enmitie would make neighbors. Then omitted he nothing of defence, as wel ſimple defence, as that which did defend by offending, fitting inſtrumēts of miſchiefe to places, whence the miſchiefe might be moſt liberally beſtowed. Nether was his ſmalleſt care for victuals, as wel for the prouiding that which ſhould ſuffice both in ſtore & goodneſſe, as in well preſeruing it, and wary diſtributing it, both in quantitie, and qualitie; ſpending that firſt which would keepe leſt.

But wherein he ſharpned his wits to the pearcingeſt
4 point, was touching his men (knowing them to be the weapon of weapons, & maſter-ſpring (as it were) which makes

makes all the reſt to ſtir; and that therefore in the Arte of man ſtood the quinteſſence, & ruling skill of all proſperous gouernement, either peaceable, or military) he choſe in number as many as without peſtring (and ſo daunger of infection) his victuall would ſeem for two yeare to maintaine; all of hable bodies, and ſome few of able mindes to direct, not ſeeking many commaunders, but contenting himſelfe, that the multitude ſhould haue obeying wills, euery one knowing whom he ſhould commaund, and whom he ſhould obey, the place where, and the matter wherein; diſtributing each office as neere as he could, to the diſpoſition of the perſon that ſhould exerciſe it: knowing no loue, daunger, nor diſcipline can ſodainly alter an habite in nature. Therfore would he not employ the ſtil mã to a ſhifting practiſe, nor the liberall man to be a diſpenſer of his victuals, nor the kind-harted man to be a puniſher: but would exerciſe their vertues in ſorts, where they might be profitable, employing his chief care to know thẽ all particularly, & throughly, regarding alſo the cõſtitutiõ of their bodies; ſome being able better to abide watching, ſome hũger, ſome labour, making his benefit of ech hability, & not forcing beyond power. Time to euery thing by iuſt proportiõ he allotted, & as well in that, as in euery thing els, no ſmall errour winckt at, leſt greater ſhould be animated. Euen of vices he made his profite, making the cowardly *Clinias* to haue care of the watch, which he knew his own feare would make him very wakefully performe. And before the ſiege began, he himſelfe cauſed rumors to be ſowed, and libels to be ſpread againſt himſelfe, fuller of mallice, then witty perſuaſion: partly, to knowe thoſe that would be apt to

ſtumble at ſuch motions, that he might cull them from the faithfuller band; but principally, becauſe in neceſſitie they ſhould not know when any ſuch thing were in earneſt attempted, whether it were, or not, of his owne inuention. But euen then (before the enemies face came neere to breed any terrour) did he exerciſe his men dayly in all their charges, as if Daunger had preſently preſented his moſt hideous preſence: him ſelfe rather inſtructing by example, then precept; being neither more ſparing in trauaile, nor ſpẽding in diet, then the meaneſt ſouldier: his hand and body diſdaining no baſe matters, nor ſhrinking from the heauy.

5 The onely ods was, that when others tooke breath, he ſighed; and when others reſted, he croſt his armes. For Loue paſſing thorow the pikes of Daũger, & tumbling it ſelfe in the duſt of Labour, yet ſtill made him remember his ſweete deſire, and beautifull image. Often when he had begun to commaund one, ſomewhat before halfe the ſentence were ended, his inward gueſt did ſo entertaine him, that he would breake it of, and a prettie while after end it, when he had (to the maruaile of the ſtanders by) ſent himſelf in to talke with his own thoughts. Sometimes when his hand was lifted vp to ſome thing, as if with the ſight of *Gorgons* head he had bene ſodainely turned into a ſtone, ſo would he there abide with his eyes planted, and handes lifted, till at length, comming to the vſe of himſelf, he would looke about whether any had perceiued him; then would he accuſe, and in himſelfe condemne all thoſe wits, that durſt affirme Idleneſſe to be the well-ſpring of Loue. O, would he ſay, al you that affect the title of wiſdome, by vngratefull ſcorning the ornaments of Nature, am

I now piping in a ſhaddow? or doo ſlouthfull feathers now enwrap me? Is not hate before me, and doubte behinde me? is not daunger of the one ſide, and ſhame of the other? And doo I not ſtande vpon paine, and trauaile, and yet ouer all, my affection triumphes? The more I ſtirre about vrgent affaires, the more me thinks the very ſtirring breeds a breath to blow the coales of my loue: the more I exerciſe my thoughts, the more they encreaſe the appetite of my deſires. O ſweet *Philoclea* (with that he would caſt vp his eies wherin ſome water did appeare, as if they would waſh themſelues againſt they ſhould ſee her) thy heauenly face is my Aſtronomie; thy ſweet vertue, my ſweet Philoſophie: let me profite therein, and farewell all other cogitations. But alas, my mind miſgiues me, for your planets beare a contrarie aſpect vnto me. Woe, woe is me, they threaten my deſtruction: and whom doo they threaten this deſtruction? euen him that loues them; and by what means will they deſtroy, but by louing them? O deare (though killing) eyes, ſhall death head his darte with the golde of *Cupids* arrowe? Shall death take his ayme from the reſt of Beautie? O beloued (though hating) *Philoclea*, how if thou beeſt mercifull, hath crueltie ſtolne into thee? Or how if thou beeſt cruell, doth crueltie looke more mercifull then euer Mercie did? Or alas, is it my deſtinie that makes Mercie cruell? Like an euill veſſell which turnes ſweete licour to ſowernes; ſo when thy grace fals vpon me, my wretched conſtitution makes it become fierceneſſe. Thus would he exerciſe his eloquence, when ſhe could not heare him, and be dumbe-ſtriken, when her preſence gaue him fit occaſion of ſpeaking: ſo that his witte could finde out

no other refuge, but the comfort and counſell of his mother, deſiring her (whoſe thoughts were vnperplexed) to vſe for his ſake the moſt preuailing manners of interceſſion.

CHAP. 5.

Suttle Cecropia *viſites ſad* Philoclea. *The ſhameleſſe Aunts ſhrewd temptations to loue and mariage. The modeſt neeces maidenly reſiſtance.*

1 *Cecropia* ſeing her ſonnes ſafetie depende thereon, (though her pride much diſdained the name of a deſire) tooke the charge vpon her, not doubting the eaſie conqueſt of an vnexpert virgin, who had alreadie with ſubtiltie and impudencie begun to vndermine a monarchy. Therfore, waighing *Philoclcas* reſolutions by the counterpeaſe of her own youthful thoughts, which ſhe then called to minde, ſhe doubted not at leaſt to make *Philoclea* receiue the poyſon diſtilled in ſweete liquour, which ſhe with little diſguiſing had drunke vp thirſtily. Therefore ſhe went ſoftly to *Philoclcas* chamber, & peeping through the ſide of the doore, then being a little open, ſhe ſawe *Philoclea* ſitting lowe vpon a cuſhion, in ſuch a giuen-ouer manner, that one would haue thought, ſilence, ſolitarineſſe, and melancholie were come there, vnder the enſigne of miſhap, to conquere delight, and driue him from his naturall ſeate of beautie: her teares came dropping downe like raine in Sunſhine,

ſhine, and ſhe not taking heede to wipe the teares, they ranne downe vpon her cheekes, and lips, as vpon cherries which the dropping tree bedeweth. In the dreſſing of her haire and apparell, ſhe might ſee neither a careful arte, nor an arte of careleſneſſe, but euen left to a neglected chaunce, which yet coulde no more vnperfect her perfections, then a Die anie way caſt, could looſe his ſquareneſſe.

Cecropia (ſtirred with no other pitie, but for her ſon) came in, and haling kindneſſe into her countenance, What ayles this ſweete Ladie, (ſaid ſhe) will you marre ſo good eyes with weeping? ſhall teares take away the beautie of that complexion, which the women of *Arcadia* wiſh for, and the men long after? Fie of this peeuiſh ſadneſſe; in ſooth it is vntimely for your age. Looke vpon your owne bodie, and ſee whether it deſerue to pine away with ſorrow: ſee whether you will haue theſe hands (with that ſhe tooke one of her hands and kiſſing it, looked vppon it as if ſhe were enamoured with it) fade from their whiteneſſe, which makes one deſire to touch them; & their ſoftneſſe, which rebounds againe a deſire to looke on them, and become drie, leane and yellowe, and make euerie bodie woonder at the chaunge, and ſay, that ſure you had vſed ſome arte before, which nowe you had left? for if the beauties had beene naturall, they woulde neuer ſo ſoone haue beene blemiſhed. Take a glaſſe, and ſee whether theſe tears become your eies: although, I muſt cõfeſſe, thoſe eies are able to make tears comely. Alas Madame (anſwered *Philoclea*) I know not whether my teares become mine eyes, but I am ſure mine eies thus beteared, become my fortune. Your fortune (ſaide *Cecropia*) 2

if ſhe could ſee to attire herſelfe, would put on her beſt raiments. For I ſee, and I ſee it with griefe, and (to tell you true) vnkindnes: you miſconſter euery thing, that only for your ſake is attempted. You thinke you are offended, and are indeed defended: you eſteeme your ſelfe a priſoner, and are in truth a miſtres: you feare hate, and ſhall find loue. And truely, I had a thing to ſay to you, but it is no matter, ſince I find you are ſo obſtinatly melancholy, as that you woo his felowſhip: I will ſpare my paines, and hold my peace: And ſo ſtaied indeede, thinking *Philoclea* would haue had a female inquiſitiueneſſe of the matter. But ſhe, who rather wiſhed to vnknowe what ſhe knewe, then to burden her hart with more hopeles knowledge, only deſired her to haue pity of her, and if indeed ſhe did meane her no hurt, then to grant her liberty: for elſe the very griefe & feare, would proue her vnappointed executioners. For that (ſaid *Cecropia*) beleue me vpō the faith of a kings daughter, you ſhall be free, ſo ſoone as your freedome may be free of mortal dāger, being brought hither for no other cauſe, but to preuent ſuch miſchiefes as you know not of. But if you thinke indeed to winne me to haue care of you, euen as of mine owne daughter, then lend your eares vnto me, & let not your mind arme it ſelf with a wilfulneſſe to be flexible to nothing. But if I ſpeake reaſon, let Reaſon haue his due reward, perſuaſion. Then ſweet neece (ſaid ſhe) I pray you preſuppoſe, that now, euē in the midſt of your agonies, which you paint vnto your ſelfe moſt horrible, wiſhing with ſighes, & praying with vowes, for a ſoone & ſafe deliuerie. Imagin neece (I ſay) that ſome heauenly ſpirit ſhould appeare vnto you, and bid you follow him through the doore, that goes into the

the garden, assuring you, that you should therby return to your deare mother, and what other delights soeuer your mind esteemes delights: would you (sweet neece) would you refuse to folow him, & say, that if he led you not through the chiefe gate, you would not enioy your ouer-desired liberty? Would you not drinke the wine you thirst for, without it were in such a glasse, as you especially fancied? tel me (deare neece:) but I wil answer for you, because I know your reason and will is such, as must needs conclude, that such niceneſſe can no more be in you, to disgrace such a mind, then disgracefulneſſe can haue any place in so faultles a beauty. Your wisdom would assuredly determin, how the marke were hit, not whether the bow were of Ewe or no, wherein you shot. If this be so, and thus sure (my deare neece) it is, then (I pray you) imagin, that I am that same good Angel, who grieuing in your griefe, and in truth not able to suffer, that bitter sighs should be sent foorth with so sweete a breath, am come to lead you, not only to your desired, and imagined happines, but to a true and essentiall happines; not only to liberty, but to libertie with commandement. The way I will shew you (which if it be not the gate builded hitherto in your priuate choise, yet shall it be a doore to bring you through a garden of pleasures, as sweet as this life can bring foorth; nay rather, which makes this life to be a life: (My son,) let it be no blemish to him that I name him my son, who was your fathers own nephew: for you know I am no smal kings daughter,) my sonne (I say) farre passing the neerneſſe of his kinred, with the neerneſſe of good-will, and striuing to match your matchleſſe beautie with a matchleſſe affection, doth by me present vnto you the full enioying of

your

your liberty,ſo as with this gift you wil accept a greater, which is, this caſtell,with all the reſt which you knowe he hath,in honorable quantitie; and will confirme his gift, and your receipt of both, with accepting him to be yours.I might ſay much both for the perſon and the matter;but who will crie out the Sun ſhines? It is ſo manifeſt a profit vnto you,as the meaneſt iudgement muſt ſtraight apprehend it:ſo farre is it from the ſharpeneſſe of yours,therof to be ignorant. Therfore(ſweet neece) let your gratefulnes be my interceſſion, & your gentlenes my eloquence, and let me cary comfort to a hart which greatly needs it. *Philoclea* looked vpon her,& caſt downe her eie again.Aunt(ſaid ſhe)I would I could be ſo much a miſtres of my owne mind,as to yeelde to my couſins vertuous requeſt:for ſo I conſtrue of it. But my hart is already ſet(and ſtaying a while on that word,ſhe brought foorth afterwards) to lead a virgins life to my death:for ſuch a vow I haue in my ſelfe deuoutly made. The heauens preuent ſuch a miſchiefe (ſaid *Cecropia.*) A vowe,quoth you? no, no, my deere neece, Nature, when you were firſt borne,vowed you a womã,& as ſhe made you child of a mother, ſo to do your beſt to be mother of a child:ſhe gaue you beautie to moue loue; ſhe gaue you wit to know loue;ſhe gaue you an excellẽt body to reward loue: which kind of liberall rewarding is crowned with vnſpeakable felicitie.For this,as it bindeth the receiuer,ſo it makes happy the beſtower: this doth not impouerish,but enrich the giuer. O the ſweet name of a mother:O the cõfort of cõforts, to ſee your childrẽ grow vp,in whõ you are(as it were)eternized:if you could conceiue what a hart-tickling ioy it is to ſee your own litle ones, with awfull loue come running to your lap,and like litle models of your ſelfe,ſtill cary you about

about them,you would thinke vnkindnes in your own thoughts,that euer they did rebell againſt the mean vnto it.But perchãce I ſet this bleſſednes before your eies, as Captains do victorie before their ſouldiers,to which they might come through many paines,grieues & dangers.No,I am cõtent you ſhrinke from this my counſel, if the way to come vnto it,be not moſt of all pleaſant. I know not (anſwered the ſweet *Philoclea*,fearing leaſt ſilence would offend her ſullennes) what contentment you ſpeake of:but I am ſure the beſt you can make of it, (which is mariage)is a burdenous yoke.Ah,deer neece (ſaid *Cecropia*)how much you are deceiued? A yoke indeed we all beare,laid vpõ vs in our creation, which by mariage is not increaſed,but thus farre eaſed, that you haue a yoke-fellow to help to draw through the cloddy cumbers of this world. O widow-nights,beare witnes with me of the difference.How often alas do I embrace the orfan-ſide of my bed, which was wõt to be imprinted by the body of my deare husband,& with teares acknowledge, that I now enioy ſuch a liberty as the baniſhed mã hath;who may,if he liſt,wãder ouer the world, but is euer reſtrained frõ his moſt delightful home? that I haue now ſuch a liberty as the ſeeled dou hath, which being firſt depriued of eies, is then by the falconer caſt off? For beleue me,neece,beleue me, mans experiẽce is womãs beſt eie-ſight.Haue you euer ſeene a pure Roſe-water kept in a chriſtal glas;how fine it lokes,how ſweet it ſmels,while that beautifull glaſſe impriſons it? Breake the priſon,and let the water take his owne courſe, doth it not imbrace duſt, and looſe all his former ſweeteneſſe,and faireneſſe? Truly ſo are we,if we haue not the ſtay, rather then the reſtraint of Criſtalline mariage. My hart meltes to thinke of the ſweete comfortes,

I in

I in that happie time receiued, when I had neuer cauſe to care, but the care was doubled: whē I neuer reioiced, but that I ſaw my ioy ſhine in anothers eies. What ſhall I ſay of the free delight, which the hart might embrace, without the accuſing of the inward conſcience, or feare of outward ſhame? and is a ſolitary life as good as this? then can one ſtring make as good muſicke as a conſort: thē can one colour ſet forth a beautie. But it may be, the generall conſideration of mariage dooth not ſo much miſlike you, as the applying of it to him. He is my ſōne, I muſt confeſſe, I ſee him with a mothers eyes, which if they doo not much deceiue me, he is no ſuch one, ouer whom Contempt may make any iuſt chalenge. He is comely, he is noble, he is rich; but that which in it ſelfe ſhould carie all comelineſſe, nobilitie, and riches, he loues you; and he loues you, who is beloued of others. Driue not away his affection (ſweete Ladie) and make no other Ladie hereafter proudly bragge, that ſhe hath robbed you of ſo faithfull and notable a ſeruant. *Philoclea* heard ſome pieces of her ſpeches, no otherwiſe then one doth when a tedious pratler cōbers the hearing of a delightful muſicke. For her thoughts had left her eares in that captiuitie, and conueied themſelues to behold (with ſuch eies as imagination could lend thē) the eſtate of her *Zelmane*: for whō how wel ſhe thought many of thoſe ſayings might haue ben vſed with a farre more gratefull acceptation. Therefore liſting not to diſpute in a matter whereof her ſelfe was reſolute, and deſired not to enforme the other, ſhe onely told her, that whileſt ſhe was ſo captiued, ſhe could not conceiue of any ſuch perſuaſions (though neuer ſo reaſonable) any otherwiſe, then as conſtraints: and as conſtraints muſt needs

needs eue in nature abhor the, which at her libertie, in their owne force of reaſon, might more preuaile with her: and ſo faine would haue returned the ſtrength of *Cecropias* perſwaſions, to haue procured freedome.

CHAP. 6.

[1] *Freſh motiues to* Philoclea. [2] Cecropias *new fetch to attempt* Pamela. [3] Pamelas *prayer*, [4] *and Sainct-like graces in it.* [5] *Her Auntes fruiteles argumentes.*

BVt neither her wittie wordes in an enemie, nor thoſe wordes, made more then eloquent with paſſing through ſuch lips, could preuaile in *Cecropia*, no more then her perſwaſions coulde winne *Philoclea* to diſauowe her former vowe, or to leaue the priſoner *Zelmane*, for the commaunding *Amphialus*. So that both ſides being deſirous, and neither graunters, they brake of conference. *Cecropia* ſucking vp more and more ſpite out of her deniall, which yet for her ſonnes ſake, ſhe diſguiſed with a viſarde of kindnes, leauing no office vnperfourmed, which might either witnes, or endeare her ſonnes affection. Whatſoeuer could be imagined likely to pleaſe her, was with liberall diligence perfourmed: Muſickes at her windowe, & eſpecially ſuch Muſickes, as might (with dolefull embaſſage) call the mind to thinke of ſorow, and thinke of it with ſweetnes; with ditties ſo ſenſiblie expreſſing *Amphialus* caſe, that euerie worde ſeemed to be but a diuerſifying of the name of 1

of *Amphialus*. Daily preſents, as it were oblations, to pacifie an angrie Deitie, ſent vnto her: wherein, if the workmanſhip of the forme, had ſtriuen with the ſumptuouſnes of the matter, as much did the inuention in the application, contende to haue the chiefe excellencie: for they were as ſo many ſtories of his diſgraces, & her perfections; where the richnes did inuite the eyes, the faſhion did entertaine the eyes, and the deuice did teach the eyes the preſent miſerie of the preſenter himſelfe, awefully ſeruiceable: which was the more notable, as his authoritie was manifeſt. And for the bondage wherein ſhe liued, all meanes vſed to make knowen, that if it were a bondage, it was a bondage onely knitte in loue-knots: but in harte alreadie vnderſtanding no language but one. The Muſicke wrought indeede a dolefulnes, but it was a dolefulnes to be in his power: the dittie intended for *Amphialus*, ſhe tranſlated to *Zelmane*: the preſents ſeemed ſo many tedious clogs of a thralled obligation: and his ſeruice, the more diligent it was, the more it did exprobrate (as ſhe thought) vnto her, her vnworthie eſtate: that euen he that did her ſeruice, had authoritie of commanding her, onely conſtruing her ſeruitude in his own nature, eſteeming it a right, and a right bitter ſeruitude: ſo that all their ſhots (how well ſoeuer leuelled) being carried awrie from the marke, by the ſtorme of her miſlike, the Prince *Amphialus* affectionately languiſhed, & *Cecropia* ſpitefullie cunning, diſdained at the barrennes of their ſucceſſe.

2 Which willingly *Cecropia* woulde haue reuenged, but that ſhe ſawe, her hurte could not be diuided from her ſonnes miſchiefe: wherefore, ſhe bethought her ſelf

to

to attempt *Pamela*, whose beautie being equall, she hoped, if she might be woon, that her sonnes thoughtes would rather rest on a beautifull gratefulnes, then still be tormented with a disdaining beautie. Wherfore, giuing new courage to her wicked inuentions, and vsing the more industry, because she had mist in this, & taking euen precepts of preuailing in *Pamela*, by her fayling in *Philoclea*, she went to her chamber, & (according to her own vngratious method of a subtile proceeding) stood listning at the dore, because that out of the circūstance of her present behauiour, there might kindly arise a fitte beginning of her intended discourse.

And so she might perceaue that *Pamela* did walke vp 3
and down, full of deep (though patient) thoughts. For her look and countenance was setled, her pace soft, and almost still of one measure, without any passionate gesture, or violent motion: till at length (as it were) awaking, & strengthning her selfe, Well (said she) yet this is the best, & of this I am sure, that how soeuer they wrōg me, they cannot ouer-master God. No darknes blinds his eyes, no Iayle barres him out. To whome then elſe should I flie, but to him for succoure? And therewith kneeling down, euē in the same place where she stood, she thus said. O all-seeing Light, and eternal Life of all things, to whom nothing is either so great, that it may resist; or so small, that it is contemned: looke vpon my miserie with thine eye of mercie, and let thine infinite power vouchsafe to limite out some proportion of deliuerance vnto me, as to thee shall seem most conuenient. Let not iniurie, ô Lord, triumphe ouer me, and let my faultes by thy handes be corrected, and make not mine vniuste enemie the minister of thy Iustice.

But

But yet, my God, if in thy wiſdome, this be the apteſt chaſtizement for my inexcuſable follie; if this low bondage be fitteſt for my ouer-hie deſires; if the pride of my not-inough humble harte, be thus to be broken, O Lord, I yeeld vnto thy will, and ioyfully embrace what ſorrow thou wilt haue me ſuffer. Onely thus much let me craue of thee, (let my crauing, ô Lord, be accepted of thee, ſince euen that proceedes from thee) let me craue, euen by the nobleſt title, which in my greateſt affliction I may giue my ſelfe, that I am thy creature, & by thy goodnes (which is thy ſelf) that thou wilt ſuffer ſome beame of thy Maieſtie ſo to ſhine into my mind, that it may ſtill depende confidently vpon thee. Let calamitie be the exerciſe, but not the ouerthrowe of my vertue: let their power preuaile, but preuaile not to deſtruction: let my greatnes be their praie: let my paine be the ſweetnes of their reuenge: let them (if ſo it ſeem good vnto thee) vexe me with more and more puniſhment. But, ô Lord, let neuer their wickednes haue ſuch a hand, but that I may carie a pure minde in a pure bodie. (And pauſing a while) And ô moſt gracious Lord (ſaid ſhe) what euer become of me, preſerue the vertuous *Muſidorus*.

4 The other parte *Cecropia* might well heare, but this latter prayer for *Muſidorus*, her hart helde it, as ſo iewel-like a treaſure, that it would ſcarce truſt her owne lippes withall. But this prayer, ſent to heauen, from ſo heauenly a creature, with ſuch a feruent grace, as if Deuotion had borowed her bodie, to make of it ſelf a moſt beautifull repreſentation; with her eyes ſo lifted to the ſkieward, that one would haue thought they had begunne to flie thetherward, to take their place amõg their felow

ſtarres,

ſtars;her naked hands raiſing vp their whole length, & as it were kiſſing one another, as if the right had bene the picture of *Zeale*,and the left, of *Humbleneſſe*, which both vnited themſelues to make their ſuites more acceptable. Laſtly,all her ſenſes being rather tokens then inſtruments of her inwarde motions,altogether had ſo ſtraunge a working power, that euen the harde-harted wickedneſſe of *Cecropia*, if it founde not a loue of that goodnes,yet it felt an abaſhment at that goodnes; & if ſhe had not a kindly remorſe, yet had ſhe an yrkſome accuſation of her owne naughtines,ſo that ſhe was put frō the biaſſe of her fore-intended leſſon. For well ſhe found there was no way at that time to take that mind, but with ſome,at leſt,image of Vertue,and what the figure thereof was her hart knew not.

Yet did ſhe prodigally ſpende her vttermoſt eloquence,leauing no argument vnproued, which might with any force inuade her excellent iudgement: the iuſtnes of the requeſt being, but for marriage;the worthineſſe of the ſuiter: then her owne preſent fortune, if ſhe would not onely haue amendment, but felicitie: beſides falſely making her belieue,that her ſiſter would thinke her ſelfe happie, if now ſhe might haue his loue which before ſhe contemned: and obliquely touching, what daunger it ſhould be for her, if her ſonne ſhould accept *Philoclea* in marriage, and ſo match the next heire apparant, ſhe being in his powre: yet plentifully periuring,how extreamely her ſonne loued her, and excuſing the little ſhewes he made of it, with the dutifull reſpect he bare vnto her, & taking vpō her ſelfe that ſhe reſtrayned him, ſince ſhe found ſhe could ſet no limits to his paſſions. And as ſhe did to *Philoclea*, ſo

did ſhe to her, with the tribute of gifts, ſecke to bring her minde into ſeruitude: and all other meanes, that might either eſtabliſh a beholdingneſſe, or at the leſt awake a kindnes; doing it ſo, as by reaſon of their impriſonment, one ſiſter knew not how the other was wooed; but each might thinke, that onely ſhe was ſought. But if *Philoclea* with ſweete and humble dealing did auoid their aſſaults, ſhe with the Maieſtie of Vertue did beate them of.

CHAP. 7.

[1] An Allarme to the Amphialians. *[2] Baſe cowardiſe in* Clinias; *[3] braue courage imaged in* Amphialus. *[4] His onſet with the death of two friendes his foes. [5] The horrour of* Mars-*his game. [6] Two deaths taken where they were not lookt for, the third delayed where it was expected.*

1 BVt this day their ſpeach was the ſooner broken of, by reaſon that he, who ſtood as watche vpon the top of the keepe, did not onely ſee a great duſt ariſe (which the earth ſent vp, as if it would ſtriue to haue clowdes as well as the aire) but might ſpie ſometimes, eſpecially when the duſt (wherein the naked winde did apparaile it ſelf) was caried aſide frō them, the ſhining of armour, like flaſhing of lightning, wherwith the clowdes did ſeeme to be with child; which the Sunne guilding with his beames, it gaue a ſight delightfull to any, but

to

to them that were to abide the terrour. But the watch gaue a quick Alarum to the ſouldiers within, whome practiſe already hauing prepared, began each, with vnabaſhed hartes, or at leſt countenaunces, to looke to their charge, or obedience, which was allotted vnto them.

Onely *Clinias* and *Amphialus* did exceed the bounds of mediocrity: the one in his naturall coldneſſe of cowardiſe, the other in heate of courage. For *Clinias* (who was bold onely in buſie whiſperings, and euen in that whiſperingnes rather indeed confident in his cunning, that it ſhould not be bewraied, then any way bolde, if euer it ſhould be bewrayed) now that the enemy gaue a dreadful aſpect vnto the caſtle, his eyes ſaw no terror, nor eare heard any martiall ſounde, but that they multiplied the hideouſneſſe of it to his mated minde. Before their comming he had many times felt a dreadfull expectation, but yet his minde (that was willing to eaſe it ſelfe of the burden of feare) did ſomtimes feine vnto it ſelfe poſſibility of let; as the death of *Baſilius*, the diſcord of the nobility, & (when other cauſe fayled him) the nature of chaunce ſerued as a cauſe vnto him: and ſometimes the hearing other men ſpeake valiantly, and the quietneſſe of his vnaſſailed ſenſes, would make himſelfe beleue, that he durſt do ſomething. But now, that preſent daunger did diſplay it ſelfe vnto his eye, & that a daungerous dooing muſt be the onely meane to preuẽt the dãger of ſuffering, one that had marked him would haue iudged, that his eies would haue run into him, & his ſoule out of him; ſo vnkindly did either take a ſent of danger. He thought the lake was too ſhallow, & the walles too thin: he miſdouted ech mans treaſon,

2

and coniectured euery poſſibilitie of misfortune, not onely fore-caſting likely perils, but ſuch as all the planets together could ſcarce haue conſpired: & already began to arme him ſelfe, though it was determined he ſhould tarrie within doores; and while he armed himſelfe, imagined in what part of the vault he might hide himſelfe, if the enimies wonne the caſtle. Deſirous he was that euery body ſhould do valiantly, but himſelfe; and therefore was afraid to ſhew his feare, but for very feare would haue hid his feare; leſt it ſhould diſcõfort others: but the more he ſought to diſguize it, the more the vnſutablenes of a weake brokẽ voice to high braue wordes, and of a pale ſhaking countenance to a geſture of animating, did diſcouer him.

3 But quite contrarily *Amphialus*, who before the enimies came was carefull, prouidently diligent, and not ſomtimes without doubting of the iſſue; now the nearer danger approched (like the light of a glow-worme) the leſſe ſtill it ſeemed: and now his courage began to boile in choler, and with ſuch impatience to deſire to powre out both vpõ the enimie, that he iſſued preſently into certaine boates he had of purpoſe, and carying with him ſome choiſe men, went to the fortreſſe he had vpõ the edge of the lake, which he thought would be the firſt thing, that the enimy would attempt; becauſe it was a paſſage, which cõmanding all that ſide of of that country, & being loſt would ſtop victuall, or other ſupply, that might be brought into the caſtle: & in that fortreſſe hauing ſome force of horſemen, he iſſued out with two hundred horſe, & fiue hũdred footmen, embuſhed his footmẽ in the falling of a hill, which was ouer ſhadowed with a wood, he with his horſmẽ went

a quarter of a mile further; aſide hād of which he might perceaue the many troupes of the enimie, who came but to take view where beſt to encampe themſelues.

But as if the ſight of the enimie had bene a Magnes ſtone to his courage he could not cōtaine himſelf, but ſhewing his face to the enimie, & his backe to his ſouldiers, vſed that action, as his onely oration, both of denouncing warre to the one, and perſuading help of the other. Who faithfully folowing an example of ſuch authoritie, they made the earth to grone vnder their furious burden, and the enimies to begin to be angry with thē, whom in particular they knew not. Among whom there was a young man, youngeſt brother to *Philanax*, whoſe face as yet did not bewray his ſex, with ſo much as ſhew of haire; of a minde hauing no limits of hope, nor knowing why to feare; full of iollitie in conuerſation, and lately growne a Louer. His name was *Agenor*, of all that armie the moſt beautifull: who hauing ridden in ſportfull conuerſatiō among the foremoſt, all armed ſauing that his beauer was vp, to haue his breath in more freedome, ſeing *Amphialus* come a pretty way before his cōpany, neither ſtaying the cōmaundement of the captaine, nor recking whether his face were armed, or no, ſet ſpurs to his horſe, & with youthfull brauery caſting his ſtaffe about his head, put it then in his reſt, as carefull of comely carying it, as if the marke had ben but a ring, & the lookers on Ladies. But *Amphialus* launce was already come to the laſt of his deſcending line, and began to make the full point of death againſt the head of this young Gentleman, when *Amphialus* perceyuing his youth and beautie, Compaſſion ſo rebated the edge of Choller, that he ſpared that faire

nakedneſſe, and let his ſtaffe fall to *Agenors* vamplat: ſo as both with braue breaking ſhould hurtleſſie haue perfourmed that match, but that the pittileſſe launce of *Amphialus* (angry with being broken) with an vnlucky counterbuffe full of vnſparing ſplinters, lighted vpon that face farre fitter for the combats of *Venus*; geuing not onely a ſuddaine, but a fowle death, leauing ſcarſely any tokens of his former beautie: but his hãds abandoning the reynes, and his thighes the ſaddle, he fell ſidewarde from the horſe. Which ſight comming to *Leontius*, a deere friende of his, who in vayne had lamentably cried vnto him to ſtay, when he ſaw him beginne his careere, it was harde to ſay, whether pittie of the one, or reuenge of the other, helde as then the ſoueraigntie in his paſſions. But while he directed his eye to his friende, and his hande to his enimie, ſo wrongly-conſorted a power could not reſiſt the ready minded force of *Amphialus*: who perceyuing his il-directed direction againſt him, ſo paide him his debt before it was lent, that he alſo fell to the earth, onely happy that one place, & one time, did finiſh both their loues and liues together.

5 But by this time there had bene a furious meeting of either ſide: where after the terrible ſalutation of warlike noyſe, the ſhaking of handes was with ſharpe weapons: ſome launces according to the mettall they mett, and skill of the guider, did ſtaine themſelues in bloud; ſome flew vp in pieces, as if they would threaten heauen, becauſe they fayled on earth. But their office was quickly inherited, either by (the Prince of weapons) the ſworde, or by ſome heauy maſe, or biting axe; which hunting ſtill the weakeſt chaſe, ſought

euer

euer to light there, where ſmalleſt reſiſtãce might worſe preuent miſchief. The claſhing of armour, and cruſhing of ſtaues; the iuſtling of bodies, the reſounding of blowes, was the firſt part of that ill-agreeing muſicke, which was beautified with the griſelineſſe of wounds, the riſing of duſt, the hideous falles, and grones of the dying. The verie horſes angrie in their maiſters anger, with loue and obedience brought foorth the effects of hate and reſiſtance, and with minds of ſeruitude, did as if they affected glorie. Some lay deade vnder their dead maiſters, whome vnknightly wounds had vniuſtly puniſhed for a faithfull dutie. Some lay vppon their Lordes by like accidents, and in death had the honour to be borne by them, whõ in life they had borne. Some hauing loſt their commaunding burthens, ranne ſcattered about the field, abaſhed with the madneſſe of mankinde. The earth it ſelfe (woont to be a buriall of men) was nowe (as it were) buried with men: ſo was the face thereof hidden with deade bodies, to whome Death had come masked in diuerſe manners. In one place lay diſinherited heades, diſpoſſeſſed of their naturall ſeignories: in an other, whole bodies to ſee to, but that their harts wont to be bound all ouer ſo cloſe, were nowe with deadly violence opened: in others, fowler deaths had ouglily diſplayed their trayling guttes. There lay armes, whoſe fingers yet mooued, as if they woulde feele for him that made them feele: and legges, which contrarie to common nature, by being diſcharged of their burthen, were growne heauier. But no ſworde payed ſo large a tribute of ſoules to the eternall Kingdome, as that of *Amphialus*, who like a Tigre, from whome a companie of Woolues did

ſeeke to rauiſh a newe gotten pray; ſo he (remembring they came to take away *Philoclea*) did labour to make valure, ſtrength, hatred, and choller to anſwere the proportion of his loue, which was infinit.

6 There died of his handes the olde knight *Æſchylus*, who though by yeares might well haue beene allowed to vſe rather the exerciſe of wiſedome, then of courage; yet hauing a luſtie bodie & a merrie hart, he euer tooke the ſummons of Time in ieſt, or elſe it had ſo creepingly ſtollen vpon him, that he had heard ſcarcely the noiſe of his feete, and therefore was as freſh in apparell, and as forwarde in enterpriſes, as a farre yonger man: but nothing made him bolder, then a certaine prophecie had beene tolde him, that he ſhoulde die in the armes of his ſonne, and therefore feared the leſſe the arme of an enemie. But nowe, when *Amphialus* ſworde was paſſed through his throate, he thought himſelfe abuſed; but that before he died, his ſonne, indeede, ſeeing his father beginne to fall, helde him vp in his armes, till a pitileſſe ſouldier of the other ſide, with a mace brained him, making father and ſonne become twinnes in their neuer againe dying birth. As for *Drialus*, *Memnon*, *Niſus* and *Policrates*; the firſt had his eyes cut out ſo, as he could not ſee to bid the neare following death welcome: the ſeconde had met with the ſame Prophet that olde *Æſchylus* had, and hauing founde manie of his ſpeeches true, beleeued this to, that he ſhould neuer be killed, but by his owne companions: and therefore no man was more valiant then he againſt an enemie, no man more ſuſpicious of his friends: ſo as he ſeemed to ſleepe in ſecuritie, when he went to a battell, and to enter into a battaile, when he began to ſleepe,

ſuch

ſuch guards he would ſet about his perſon; yet miſtruſting the verie guardes, that they would murther him. But nowe *Amphialus* helped to vnriddle his doubts; for he ouerthrowing him from his horſe, his owne companions comming with a freſh ſupplie, preſſed him to death. *Niſus* graſping with *Amphialus*, was with a ſhort dagger ſlaine. And for *Policrates*, while he ſhunned as much as he could, keeping onely his place for feare of puniſhment, *Amphialus* with a memorable blowe ſtrake of his head, where, with the conuulſions of death ſetting his ſpurres to his horſe, he gaue ſo braue a charge vpon the enemie, as it grewe a prouerbe, that *Policrates* was onely valiant, after his head was off. But no man eſcaped ſo well his handes as *Phebilus* did: for he hauing long loued *Philoclea*, though for the meanneſſe of his eſtate he neuer durſt reueale it, nowe knowing *Amphialus*, ſetting the edge of a riuall vpon the ſworde of an enemie, he helde ſtrong fight with him. But *Amphialus* had alreadie in the daungerouſeſt places diſarmed him, and was lifting vp his ſworde to ſende him away from him, when he thinking indeede to die, O *Philoclea* (ſaid he) yet this ioyes me, that I die for thy ſake. The name of *Philoclea* firſt ſtaied his ſworde, and when he heard him out, though he abhorde him much worſe then before, yet could he not vouchſafe him the honour of dying for *Philoclea*, but turned his ſword another way, doing him no hurt for ouer-much hatred. But what good did that to poore *Phebilus*, if eſcaping a valiant hand, he was ſlaine by a baſe ſouldiour, who ſeeing him ſo diſarmed, thruſt him through?

CHAP.

CHAP. 8.

The Baſilians reembattelled [1] firſt by Philanax, [4] *then by the blacke Knight.* [2] Iſmenus *ſlaine by* Philanax. [3] Philanax *captiued by* Amphialus. [4] *The blacke Knights exploits.* [5] *His encounter with* Amphialus, *parted by a by-blow.* [6] *The Amphialians retrait, and departure of the blacke Knight.*

1 THus with the well-followed valure of *Amphialus* were the other almoſt ouerthrowne, when *Philanax* (who was the marſhal of the army) came in, with newe force renuing the almoſt decayed courage of his ſouldiers. For, crying to them (and asking them whether their backes or their armes were better fighters) he himſelfe thruſt into the preſſe, and making force and furie waite vppon diſcretion and gouernement, he might ſeeme a braue Lion, who taught his yong Lionets, how in taking of a pray, to ioine courage with cunning. Thē Fortune (as if ſhe had made chaſes inow of the one ſide of that bloody Teniſcourt) went of the other ſide the line, making as many fall downe of *Amphialus* followers, as before had done of *Philanaxis*; they looſing the ground, as faſt as before they had woon it, only leauing them to keepe it, who had loſt themſelues in keeping it. Then thoſe that had killed, inherited the lot of thoſe that had bene killed; and cruel Death made thē lie quietly togither, who moſt in their liues had ſought to diſquiet ech other; and many

many of thoſe firſt ouerthrowne, had the comfort to ſee the murtherers ouerrun them to *Charons* ferrie.

Codrus, *Cteſiphon*, and *Milo*, loſt their liues vpon *Philanax* his ſword: but no bodies caſe was more pitied, then of a yong eſquire of *Amphialus*, called *Iſmenus*, who neuer abandoning his maiſter, and making his tender age aſpire to actes of the ſtrongeſt manhoode, in this time that his ſide was put to the worſt, and that *Amphialus* his valure was the onely ſtay of them from deliuering themſelues ouer to a ſhamefull flight, he ſawe his maſters horſe killed vnder him. Whereupon, asking no aduiſe of no thought, but of faithfulnes and courage, he preſently lighted from his owne horſe, and with the helpe of ſome choiſe and faithfull ſeruants, gat his maſter vp. But in the multitude that came of either ſide, ſome to ſuccour, ſome to ſaue *Amphialus*, he came vnder the hande of *Philanax*: and the youth perceyuing he was the man that did moſt hurt to his partie, (deſirous euē to change his life for glorie) ſtrake at him, as he rode by him, and gaue him a hurt vpon the leg, that made *Philanax* turn towards him; but ſeing him ſo yōg, & of a moſt louely preſence, he rather toke pity of him; meaning to make him priſoner, & thē to giue him to his brother *Agenor* to be his companion, becauſe they were not much vnlike, neither in yeeres, nor countenance. But as he loked down vpon him with that thought, he ſpied wher his brother lay dead, & his friend *Leontius* by him, euē almoſt vnder the ſquiers feet. Thē ſoroing not only his owne ſorow, but the paſt-cōfort ſorow, which he fore-knew his mother would take, (who with many teares, & miſgiuing ſighs had ſuffred him to go with his elder brother *Philanax*) blotted out all figures of pitie

2

out

out of his minde, and putting foorth his horſe (while *Iſmenus* doubled two or three more valiant, then well ſet blowes) ſaying to himſelfe, Let other mothers bewaile an vntimely death as well as mine; he thruſt him through. And the boy fearce though beautiful; & beautifull, though dying, not able to keepe his failing feete, fel downe to the earth, which he bit for anger, repining at his Fortune, and as long as he could reſiſting Death, which might ſeeme vnwilling to; ſo long he was in taking away his yong ſtruggling ſoule.

3 *Philanax* himſelfe could haue wiſhed the blow vngiuen, when he ſaw him fall like a faire apple, which ſome vncourteous bodie (breaking his bowe) ſhould throwe downe before it were ripe. But the caſe of his brother made him forget both that, and himſelfe: ſo as ouerhaſtily preſſing vppon the retiring enemies, he was (ere he was aware) further engaged then his owne ſouldiers could relieue him; were being ouerthrowne by *Amphialus*, *Amphialus* glad of him, kept head aginſt his enemies while ſome of his men caried away *Philanax*.

4 But *Philanax*-his men as if with the loſſe of *Philanax* they had loſt the fountaine of their valure, had their courages ſo dried vp in feare; that they began to ſet honour at their backes, and to vſe the vertue of pacience in an vntimely time: when into the preſſe comes (as hard as his horſe, more afraied of the ſpurre, then the ſword could carie him) a Knight in armor as darke as blacknes coulde make it, followed by none, and adorned by nothing; ſo far without authoritie that he was without knowledge. But vertue quickly made him knowne, and admiration bred him ſuch authoritie, that though they of whoſe ſide he came knew him not, yet they all knew it was

it was fitte to obey him: and while he was followed by the valianteſt, he made way for the vileſt. For, taking part with the beſiegers, he made the *Amphialians* bloud ſerue for a capariſon to his horſe, and a decking to his armour. His arme no oftner gaue blowes, then the blowes gaue wounds, then the wounds gaue deathes: ſo terrible was his force, and yet was his quicknes more forcible then his force, and his iudgement more quick then his quicknes. For though the ſword went faſter then eyeſight could follow it, yet his owne iudgement went ſtill before it. There died of his hand, *Sarpedon*, *Pliſtonax*, *Strophilus*, and *Hippolitus*, men of great proofe in warres, and who had that day vndertaken the guard of *Amphialus*. But while they ſought to ſaue him, they loſt the fortreſſes that Nature had placed them in. Thē ſlew he *Megalus*, who was a little before proude, to ſee himſelfe ſtained in the bloud of his enemies: but when his owne bloud came to be married to theirs, he then felt, that Crueltie dooth neuer enioy a good cheape glorie. After him ſent he *Palemon*, who had that daye vowed (with fooliſh brauerie) to be the death of tenne: and nine already he had killed, and was carefull to performe his (almoſt performed) vowe, when the Blacke Knight helpt him to make vp the tenth himſelfe.

And now the often-changing Fortune began alſo to chaunge the hewe of the battailes. For at the firſt, though it were terrible, yet Terror was deckt ſo brauelie with rich furniture, guilte ſwords, ſhining armours, pleaſant penſils, that the eye with delight had ſcarce leaſure to be afraide: But now all vniuerſally defiled with duſt, bloud, broken armours, mangled bodies, tooke away the maſke, and ſette foorth Horror in his owne

owne horrible manner. But neither could danger be dreadfull to *Amphialus* his vndiſmayable courage, nor yet ſeeme ougly to him, whoſe truely-affected minde, did ſtill paint it ouer with the beautie of *Philoclea*. And therefore he, rather enflamed then troubled with the encreaſe of dangers, and glad to finde a woorthie ſubiect to exerciſe his courage, ſought out this newe Knight, whom he might eaſilie finde: for he, like a wanton rich man, that throwes down his neighbours houſes, to make himſelfe the better proſpecte, ſo had his ſworde made him ſo ſpatious a roome, that *Amphialus* had more cauſe to wonder at the finding, then labour for the ſeeking: which, if it ſtirred hate in him, to ſee how much harme he did to the one ſide, it prouoked as much æmulation in him, to perceaue how much good he did to the other ſide. Therefore, they approaching one to the other, as in two beautifull folkes, Loue naturally ſtirres a deſire of ioyning, ſo in their two courages Hate ſtirred a deſire of triall. Then began there a combatte betweene them, worthy to haue had more large liſtes, and more quiet beholders: for with the ſpurre of Courage, and the bitte of Reſpect, each ſo guided himſelfe, that one might well ſee, the deſire to ouercome, made them not forget how to ouercome: in ſuch time & proportion they did employ their blowes, that none of *Ceres* ſeruaunts coulde more cunningly place his flaile: while the lefte foote ſpurre ſet forwarde his owne horſe, the right ſette backward the contrarie horſe, euen ſometimes by the aduauntage of the enemies legge, while the lefte hande (like him that helde the ſterne) guyded the horſes obedient courage: All done in ſuch order, that it might

ſeeme

ſeeme, the minde was a right Prince indeede, who ſent wiſe and diligent Lieutenants into each of thoſe well gouerned partes. But the more they fought, the more they deſired to fight; and the more they ſmarted, the leſſe they felte the ſmarte: and now were like to make a quicke proofe, to whom Fortune or Valour woulde ſeeme moſt friendly, when in comes an olde Gouernour of *Amphialus*, alwayes a good Knight, and carefull of his charge; who giuing a ſore wounde to the blacke Knights thigh, while he thought not of him, with an other blowe ſlewe his horſe vnder him. *Amphialus* cried to him, that he diſhonoured him: You ſay well (anſwered the olde Knight) to ſtande now like a priuate ſouldier, ſetting your credite vpon particular fighting, while you may ſee *Baſilius* with all his hoſte, is getting betweene you and your towne.

He looked that way, and found that true indeede, 6
that the enemie was beginning to encompaſſe him about, and ſtoppe his returne: and therefore cauſing the retreite to be ſounded, his Gouernour ledde his men homewarde, while he kepte him ſelfe ſtill hindmoſte, as if hee had ſtoode at the gate of a ſluſe, to lette the ſtreame goe, with ſuch proportion, as ſhoulde ſeeme good vnto him: and with ſo manfull diſcretion perfourmed it, that (though with loſſe of many of his men) he returned in him ſelfe ſafe, and content, that his enemies had felte, how ſharpe the ſworde coulde bite of *Philocleas* Louer. The other partie being ſorie for the loſſe of *Philanax*, was yet ſorrier when the blacke Knight could not be found. For he hauing gotten on a horſe, whom his dying maſter had bequeathed to the world, finding himſelfe

ſore

ſore hurt, and not deſirous to be knowen, had in the time of the enemies retiring, retired away alſo: his thigh not bleeding bloud ſo faſt, as his harte bledde reuenge. But *Baſilius* hauing attempted in vaine to barre the ſafe returne of *Amphialus*, encamped himſelfe as ſtrongly as he could, while he (to his grief) might heare the ioy was made in the towne by his owne ſubiectes, that he had that day ſped no better. For *Amphialus* (being well beloued of that people) when they ſawe him not vanquiſhed, they eſteemed him as victorious, his youth ſetting a flouriſhing ſhew vpon his worthineſſe, and his great nobilitie ennobling his dangers.

CHAP. 9.

' *The Loue-diuining dreame of* Amphialus *ſong to* Philoclea. ' Philanax *his captiuitie, and deaths-doome,* ' *for* Philocleas *ſake turnde to life and libertie.* ' *His loyall anſwere of his Lords intents.* ' Cecropias *artes to perſwade the ſiſters.*

BVt the firſt thing *Amphialus* did, being returned, was to viſite *Philoclea*, and firſt preſuming to cauſe his dreame to be ſong vnto her (which he had ſeen the night before he fell in loue with her) making a fine boy he had, accorde a prettie dolefulnes vnto it. The ſong was this.

1 NOw was our heau'nly vaulte depriued of the light
With Sunnes depart: and now the darkenes of the night

Did

Did light thoſe beamye ſtars which greater light did darke:
Now each thing that enioy'd that firie quickning ſparke
(Which life is cald) were mou'd their ſpirits to repoſe,
And wanting vſe of eyes their eyes began to cloſe:
A ſilence ſweet each where with one conſent embraſte
(A muſique ſweet to one in carefull muſing plaſte)
And mother Earth, now clad in mourning weeds, did breath
A dull deſire to kiſſe the image of our death:
When I, diſgraced wretch, not wretched then, did giue
My ſenſes ſuch reliefe, as they which quiet liue,
Whoſe braines broile not in woes, nor breſts with beatings ake,
With natures praiſe are wont in ſafeſt home to take.
Far from my thoughts was ought, whereto their minds aſpire,
Who vnder courtly pompes doo hatch a baſe deſire.
Free all my powers were from thoſe captiuing ſnares,
Which heau'nly pureſt gifts defile in muddy cares.
Ne could my ſoule it ſelfe accuſe of ſuch a faulte,
As tender conſcience might with furious panges aſſaulte.
But like the feeble flower (whoſe ſtalke cannot ſuſtaine
His weighty top) his top downeward drooping leane:
Or as the ſilly birde in well acquainted neſt
Doth hide his head with cares but onely how to reſt:
So I in ſimple courſe, and vnentangled minde
Did ſuffer drouſie lids mine eyes then cleare to blinde;
And laying downe my head, did natures rule obſerue,
Which ſenſes vp doth ſhut the ſenſes to preſerue.
They firſt their vſe forgot, then fancies loſt their force;
Till deadly ſleepe at length poſſeſt my liuing coarſe.
A liuing coarſe I lay: but ah, my wakefull minde
(Which made of heau'nly ſtuffe no mortal chaũge doth blind)
Flew vp with cleere wings of fleſhly bondage free;
And hauing plaſte my thoughts, my thoughts thus placed me.

Me thought, nay ſure I was, I was in faireſt wood
Of Samothea *lande; a lande, which whilom ſtood*
An honour to the world, while Honour was their ende,
And while their line of yeares they did in vertue ſpende.
But there I was, and there my calmie thoughts I ſedd
On Natures ſweet repaſt, as healthfull ſenſes ledd.
Her giſties my ſtudy was, her beauties were my ſporte:
My worke her workes to know, her dwelling my reſorte.
Thoſe lampes of heau'nly fire to fixed motion bound,
The euer-turning ſpheares, the neuer-mouing ground;
What eſſence deſt'nie hath; if fortune be or no;
Whence our immortall ſoules to mortall earth doo flowe:
What life it is, and how that all theſe liues doo gather,
With outward makers force, or like an inward father. (mind
Such thoughts, me thought, I thought, and ſtraind my ſingle
Then void of neerer cares, the depth of things to find.
When lo with hugeſt noiſe (ſuch noiſe a tower makes
When it blowne downe with winde a fall of ruine takes)
(Or ſuch a noiſe it was, as higheſt thunders ſende,
Or canons thunder-like, all ſhot togither, lende)
The Moone a ſunder rent; whereout with ſodaine fall
(More ſwift then falcons ſtoope to feeding Falconers call)
There came a chariot faire by doues and ſparrowes guided:
Whoſe ſtormelike courſe ſtaid not till hard by me it bided.
I wretch aſtoniſht was, and thought the deathfull doome
Of heauen, of earth, of hell, of time and place was come.
But ſtreight there iſſued forth two Ladies (Ladies ſure
They ſeemd to me) on whom did waite a Virgin pure:
Straunge were the Ladies weeds; yet more vnfit then ſtrange.
The firſt with cloth's tuckt vp as Nymphes in woods do range;
Tuckt vp euen with the knees, with bowe and arrowes preſt:
Her right arme naked was, diſcouered was her breſt.

But

But heauy was her pace, and ſuch a meagre cheere,
As little hunting minde (God knowes) did there appeere.
The other had with arte (more then our women knowe,
As ſtuffe meant for the ſale ſet out to glaring ſhowe)
A wanton womans face, and with curld knots had twinde
Her haire, which by the helpe of painters cunning, ſhinde.
When I ſuch gueſts did ſee come out of ſuch a houſe, (mouſe.
The mountaines great with childe I thought brought foorth a
But walking forth, the firſt thus to the ſecond ſaide,
Venus come on: ſaid ſhe, Diane you are obaide.
Thoſe names abaſht me much, whē thoſe great names I hard:
Although their fame (me ſeemd) from truth had greatly iard.
As I thus muſing ſtood, Diana cald to her
The waiting Nymphe, a Nymphe that did excell as farr
All things that earſt I ſawe, as orient pearles exceed,
That which their mother hight, or els their ſilly ſeed.
Indeed a perfect hewe, indeed a ſweet conſent
Of all thoſe Graces giftes the heauens haue euer lent.
And ſo ſhe was attirde, as one that did not prize
Too much her peerles parts, nor yet could them deſpiſe.
But cald, ſhe came apace; a pace wherein did moue
The bande of beauties all, the little world of Loue.
And bending humbled eyes (ô eyes the Sunne of ſight)
She waited miſtreſſe will: who thus diſcloſd her ſpright.
Sweet Mira mine (quoth ſhe) the pleaſure of my minde,
In whom of all my rules the perfect proofe I finde,
To onely thee thou ſeeſt we graunt this ſpeciall grace
Vs to attend, in this moſt priuate time and place.
Be ſilent therefore now, and ſo be ſilent ſtill
Of that thou ſeeſt: cloſe vp in ſecrete knot thy will.
She anſwer'd was with looke, and well perform'd beheſt:
And Mira I admirde: her ſhape ſonke in my breſt.

But thus with ireſull eyes, and face that ſhooke with ſpite
Diana *did begin. What moude me to inuite*
Your preſence (ſiſter deare) firſt to my Moony ſpheare,
And hither now, vouchſafe to take with willing eare.
I know full well you know, what diſcord long hath raign'd
Betwixt vs two; how much that diſcord foule hath ſtain'd
Both our eſtates, while each the other did depraue,
Proofe ſpeakes too much to vs that feeling triall haue.
Our names are quite forgot, our temples are defac'd:
Our offrings ſpoil'd, our prieſt from prieſthood are diſplac'd
Is this the fruite of ſtrife? thoſe thouſand churches hie,
Thoſe thouſand altars faire now in the duſt to lie?
In mortall mindes our mindes but planets names preſerue:
No knees once bowed, forſooth, for them they ſay we ſerue.
Are we their ſeruants growne? no doubt a noble ſtaye:
Celeſtiall powers to wormes, Ioues *children ſerue to claye.*
But ſuch they ſay we be: this praiſe our diſcord bred,
While we for mutuall ſpight a ſtriuing paſſion fed.
But let vs wiſer be; and what foule diſcorde brake,
So much more ſtrong againe let faſteſt concorde make.
Our yeares doo it require: you ſee we both doo feele
The weakning worke of Times for euer-whirling wheele.
Although we be diuine, our grandſire Saturne *is*
With ages force decay'd, yet once the heauen was his.
And now before we ſeeke by wiſe Apollos *skill*
Our young yeares to renew (for ſo he ſaith he will)
Let vs a perfect peace betweene vs two reſolue:
Which leſt the ruinous want of gouernment diſſolue;
Let one the Princeſſe be, to her the other yeeld:
For vaine equalitie is but contentious field.
And let her haue the giftes that ſhould in both remaine:
In her let beautie both, and chaſtneſſe fully raigne.

So

So as if I preuaile, you giue your giftes to me:
If you, on you I lay what in my office be.
Now resteth onely this, which of vs two is she,
To whom precedence shall of both accorded be.
For that (so that you like) hereby doth lie a youth
(She beckned vnto me) as yet of spotlesse truth,
Who may this doubt discerne: for better, witt, then lot
Becommeth vs: in vs fortune determines not.
This crowne of amber faire (an amber crowne she held)
To worthiest let him giue, when both he hath beheld:
And be it as he saith. Venus *was glad to heare*
Such proffer made, which she well showd with smiling cheere.
As though she were the same, as when by Paris *doome*
She had chiefe Goddesses in beautie ouercome.
And smirkly thus gan say. I neuer sought debate
Diana *deare; my minde to loue and not to hate*
Was euer apt: but you my pastimes did despise.
I neuer spited you, but thought you ouerwise.
Now kindnesse profred is, none kinder is then I:
And so most ready am this meane of peace to trie.
And let him be our iudge: the lad doth please me well.
Thus both did come to me, and both began to tell
(For both togither spake, each loth to be behinde)
That they by solemne oth their Deities would binde
To stand vnto my will: their will they made me know.
I that was first agast, when first I saw their showe:
Now bolder waxt, waxt prowde, that I such sway must beare:
For neere acquaintance dooth diminish reuerent feare.
And hauing bound them fast by Styx, *they should obaye*
To all what I decreed, did thus my verdict saye.
How ill both you can rule, well hath your discord taught:
Ne yet for ought I see, your beauties merite ought.

To yonder Nymphe therefore (to Mira *I did point)*
The crowne aboue you both for euer I appoint.
I would haue ſpoken out: but out they both did cric;
Fie, fie, what haue we done? vngodly rebell ſie.
But now we needs muſt yeelde, to that our othes require.
Yet thou ſhalt not go free (quoth Venus*) ſuch a fire*
Her beautie kindle ſhall within thy fooliſh minde,
That thou full oft ſhalt wiſh thy iudging eyes were blinde.
*Nay then (*Diana *ſaid) the chaſtneſſe I will giue*
In aſhes of deſpaire (though burnt) ſhall make thee liue.
Nay thou (ſaid both) ſhalt ſee ſuch beames ſhine in her face
That thou ſhalt neuer dare ſeeke helpe of wretched caſe.
And with that curſed curſe away to heauen they fled,
Firſt hauing all their giftes vpon faire Mira *ſpred.*
The reſt I cannot tell, for therewithall I wak'd
And found with deadly feare that all my ſinewes ſhak'd.
Was it a dreame? O dreame, how haſt thou wrought in me,
That I things erſt vnſeene ſhould firſt in dreaming ſee?
And thou ô traytour Sleepe, made for to be our reſt,
How haſt thou framde the paine wherewith I am oppreſt?
O cowarde Cupid *thus dooſt thou thy honour keepe,*
Vnarmde (alas) vnwares to take a man aſleepe?

Laying not onely the conqueſts, but the hart of the cõquerour at her feet. *** But ſhe receiuing him after her woonted ſorrowfull (but otherwiſe vnmoued) mãner, it made him thinke, his good ſucceſſe was but a pleaſant monument of a dolefull buriall: Ioy it ſelfe ſeeming bitter vnto him, ſince it agreed not to her taſte.

2 Therefore, ſtill crauing his mothers helpe to perſuade her, he himſelf ſent for *Philanax* vnto him, whom he

he had not onely long hated, but nowe had his hate greatly encreaſed by the death of his Squire *Iſmenus*. Beſides he had made him as one of the chiefe cauſes that mooued him to this rebellion, and therefore was enclined (to colour the better his action, and the more to embrewe the handes of his accomplices by making them guiltie of ſuch a treſpaſſe) in ſome formall ſort to cauſe him to be executed: being alſo greatly egged thereunto by his mother, and ſome other, who long had hated *Philanax*, onely becauſe he was more worthy to be loued then they.

But while that deliberation was handeled, according rather to the humour then the reaſon of ech ſpeaker, *Philoclea* comming to knowledge of the hard plight wherein *Philanax* ſtood, ſhe deſired one of the gentlewomen appoynted to waite vpon her, to goe in her name, and beſeech *Amphialus*, that if the loue of her had any power of perſwaſion in his minde, he would lay no further puniſhment, then impriſonment, vppon *Philanax*. This meſſage was deliuered euen as *Philanax* was entring to the preſence of *Amphialus*, comming (according to the warning was giuen him) to receyue a iudgement of death. But when he with manfull reſolution attended the fruite of ſuch a tyrannicall ſentence, thinking it wrong, but no harme to him that ſhoulde die in ſo good a cauſe; *Amphialus* turned quite the fourme of his pretended ſpeech, and yeelded him humble thankes, that by his meanes he had come to that happineſſe, as to receiue a commaundement of his Ladie: and therefore he willingly gaue him libertie to returne in ſafetye whither he 3

would; quitting him, not onely of all former grudge, but aſſuring him that he would be willing to do him any friendſhip, and ſeruice: onely deſiring thus much of him, that he would let him know the diſcourſe and intent of *Baſilius*-his proceeding.

4 Truely my Lorde (anſwered *Philanax*) if there were any ſuch knowne to me, ſecrete in my maiſters counſaile, as that the reuealing thereof might hinder his good ſucceſſe, I ſhoulde loath the keeping of my blood, with the loſſe of my faith; and woulde thinke the iuſt name of a traitour a harde purchaſe of a fewe yeares liuing. But ſince it is ſo, that my maiſter hath indeede no way of priuie practiſe, but meanes openly and forcibly to deale againſt you, I will not ſticke in fewe wordes to make your required declaration. Then tolde he him in what amaze of amazement, both *Baſilius* and *Gynecia* were, when they miſt their children and *Zelmane*. Sometimes apt to ſuſpect ſome practiſe of *Zelmane*, becauſe ſhe was a ſtraunger; ſometimes doubting ſome reliques of the late mutinie, which doubt was rather encreaſed, then any way ſatisfied, by *Miſo*: who (being founde, almoſt deade for hunger, by certaine Countrey-people) brought home worde, with what cunning they were trayned out, and with what violence they were caried away. But that within a fewe dayes they came to knowledge where they were, with *Amphialus*-his owne letters ſent abroade to procure confederates in his attemptes. That *Baſilus* his purpoſe was neuer to leaue the ſiege of this towne, till he had taken it, and reuenged the iniurie done vnto him. That he meant rather to winne it by time, and famine, then by force of aſſault: knowing howe valiant

valiaunt men he had to deale withall in the towne: that he had ſent order, that ſupplyes of ſouldiours, pioners, and all things elſe neceſſarie, ſhoulde dayly be brought vnto him: ſo as, my Lorde (ſayde *Philanax*) let me nowe, hauing receyued my life by your grace. let me giue you your life and honour by my counſaile; proteſting vnto you, that I cannot chooſe but loue you, being my maiſter-his nephewe; and that I wiſh you well in all cauſes: but this, you knowe his nature is as apte to forgiue, as his power is able to conquere. Your fault paſſed is excuſable, in that Loue perſwaded, and youth was perſwaded. Do not vrge the effects of angrie victorie, but rather ſeeke to obtaine that conſtantly by courteſie, which you can neuer aſſuredly enioy by violence. One might eaſily haue ſeene in the cheare of *Amphialus*, that diſdainfull choller woulde faine haue made the aunſwere for him, but the remembraunce of *Philoclea* ſerued for forcible barriers betweene Anger, and angry effects: ſo as he ſaide no more, but that he woulde not put him to the trouble to giue him any further counſaile: But that he might returne, if he liſted, preſently. *Philanax* glad to receyue an vncorrupted libertie, humbly accepted his fauourable conuoy out of the towne; and ſo departed, not hauing viſited the Princeſſes, thinking it might be offenſiue to *Amphialus*, and no way fruitfull to them, who were no way but by force to be relieued.

The poore Ladies indeede, not ſuffered either to meet together, or to haue cõference with any other, but ſuch as *Cecropia* had alreadie framed to ſing all her ſongs to her tune, ſhe herſelfe omitting no day, and catching

ching holde of euerie occaſion to mooue forwarde her ſonnes deſire, and remoue their knowne reſolutions: vſing the ſame arguments to the one ſiſter, as to the other; determining that whome ſhe coulde winne firſt, the other ſhoulde (without her ſonnes knowledge) by poyſon be made away. But though the reaſons were the ſame to both, yet the handeling was diuerſe, according as ſhe ſawe their humours to preferre a more or leſſe aptneſſe of apprehenſion: this day hauing vſed long ſpeech to *Philoclea*, amplifying not a little the great duetifulneſſe her ſonne had ſhewed in deliuering *Philanax*: of whome ſhe coulde get no aunſwere, but a ſilence ſealed vp in vertue, and ſo ſweetly graced, as that in one inſtant it caried with it both reſiſtance, and humbleneſſe.

CHAP. 10.

[1] Pamelas *exerciſe.* Cecropias *talke with her* [2] *of Beautie* [3] *and the vſe thereof.* [4] *The Auntes Atheiſme* [5] *refuted by the Neeces Diuinitie.*

[1] *Cecropia* threatning in her ſelfe to runne a more ragged race with her, went to her ſiſter *Pamela*: who that day hauing wearied her ſelfe with reading, and with the height of her hart diſdaining to keepe companie with any of the Gentlewomen appointed to attende her, whome ſhe accounted her iaylours, was woorking vppon a purſe certaine Roſes and Lillies, as by the fineneſſe of the worke

worke, one might ſee ſhe had borowed her wittes of the ſorow that owed them, & lent them wholy to that exerciſe. For the flowers ſhe had wrought, caried ſuch life in them, that the cũningeſt painter might haue learned of her needle: which with ſo prety a maner made his careers to & fro through the cloth, as if the needle it ſelfe would haue bene loth to haue gone frõward ſuch a miſtres, but that it hoped to return thẽceward very quickly againe: the cloth loking with many eies vpon her, & louingly embracing the wounds ſhe gaue it: the ſheares alſo were at hand to behead the ſilke, that was growne to ſhort. And if at any time ſhe put her mouth to bite it off, it ſeemed, that where ſhe had beene long in making of a Roſe with her hand, ſhe would in an inſtant make Roſes with her lips; as the Lillies ſeemed to haue their whiteneſſe, rather of the hande that made them, then of the matter whereof they were made; and that they grew there by the Sũnes of her eyes, & were refreſhed by the moſt in diſcomfort comfortable ayre, which an vnwares ſigh might beſtow vpon them. But the colours for the grounde were ſo well choſen, neither ſullenly darke, nor glaringly lightſome, and ſo well proportioned, as that, though much cunning were in it, yet it was but to ſerue for an ornament of the principall woorke; that it was not without maruaile to ſee, howe a minde which could caſt a careleſſe ſemblant vppon the greateſt conflictes of Fortune, coulde commaunde it ſelfe to take care for ſo ſmall matters. Neither had ſhe neglected the daintie dreſſing of her ſelfe: but as it had ben her mariage time to Affliction, ſhe rather ſemed to remember her owne worthineſſe, then the vnworthineſſe of her husband. For well one might perceyue

ſhe

ſhe had not reiected the counſaile of a glaſſe, and that her handes had pleaſed themſelues, in paying the tribute of vndeceyuing skill, to ſo high perfections of Nature.

The ſight whereof ſo diuerſe from her ſiſter, (who rather ſuffered ſorrow to diſtreſſe it ſelfe in her beautie, then that ſhe would beſtow any intertainment of ſo vnwelcome a gueſt) made *Cecropia* take a ſuddaine aſſuredneſſe of hope, that ſhe ſhould obtaine ſomewhat of *Pamela:* thinking (according to the ſquaring out of her own good nature) that beauty, carefully ſet forth, wold ſoone proue a ſigne of an vnrefuſing harborough. Animated wherewith, ſhe ſate downe by *Pamela:* and taking the purſe, and with affected curioſitie looking vpon the worke, Full happie is he (ſaide ſhe) at leaſt if he knew his owne happineſſe, to whom a purſe in this maner, and by this hand wrought, is dedicated. In faith he ſhall haue cauſe to account it, not as a purſe for treaſure, but as a treaſure it ſelfe, worthie to be purſed vp in the purſe of his owne hart. And thinke you ſo indeed (ſaid *Pamela* halfe ſmiling) I promiſe you I wrought it, but to make ſome tedious houres beleeue, that I thought not of them: for elſe I valued it, but euen as a verie purſe. It is the right nature (ſaide *Cecropia*) of Beautie, to woorke vnwitting effectes of wonder. Truely (ſaide *Pamela*) I neuer thought till nowe, that this outward glaſſe, intitled Beautie, which it pleaſeth you to lay to my (as I thinke) vnguiltie charge, was but a pleaſaunt mixture of naturall colours, delightfull to the eye, as muſicke is to the eare, without any further conſequence: ſince it is a thing, which not onely beaſtes haue; but euen ſtones and trees many of them

them doo greatly excell in it. That other thinges (answered *Cecropia*) haue some portion of it, takes not away the excellencie of it, where indeede it doth excell: since we see, that euen those beastes, trees, & stones, are in the name of Beauty only highly praised. But that the beautie of humaine persons be beyond all other things there is great likelihood of reason, since to them onely is giuen the iudgement to discerne Beautie; and among reasonable wights, as it seemes, that our sex hath the preheminence, so that in that preheminence, Nature counteruailes all other liberalities, wherin she may be thought to haue dealte more fauourably towarde mankind. How doo men crowne (thinke you) themselues with glorie, for hauing either by force brought others to yeeld to their minde, or with long studie, and premeditated orations, perswaded what they woulde haue perswaded? and see, a faire woman shall not onely commaund without authoritie, but perswade without speaking. She shall not neede to procure attention, for their owne eyes will chaine their eares vnto it. Men venture liues to conquere; she conqueres liues without venturing. She is serued, and obeyed, which is the most notable, not because the lawes so commaund it, but because they become lawes to thẽselues to obey her; not for her parents sake, but for her owne sake. She neede not dispute, whether to gouerne by Feare, or by Loue, since without her thinking thereof, their loue will bring foorth feare, and their feare will fortifie their loue: and she neede not secke offensiue, or defensiue force, since her lippes may stande for ten thousand shieldes, and tenne thousand vneuitable shot goe from her eyes. Beautie, Beautie (deare Neece) is

the

the crowne of the feminine greatnes; which gifte, on whom ſoeuer the heauens (therein moſt nigardly) do beſtowe, without queſtion, ſhe is bound to vſe it to the noble purpoſe, for which it is created: not onely winning, but preſeruing; ſince that indeede is the right happines, which is not onely in it ſelfe happie, but can alſo deriue the happines to another. Certainly Aunt (ſaid *Pamela*) I feare me you will make me not onely thinke my ſelfe fairer then euer I did, but think my fairnes a matter of greater valew then heretofore I coulde imagine it. For I euer (till now) conceaued theſe conqueſts you ſpake of, rather to proceed from the weakenes of the conquered, then from the ſtrength of the cõquering power: as they ſay, the Cranes ouerthrowe whole battailes of *Pygmees*, not ſo much of their Craniſh courage, as becauſe the other are *Pygmees*: and that we ſee, young babes think babies of woonderful excellencie, and yet the babies are but babies. But ſince your elder yeares, and abler iudgement, finde Beautie to be worthy of ſo incomparable eſtimation, certainly me thinks, it ought to be held in dearnes, according to the excellencie, and (no more then we would do of things which we accoũt pretious) euer to ſuffer it to be defiled.

3 Defiled? (ſaid *Cecropia*) Mary God forbid that my ſpeech ſhould tend to any ſuch purpoſe; as ſhould deſerue ſo foul a title. My meaning is to ioyn your beauty to loue; your youth to delight. For truely, as colours ſhould be as good as nothing, if there were no eyes to behold them: ſo is Beauty nothing, without the eye of Loue behold it: and therfore, ſo far is it from defiling it, that it is the only honoring of it, the only preſeruing of it: for Beauty goes away, deuoured by Time, but where remaines

remaines it euer flouriſhing, but in the hart of a true louer? And ſuch a one (if euer there were any) is my ſon: whoſe loue is ſo ſubiected vnto you, that rather then breed any offence vnto you, it will not delight it ſelfe in beholding you. Ther is no effect of his loue (anſwered *Pamela*) better pleaſeth me then that: but as I haue oftē anſwered you, ſo, reſolutely I ſay vnto you, that he muſt get my parents conſent, & then he ſhall know further of my mind; for, without that, I know I ſhould offend God. O ſweet youth (ſaid *Cecropia*) how vntimely ſubiect it is to deuotion? No, no ſweet neece, let vs old folks think of ſuch preciſe conſideratiōs, do you enioy the heauen of your age, whereof you are ſure: and like good houſholders, which ſpend thoſe thinges that will not be kept, ſo do you pleaſantly enioy that, which elſe will bring an ouer-late repentance, whē your glas ſhall accuſe you to your face, what a change there is in you. Do you ſee how the ſpring-time is ful of flowers, decking it ſelf with them, & not aſpiring to the fruits of *Autumn?* what leſſon is that vnto you, but that in the april of your age, you ſhould be like *April?* Let not ſome of thē, for whom alredy the grauegapeth, & perhaps enuy the felicity in you, which thēſelues cannot enioy, perſwade you to loſe the hold of occaſiō, while it may not only be taken, but offers, nay ſues to be takē: which if it be not now taken, will neuer hereafter be ouertaken. Your ſelf know, how your father hath refuſed all offers made by the greateſt Princes about you, & wil you ſuffer your beauty to be hid in the wrinckles of his peuiſh thoughts? If he be peuiſh (ſaid *Pamela*) yet is he my father, & how beautiful ſoeuer I be, I am his daughter: ſo as God claimes at my hands obedience, and makes me no iudge of his imperfections.

Theſe

4 Theſe often replies vpon conſcience in *Pamela*, made *Cecropia* thinke, that there was no righter waye for her, then as ſhe had (in her opinion) ſet her in liking of Beautie, with perſwaſion not to ſuffer it to be voide of purpoſe, ſo if ſhe coulde make her leſſe feeling of thoſe heauenly conceipts, that then ſhe might eaſilie winde her to her croked bias. Therefore, employing the vttermoſt of her miſchieuous witte, and ſpeaking the more earneſtly, becauſe ſhe ſpake as ſhe thought, ſhe thus dealt with her. Deare neece, or rather, deare daughter, if my affection and wiſhe might preuaile therein, how much dooth it increaſe (trowe you) the earneſt deſire I haue of this bleſſed match, to ſee theſe vertues of yours knit faſt with ſuch zeale of Deuotion (indeede the beſt bonde) which the moſt politicke wittes haue found, to holde mans witte in well doing? For, as children muſt firſt by feare be induced to know that, which after (when they doo know) they are moſt glad of: So are theſe bugbeares of opinions brought by great Clearkes into the world, to ſerue as ſhewelles to keepe them from thoſe faults, whereto els the vanitie of the worlde, and weakenes of ſenſes might pull them. But in you (Neece) whoſe excellencie is ſuch, as it neede not to be helde vp by the ſtaffe of vulgar opinions, I would not you ſhould loue Vertue ſeruillie, for feare of I know not what, which you ſee not: but euen for the good effects of vertue which you ſee. Feare, and indeede, fooliſh feare, and fearefull ignorance, was the firſt inuenter of thoſe conceates. For, when they heard it thunder, not knowing the naturall cauſe, they thought there was ſome angrie body aboue, that ſpake ſo lowde: and euer the leſſe they did

per-

perceiue, the more they did conceiue. Whereof they knew no cauſe that grewe ſtreight a miracle: fooliſh folks, not marking that the alterations be but vpon particular accidents, the vniuerſalitie being alwaies one. Yeſterday was but as to day, and to morrow will tread the ſame footſteps of his foregoers: ſo as it is manifeſt inough, that all things follow but the courſe of their own nature, ſauing only Man, who while by the pregnancie of his imagination he ſtriues to things ſupernaturall, meane-while he looſeth his owne naturall felicitie. Be wiſe, and that wiſedome ſhalbe a God vnto thee; be contented, and that is thy heauen: for els to thinke that thoſe powers (if there be any ſuch) aboue, are moued either by the eloquence of our prayers, or in a chafe by the folly of our actions; caries aſmuch reaſon as if flies ſhould thinke, that men take great care which of them hums ſweeteſt, and which of them flies nimbleſt.

She would haue ſpoken further to haue enlarged & cõfirmed her diſcourſe: but *Pamela* (whoſe cheeks were died in the beautifulleſt graine of vertuous anger, with eies which gliſtered forth beames of diſdaine) thus interrupted her. Peace (wicked woman) peace, vnworthy to breathe, that doeſt not acknowledge the breathgiuer; moſt vnworthy to haue a tongue, which ſpeakeſt againſt him, through whom thou ſpeakeſt: keepe your affection to your ſelf, which like a bemired dog, would defile with fauning. You ſay yeſterday was as to day. O fooliſh woman, and moſt miſerably fooliſh, ſince wit makes you fooliſh. What dooth that argue, but that there is a conſtancie in the euerlaſting gouernour? Would you haue an inconſtant God, ſince we count a

man fooliſh that is inconſtant? He is not ſeene you ſay, and would you thinke him a God, who might be ſeene by ſo wicked eyes, as yours? which yet might ſee enough if they were not like ſuch, who for ſport-ſake willingly hood-wincke themſelues to receaue blowes the eaſier. But though I ſpeake to you without any hope of fruite in ſo rotten a harte, and there be no bodie elſe here to iudge of my ſpeeches, yet be thou my witneſſe, O captiuitie, that my eares ſhall not be willingly guiltie of my Creators blaſphemie. You ſaie, becauſe we know not the cauſes of things, therefore feare was the mother of ſuperſtition: nay, becauſe we know that each effect hath a cauſe, that hath engendred a true & liuely deuotion. For this goodly worke of which we are, and in which we liue, hath not his being by Chaunce; on which opinion it is beyond meruaile by what chaunce any braine could ſtumble. For if it be eternall (as you would ſeeme to conceiue of it) Eternity, & Chaunce are things vnſufferable together. For that is chaunceable which happeneth; & if it happen, there was a time before it hapned, when it might not haue happened; or els it did not happen; and ſo of chaunceable, not eternall, as now being, thē not being. And as abſurd it is to thinke that if it had a beginning, his beginning was deriued frō Chaunce: for Chaunce could neuer make all thinges of nothing: and if there were ſubſtaunces before, which by chaunce ſhoulde meete to make vp this worke, thereon followes another bottomleſſe pitt of abſurdities. For then thoſe ſubſtaunces muſt needes haue bene from euer, and ſo eternall: and that eternall cauſes ſhould bring forth chaunceable effects, is as ſenſible, as that the Sunne

ſhould

ſhould be the author of darkeneſſe. Againe, if it were chaunceable, then was it not neceſſarie; whereby you take away all conſequents. But we ſee in all thinges, in ſome reſpect or other, neceſſitie of conſequence: therfore in reaſon we muſt needs know that the cauſes were neceſſarie.

Laſtly, Chaunce is variable, or els it is not to be called Chaunce: but we ſee this worke is ſteady and permanent. If nothing but Chaunce had glewed thoſe pieces of this All, the heauie partes would haue gone infinitely downewarde, the light infinitely vpwarde, and ſo neuer haue mett to haue made vp this goodly bodie. For before there was a heauen, or a earth, there was neyther a heauen to ſtay the height of the riſing, nor an earth, which (in reſpect of the round walles of heauen) ſhould become a centre. Laſtly, perfect order, perfect beautie, perfect conſtancie, if theſe be the children of Chaunce, or Fortune the efficient of theſe, let Wiſedome be counted the roote of wickedneſſe, and eternitie the fruite of her inconſtancie. But you will ſay it is ſo by nature, as much as if you ſaid it is ſo, becauſe it is ſo: if you meane of many natures conſpiring together, as in a popular gouernement to eſtabliſh this fayre eſtate; as if the Elementiſhe and ethereall partes ſhould in their towne-houſe ſet downe the boundes of each ones office; then conſider what followes: that there muſt needes haue bene a wiſedome which made them concurre: for their natures beyng abſolute contrarie, in nature rather woulde haue ſought each others ruine, then haue ſerued as well conſorted partes to ſuch an vnexpreſſ-

able harmonie. For that contrary things ſhould meete to make vp a perfectiō without a force and Wiſedome aboue their powers, is abſolutely impoſſible; vnles you will flie to that hiſſed-out opinion of Chaunce againe. But you may perhaps affirme, that one vniuerſall Nature (which hath bene for euer) is the knitting together of theſe many partes to ſuch an excellent vnitie. If you meane a Nature of wiſdome, goodnes, & prouidence, which knowes what it doth, then ſay you that, which I ſeeke of you, and cannot conclude thoſe blaſphemies, with which you defiled your mouth, & mine eares. But if you meane a Nature, as we ſpeake of the fire, which goeth vpward, it knowes not why: and of the nature of the Sea which in ebbing and flowing ſeemes to obſerue ſo iuſt a daunce, and yet vnderſtands no muſicke, it is but ſtill the ſame abſurditie ſubſcribed with another title. For this worde, one, being attributed to that which is All, is but one mingling of many, and many ones; as in a leſſe matter, when we ſay one kingdome which conteines many citties; or one cittie which conteines many perſons, wherein the vnder ones (if there be not a ſuperiour power and wiſedome) cannot by nature regarde to any preſeruation but of themſelues: no more we ſee they doo, ſince the water willingly quenches the fire, and drownes the earth; ſo farre are they from a conſpired vnitie: but that a right heauenly Nature indeed, as it were vnnaturing them, doth ſo bridle them.

Againe, it is as abſurde in nature that from an vnitie many contraries ſhould proceede ſtill kept in an vnitie: as that from the number of contrarieties an vnitie

tie ſhould ariſe. I ſay ſtill, if you baniſh both a ſingularitie, and pluralitie of iudgement from among them, then (if ſo earthly a minde can lift it ſelfe vp ſo hie) doo but conceaue, how a thing whereto you giue the higheſt, and moſt excellent kinde of being (which is eternitie) can be of the baſe and vileſt degree of being, and next to a not-being; which is ſo to be, as not to enioy his owne being? I will not here call all your ſenſes to witnes, which can heare, nor ſee nothing, which yeeldes not moſt euident euidence of the vnſpeakeableneſſe of that Wiſedome: each thing being directed to an ende, and an ende of preſeruation: ſo proper effects of iudgement, as ſpeaking, and laughing are of mankind.

But what madd furie can euer ſo enueagle any conceipte, as to ſee our mortall and corruptible ſelues to haue a reaſon, and that this vniuerſalitie (whereof we are but the leſt pieces) ſhould be vtterly deuoide thereof? as if one ſhould ſaie, that ones foote might be wiſe, and him ſelfe fooliſh. This hearde I once alledged againſt ſuch a godleſſe minde as yours, who being driuen to acknowledge theſe beaſtly abſurdities, that our bodies ſhould be better then the whole worlde, if it had the knowledge, whereof the other were voide; he ſought (not able to anſwere directly) to ſhifte it of in this ſorte: that if that reaſon were true, then muſt it followe alſo, that the worlde muſt haue in it a ſpirite, that could write and reade to, and be learned; ſince that was in vs ſo commendable: wretched foole, not conſidering that Bookes be but ſupplies of defects; and ſo are prayſed, becauſe they helpe our

want, and therefore cannot be incident to the eternall intelligence, which needes no recording of opinions to confirme his knowledge, no more then the Sunne wants waxe to be the fewell of his glorious lightfulneſſe. This worlde therefore cannot otherwiſe conſiſt but by a minde of Wiſedome, whiche gouernes it, which whether you wil allow to be the Creator thereof, as vndoubtedly he is, or the ſoule and gouernour thereof, moſt certaine it is that whether he gouerne all, or make all, his power is aboue either his creatures, or his gouernement. And if his power be aboue all thinges, then conſequently it muſt needes be infinite, ſince there is nothing aboue it to limit it. For beyond which there is nothing, muſt needes be boundleſſe, and infinite: if his power be infinite, then likewiſe muſt his knowledge be infinite: for elſe there ſhould be an infinite proportion of power which he ſhoulde not know how to vſe; the vnſenſibleneſſe whereof I thinke euen you can conceaue: and if infinite, then muſt nothing, no not the eſtate of flies (which you with ſo vnſauerie skorne did ieſt at) be vnknowne vnto him. For if it were, then there were his knowledge bounded, and ſo not infinite: if knowledge and power be infinite, then muſt needs his goodneſſe and iuſtice march in the ſame rancke: for infinitenes of power, & knowledge, without like meaſure of goodneſſe, muſt neceſſarily bring foorth deſtruction and ruine, and not ornament and preſeruation. Since then there is a God, and an all-knowing God, ſo as he ſees into the darkeſt of all naturall ſecretes, which is the harte of Man; and ſees therein the deepeſt diſſembled thoughts, nay

ſees

ſees the thoughts before they be thought: ſince he is iuſt to exerciſe his might, and mightie to performe his iuſtice, aſſure thy ſelfe, moſt wicked woman (that haſt ſo plaguily a corrupted minde, as thou canſt not keepe thy ſickeneſſe to thy ſelfe, but muſt moſt wickedly infect others) aſſure thy ſelfe, I ſay, (for what I ſay dependes of euerlaſting and vnremooueable cauſes) that the time will come, when thou ſhalt knowe that power by feeling it, when thou ſhalt ſee his wiſedome in the manifeſting thy ougly ſhameleſneſſe, and ſhalt onely perceiue him to haue bene a Creator in thy deſtruction.

CHAP. 11.

[1] Cecropia *malcontent, ſtill practiſeth.* [2] *The beſiegers diſcipline, and attempts of the beſieged.* [3] Phalantus *chalengeth* [4] *by Letter* Amphialus: [5] *who by Letter accepteth it.* [6] Amphialus [7] *and* Phalantus *militar accouſtrements.* [8] *Their ſo-like combate,* [9] *but friendly concluſion.*

THus ſhe ſaide, thus ſhe ended, with ſo faire a maieſtie of vnconquered vertue, that captiuitie might ſeeme to haue authoritie ouer tyrannie: ſo fowly was the filthineſſe of impietie diſcouered by the ſhining of her vnſtayned goodnes, ſo farre, as either *Cecropia* ſaw indeed, or elſe the guilty amazement of her ſelfe-accuſing conſcience, made her eies vntrue iudges of their natural obiect, that 1

there was a light more then humaine, which gaue a luſtre to her perfections. But *Cecropia*, like a Batte (which though it haue eyes to diſcerne that there is a Sunne, yet hath ſo euill eyes, that it cannot delight in the Sunne) found a trueth, but could not loue it. But as great perſons are woont to make the wrong they haue done, to be a cauſe to doo the more wrong, her knowledge roſe to no higher point, but to enuie a worthier, and her will was no otherwiſe bent, but the more to hate, the more ſhe founde her enemie prouided againſt her. Yet all the while ſhe ſpake (though with eyes caſt like a horſe that woulde ſtrike at the ſtirrop, and with colour which bluſhed through yellowneſſe) ſhe ſate rather ſtill then quiet, and after her ſpeech rather muttered, then replied: for the warre of wickedneſſe in her ſelfe, brought forth diſdainefull pride to reſiſt cunning diſſimulation; ſo as, ſaying little more vnto her, but that ſhe ſhoulde haue leyſure inough better to bethinke her ſelfe; ſhe went away repining, but not repenting: condemning greatly (as ſhe thought) her ſonnes ouer-feeble humbleneſſe, and purpoſing to egge him forward to a courſe of violence. For her ſelfe, determining to deale with neither of them both any more in maner of a ſuter: for what maieſtie of vertue did in the one, that did ſilent humbleneſſe in the other. But finding her ſonne ouer-apt to lay both condemnation, and execution of ſorrowe vppon himſelfe, ſhe ſought to mitigate his minde with feigned delayes of comforte, who (hauing this inward ouerthrow in himſelfe) was the more vexed, that he coulde not vtter the rage thereof vpon his outward enemies.

2 For *Baſilius* taught by the laſt dayes triall, what daungerous

daungerous effectes choſen courages can bring forth, rather vſed the ſpade, then the ſworde; or the ſworde, but to defende the ſpade; girding aboute the whole towne with trenches; which beginning a good way of from the towne, with a number of well directed Pioners, he ſtill caryed before him till they came to a neere diſtance, where he builded Fortes, one anſwering the other, in ſuch ſort, as it was a prettie conſideration in the diſcipline of warre, to ſee building vſed for the inſtrument of ruine, and the aſſayler entrenched as if he were beſieged. But many ſallies did *Amphialus* make to hinder their woorking. But they (exerciſing more melancholie, then choller in their reſolution) made him finde, that if by the aduauntage of place, fewe are able to defende themſelues from manie, that manie muſt needes haue power, (making themſelues ſtrong in ſeate) to repell fewe; referring the reuenge rather to the ende, then a preſent requitall. Yet oftentimes they dealt ſome blowes in light skirmiſhes, eche ſide hauing a ſtrong retyring place, and rather fighting with manie alarums, to vexe the enemie, then for anie hope of great ſucceſſe.

Which euerie way was a tedious comber to the impacient courage of *Amphialus*: till the fame of this warre, bringing thither diuerſe, both ſtraungers, and ſubiects, as well of princely, as noble houſes, the gallant *Phalantus*, who reſtrayned his ſportfull delightes as then, to ſerue *Baſilius*, (whome he honoured for receyued honours) when he had ſpent ſome time in conſidering the *Arcadian* manner in marching, encamping, and fighting, and had learned in what points 3

of

of gouernement, and obedience their diſcipline differed from others, and had ſatiſfied his minde in the knowledge, both for the cutting off the enemies helpes, and furniſhing ones ſelfe, which *Baſilius* orders coulde deliuer vnto him, his yong ſpirites (wearie of wanting cauſe to be wearie) deſired to keepe his value in knowledge, by ſome priuate acte, ſince the publique policie reſtrayned him; the rather, becauſe his olde miſtreſſe *Arteſia* might ſee, whome ſhe had ſo lightly forſaken: and therefore demaunding and obteyning leaue of *Baſilius*; he cauſed a Heraulde to be furniſhed with apparell of his office, and tokens of a peaceable meſſage, and ſo ſent him to the gate of the towne to demaunde audience of *Amphialus*: who vnderſtanding thereof, cauſed him both ſafely, and courteouſly to be brought into his preſence: who making lowly reuerence vnto him, preſented his Letters, deſiring *Amphialus* that whatſoeuer they conteyned, he woulde conſider that he was onely the bearer, but not the inditer. *Amphialus* with noble gentleneſſe aſſured him both, by honourable ſpeeches, and a demeanure which aunſwered for him, that his reuenge, whenſoeuer, ſhould ſort vnto it ſelfe a higher ſubiect. But opening the Letters, he found them to ſpeake in this maner.

4 PHalantus of *Corinthe*, to *Amphialus* of *Arcadia*, ſendeth the greeting of a hateleſſe enemie. The liking of martiall matters without anie miſlike of your perſon, hath brought me rather to the companie, then to the minde of your beſiegers: where languiſhing

ſhing in idleneſſe, I deſire to refreſh my minde with ſome exerciſe of armes, which might make knowne the dooers, with delight of the beholders. Therefore, if there be any Gentleman in your Towne, that eyther for the loue of Honour, or honour of his Loue, well armed, on horſebacke, with launce, and ſworde, will winne another, or looſe himſelfe, to be a priſoner at diſcretion of the conquerour, I will to morrowe morning by Sunne riſing, with a trumpet and a Squire onely, attende him in like order furniſhed. The place I thinke fitteſt, the Iland within the Lake, becauſe it ſtandes ſo well in the view of your Caſtell, as that the Ladies may haue the pleaſure of ſeeing the combate: which though it be within the commaundement of your Caſtell, I deſire no better ſecuritie, then the promiſe I make to my ſelfe of your vertue. I attende your aunſwere, and wiſh you ſuch ſucceſſe as may be to your honour, rather in yeelding to that which is iuſt, then in mainteyning wrong by much violence.

Amphialus read it with cheerefull countenance, and thinking but a little with himſelfe, called for inke and paper, and wrote this aunſwere.

Amphialus of *Arcadia*, to *Phalantus* of *Corinthe*, wiſheth all his owne wiſhes, ſauing thoſe which may be hurtful to another. The matter of your letters ſo fit for a worthy minde, and the maner ſo ſutable to the nobleneſſe of the matter, giue me cauſe to thinke howe happie I might accounte my ſelfe, if I coulde get

get ſuch a friende, who eſteeme it no ſmall happineſſe to haue mette with ſo noble an enemie. Your chalenge ſhall be aunſwered, and both time, place, and weapon accepted. For your ſecuritie for any treacherie (hauing no hoſtage woorthie to counteruaile you) take my woorde, which I eſteeme aboue all reſpectes. Prepare therefore your armes to fight, but not your hart to malice; ſince true valure needes no other whetſtone, then deſire of honour.

6 HAuing writte and ſealed his letter, he deliuered it to the Heraulde, and withall tooke a faire chaine from off his owne necke, and gaue it him. And ſo with ſafe conuoy ſent him away fromout his Citie: and he being gone, *Amphialus* ſhewed vnto his mother, and ſome other of his chiefe Counſailours, what he had receyued, and howe he had aunſwered: telling them withall, that he was determined to aunſwere the chalenge in his owne perſon. His mother with prayers authorized by motherly commaundement; his olde gouernour with perſwaſions mingled with reprehenſions, (that he would rather affect the glorie of a priuate fighter, then of a wiſe Generall) *Clinias* with falling downe at his feete, and beſeeching him to remember, that all their liues depended vppon his ſafetie, ſought all to diſſuade him. But *Amphialus* (whoſe hart was enflamed with courage, and courage enflamed with affection) made an imperious reſolution cutte off the tediouſneſſe of replyes, giuing them in charge, what they ſhoulde doo vppon all occaſions, and particularly to deliuer the Ladies, if otherwiſe then well happened vnto him: onely deſiring his

his mother, that ſhe woulde bring *Philoclea* to a window, where ſhe might with eaſe perfectly diſcerne the combat. And ſo, as ſoone as the morning beganne to draw dewe from the faireſt greenes, to waſh her face withall, againſt the approach of the burning Sunne, he went to his ſtable, where himſelfe choſe out a horſe, whom (though he was neere twentie yeere olde) he preferred for a peece of ſure ſeruice, before a great nũber of yonger. His colour was of a browne bay, dapled thick with black ſpots; his forhead marked with a white ſtarre; to which, in all his bodie there was no part ſutable, but the left foote before; his mane and taile black, and thick, of goodly, and well proportioned greatnes. He cauſed him to be trimmed with a ſumptuous ſaddle of tawnie, and golde ennamell, enriched with pretious ſtones: his furniture was made into the faſhiõ of the branches of a tree, from which the leaues were falling: and ſo artificiallie were the leaues made, that as the horſe moued, it ſeemed indeed that the leaues wagged, as when the winde plaies with them; and being made of a pale cloath of gold, they did beare the ſtraw-coloured liuerie of ruine. His armour was alſo of tawnie and golde, but formed into the figure of flames darckened, as when they newelie breake the priſon of a ſmoakie furnace. In his ſhielde he had painted the *Torpedo* fiſh. And ſo appointed, he cauſed himſelfe, with his trumpet and ſquire (whom he had taken ſince the death of *Iſmenus*) to be ferried ouer into the Iland: a place well choſen for ſuch a purpoſe. For, it was ſo plaine, as there was ſcarcely any buſh, or hillock, either to vnleuell, or ſhadowe it: of length and breadth enough, to trie the vttermoſt both of launce and ſword,

and

and the one end of it facing of the caſtle, the other extending it ſelfe toward the campe, and no acceſſe to it, but by water: there coulde no ſecreate trecherie be wrought, and for manifeſt violence, ether ſide might haue time inough to ſuccour their party.

7 But there he found *Phalantus*, alredy waiting for him vpon a horſe, milke white, but that vpon his ſhoulder and withers, he was fretned with red ſtaines, as when a few ſtrawberies are ſcattered into a diſh of creame. He had cauſed his mane and taile to be died in carnation; his reines were vine branches, which ingendring one with the other, at the end, when it came to the bitte, there, for the boſſe, brought foorth a cluſter of grapes, by the workeman made ſo liuely, that it ſeemed, as the horſe champed on his bitte, he chopped for them, and that it did make his mouth water, to ſee the grapes ſo neere him. His furniture behind was of vines, ſo artificially made, as it ſemed the horſe ſtood in the ſhadow of the vine, ſo pretily were cluſters of rubie grapes diſperſed among the trappers which embraced his ſides. His armour was blew, like the heauen, which a Sun did with his rayes (proportionately deliuered) guilde in moſt places. His ſhield was beautified with this deuice; A greyhound, which ouerrunning his fellow, and taking the hare, yet hurts it not whē it takes it. The word was, *The glorie, not the pray.*

8 But as ſoone as *Amphialus* landed, he ſent his ſquire to *Phalantus*, to tel him, that there was the Knight, redy to know whether he had any thing to him. *Phalantus* anſwered, that his anſwere now muſt be in the lāguage of launces; & ſo each attended the warning of the trūpets, which were to ſound at the appointment of foure iud-

ges,

ges,who with consideration of the same, had deuided the ground. *Phalantus*-his horse young,and feeling the youth of his master, stoode coruetting; which being wel gouerned by *Phalãtus*,gaue such a glittering grace, as when the Sunne shines vpon a wauing water. *Amphialus*-horse stood panting vpon the ground, with his further foot before,as if he would for his masters cause begin to make himselfe angry: till the trumpet sounded together. Together they set spurres to their horses, together took their launces from their thighes,conueied them vp into their restes together, together let them sinke downward;so as it was a delectable sight,in a dangerous effect; and a pleasant consideration, that there was so perfect agreement, in so mortall disagreement: like a musick, made of cunning discords.But their horses keeping an euen line their masters had skilfully allotted vnto them, passed one by another without encountring, although either might feel the angry breath of other. But the staues being come to a iust descent, but euen when the mark was ready to meet them, *Amphialus* was runne through the vamplate,and vnder the arme:so as the staffe appearing behind him, it semed to the beholders he had bene in danger. But he strake *Phalantus* iust vpon the gorget,so as he battred the lamms therof,and made his head almost touch the back of his horse.But either side hauing staied the spur, & vsed the bit to stop their horses fury,casting away the trõcheons of their staues, & drawing their swords, they attended the second summons of the death-threatning trumpet, which quickly folowed;and they assoone making their horses answer their hãds,with a gẽtle galop,set the one toward the other;til being come in the neernes of litle

more

more then a ſtaues length. *Amphialus* truſting more to the ſtrength, then to the nimblenes of his horſe, put him foorth with ſpeedie violence, and making his head ioyne to the others flanke, guiding his blow with diſcretion, and ſtrengthning it with the courſe of his horſe, ſtrake *Phalantus* vpon the head, in ſuch ſort, that his feeling ſenſe did both dazell his ſight, and aſtoniſh his hearing. But *Phalantus* (not accuſtomed to be vngratefull to ſuch benefites) ſtrake him vpon the ſide of his face, with ſuch a force, that he thought his iawe had bene cut aſunder: though the faithfulnes of his armour indeede garded him from further damage. And ſo remayned they awhile, rather angry with fighting, then fighting for anger, till *Amphialus*-his horſe, leaning harde vpon the other, and winning ground, the other horſe feeling himſelfe preſt, began to riſe a little before, as he was woont to doo in his coruette: which aduantage *Amphialus* taking, ſet forward his own horſe with the further ſpurre, ſo as *Phalantus*-his horſe came ouer with his maſter vnder him. Which *Amphialus* ſeeing, lighted, with intention to help *Phalantus*. But his horſe that had faulted, rather with vntimely arte, then want of force, gatte vp from burdning his burden, ſo as *Phalantus* (in the fall hauing gotten his feete free of & the ſtirrop) could (though ſomething bruiſed) ariſe, ſeeing *Amphialus* neere him, he aſked him, Whether he had giuē him any help in remouing his horſe. *Amphialus* ſaid No. Truely ſayd *Phalantus*, I aſked it, becauſe I would not willingly haue fought with him, that had had my life in his mercie. But now (ſaid *Phalantus*) before we proceed further, let me know who you are, becauſe neuer yet did any man bring me to the like fortune.

tune. *Amphialus* listing to keepe him selfe vnknowne, told him he was a Gentlemã, to whom *Amphialus* that day had giuen armour and horse to trie his valour, hauing neuer before bene in any combat worthy remembrance. Ah, (said *Phalantus* in a rage) And must I be the exercise of your prentis-age? & with that, choler tooke away either the bruse, or the feeling of the bruse, so as he entred a fresh into the cõbat, & boiling in his armes the disdaine of his harte, strake so thicke vpon *Amphialus*, as if euery blow would faine haue bene foremost. But *Amphialus* (that many like trials had taught, great spending to leaue small remnants) let passe the storme with strong wardes, and nimble auoidings: till seeing his time fit, both for distaunce and nakednes, he strake him so cruell a blow on the knee, that the poore Gentleman fell downe withall in a sowne.

But *Amphialus*, pittying approued valoure, made pre- 9
tious by naturall curtesie, went to him; & taking of his head-piece to giue him aire, the young Knight (disdained to buy life with yeelding) bad him vse his fortune: for he was resolued neuer to yeeld. No more you shall (said *Amphialus*) if it be not to my request, that you will account your self to haue great interest in me. *Phalantus* more ouercome by his kindnes, thẽ by his fortune, desired yet once againe to know his name, who in his first beginning had shewed such furie in his force, and yet such stay in his furie. *Amphialus*, then named himselfe, telling him withal, he would think his name much bettred, if it might be honored by the title of his friẽd. But no Baulme could be more comfortable to his wound, then the knowledge thereof was to his mind, when he knew his mishap should be excused by the renowmed

valour of the other. And ſo promiſing each to other aſſurednes of good will, *Phalantus*, (of whom *Amphialus* would haue no other raunſome, but his word of friēdſhip) was conueyed into the campe, where he would but litle remaine among the enimies of *Amphialus:* but went to ſeeke his aduentures other-where.

CHAP. 12.

Philocleas il-taking Amphialus *wel-meaning.* *His challenge and conqueſts continued for Loue, & his loue.* Argalus *ſent for to this challenge.* *The coniugall happines of him and his wife.* *The paſſions ſtirred by this meſſage.* *Their ſorrow-ſounding farewell.* Argaluſis *defie.* Amphialuſis *anſwere.* Argaluſis *furniture.* *Their combat, bloudy to both, deadly to* Argalus. Parthenia *comes to the end of it, and him.* *Her* *and his lamentations.* *The funerals.*

1 AS for *Amphialus* he was receaued with triumph into the caſtle; although one might ſee by his eyes (humbly lifted vp to the window where *Philoclea* ſtood) that he was rather ſuppliaunt, then victorious: whiche occaſion *Cecropia* taking, (who as then ſtoode by *Philoclea*, and had lately lefte *Pamela* in another roome, whence alſo ſhe might ſee the combate) Sweet Lady (ſaid ſhe) now you may ſee, whether you haue cauſe to loue my ſonne, who then lies vnder your feete, when he ſtandes vpon the necke of his braueſt enemies. Alas ſaid *Philoclea*, a ſimple ſeruice

uice to me, me thinkes it is, to haue thoſe, who come to ſuccour me, deſtroied: If it be my dutie to call it loue, be it ſo: but the effects it brings foorth I confeſſe I account hatefull. *Cecropia* grew ſo angry with this vnkind anſwere, that ſhe could not abſtayne from telling her, that ſhe was like them that could not ſleepe, when they were ſoftly layed: but that if her ſonne would follow her counſell, he ſhould take another courſe with her: and ſo flange away from her.

Yet (knowing the deſperate melancholy of *Amphialus* in like caſes) framed to him a very thankefull meſſage, poudring it with ſome hope-giuing phraſes; which were of ſuch ioy to *Amphialus*, that he (though againſt publike reſpect, & importunity of diſſuaders) preſently cauſed it to be made knowne to the campe, that whatſoeuer Knight would trie the like fortune as *Phalantus* did, he ſhould in like ſorte be anſwered: ſo as diuers of the valianteſt, partly of themſelues, partly at the inſtigation of *Baſilius*, attempted the combat with him: and according to euery ones humour, ſo were the cauſes of the challēge groūded: one laying treaſon to his charge; another preferring himſelfe in the worthines to ſerue *Philoclea*; a third, exalting ſome Ladies beautie beyond ether of the ſiſters; a fourth, laying diſgraces to Loue it ſelfe, naming it the bewitcher of the witt, the rebell to Reaſon, the betrayer of reſolution, the defiler of thoughts, the vnderminer of magnanimitie, the flatterer of vice, the ſlaue to weakeneſſe, the infection of youth, the madneſſe of age; the curſe of life, and reproch of deathe; a fifth, diſdayning to caſte at leſſe then at all, woulde make the cauſe of his quarrell the cauſers of loue, and proclayme his blaſphemies againſt womankinde; that namely that ſex 2

was the ouerſight of Nature, the diſgrace of reaſonablenes, the obſtinate cowards, the ſlaue-borne tyrants, the ſhops of vanities, the guilded wethercocks; in whō conſcience is but peeuiſhnes, chaſtitie waywardnes, & gratefulnes a miracle. But all theſe challenges (how wel ſo euer endited) were ſo well anſwered, that ſome by death taught others, though paſt learning themſelues; & ſome by yeelding gaue themſelues the lie for hauing blaſphemed; to the great griefe of *Baſilius*, ſo to ſee his Rebell preuaile, and in his own ſight to crowne himſelfe with deſerued honour.

3 Wherupon thirſting for reuenge, & elſe not hoping to preuaile, the beſt of his campe being already ouerthrowne; he ſent a meſſenger to *Argalus*, in whoſe approued courage and force, he had (and had cauſe) to haue great confidence, with a letter; requiring him, to take this quarrell in hand, from which he had hetherto ſpared him in reſpect of his late mariage. But now his honour, and (as he eſteemed it) felicitie ſtanding vpon it, he could no longer forbeare to chalenge of him his faithfull ſeruice.

4 The meſſenger made ſpeede, and found *Argalus* at a caſtle of his owne, ſitting in a parler with the faire *Parthenia*, he reading in a booke the ſtories of *Hercules*, ſhe by him, as to heare him reade; but while his eyes looked on the booke, ſhe looked on his eies, & ſometimes ſtaying him with ſome prety queſtion, not ſo much to be reſolued of the doubte; as to giue him occaſion to looke vpon her. A happy couple, he ioying in her, ſhe ioying in her ſelfe, but in her ſelfe, becauſe ſhe enioyed him: both encreaſing their riches by giuing to each other; each making one life double, becauſe they made a double life; one, where deſire neuer wanted ſatisfactiō,

nor

nor ſatisfaction neuer bred ſacietie; he ruling, becauſe ſhe would obey: or rather becauſe ſhe would obey, ſhe therein ruling.

But when the meſſenger came in with letters in his hand,& haſt in his countenance, though ſhe knew not what to feare, yet ſhe feared, becauſe ſhe knew not; but ſhe roſe, and went aſide, while he deliuered his letters and meſſage; yet a far of ſhe looked, now at the meſſenger,& then at her husband: the ſame feare, which made her loth to haue cauſe of feare, yet making her ſeeke cauſe to nouriſh her feare. And wel ſhe foũd there was ſome ſerious matter; for her husbands countenance figured ſome reſolution betweene lothneſſe and neceſſitie: and once his eie caſt vpon her, & finding hers vpon him, he bluſhed; & ſhe bluſhed, becauſe he bluſhed; and yet ſtreight grew paler, becauſe ſhe knew not why he had bluſhed. But when he had read, & heard, & diſpatched away the meſſenger (like a man in whom Honour could not be rocked on ſleepe by Affection) with promiſe quickly to follow; he came to *Parthenia*, and as ſorie as might be for parting, and yet more ſorie for her ſorrow, he gaue her the letter to reade. She with fearful ſlownes tooke it, and with fearefull quickneſſe read it; and hauing read it, *Ah* my *Argalus* (ſaid ſhe) and haue you made ſuch haſt to anſwere? and are you ſo ſoone reſolued to leaue me? But he diſcourſing vnto her, how much it imparted his honour (which ſince it was deare to him, he knew it would be deare vnto her) her reaſon ouerclowded with ſorow, ſuffered her not preſently to replie, but left the charge thereof to teares, and ſighes; which he not able to beare, left her alone, and went to giue order for his preſent departure.

By that time he was armde, and readie to go, ſhe had

recouered a little ſtrength of ſpirite againe, & cõming out, & ſeing him armed, & wanting nothing for his departure but her farewell, ſhe ran to him, tooke him by the arme, and kneeling downe without regard, who either heard her ſpeach, or ſaw her demeanour, My *Argalus*, my *Argalus* (ſaid ſhe) doo not thus forſake me. Remember, alas, Remember that I haue intereſt in you, which I will neuer yeeld ſhalbe thus aduentured. Your valour is already ſufficiently knowne: ſufficiently haue you already done for your country: ennow, ennow there are beſides you to looſe leſſe worthie liues. Woe is me, what ſhall become of me, if you thus abandon me? Then was it time for you to follow theſe aduentures, when you aduentured no body but your ſelfe, and were no bodies but your owne. But now pardon me, that now, or neuer, I claime mine owne; mine you are, & without me you can vndertake no dãger: & will you endãger *Parthenia*? *Parthenia* ſhalbe in the battle of your fight: *Parthenia* ſhall ſmart in your paine, & your blood muſt be bled by *Parthenia*. Deare *Parthenia* (ſaid he) this is the firſt time, that euer you reſiſted my will: I thanke you for it; but perſeuer not in it; & let not the teares of thoſe moſt beloued eies be a preſage vnto me of that, which you would not ſhould happen. I ſhal liue, doubte not: for ſo great a bleſſing, as you are, was not giuen vnto me, ſo ſoone to be depriued of it. Looke for me therefore ſhortly, and victorious; and prepare a ioyfull welcome, and I will wiſh for no other triumph. She anſwered not, but ſtood as it were thunder-ſtriken with amazement: for true Loue made obedience ſtande vp againſt all other paſſions: But when he tooke her in his armes, and ſought to printe his harte in her ſweete lippes, ſhe fell in a ſounde, ſo

as he was faine to leaue her to her Gentlewomen: and caried away by the tyrannie of Honour, though with manie a backe-caſt looke, and hartie grone, went to the campe. When vnderſtanding the notable victories of *Amphialus*, he thought to giue him ſome dayes reſpite of reſt, becauſe he woulde not haue his victorie diſgraced by the others wearineſſe. In which dayes, he ſought by all meanes (hauing leaue to parley with him) to diſſuade him from his enterpriſe: and then imparting his mind to *Baſilius*, becauſe he found *Amphialus* was inflexible, wrote his defie vnto him in this maner.

RIght famous *Amphialus*, if my perſuaſion in reaſon, 7
or praier in good wil, might preuaile with you, you ſhould by better meanes be like to obteine your deſire. You ſhoulde make many braue enemies become your faithful ſeruãts, & make your honor flie vp to the heauẽ, being caried vp by both the wings of valure & iuſtice; whereof now it wants the latter. But ſince my ſuite, nor counſel can get no place in you, diſdaine not to receiue a mortall chalenge, from a man ſo farre inferiour vnto you in vertue, as that I do not ſo much miſlike of the deed, as I haue the doer in admiration. Prepare therfore your ſelf, according to the noble maner you haue vſed, and think not lightly of neuer ſo weake an arme, which ſtrikes with the ſword of iuſtice.

To this quickely he receiued this anſwere.

MVch more famous *Argalus*, I, whom neuer threat- 8
nings could make afraid, am now terrified by your noble curteſie. For wel I knowe, from what height of vertue it doth proceed, and what cauſe I haue to doubt ſuch vertue bent to my ruine: but Loue, which iuſtifieth the vniuſtice you lay vnto me, dooth alſo animate me

againſt all daungers, ſince I come full of him by whom your ſelfe haue beene (if I be not deceiued) ſometimes conquered. I will therfore attend your appearaunce in the Ile, carying this aduantage with me, that as it ſhal be a ſingular honour if I get the victorie, ſo there can be no diſhonour in being ouercome by *Argalus*.

9 The chalenge thus denounced, and accepted, *Argalus* was armed in a white armour, which was guilded ouer with knots of womans haire, which came downe from the creſt of his head-peece, and ſpred it ſelfe in rich quãtitie ouer all his armour: his furniture was cut out into the faſhion of an Eagle, whereof the beake (made into a rich iewell) was faſtened to the ſaddle, the taile couered the crooper of the horſe, and the wings ſerued for trappers; which falling of ech ſide, as the horſe ſtirred, the bird ſeemed to flie. His pettrell and reines, were embrodered with feathers ſutable vnto it: vpon his right arme he ware a ſleeue, which his deare *Parthenia* had made for him, to be worne in a iuſtes, in the time that ſucceſſe was vngratefull to their well-deſerued loue: It was full of bleeding hartes, though neuer intended to any blooddie enterpriſe. In this ſhield (as his owne deuice) he had two Palme trees, neere one another, with a worde ſignifying, *In that ſort flouriſhing*. His horſe was of a firie ſorrell, with blacke feete, and blacke liſt on his back, who with open noſtrels breathed warre, before he could ſee an enemy: and now vp with one legge, and then with another, ſeemed to complain of Nature, that ſhe had made him any whit earthie.

10 But he had ſcarcely viewed the grounde of the Ilande, and conſidered the aduauntages (if any were) therof, before the Caſtel boat had deliuered *Amphialus*,

in

in al points prouided to giue a hard entertainmẽt. And then ſending ech to other their Squires in honourable maner, to knowe whether they ſhould attende any further ceremony; the trumpets ſounding, the horſes with ſmooth running, their ſtaues with vnſhaked motion, obediently performed their cholericke cõmandements. But when they drew nere, *Argalus*-his horſe being hot, preſt in with his head: which *Amphialus* perceiuing, knowing if he gaue him his ſide, it ſhould be to his diſaduauntage, preſt in alſo with him, ſo as both the horſes & men met ſhoulder to ſhoulder, ſo as the horſes (hurt as much with the ſtriking, as being ſtriken) tumbled downe to the earth, daungerouſly to their maiſter, but that they by ſtrength nimble, and by vſe skilfull, in the falling ſhunned the harme of the fall, and without more reſpite, drewe out their ſwordes with a gallant brauerie, eche ſtriuing to ſhewe himſelfe the leſſe endamaged, and to make knowne that they were glad, they had nowe nothing elſe to truſt to, but their owne vertue. True it is, that *Amphialus* was the ſooner vp; but *Argalus* had his ſworde out the ſooner: and then fell they to the cruelleſt combate, that any preſent eye had ſeene. Their ſwordes firſt, like Canons, battering downe the walles of their armour, making breaches almoſt in euerie place for troupes of woundes to enter. Among the reſt, *Argalus* gaue a great wound to *Amphialus*-his diſarmed face; though part of the force of it *Amphialus* warded vpon his ſhielde, and with-all (firſt caſting his eye vp to *Philocleas* Window, as if he had fetched his courage thence) feyning to entend the ſame ſort of blowes, turned his ſword, and with a mightie reuerſe, gaue a cruell wounde to the right

right arme of *Argalus*, the vnfaythfull armour yeelding to the ſwoordes ſtrong-guided ſharpeneſſe. But though the blood accuſed the hurt of *Argalus*, yet woulde he in no action of his confeſſe it: but keeping himſelfe in a lower warde, ſtoode watching with timely thruſtes to repaire his loſſe; which quickly he did. For *Amphialus* (following his fawning fortune) laid on ſo thicke vpon *Argalus*, that his ſhield had almoſt fallen peece-meale to the earth, when *Argalus* comming in with his right foote, and ſomething ſtowping to come vnder his armour, thruſt him into the belly daungerouſly, and mortally it would haue beene, but that with the blowe before, *Amphialus* had ouerthrowne himſelfe ſo, as he fell ſide-warde downe, and with falling ſaued himſelfe from ruine. The ſworde by that meanes ſlipping aſide, and not pearcing more deepely, *Argalus* ſeeing him fall, threatning with voyce and ſworde, bad him yeelde. But he ſtriuing without aunſwere to riſe, *Argalus* ſtrake with all his might vpon his head. But his hurte arme not able to maiſter ſo ſoande a force, let the ſwoorde fall ſo, as *Amphialus*, though aſtoniſhed with the blowe, could ariſe: which *Argalus* conſidering, ranne in to graſpe with him, and ſo cloſed together; falling ſo to the grounde, nowe one getting aboue, and then the other; at length, both wearie of ſo vnlouely embracements, with a diſſenting conſent gate vp, and went to their ſwordes: but happened eche of his enemies: where *Argalus* finding his foes ſworde garniſhed in his blood, his hart raſe with the ſame ſwoorde to reuenge it, and on that blade to allie their bloods together. But his minde was euill wayted-on by his lamed force, ſo as he receyued

ceyued ſtill more and more woundes, which made all his armour ſeeme to bluſh, that it had defended his maſter no better. But *Amphialus* perceiuing it, & waying the ſmall hatefulneſſe of their quarrell, with the worthineſſe of the Knight, deſired him to take pitie of himſelfe. But *Argalus*, the more repining, the more he founde himſelfe in diſaduauntage, filling his veynes with ſpite in ſteade of blood, and making courage ariſe againſt faintneſſe, (like a Candle, which a little before it goes out, giues then the greateſt blaze) ſo did he vnite all his force, that caſting away the little remnaunt of his ſhielde, and taking his ſwoorde in both handes, he ſtroke ſuch a notable blowe, that he cleft his ſhielde, armour, and arme almoſt to the bone.

But then *Amphialus* forgat all ceremonies, and with cruell blowes made more of his blood ſucceed the reſt; til his hand being ſtaied by his eare, his eare filled with a pitifull crie, the crie guided his ſight to an excellent faire Ladie, who came running as faſt as ſhe could, and yet becauſe ſhe coulde not as faſt as ſhe would, ſhe ſent her lamentable voyce before her: and being come, and being knowne to them both, to be the beautifull *Parthenia*, (who had that night dreamed ſhee ſawe her husbande in ſuch eſtate, as ſhe then founde him, which made her make ſuch haſte thither) they both maruailed. But *Parthenia* ranne betweene them (feare of loue making her forget the feare of Nature) and then fell downe at their feete, determining ſo to part them, till ſhe coulde get breathe to ſigh out her doolefull ſpeeches: and when her breath (which running had ſpent, and diſmayedneſſe made

11

made ſlowe to returne) had by ſobbes gotten into her ſorow-cloſed breaſt, for a while ſhe coulde ſay nothing, but, O wretched eyes of mine, O wailefull ſight, O day of darkeneſſe: at length turning her eyes (wherein ſorrowe ſwamme) to *Amphialus*, My Lorde (ſaide ſhe) it is ſaide you loue; in the power of that loue, I beſeech you to leaue of this combate, as euen your harte may finde comfort in his affection, euen for her ſake, I craue it: or if you be mortally determined, be ſo pitifull vnto me, as firſt to kill me, that I may not ſee the death of *Argalus*. *Amphialus* was aboute to haue aunſwered, when *Argalus*, vexed with his Fortune, but moſt vexed that ſhe ſhoulde ſee him in that fortune, Ah *Parthenia* (ſaide he) neuer till nowe vnwelcome vnto me, do you come to get my life by requeſt? And can not *Argalus* liue but by requeſt? Is it a life? With that he went aſide, for feare of hurting her, and woulde haue begunne the combate afreſh. But *Amphialus* not onely conſured by that which helde the Monarchie of his mind, but euen in his noble hart melting with compaſſion at ſo paſſionate a ſight, deſired him to withholde his handes, for that he ſhoulde ſtrike one, who ſought his fauour, and woulde not make reſiſtaunce. A notable example of the woonderfull effectes of Vertue, where the conquerour, ſought for friendſhip of the conquered, and the conquered woulde not pardon the conquerour: both indeede being of that minde to loue eche other for accepting, but not for giuing mercie, and neyther affected to ouer-liue a diſhonour: ſo that *Argalus* not ſo much ſtriuing with *Amphialus* (for if he had had him in the like ſorte,

in

in like ſort he would haue dealt with him) as labouring againſt his owne power (which he chiefly deſpiſed) ſet himſelfe forward, ſtretching his ſtrength to the vttermoſt. But the fire of that ſtrife, blowen with his inward rage, boyled out his bloud in ſuch aboundance, that he was driuen to reſt him vpon the pommel of his ſword: and then each thing beginning to turne rounde in the daunce of Death before his eyes, his ſight both dazled, and dimmed, till (thinking to ſit downe) he fell in a ſowne. *Parthenia*, and *Amphialus* both haſtely went vnto him: *Amphialus* tooke of his helmet, and *Parthenia* laid his head in her lap, tearing of her linnen ſleeues & partlet, to ſerue about his wounds; to bind which, ſhe tooke of her hair-lace, and would haue cut of her faire haire herſelfe, but that the ſquires and iudges came in with fitter things for the purpoſe: while ſhe bewayled her ſelfe with ſo lamentable ſweetnes, as was inough to haue taught ſorrow to the gladdeſt thoughts, and haue engraued it in the mindes of hardeſt mettall.

O *Parthenia*, no more *Parthenia* (ſaid ſhe) What art 12
thou? what ſeeſt thou? how is thy bliſſe in a moment fallen? how art thou, euen-now before all Ladies the example of perfect happines, and now the gaſing-ſtock of endles miſerie? O God, what hath bene my deſert to be thus puniſhed? or if ſuch haue bene my deſert, why was I not in my ſelfe puniſhed? O wandring life, to what wildernes wouldſt thou lead one? But Sorow, I hope thou art ſharp inough to ſaue my labour from other remedies. *Argalus*, *Argalus*, I will folow thee, I wil folow thee.

But with that *Argalus* came out of his ſowne, and
lifting vp his languiſhing eyes (which a painefull reſt, 13
and

and iron ſleepe did ſeeke to lock vp) ſeeing her, in whō (euen dying) he liued, and him ſelfe ſeated in ſo beloued a place, it ſeemed a little cheerefull bloud came vp to his cheekes, like a burning cole, almoſt dead, if ſome breath a little reuiue it: & forcing vp (the beſt he could) his feeble voice, My deare, my deare, my better halfe (ſaid he) I finde I muſt now leaue thee: and by that ſweet hand, and faire eyes of thine I ſweare, that Death bringes nothing with it to grieue me, but that I muſt leaue thee, and cannot remaine to anſwere part of thy infinit deſerts, with being ſome comfort vnto thee. But ſince ſo it pleaſeth him, whoſe wiſdome and goodneſſe guideth all, put thy confidence in him, and one day we ſhall bleſſedly meet againe, neuer to depart: meane while liue happily, deare *Parthenia*, and I perſwade my ſelfe, it will increaſe the bleſſednes of my ſoule, ſo to ſee thee. Loue well the remembrance of thy louing, and truely louing, *Argalus*: and let not (with that worde he ſighed) this diſgrace of mine, make thee one day thinke, thou hadſt an vnwoorthie huſband. They could ſcarcely vnderſtand the laſt wordes: for Death began to ſeaze him ſelfe of his harte, neither coulde *Parthenia* make anſwere, ſo full was her breaſt of anguiſh. But while the other ſought to ſtanch his remediles wounds, ſhe with her kiſſes made him happie: for his laſt breath was deliuered into her mouth.

14 But when indeede ſhe found his ghoſt was gone, then Sorrowe loſt the witte of vtterance, and grewe ragefull, and madde, ſo that ſhe tare her beautifull face, and rent her haire, as though they could ſerue for nothing, ſince *Argalus* was gone; till *Amphialus* (ſo moued with pittie of that ſight, as that he honoured his ad-

aduerſaries death with teares) cauſed her (with the helpe of her women that came with her) partelie by force, to be conueyed into boate, with the dead body of *Argalus*, from which ſhe could not depart. And being come of the other ſide, there ſhe was receaued by *Baſilus* him ſelfe, with all the funerall pompe of militarie diſcipline, trayling all their Enſignes vpon the ground, making his warlike inſtruments ſound dolefull notes, and *Baſilius* (with comfort in his mouth, and woe in his face) ſought to perſwade ſome eaſe into *Parthenias* minde: but all was as eaſefull to her, as the handling of ſore woundes: all the honour done, being to her but the triumph of her ruine, ſhe finding no comfort, but in deſperate yeelding to Sorrow: and rather determined to hate her ſelfe, if euer ſhe ſhould finde eaſe thereof. And well might ſhe heare as ſhe paſt through the Campe, the great prayſes ſpoken of her husbande, which all were recordes of her loſſe. But the more excellent he was (being indeede accounted ſeconde to none in all Greece) the more did the breath of thoſe praiſes, beare vp the winges of *Amphialus*-his fame: to whom yet (ſuch was his caſe) that Trophe vpon Trophe, ſtill did but builde vp the monumẽt of his thraldome; he euer finding himſelfe in ſuch fauour of *Philoclea*, that ſhe was moſt abſent, when he was preſent with her; and euer ſorrieſt, when he had beſt ſucceſſe: which would haue made him renounce all comfort, but that his mother, with diuerſity of deuiſes, kept vp his hart.

But while he allayed thus his outward glorie, with inward diſcomfort, he was like to haue bene ouertaken with

with a notable treaſon, the beginning wherof (though meerely ridiculous) had like to haue brought forth vnto him a weeping effect.

CHAP. 13.

[1] Dametas put in harte [2] to defie Clinias. *[3] Clinias out of harte to ſee the vie. [4] Dametas brauerie, adoubements, and impreſe. [5] Clinias drawne [6] to anſwere him. [7] Their paſsions in comming to the field. [8] Their actions in it, not ſo doubty, as their fortune doubtfull. [9] Clinias yeelding to triumphant* Dametas.

1 AMong other that attended *Baſilius* in this expedition, *Dametas* was one; whether to be preſent with him, or abſent from *Miſo*: once, certaine it was without any minde to make his ſworde curſed by any widow. Nowe, being in the campe, while each talke ſeemed iniurious, which did not acknowledge ſome duety to the fame of *Amphialus*, it fell out ſometimes in communication, that as the ſpeech of heauen doth often beget the mention of hell, ſo the admirable prowes of *Amphialus* (by a cõtrarie) brought forth the remembrance of the cowardiſe of *Clinias*: in ſo much, as it grew almoſt to a prouerb, *As very a cowarde, as Clinias*. Deſcribing him in ſuch ſort, that in the end, *Dametas* began to thinke with himſelfe, that if he made a chalenge vnto him, he would neuer anſwere it; and that then he ſhould greatly encreaſe the fauourable conceite of *Baſilius*. This fancie of his he vttered to a young

a young Gentleman, that waited vpon *Philanax*, in whoſe friendſhip he had eſpeciall cõfidence, becauſe he haunted his company, laughing often merely at his ſpeeches, and not a little extolling the goodly *dotes* of *Mopſa*. The young Gentleman as glad, as if he had found a Hare ſitting, egd him on, breaking the matter with *Philanax*, and then (for feare the humour ſhould quayle in him) wrote a challenge him ſelfe for *Damætas*, and brought it to him. But when *Damætas* read it, putting his head on his ſhoulder, and ſomewhat ſmiling; he ſaid, it was prettie indeed; but that it had not a loftie ſtile enough: and ſo would needes indite it in this ſort.

O Clinias, *thou* Clinias, *the wickedeſt worme that euer went vpon two legges; the very fritter of fraude, and ſeething pot of iniquitie*: *I* Damætas, *chiefe gouernour of all the royall cattell, and alſo of* Pamela (*whom thy Maiſter moſt perniciouſly hath ſuggeſted out of my dominion*) *doo defie thee, in a mortall affray from the bodkin to the pike vpwarde. Which if thou dooſt preſume to take in hande, I will out of that ſuperfluous bodie of thine make thy ſoule to be euacuated.* 2

The young Gentleman ſeemed dumbe-ſtriken with admiration, and preſently tooke vpon him to be the bearer thereof, while the heate of the fit laſted: and hauing gotten leaue of *Baſilius* (euery one helping on, to eaſe his minde ouercharged with melancholy) he went into the towne according to the manner before time vſed, and in the preſence of *Amphialus* deliuered this letter to *Clinias*; deſiring to haue an anſwere, which 3

might be fit for his reputation. *Clinias* opened it, and read it; and in the reading, his bloud not daring to be in so daungerous a place, went out of his face, and hid it selfe more inwardly: and his very wordes (as if they were afraid of blowes) came very slowly out of his mouth: but, aswell as his painting breath would vtter it, he bad him tell the lowte that sent him, that he disdained to haue any thing to doo with him. But *Amphialus*, perceauing the matter, tooke him aside, and very earnestly dealt with him not to shame himselfe; *Amphialus* not onely desirous to bring it to passe to make some sport to *Philoclea*, but not being able to perswade with him, *Amphialus* licenced the Gentleman, telling him, by the next morning he should haue answere.

4 The yong Gentlemã (sory he had sped no better) returned to *Dametas*, who had fetched many a sower-breathed sigh, for fear *Clinias* would accept the chalẽge. But whẽ he perceiued by his trusty messenger, that this delay was in effect a denial, there being no dispositiõ in him to accept it; then lo, *Dametas* began to speake his lowd voice, to looke big, to march vp & down, & in his march to lift his legs higher thẽ he was wont, swearing by no meane deuotiõs, that the wals should not keepe the coward frõ him, but he would fetch him out of his connie-berrie: & then was hotter then euer to prouide himselfe of horse & armour, saying, he would go to the Iland brauely addoubed, & shew himself to his charge *Pamela*. To this purpose many willing hãds were about him, letting him haue reynes, pettrell, with the rest of the furniture, and very braue bases; but all comming from diuers houses, nether in coulour or fashion, shewing any kinred one with another; but that liked *Dame-*

tas

tas the better: for that he thought would argue, that he was maister of many braue furnitures. Then gaue he order to a painter for his deuice; which was, a plowe with the oxen lewsed from it, a sword with a great many armes and legges cut of; and lastly a great armie of pen and inke-hornes, and bookes. Nether did he sticke to tell the secrete of his intent, which was, that he had lefte of the plowe, to doo such bloudy deedes with his swoorde, as many inkehornes and bookes should be employed about the historifying of them: and being asked, why he set no worde vnto it, he said, that was indeede like the painter, that sayeth in his picture, Here is the dog, and here is the Hare: & with that he laughed so perfectly, as was great consolation to the beholders. Yet remembring, that *Miso* would not take it well at his returne, if he forgat his dutie to her, he caused about in a border to be written:

Miso *mine own pigsnie, thou shalt heare news o'* Damætas.

Thus all things being condignely ordered, with an ill fauoured impatiencie he waited, vntil the next morning, that he might make a muster of him selfe in the Iland; often asking them that very diligently wayted vpon him, whether it were not pittie, that such a coward, as *Clinias*, should set his runaway feete vpon the face of the earth?

But as he was by diuers principal yong Gentlemen, to his no small glory, lifted vp on horsebacke, comes me a page of *Amphialus*, who with humble smiling reuerence deliuered a letter vnto him from *Clinias*: whom *Amphialus* had brought to this, first with perswasions (that for certaine, if he did accept the combat,

Damætas would neuer dare to appeare, and that then the honour ſhould be his) but principally threatning him, that if he refuſed it, he would turne him out of the towne to be put to death for a traitour by *Baſilius*: ſo as the preſent feare (euer to a coward moſt terrible) of being turned out of the towne, made him, though full vnwillingly, vndertake the other feare, wherein he had ſome ſhewe of hope, that *Damætas* might hap either to be ſick, or not to haue the courage to performe the matter. But when *Damætas* heard the name of *Clinias*, very aptly ſuſpecting what the matter might be, he bad the page carry backe his letter, like a naughty boy as he was: for he was in no humour, he tolde him, of reading letters. But *Damætas*-his friēd, firſt perſuading him, that for certaine it was ſome ſubmiſſion, tooke vpon him ſo much boldneſſe, as to open his letter, and to reade it alowd in this ſort.

6 FIlthy driuell, *vnworthy to haue thy name ſet in any letter by a ſouldiers hande written: could thy wretched harte thinke it was timorouſneſſe, that made* Clinias *ſuſpende a while his anſwere? No caitiffe, no: it was but as a Ramme, which goes backe to returne with the greater force. Know therefore that thou ſhalt no ſooner appeare (appeare now if thou dareſt) I ſay thou ſhalt no ſooner appeare in the Ilande (O happy thou, if thou doo not appeare) but that I will come vpon thee withall my force; and cut thee in pieces (marke, what I ſaie) ioynte after ioynte, to the eternall terrour of all preſumptuous villaynes. Therefore looke what thou dooſt: for I tell thee, horrible ſmarte, and paine ſhalbe thy lot, if thou wilt needes be ſo fooliſh (I hauing giuen thee no ſuch cauſe) as to meete with me.*

Theſe

Theſe terrible wordes *Clinias* vſed, hoping they 7
would giue a cooling to the heate of *Dametas*-his courage: and ſo indeede they did, that he did grone to heare the thundring of thoſe threatnings. And when the Gentleman had ended the reading of them, *Dametas* tolde them, that in his opinion he thought his anſwere came too late, and that therefore he might very well go, and diſarme him ſelfe: eſpecially conſidering, the other had in curteous maner warned him not to come. But they (hauing him now on horſebacke) led him vnto the ferrie, and ſo into the Iland; the claſhing of his owne armour ſtriking miſerable feare into him, and in his minde thinking greate vnkindneſſe in his friende, that he had brought him to a matter ſo contrarie to his complexion. There ſtayed he but a little (the Gentlemen that came with him teaching him how to vſe his ſworde and launce, while he caſt his eye about, to ſee which way he might runne away, curſing all Ilands in being euill ſcituated) when *Clinias* with a braue ſounde of trumpets landed at the other ende: who came all the way debating with himſelfe, what he had deſerued of *Amphialus* to driue him to thoſe inconueniences. Sometimes his witte made him bethinke him ſelfe what was beſte to be done: but feare did ſo corrupt his witt, that whatſoeuer he thought was beſt, he ſtill found daunger therein; fearefulneſſe (contrarie to all other vices) making him thinke the better of another, the worſe he found him ſelfe; rather imagining in him ſelfe, what wordes he would vſe (if he were ouercome) to get his life of *Dametas*, then how to ouercome, whereof he could thinke with no patience. But oftentimes looking to the

Earth pittifully complayning, that a man of ſuch ſufficiencie (as he thought him ſelfe) ſhoulde in his beſt yeares be ſwallowed vp by ſo baſe an element. Faine he would haue prayed, but he had not harte inough to haue confidence in praier; the glittering of the armour, and ſounding of the trumpets giuing ſuch an aſſault to the weake-breache of his falſe ſenſes, that he grewe from the degree of feare to an amazement, not almoſt to know what he did; till two iudges (choſen for the purpoſe) making the trumpets ceaſe, and taking the oth of thoſe champions, that they came without guile or witchcraft, ſet them at wonted diſtaunce; one from the other.

8 Then the trumpets ſounding, *Damætas*-his horſe (vſed to ſuch cauſes) when he thought leſt of the matter, ſtarted out ſo luſtely, that *Damætas* was iogde back with head, and bodie, and pulling withall his bridle-hande, the horſe (that was tender of mouth) made halfe a ſtop, and fell to bounding, ſo that *Damætas* threw away his launce, and with both his hands held by the pummell: the horſe, halfe running, halfe leaping, till he met with *Clinias*: who fearing he ſhould miſſe his reſte, had put his ſtaffe therein before he began his careere: neither would he then haue begun, but that at the trumpets warning, one (that ſtood behinde) ſtrake on his horſe, who running ſwiftly, the winde tooke ſuch holde of his ſtaffe, that it croſt quite ouer his breaſt, and in that ſorte gaue a flat baſtonado to *Damætas*: who, halfe out of his ſadle, went neere to his olde occupation of digging the earth, but with the creſte of his helmet. *Clinias* when he was paſte him, not knowing what he had done, but fearing leſt *Damætas* were at his backe,

turned

turned with a wide turne; & seeing him on the ground, he thought then was his time, or neuer, to treade him vnder his horses feete; & withall (if he could) hurt him with his launce, which had not broken, the encounter was so easie. But putting forth his horse, what with the falling of the staffe to low before the legs of the horse, & the cõming vpon *Damætas*, who was then scrãbling vp, the horse fell ouer & ouer, and lay vpon *Clinias*. Which *Damætas* (who was gotten vp) perceiuing, drew out his sword, prying which way he might best come to kil *Clinias* behind. But the horse that lay vpon him, kept such a pawing with his feet, that *Damætas* durst not approch, but verie leysurely; so as the horse (being lustie) gat vp, and withall fell to strike, and leape, that *Damætas* started vp a good way, and gaue *Clinias* time to rise, but so bruised in bodie, and broken in hart, that he meant to yeeld himselfe to mercie: and with that intent drew out his sworde, entending when he came nearer, to present the pommell of it to *Damætas*. But *Damætas*, when he sawe him come with his sword drawne, nothing conceiuing of any such intent, went backe as fast as his backe and heeles woulde leade him. But as *Clinias* founde that, he beganne to thinke a possibilitie in the victorie, and therefore followed with the cruell haste of a preuailing cowarde; laying vpon *Damætas*, who did nothing but crie out to him to holde his hand: sometimes that he was dead, sometimes that he woulde complaine to *Basilius*: but still bare the blowes vngratefully, going backe, till at length he came into the water with one of his feete.

But then a new feare of drowning tooke him, so that 9
not daring to go back, nor to deliberat (the blows stil so

lighted on him) nor to yeelde (becauſe of the cruell threatnings of *Clinias*) feare being come to the extremitie, fell to a madneſſe of deſpaire: ſo that (winking as hard as euer he could) he began to deale ſome blowes, and his arme (being vſed to a flaile in his youth) laid thē on ſo thick, that *Clinias* now began with lamētable eies to ſee his owne blood come out in many places, and before he had loſt halfe an ounce, finding in himſelfe that he fainted, cried out aloud to *Damætas*, that he yeelded. Throw away thy ſword then (ſaid *Damætas*) and I will ſaue thee; but ſtill laying on, as faſt as he could. *Clinias* ſtraight obeyed, and humbly craued mercie, telling him, his ſworde was gone. Then *Damætas* firſt opened his eyes, and ſeeing him indeed vnweaponed, made him ſtande a good way off from it; and then willed him to lie downe vpon the earth as flat as he could. *Clinias* obeyed; and *Damætas* (who neuer could thinke himſelfe ſafe, till *Clinias* were deade) began to thinke with himſelfe, that if he ſtrake at him with his ſworde, if he did not kill him at the firſt blowe, that then *Clinias* might happe to ariſe, and reuenge himſelfe. Therefore he thought beſt to kneele downe vpon him, and with a great whittle he had (hauing diſarmed his heade) to cut his throate, which he had vſed ſo with Calues, as he had no ſmall dexteritie in it. But while he ſought for his Knife, which vnder his armour he coulde not well finde out, and that *Clinias* lay with ſo ſheepiſh a countenaunce, as if he would haue beene glad to haue his throate cut for feare of more paine, the Iudges came in, and tooke *Damætas* from off him, telling him he did againſt the lawe of Armes, hauing promiſed life, if he threwe away his ſworde. *Damætas*

was

was loath to consent, till they sware, they woulde not suffer him to fight any more, when he was vp: and then more forced, then perswaded, he let him rise, crowing ouer him, and warning him to take heede how he dealt any more with any that came of his fathers kinred. But thus this *combate of cowardes* being finished, *Dametas* was with much mirth and melodie receiued into the campe as victorious, neuer a Page there failing to waite vpon this Triumph.

CHAP. 14.

[1]Clinias *a slie traitour.* [2] Artesia *his malcontent accomplice.* [3] Zelmanes *passions.* [4] *Her practise with* Artesia. [5] *The complot reuealed to the disliking sisters,* [6] *bewrayed by* Pamela.

BVT *Clinias*, though he wanted hart to preuent shame, yet he wanted not witte to feele shame; not so much repining at it for the abhorring of shame, as for the discommodities, that to them that are shamed, ensue. For well he deemed, it would be a great barre to practize, and a pulling on of iniuries, when men needed not care, how they vsed him. Insomuch, that *Clinias* (finding himselfe the scorning-stocke of euery companie) fell with repining to hate the cause thereof; & hate in a cowards hart, could set it selfe no other limites, but death. Which purpose was well egged on by representing vnto himselfe, what daunger he lately was in; 1

in; which ſtill kept no leſſe ougly figure in his minde, then when it was preſent: and quickly (euen in his diſſembling countenance) might be diſcerned a concealed grudge. For though he forced in himſelfe a farre more diligent officiouſneſſe towarde *Amphialus*, then euer before, yet a leering eye vpon the one ſide at him, a countenance ſtill framed to ſmiling before him (how little cauſe ſoeuer there was of ſmiling) and grombling behind him, at any of his commaundements, with an vncertaine manner of behauiour: his words comming out, though full of flatterie, yet ſlowly, and hoarcely pronounced, might well haue blazed, what armes his falſe hart bare. But deſpiſed, becauſe of his cowardlineſſe, and not marked, becauſe deſpiſed, he had the freer ſcope of practize. Which he did the more deſperately enter into, becauſe the dayly dangers *Amphialus* did ſubmit himſelfe into, made *Clinias* aſſuredly looke for his ouerthrow, and for his owne conſequently, if he did not redeme his former treaſon to *Baſilius*, with a more treaſonable falſhood toward *Amphialus*.

2 His chiefe care therefore was, to find out among all ſorts of *Amphialus*, whom either like feare, tediouſnes of the ſiege, or diſcōtentment of ſome vnſatisfied ambitiō would make apt to dig in the ſame mine that he did: & ſome alredy of welthy weary folks, & vnconſtāt youths (who had not found ſuch ſudden ſucceſſe as they had promiſed thēſelues) he had made ſtoupe to the lure. But of none he made ſo good account as of *Arteſia*, ſiſter to the late ſlain *Iſmenus*, & the chiefe of ſix maids, who had trained out the Princeſſes to their banket of miſerie: ſo much did the ſharpnes of her wit counteruaile (as he thought) any other defects of her ſex: for ſhe had vndertaken

dertaken that dangerous practiſe by the perſuaſion of *Cecropia*; who aſſured her that the two princeſſes ſhould be made away; & thē *Amphialus* wold marry her: which ſhe was the apter to beleue, by ſome falſe perſuaſiō her glas had giuē her of her own incōparable excellencies, & by the great fauor ſhe knew he bare to her brother *Iſmenus*, which (like a ſelf-flattering womā) ſhe conceiued was done for her ſake. But when ſhe had atchieued her attempt, & that ſhe found the Princeſſes were ſo far frō their intended death, as that the one of them was like to be her ſouereigne, & that neither her ſeruice had woon of *Amphialus* much more thē ordinary fauor, nor her ouer-large offring herſelf to a mind otherwiſe owed, had obteined a loked-for acceptatiō; diſdain to be diſdained ſpite of a fruſtrate hope, & perchauce vnquenched luſt-growne rage, made her vnquiet thoughts find no other reſt, but malice: which was increaſed by the death of her brother, whō ſhe iudged neither ſuccoured againſt *Philanax*, nor reuēged vpon *Philanax*. But all theſe coles were wel blowne by the cōpany ſhe eſpecially kept with *Zelmane*, all this time of her impriſonment. For finding her preſence vncheerfull to the mourning *Philoclea*, and contemned of the hie-harted *Pamela*, ſhe ſpent her time moſt with *Zelmane*. Who though at the firſt hardly broking the inſtrument of their miſerie, learning cunning in the ſchoole of aduerſitie, in time framed her ſelfe to yeeld her acceptable intertainment.

For *Zelmane*, when ſhe had by that vnexpected miſ- 3
chief her bodie impriſoned, her valure ouermaſtred, her wit beguiled, her deſires barred, her loue eclipſed; aſſured of euill, fearing worſe, able to knowe *Philocleas* miſfortune, and not able to ſuccour her, ſhe was a great while, before the greatnes of her hart could deſcend to

ſorowe,

ſorow, but rather roſe boyling vp in ſpight and diſdain; Reaſon hardly making Courage beleeue, that it was diſtreſſed: but as if the walles would be afraid of her, ſo woulde her lookes ſhoote out threatning vpon them. But the fetters of ſeruitude (growing heauier with wearing) made her feele her caſe, and the little preuailing of repining: and then griefe gat ſeate in her ſoftned minde, making ſweeteneſſe of paſſed comfortes by due title claime teares of preſent diſcomfort: and ſince her fortune made her able to helpe as litle as any bodie, yet to be able to waile as much as any bodie; ſolitarie Sorrowe, with a continuall circle in her ſelfe, going out at her owne mouth, to come in againe at her owne eares. Then was the name of *Philoclea* graued in the glas windowes, and by the fooliſh idolatrie of affection, no ſooner written, thē adored; & no ſooner adored, thē pitied: al the wōted praiſes (ſhe was wont to giue vnto her) being now but figures of rethorick to amplifie the iniuries of misfortune; againſt which being alone, ſhe woulde often make inuectiue declamations, methodized onely by raging ſorow.

4 But whē *Arteſia* did inſinuat herſelf into her acquaintance, ſhe gaue the gouernment of her courage to wit, & was cōtent to familiarize herſelfe with her: ſo much the rather, as that ſhe perceiued in her certaine flawes of il-cōcealed diſcontentmēt. Inſomuch that whē *Zelmane* would ſweetē her mouth with the praiſes of the ſiſters, eſpecially ſetting forth their noble gratefulnes, in neuer forgetting wel-intended ſeruices, & inuoking the iuſtice of the gods, not to ſuffer ſuch treaſures to be wrōgfully hiddē, & ſomtimes with a kind vnkindnes, charging *Arteſia* that ſhe had ben abuſed to abuſe ſo worthy perſōs:

Arteſia

Arteſia (though falſly) wold proteſt, that ſhe had bin beguiled in it, neuer meaning other matter thē recreatiō: & yet withall (by alleaging how vngratefully ſhe was dealt with) it was eaſie to be ſeene, it was the vnrewarding, & not the euil employing her ſeruice, which griēued her. But *Zelmane* (vſing her own bias to bowle neer the miſtreſſe of her owne thoughtes) was content to lende her beleefe, and withall, to magnifie her deſert, if willingly ſhe would deliuer, whom vnwillingly ſhe had impriſoned; leauing no argument which might tickle ambition, or flatter reuenge. So that *Arteſia*, (puſht forward by *Clinias*, and drawne onward by *Zelmane*) bound her ſelfe to that practiſe; wherin *Zelmane* (for her part) deſired no more, but to haue armour and weapons brought into her chamber, not doubting, therewith to perfourm any thing, how impoſſible ſoeuer, which lōnging Loue can perſwade, and inuincible Valour dare promiſe.

But *Clinias* (whoſe faith could neuer comprehende the miſteries of Courage) perſwaded *Arteſia*, while he by corruptiō had drawn the guard of one gate, to open it (when he would appoint the time) to the enemie: that ſhe ſhould impoyſon *Amphialus*, which ſhe might the eaſier do, becauſe ſhe her ſelfe had vſed to make the broaths, when *Amphialus* (either wearied or wounded) did vſe ſuch diet. And al things alredy were ready to be put in executiō, when they thought beſt to breake the matter with the two excellent ſiſters, not doubting of their cōſent in a thing ſo behoofefull to thēſelues: their reaſons being, that the Princeſſes knowing their ſeruice, might be ſure to preſerue them from the fury of the entring ſouldiers: whereof *Clinias* (euen ſo) could ſcarcely

scarcely be sufficiently certaine: and withall, making them priuie to their action, to binde them afterwardes to acknowledg gratefulnes towards them. They went therefore at one time, when they knewe them to be alone, *Clinias* to *Philoclea*, and *Artesia* to *Pamela*: and *Clinias*, with no fewe words, did set forth what an exploite was intended for her seruice. But *Philoclea* (in whose cleere minde treason could finde no hiding place) told him, that she would be glad, if he could perswade her cosin to deliuer her, and that she would neuer forgett his seruice therin: but that she desired him to lay down any such way of mischiefe, for that (for her part) she would rather yeeld to perpetuall imprisonment, then consent to the destroying her cosin, who (she knewe) loued her, though wronged her. This vnlooked-for answere amazed *Clinias*, so that he had no other remedie in his minde, but to kneele downe to *Philoclea*, and beseech her to keep it secrete, considering that the intention was for her seruice: and vowing (since she misliked it) to proceed no further therin. She comforted him with promise of silence, which she perfourmed.

6 But that little auayled: for *Artesia* hauing in like sort opened this deuice to *Pamela*, she (in whose mind Vertue gouerned with the scepter of Knowledge) hating so horrible a wickednes, and streight iudging what was fitte to doo, Wicked woman (said she) whose vnrepenting harte can find no way to amend treason, but by treason: nowe the time is come, that thy wicked wiles haue caught thy selfe in thine owne nette: as for me, let the Gods dispose of me as shall please them; but sure it shall be no such way, nor way-leader, by which I will come to libertie. This she spake something with a louder

lowder voice then she was woont to vse, so as *Cecropia* heard the noise; who was (sooner then *Artesia* imagined she would) come vp, to bring *Pamela* to a window, where she might see a notable skirmish happened in the Campe, as she thought, among themselues: and being a cunning fisher in troubled waters, streight found by their voices and gestures, there was some matter of consequence, which she desired *Pamela* to tell her. Aske of her (said *Pamela*) & learne to know, that who do falshoode to their superiours, teach falshoode to their inferiours. More she would not say. But *Cecropia* taking away the each-way guiltie *Artesia*, with feare of torture, gat of her the whole practise: so as *Zelmane* was the more closely imprisoned, and *Clinias* (with the rest of his corrupted mates, according to their merites) executed: For, as for *Artesia*, she was but lockt vp in her chamber, *Amphialus* not consenting (for the loue he bare *Ismenus*) that further punishment should be laide vpon her.

CHAP. 15.

' Proude Anaxius *breaketh through the besiegers. ' His welcome by* Amphialus. *' The Musicke, ' and loue-song made to* Philoclea. *' The sallie of* Anaxius *and his on the* Basilians, *' backt by* Amphialus, *' beaten backe by three vnknowen Knightes. ' The Retraite of both sides.*

But

1 BVt the noyſe they hearde in the campe, was occaſioned by the famous Prince *Anaxius*, nephewe to the Giant *Euardes* whom *Pyrocles* ſlew: A Prince, of body exceedingly ſtrong; in armes ſo ſkilfull and fortunate, as no man was thought to excel him; of courage that knew not how to feare: partes worthie praiſe, if they had not bene guyded by pride, and followed by vniuſtice. For, by a ſtrange compoſition of minde, there was no man more tenderly ſenſible in any thing offred to himſelfe, which in the fartheſt-ſette conſtruction, might be wreſted to the name of wrōg; no man, that in his own actions could worſe diſtinguiſh betwene Valour and Violence: So proud, as he could not abſtaine from a *Thraſo*-like boaſting, and yet (ſo vnluckie a lodging his vertues had gotten) he would neuer boaſt more then he would accompliſh: falſly accounting an vnflexible anger, a couragious conſtancie: eſteeming feare, and aſtoniſhment, righter cauſes of admiration, then Loue and Honour. This man had foure ſundrie times fought with *Amphialus*, but *Mars* had bene ſo vnpartiall an arbiter, that neither ſide gate aduauntage of the other. But in the end it hapned, that *Anaxius* found *Amphialus* (vnknowen) in a great danger, and ſaued his life: wherupon (louing his owne benefite) began to fauour him, ſo much the more, as, thinking ſo well of himſelfe, he coulde not chooſe but like him, whom he founde a match for himſelfe: which at laſt grewe to as much friendſhip towardes him, as could by a proud harte be con-

conceiued. So as in this trauaile (ſeeking *Pyrocles* to be reuenged of his vncles death) hearing of this ſiege, neuer taking paines to examine the quarrell (like a man whoſe will was his God, and his hand his lawe) taking with him his two brothers (men accounted little inferiour to him ſelfe in martiall matters) and two hundred choſen horſemen (with whome he thought him ſelfe able to conquere the world) yet commaunding the reſt of his forces to follow, he him ſelfe vpon ſuch an vnexpected ſuddaineneſſe entred in vpon the backe of *Baſilius*, that many with great vnkindneſſe tooke their death, not knowing why, nor how they were ſo murdred. There, if euer, did he make knowne the wonderfulnes of his force. But the valiant, & faithfull *Philanax*, with wel gouerned ſpeed made ſuch head againſt him, as would haue ſhewed, how ſoone Courage falles in the ditch which hath not the eie of Wiſdome: but that *Amphialus* at the ſame time iſſued out, & winning with an abondaunce of courage one of the ſconſes, which *Baſilius* had builded, made waie for his friend *Anaxius* with great loſſe of both ſides, but eſpecially of the *Baſilians*; ſuch notable monuments had thoſe two ſwords eſpecially lefte of their Maiſters redoubted worthyneſſe.

There with the reſpect fit to his eſtate, the honour dewe to his worthineſſe, and the kindneſſe which accompanies friendſhip (made faſt by enterchaunged benefites) did *Amphialus* enforce him ſelfe (as much as in a beſieged towne he could) to make *Anaxius* know, that his ſuccour was not ſo needefull, as his preſence gratefull. For cauſing the ſtreates and houſes of the towne to witnes his welcome (making both ſouldiers

and Magiſtrates in their countenaunces to ſhewe their gladneſſe of him) he led him to his mother, whom he beſought to entertain him with no leſſe loue and kindneſſe, then as one, who once had ſaued her ſonnes life, and now came to ſaue both life and honour. Tuſh (ſaid *Anaxius*, ſpeaking alowde, looking vpon his brothers) I am onely ſorie there are not halfe a dozen Kinges more about you: that what *Anaxius* can doo, might be the better manifeſted. His brothers ſmiled, as though he had ouer-modeſtly ſpoken farre vnderneath the pitch of his power. Then was he diſarmed at the earneſt requeſt of *Amphialus*: for *Anaxius* boiled with deſire to iſſue out vppon the enemies, perſwading himſelfe, that the Sunne ſhoulde not be ſette, before he had ouerthrowne them. And hauing repoſed himſelfe, *Amphialus* asked him, whether he woulde viſite the yong Princeſſes. But *Anaxius* whiſpered him in the eare: In trueth (ſaide he) deare friende *Amphialus*, though I am none of thoſe, that loue to ſpeake of themſelues, I neuer came yet in companie of Ladies, but that they fell in loue with me. And I that in my hart ſcorne them as a peeuiſh paltrie ſexe, not woorthie to communicate with my vertues, would not do you the wrong: ſince (as I heare) you doo debaſe your ſelfe ſo much as to affect them. The curteous *Amphialus* could haue beene angrie with him for thoſe wordes; but knowing his humour, ſuffered him to daunce to his owne muſicke: and gaue himſelfe to entertaine both him and his brothers, with as cheerefull a maner, as coulde iſſue from a minde whome vnluckie loue had filled with melancholie. For to *Anaxius* he yeelded the direction of all. He gaue

the

the watchwoorde, and if any grace were graunted, the meanes were to be made to *Anaxius*. And that night when ſupper was ended, wherein *Amphialus* woulde needes himſelfe waite vpon him, he cauſed in Boates vpon the Lake an excellent muſicke to be ordered: which, though *Anaxius* might conceiue was for his honour, yet indeede he was but the Bricke-wall to conuey it to the eares of the beloued *Philoclea*.

The muſicke was of Cornets, whereof one aunſwe- 3
ring the other, with a ſweete emulation, ſtriuing for the glorie of muſicke, and ſtriking vpon the ſmooth face of the quiet Lake, was then deliuered vp to the caſtell walles, which with a proude reuerberation, ſpreading it into the aire; it ſeemed before the harmonie came to the eare, that it had enriched it ſelfe in trauaile, the nature of thoſe places adding melodie to that melodious inſtrument. And when a while that inſtrument had made a braue proclamation to all vnpoſſeſſed mindes of attention, an excellent conſort ſtreight followed of fiue Violles, and as manie voyces; which all being but Oratours of their maiſters paſſions, beſtowed this ſong vppon her, that thought vppon another matter.

THe Fire to ſee my woes for anger burneth: 4
The Aire in raine for my affliction weepeth:
The Sea to ebbe for griefe his flowing turneth:
The Earth with pitie dull his center turneth.
Fame is with wonder blazed:
Time runnes away for ſorrow:

Place ſtandeth ſtill amazed,
To ſee my night of ils, which hath no morrowe.
Alas all onely ſhe no pitie taketh
To know my miſeries, but chaſte and cruell
My fall her glory maketh;
Yet ſtill her eyes giue to my flames their fuell.

Fire, burne me quite till ſenſe of burning leaue me:
Aire, let me drawe thy breath no more in anguiſh:
Sea, drown'd in thee of tedious life bereaue me:
Earth, take this earth wherein my ſpirits languiſh.
Fame, ſay I was not borne:
Time, haſt my dying hower:
Place, ſee my graue vptorne:
Fire, aire, ſea, earth, fame, time, place ſhow your power.
Alas from all their helpe I am exiled:
For hers am I, and Death feares her diſpleaſure.
Fie Death thou art beguiled:
Though I be hers, ſhe ſets by me no treaſure.

5 But *Anaxius* (ſeeming a weary before it was ended) told *Amphialus*, that for his part he liked no muſick, but the neighing of horſes, the ſound of trumpets, and the cries of yeelding perſons: and therefore deſired, that the next morning they ſhoulde iſſue vpon the ſame place, where they had entred that day, not doubting to make them quickly a wearie of being the beſiegers of *Anaxius*. *Amphialus*, who had no whit leſſe courage, though nothing blowne vp with pride, willingly condiſcended: and ſo the next morning (giuing falſe alarum to the other ſide of the campe) *Amphialus* at *Anaxius* earneſt requeſt, ſtaying within the towne to ſee

it

it garded, *Anaxius* and his brethren, *Lycurgus*, and *Zoilus*, ſallied out with the beſt choſen men. But *Baſilius* (hauing bene the laſt day ſomewhat vnprouided) now had better fortified the ouerthrowne ſconſe; and ſo well had prepared euery thing for defence, that it was impoſſible for any valour from within, to preuaile. Yet things were perfourmed by *Anaxius* beyonde the credite of the credulous. For thriſe (valiantly followed by his brothers) did he ſet vp his banner vpon the rampire of the enemie: though thriſe againe by the multitude, and aduauntage of the place, but eſpecially by the comming of three valiant Knights, he were driuen downe againe. Nũbers there were that day, whoſe deathes and ouerthrowes were executed by the well knowen ſworde of *Anaxius*: but the reſt, by the length of time and iniurie of Hiſtorians, haue bene wrapped vp in darke forgetfulneſſe: onely *Treſſennius* is ſpoken of, becauſe when all abandoned the place, hee onely made head to *Anaxius*; till hauing loſt one of his legs, yet not loſt the harte of fighting, *Lycurgus* (ſecond brother to *Anaxius*) cruellie murthered him; *Anaxius* him ſelfe diſdayning any further to deale with him.

But ſo farre had *Anaxius* at the thirde time pre- 6
uayled, that now the *Baſilians* began to let their courage deſcende to their feete, *Baſilius*, and *Philanax* in vaine ſtriuing, with reuerence of authoritie to bridle the flight of aſtoniſhment, and to teach Feare diſcretion: ſo that *Amphialus*, ſeeing Victorie ſhew ſuch a flattering countenaunce to him, came out with all his force; hoping that day to end the ſiege.

But that fancie altered quicklie by the ſuddaine 7

comming to the other ſide of three Knights, whereof the one was in white armour, the other in greene, and the thirde by his blacke armour, and deuice ſtreight knowne to be the notable Knight, who the firſt day had giuen Fortune ſo ſhort a ſtoppe with his notable deedes, and fighting hand to hand with the deemed inuincible *Amphialus*. For the very cowardes no ſooner ſaw him, but as borrowing ſome of his ſpirit, they went like yong Eagles to the pray, vnder the wing of their damme. For the three aduenturers, not content to keepe them from their rampier, leapt downe among them, and entered into a braue combate with the three valiaunt brothers. But to whether ſide Fortune woulde haue beene partiall, could not be determined. For the *Baſilians*, lightened with the beames of theſe ſtraungers valure; followed ſo thicke, that the *Amphialians* were glad with ſome haſte to retire to the walles warde: though *Anaxius* neither reaſon, feare, nor example, coulde make him aſſwage the furie of his fight: vntill one of the *Baſilians* (vnwoorthie to haue his name regiſtred, ſince he did it cowardly, ſidewarde, when he leaſt looked that way) almoſt cut off one of his legges: ſo as he fell downe, blaſpheming heauen, that all the influences thereof had power to ouerthrow him; and there death would haue ſeazed of his proude hart, but that *Amphialus* tooke in hand the blacke knight, while ſome of his ſouldiers conueied away *Anaxius*, ſo requiting life for life vnto him.

3 And for the loue and example of *Amphialus*, the fight began to enter into a new fitte of heate: when *Baſilius* (that thought inough to be done for that day) cauſed retraite

retraite to be ſounded; fearing leaſt his men following ouer-haſtily, might bee the loſſe of thoſe excellent Knights whom he deſired to knowe. The Knights as ſoone as they heard the retraite (though they were eagerly ſet, knowing that courage without diſcipline is nearer beaſtlineſſe then manhood) drew backe their ſwords, though hungrie of more blood: eſpecially the blacke Knight, who, knowing *Amphialus*, could not refraine to tell him, that this was the ſecond time he eſcaped out of his hands, but that he would ſhortly bring him a bill of all the former accounts. *Amphialus* ſeing it fit to retire alſo (moſt of his people being hurt, both in bodies and harts) withdrew himſelfe, with ſo well ſeated a reſolution, that it was as farre from anger, as from diſmayednesſe; anſwering no other to the blacke Knights threats, but that when he brought him his account, he ſhould finde a good pay-maſter.

CHAP. 16.

[1] The vnknowne Knights will not be knowne. [2] The Knight of the Tombes ſhew, [3] and challenge accepted by Amphialus. *[4] Their fight, with the death of the Tombe-knight. [5] Who that Knight was. [6] The dying ſpeeches, and [7] the lamentable funerals.*

THe fight being ceaſed, and ech ſide withdrawne within their ſtrengthes, *Baſilius* ſent *Philanax* to entertaine the ſtraunge Knights, and to bring them vnto him, that he might acknowledge what honour was

due to their vertue. But they excuſed themſelues, deſiring to be knowne firſt by their deedes, before their names ſhould accuſe their vnworthineſſe: and though the other replied according as they deſerued, yet (finding that vnwelcome curteſie is a degree of iniury)
" he ſuffered them to retire themſelues to a tent of their owne without the campe, where they kept themſelues ſecrete: *Philanax* himſelfe being called away to another ſtraunge Knight; ſtraunge not onely by the vnlookedforneſſe of his comming, but by the ſtraunge maner of his comming.

2 For he had before him foure damoſels, and ſo many behind him, all vpon palfreys, & all appareled in mourning weedes; ech of them ſeruants of ech ſide, with like liueries of ſorrow. Himſelfe in an armour, all painted ouer with ſuch a cunning of ſhadow, that it repreſented a gaping ſepulchre, the furniture of his horſe was all of Cypreſſe braunches; wherwith in olde time they were woont to dreſſe graues. His Baſes (which he ware ſo long, as they came almoſt to his ankle) were imbrodered onely with blacke wormes, which ſeemed to crawle vp and downe, as readie alreadie to deuoure him. In his ſhielde for *Impreſa*, he had a beautifull childe, but hauing two heades; whereof the one ſhewed, that it was alreadie dead: the other aliue, but in that caſe, neceſſarily looking for death. The word was, *No way to be rid from death, but by death.*

3 This Knight of the tombe (for ſo the ſouldiours termed him) ſent to *Baſilius*, to demaund leaue to ſend in a damoſel into the towne, to cal out *Amphialus*, according as before time ſome others had done. Which being grãted (as glad any would vndertake the charge, which

no bodie elſe in that campe was knowne willing to do) the damoſell went in, and hauing with tears ſobbed out a braue chalenge to *Amphialus*, from the Knight of the Tombe, *Amphialus*, honourably enterteining the gentlewoman, & deſiring to know the Knights name (which the doolefull Gentlewoman would not diſcouer) accepted the chalenge, onely deſiring the Gentlewoman to ſay thus much to the ſtrange Knight, from him; that if his minde were like to his title, there were more cauſe of affinitie, then enmitie betweene them. And therefore preſently (according as he was woont) as ſoone as he perceyued the Knight of the Tombe, with his Damoſels and Iudge, was come into the Iland, he alſo went ouer in accuſtomed maner: and yet for the curteſie of his nature, deſired to ſpeake with him.

But the Knight of the Tombe, with ſilence, and drawing his horſe backe, ſhewed no will to heare, nor ſpeake: but with Launce on thigh, made him knowe, it was fitte for him to go to the other ende of the Career, whence wayting the ſtarte of the vnknowne Knight, he likewiſe made his ſpurres claime haſte of his horſe. But when his ſtaffe was in his reſt, comming downe to meete with the Knight, nowe verie neere him, he perceyued the Knight had miſt his reſt: wherefore the curteous *Amphialus* woulde not let his Launce deſcende, but with a gallant grace, ranne ouer the heade of his there-in friended enemie: and hauing ſtopped his horſe, and with the turning of him, bleſſed his ſight with the Windowe where he thought *Philoclea* might ſtand, he perceyued the Knight had lighted from his horſe, and throwne away his ſtaffe, angrie with his misfortune,

as

as hauing miſt his reſt, and drawne his ſworde to make that ſupply his fellowes fault. He alſo lighted, and
» drew his ſworde, eſteeming victorie by aduantage, rather robbed then purchaſed: and ſo the other comming eagerly toward him, he with his ſhield out, and ſword aloft, with more brauerie then anger, drew vnto him; and ſtraight made their ſwords ſpeake for them a pretie-while with equall fearcenes. But *Amphialus* (to whom the earth brought forth few matches) hauing both much more skill to chooſe the places, and more force to worke vpon the choſen, had already made many windowes in his armour for death to come in at; whē (the noblenes of his nature abhorring to make the puniſhment ouergoe the offence) he ſtept a little backe, and withal, Sir Knight (ſaid he) you may eaſely ſee, that it pleaſeth God to fauour my cauſe; employ your valour againſt them that wiſh you hurte: for my part, I haue not deſerued hate of you. Thou lyeſt falſe traytor, ſaide the other, with an angrie, but weake voyce. But *Amphialus*, in whome abuſed kindneſſe became ſpitefull rage, Ah barbarous wretch (ſaid hee) onely couragious in diſcourteſie; thou ſhalt ſoone ſee whether thy toonge hath betrayed thy harte, or no: and with that, redoubling his blowes, gaue him, a great wounde vpon his necke, and cloſing with him ouerthrew him, and with the fall thruſt him mortally into the bodie: and with that went to pull off his helmet, with intention to make him giue himſelfe the lye, for hauing ſo ſaide, or to cut off his head.

5 But the head-peece was no ſooner off, but that there fell about the ſhoulders of the ouercome Knight the treaſure of faire golden haire, which with the face

face (ſoone knowne by the badge of excellencie) witneſſed that it was *Parthenia*, the vnfortunatelie vertuous wife of *Argalus*: her beautie then euen in deſpight of the paſſed ſorrow, or comming death, aſſuring all beholders, that it was nothing ſhort of perfection. For her exceeding faire eyes, hauing with continuall weeping gotten a little redneſſe about them; her roundy ſweetly ſwelling lippes a little trembling, as though they kiſſed their neighbour death; in her cheekes the whiteneſſe ſtriuing by little and little to get vpon the roſineſſe of them; her necke, a necke indeed of Alablaſter, diſplaying the wounde, which with moſt daintie blood laboured to drowne his owne beauties; ſo as here was a riuer of pureſt redde, there an Iland of perfitteſt white, each giuing luſtre to the other; with the ſweete countenãce (God-knowes) full of an vnaffected languiſhing: though theſe thinges to a groſly conceauing ſenſe might ſeeme diſgraces; yet indeed were they but apparailing beautie in a new faſhion, which all looked-vpon thorough the ſpectacles of pittie, did euẽ encreaſe the lynes of her naturall fairenes, ſo as *Amphialus* was aſtoniſhed with griefe, compaſſion, & ſhame, deteſting his fortune, that made him vnfortunate in victory.

Therfore, putting off his headpeece & gauntlet; kneeling-down vnto her, & with teares teſtifying his ſorow, he offred his (by himſelfe accurſed) hands to helpe her: proteſting his life and power to be readie to doo her honour. But *Parthenia* (who had inward meſſingers of the deſired deathes approch) looking vpon him, and ſtreight turning away her feeble ſight, as from a delightleſſe obiect, drawing out her wordes, which her breath (loath to parte from ſo ſweete a bodie) 6

did

did faintly deliuer, Sir (ſaide ſhe) I pray you (if prayers haue place in enemies) to let my maides take my body vntouched by you: the onely honour I now deſire by your meanes, is, that I haue no honour of you. *Argalus* made no ſuch bargaine with you, that the hands which killed him, ſhoulde helpe me. I haue of them (and I doo not onely pardon you, but thanke you for it) the ſeruice which I deſired. There reſts nothing now, but that I go liue with him, ſince whoſe death I haue done nothing but die. Then pawſing, and a little fainting, and againe comming to herſelfe, O ſweete life, welcome (ſaide ſhe) nowe feele I the bandes vntied of the cruell death, which ſo long hath helde me. And O life, O death, aunſwere for me, that my thoughts haue not ſo much as in a dreame taſted any comfort; ſince they were depriued of *Argalus*. I come, my *Argalus*, I come: And, O God hide my faultes in thy mercies, and graunt (as I feele thou dooſt graunt) that in thy eternall loue, we may loue eche other eternally. And this O Lorde: But there *Atropos* cut off her ſentence: for with that, caſting vp both eyes and hands to the skies, the noble ſoule departed (one might well aſſure himſelfe) to heauen, which left the bodie in ſo heauenly a demeanure.

7 But *Amphialus* (with a hart oppreſſed with griefe, becauſe of her requeſt) withdrewe himſelfe, but the Iudges, as full of pitie, had bene al this while diſarming her, and her gentlewomen with lamentable cries, laboring to ſtanch the remediles wounds: & a while ſhe was dead before they perceiued it; death being able to diuide the ſoul, but not the beauty frō that body. But whē the infallible tokens of death aſſured thē of their loſſe,

one of

of the women would haue killed her ſelfe, but that the ſquire of *Amphialus* perceauing it, by force held her. Others that had as ſtrong paſſions, though weaker reſolution, fell to caſt duſt vpon their heads, to teare their garments: all falling vpon, and crying vpon their ſweet miſtres; as if their cries could perſwade the ſoul to leaue the celeſtiall happines, to come again into the elemẽts of ſorrow: one time calling to remembrance her vertue, chaſtnes, ſweetnes, goodnes to them: another time accurſing themſelues, that they had obeyed her, they hauing bene deceaued by her words, who aſſured thẽ, that it was reuealed vnto her, that ſhe ſhould haue her harts deſire in the battaile againſt *Amphialus*, which they wrongly vnderſtood. Then kiſſing her cold hands and feet, wearie of the world, ſince ſhe was gone, who was their world. The very heauens ſemed, with a cloudie countenance, to loure at the loſſe, and Fame it ſelfe (though by nature glad to tell rare accidents, yet) could not chooſe but deliuer it in lamentable accents, & in ſuch ſort went it quickly all ouer the Campe: &, as if the aire had bene infected with ſorow, no hart was ſo hard, but was ſubiect to that contagion; the rarenes of the accident, matching together (the rarely matched together) pittie with admiration. *Baſilius* himſelfe came foorth, and brought foorth the faire *Gynecia* with him, who was gone into the campe vnder colour of viſiting her huſband, and hearing of her daughters: but indeed *Zelmane* was the Sainct, to which her pilgrimage was entended: curſing, enuying, bleſſing, and in her harte kiſſing the walles which impriſoned her. But both they with *Philanax*, and the reſt of the principall Nobilitie, went out, to make Honour triumph ouer Death, conueying

ing that excellent body (wherto *Baſilius* himſelf would needes bend his ſhoulder) to a church a mile from the campe, where the valiant *Argalus* lay intombed; recommending to that ſepulchre, the bleſſed reliques of faithfull and vertuous Loue: giuing order for the making of marble images, to repreſent them, & each way enriching the tombe. Vpon which, *Baſilius* himſelf cauſed this Epitaphe to be written.

The Epitaph.

His being was in her alone:
And he not being, she was none.
They ioi'd one' ioy, one' griefe they griu'd,
One' loue they lou'd, one life they liu'd.
The hand was one, one was the ſword,
That did his death, her death afford.
Their ally reſt, ſo now the ſtone
That tombes the two is iuſtly one.

ARGALVS, & PARTHENIA.

CHAP. 17.

1 The remorse of Amphialus *for his last deede, and lasting destinie. 2 His reuerent respect in loue. 3 His mothers ghosty counsell to a rape.*

THen with eyes full of teares, and mouthes full of her prayses, returned they to the campe, with more and more hate against *Amphialus:* who (poore Gentleman) had therfore greater portion of woe, then any of them. For that courteous harte, which would haue grieued but to haue heard the like aduenture, was rent with remembring himselfe to be the author: so that his wisdome could not so farre temper his passion, but that he tooke his sword, counted the best in the world (which with much bloud he had once conquered of a mightie Giant) and brake it into many peeces (which afterwardes he had good cause to repent) saying, that neither it was worthie to serue the noble exercise of chiualrie, nor any other worthie to feel that sword, which had stroken so excellent a Ladie: & withall, banishing all cheerfulnes of his countenance, he returned home. Where he gate him to his bed, not so much to rest his restles minde, as to auoyd all companie, the sight whereof was tedious vnto him. And then melancholie (onely riche in vnfortunate remembrances) brought before him all the mishappes, with which his life had wrestled: taking this, not onely as a confirming of the former, but 1

but a preſage of following miſerie; and to his harte (alredie ouercome by ſorrowfulnes) euen trifling misfortunes came, to fill vp the rolle of a grieued memorie, labouring onely his wittes to pearce farther and farther into his owne wretchednes. So all that night (in deſpite of darkenes) he held his eyes open; and the morning when the light began to reſtore to each body his colour, then with curtaines barde he himſelfe from the enioying of it: neither willing to feele the comfort of the day, nor the eaſe of the night: vntill his mother (who neuer knew what loue meant, but onely to himward) came to his bed ſide, and beginning with louing earneſtnes to lay a kinde chiding vpon him, becauſe he would ſuffer the weakeneſſe of ſorow, to conquere the ſtrength of his vertues; he did with a broaken peecemeale ſpeach (as if the tempeſt of paſſion vnorderly blewe out his words) remember the miſhappes of his youth, the euils he had bene cauſe of, his rebelling with Shame, and that ſhame increaſed with ſhamefull accidents, the deaths of *Philoxenus* and *Parthenia*, wherein he found himſelfe hated of the euer-ruling powers, but eſpecially (and ſo eſpecially, as the reſt ſeemed nothing when he came to that) his fatall loue to *Philoclea*: to whom he had ſo gouerned himſelfe, as one that could neither conquere, nor yeeld; being of the one ſide a ſlaue, and of the other a iaylor: and with all, almoſt vpbrayding vnto his mother the little ſucceſſe of her large hoping promiſes, he in effect finding *Philoclea* nothing mollified, and now himſelfe ſo caſt downe, as he thought him vnworthy of better.

2 But his mother (as ſhe had plentifull cauſe) making him ſee, that of his other griefes there was little or no fault

faulte in him ſelfe, and therefore there ought to be little or no griefe in him; when ſhe came to the head of the ſore, indeed ſeeing that ſhe could not patch vp her former promiſes (he taking a deſperate deafneſſe to all delaying hopes) ſhe confeſt plainly, that ſhe could preuaile nothing: but the faulte was his owne, who had marred the yong Girle by ſeeking to haue that by praier, which he ſhould haue taken by authoritie. That as it were an abſurd cunning to make hie ladders to go in a plaine way; ſo was it an vntimely and fooliſh flattery, there to beſeech, where one might commaund, puffing the vp by being beſought, with ſuch a ſelfe-pride of ſuperioritie, that it was not (forſooth) to be held out, but by a denial. O God (ſaid *Amphialus*) how wel I thought my fortune would bring forth this end of your labors? aſſure your ſelf, mother, I will ſooner pull out theſe eies then they ſhal looke vpon the heauenly *Philoclea*, but as vpō a heauē, whence they haue their light, & to which they are ſubiect, if they will power down any influēces of cōfort, O happy I: but if by the ſacrifice of a faithfull hart, they will not be called vnto me, let me languiſh, & wither with languiſhing, & grieue with withering, but neuer ſo much as repine with neuer ſo much grieuing. Mother, ô Mother, luſt may well be a tyrant, but true-loue where it is indeed, it is a ſeruant. Accurſed more then I am, may I be, if euer I did approch her, but that I friezed as much in a fearefull reuerence, as I burned in a vehement deſire. Did euer mans eye looke thorough loue vpō the maieſty of vertue, ſhining through beauty, but that he became (as it wel became him) a captiue? & is it the ſtile of a captiue, to write, *Our will and pleaſure?*

Tuſh, tuſh ſonne (ſaid *Cecropia*) if you ſay you loue,

but withall you feare; you feare leſt you ſhould offend; offend? & how know you, that you ſhould offend? becauſe ſhe doth denie: denie? Now by my truth; if your ſadnes would let me laugh, I could laugh hartily, to ſee that yet you are ignorant, that No, is no negatiue in a womans mouth. My ſonne, beleeue me, a womā, ſpeaking of women: a louers modeſty among vs is much more praiſed, then liked: or if we like it, ſo well we like it, that for marring of his modeſtie, he ſhall neuer proceed further. Each vertue hath his time: if you cōmand your ſouldier to march formoſt, & he for curteſie put others before him, would you praiſe his modeſty? loue is your Generall: hę bids you dare: & will *Amphialus* be a daſtard? Let examples ſeruc: doo you thinke *Theſeus* ſhould euer haue gotten *Antiope* with ſighing, & croſſing his armes? he rauiſhed her, and rauiſhed her that was an *Amazon*, and therefore had gotten a habite of ſtoutnes aboue the nature of a woman; but hauing rauiſhed her, he got a child of her. And I ſay no more, but that (they ſay) is not gotten without conſent of both ſides. *Iole* had her owne father killed by *Hercules*, & her ſelfe rauiſhed, by force rauiſhed, & yet ere long this rauiſhed, & vnfathered Lady could ſportfully put on the Lions skin vpon her owne faire ſhoulders, & play with the clubbe with her owne delicate hands: ſo eaſily had ſhe pardoned the rauiſher, that ſhe could not but delight in thoſe weapōs of rauiſhing. But aboue all, mark *Helen* daughter to *Iupiter*, who could neuer brooke her manerly-wooing *Menelaus*, but diſdained his humblenes, & lothed his ſoftnes. But ſo well ſhe could like the force of enforcing *Paris*, that for him ſhe could abide what might be abidden. But what? *Menelaus* takes hart;

he

he recouers her by force; by force carries her home; by force inioies her; and ſhe, who could neuer like him for ſeruiceableneſſe, euer after loued him for violence. For what can be more agreable, then vpon force to lay the fault of deſire, and in one inſtant to ioyne a deare delight with a iuſt excuſe? or rather the true cauſe is, (pardon me ô woman-kinde for reuealing to mine owne ſonne the truth of this myſtery) we thinke there wants fire, where we find no ſparkles at leſt of furie. Truly I haue knowen a great Lady, long ſought by moſt great, moſt wiſe, moſt beautifull, moſt valiant perſons; neuer wonne; becauſe they did ouer-ſuſpiciouſly ſollicite her: the ſame Ladie brought vnder by an other, inferiour to all them in all thoſe qualities, onely becauſe he could vſe that imperious maiſterfulneſſe, which nature giues to men aboue women. For indeede (ſonne, I confeſſe vnto you) in our very creatiõ we are ſeruants: and who prayſeth his ſeruaunts ſhall neuer be well obeyed: but as a ready horſe ſtreight yeeldes, when he findes one that will haue him yeelde; the ſame fals to boundes when he feeles a fearefull horſeman. Awake thy ſpirits (good *Amphialus*) and aſſure thy ſelfe, that though ſhe refuſeth, ſhe refuſeth but to endeere the obtaining. If ſhe weepe, and chide, and proteſt, before it be gotten, ſhe can but weepe, and chide, and proteſt, when it is gottẽ. Thinke, ſhe would not ſtriue, but that ſhe meanes to trie thy force: and my *Amphialus*, know thy ſelfe a man, and ſhew thy ſelfe a man: and (beleeue me vpon my word) a woman is a woman.

CHAP. 18.

[1] *The forſaken Knights deſie.* [2] Amphialus *anſwere.* [4] *The one* [3] *and others armour and impreſe.* [5] *The iſſue of their quarrell.* [6] *Their heroicall monomachy on horſe,* [7] *and foot.* [8] *Their breathings,* [9] *& reencounters.* [10] Amphialus *reſcued by* Anaxius *brethren, the Blacke Knight by the greene and white.* [11] *The ſupply of both ſides to cary away the breathles Knights.* [12] *The Blackknights grieues.*

AMphialus was aboute to anſwere her, when a Gentlemã of his made him vnderſtande, that there was a meſſenger come, who had brought a letter vnto him from out of the campe: whom he preſently calling for, tooke, opened, and read the letter, importing this.

1 TO *thee* Amphialus *of* Arcadia, *the forſaken Knight wiſheth health, and courage, that by my hand thou maieſt receyue puniſhment for thy treaſon, according to thine owne offer, which wickedly occaſioned, thou haſte proudly begun, and accurſedly mainteyned. I will preſently (if thy minde faint thee not for his owne guiltineſſe) meete thee in thy Iland, in ſuch order, as hath by the former beene vſed: or if thou likeſt not the time, place, or weapon, I am ready to take thine owne reaſonable choiſe in any of them; ſo as thou do perfourme the ſubſtaunce. Make me ſuch anſwere as may ſhew that thou haſt ſome taſte of honour: and ſo I leaue thee, to liue till I meete thee.*

Amphialus

Amphialus read it, and with a deepe ſigh (according to the humour of inward affection) ſeemed euen to cõdemne him ſelfe, as though indeed his reproches were true. But howſoeuer the dulnes of Melancholy would haue languiſhingly yeelded thereunto, his Courage (vnuſed to ſuch iniuries) deſired helpe of Anger to make him this anſwere.

2 *Forſaken Knight, though your nameleſſe challenge might carry in it ſelfe excuſe for a man of my birth and eſtate, yet herein ſet your harte at reſt, you ſhall not be forſaken. I will without ſlay anſwere you in the woonted manner, and come both armed in your fooliſh threatnings, and yet the more feareleſſe, expecting weake blowes, where I finde ſo ſtrong wordes. You ſhall not therefore long attende me in the Ilande, before proofe teache you, that of my life you haue made your ſelfe too large a promiſe. In the meane time, Farewell.*

3 This being written, and deliuered, the meſſenger tolde him, that his Lord would (if he liked the ſame) bring two Knights with him to be his *Patrons*. Which *Amphialus* accepted, and withall ſhaking of (with reſolution) his mothers importunate diſſwaſions, he furniſhed him ſelfe for the fight: but not in his wonted furniture. For now (as if he would turne his inſide outwarde) he would needes appeare all in blacke; his decking both for him ſelfe, and horſe, being cut out into the faſhion of very ragges: yet all ſo dainty, ioyned together with pretious ſtones, as it was a braue raggedneſſe, and a riche pouertie: and ſo cunningly had a workeman followed his humour in his armour, that

he had giuen it a ruſtie ſhewe, and yet ſo, as any man might perceiue was by arte, and not negligence; carying at one inſtant a diſgraced handſomneſſe, and a new oldnes. In his ſhield he bare for his deuiſe, a Night, by an excellently painter, with a Sunne with a ſhadow, and vpon the ſhadow with a ſpeech ſignifying, that it *onely* was *barrd from inioying that, whereof it had his life:* or, *From whoſe I am banniſhed.* In his creſte he caried *Philocleas* kniues, the onely token of her forwarde fauour.

So paſt he ouer into the Iland, taking with him the
4 two brothers of *Anaxius*; where he founde the forſaken Knight, attired in his owne liuerie, as blacke, as ſorrowe it ſelfe could ſee it ſelfe in the blackeſt glaſſe: his ornaments of the ſame hew, but formed in the figure of Rauens, which ſeemed to gape for carrion: onely his raynes were ſnakes, which finely wrapping themſelues one within the other, their heads came together to the cheekes and boſſes of the bit, where they might ſeeme to bite at the horſe, and the horſe (as he champte the bit) to bite at them; and that the white foame was ingendred by the poyſonous furie of the combatt. His *Impreſa* was a *Catoblepta* which ſo long lies dead, as the Moone (whereto it hath ſo naturall a ſympathie) wants her light. The worde ſignified that *The Moone wanted not the light, but the poore beaſt wanted the Moones light*. He had in his headpiece, a whippe, to witneſſe a ſelfe-puniſhing repentaunce. Their very horſes were cole-blacke too, not hauing ſo much as one ſtarre to giue light to their night of blackeneſſe: ſo as one would haue thought they had bene the two ſonnes of Sorrow, and were come thether to fight for their

their birth-right in that ſorie inheritance.

Which aliance of paſſions ſo moued *Amphialus* (al- 5
redy tender-minded by the afflictions of Loue) that without ſtaffe or ſword drawne, he trotted fairely to the forſakē Knight, willing to haue put off his combat, to which his melancholy hart did (more then euer in like occaſion) miſgiue him: and therefore ſaluting him, Good Knight (ſaid he) becauſe we are men, and ſhould knowe reaſon why we doo things; tell me the cauſe, that makes you thus eager to fight with me. Becauſe I affirme (anſwered the forſaken Knight) that thou doſt moſt rebellious iniurie to thoſe Ladies, to whome all men owe ſeruice. You ſhall not fight with me (ſaide *Amphialus*) vpon that quarrell: for I confeſſe the ſame too: but it proceeds from their owne beauty, to inforce Loue to offer this force. I maintaine then (ſaid the forſaken Knight) that thou art not worthy ſo to loue. And that confeſſe I too (ſaide *Amphialus*) ſince the world is not ſo richly bleſſed, as to bring forth any thing worthy thereof. But no more vnworthy then any other, ſince in none can be a more worthy loue. Yes, more vnworthy then my ſelf (ſaid the forſaken Knight) for though I deſerue contempt, thou deſerueſt both contempt, and hatred.

But *Amphialus* by that thinking (though wrongly, 6
each indeede miſtaking other) that he was his riuall, forgat all minde of reconciliation, and hauing all his thoughts boūd vp in choler, neuer ſtaying either iudge, trūpet, or his owne laūce, drew out his ſword, & ſaying, Thou lyeſt falſe villaine, vnto him; his words & blowes came ſo quick togither, as the one ſeemed a lightning of the others thūder. But he foūd no barrē groūd of ſuch

ſeede: for it yeelded him his owne with ſuch encreaſe, that though Reaſon and Amazement go rarely togither, yet the moſt reaſonable eies that ſaw it, founde reaſon to be amazed at the fury of their combat. Neuer game of death better plaid; neuer fury ſet it ſelf forth in greater brauerie. The curteous *Vulcan*, whē he wrought at his nowe more curteous wiues requeſt, *Æneas* an armour, made not his hammer beget a greater ſounde; then the ſwordes of thoſe noble Knights did; they needed no fire to their forge; for they made the fire to ſhine at the meeting of their ſwords, & armours; ech ſide fetching new ſpirit from the caſtle window, and careful of keeping their ſight, it was a matter of greater conſideration in their combat, then either the aduantage of Sun or winde: which Sunne and wind (if the aſtoniſhed eies of the beholders were not by the aſtoniſhment deceiued) did both ſtand ſtill to be beholders of this rare match. For neither could their amazed eies diſcerne motion in the Sunne, and no breath of wind ſtirred, as if either for feare it would not come amōg ſuch blows, or with delight had his eies ſo buſie, as it had forgot to open his mouth. This fight being the more cruell, ſince both Loue and Hatred conſpired to ſharpen their humours, that hard it was to ſay, whether Loue with one trumpet, or Hatred with another, gaue the lowder alarum to their courages. Spite, rage, diſdaine, ſhame, reuenge, came waighting vpon Hatred: of the other ſide came with loue-longing Deſire, both inuincible Hope, and feareleſſe Deſpaire, with riuallike Iealouſie, which (although brought vp within doores in the ſchoole of *Cupid*) woulde ſhewe themſelues no leſſe forwarde, then the other duſtie bande of *Mars*, to make themſelues

themſelues notable in the notablenes of this combat. Of eyther ſide Confidence, vnacquainted with Loſſe, but aſſured truſt to ouercome, and good experience howe to ouercome: nowe ſeconding their terrible blowes with cunning labouring the horſes, to winne ground of the enimie; now vnlooked-for parting one from the other, to win aduantage by an aduantageous retourne. But force againſt force, ſkill againſt ſkill, ſo enterchangeably encountred, that it was not eaſie to determine, whether enterpriſing, or preuenting came former: both, ſometimes at one inſtant, doing and ſuffring wrong, and choller no leſſe riſing of the doing, then of the ſuffring. But as the fire, the more fuell is put to it, the more hungrie ſtill it is to deuoure more: ſo the more they ſtrake, the more vnſatiſfied they were with ſtriking. Their verie armour by piecemeale fell away from them: and yet their fleſh abode the wounds conſtantly, as though it were leſſe ſenſible of ſmarte, then the ſenſeleſſe armour: their blood in moſt places ſtayning the blacke, as if it would giue a more liuely coulour of mourning, then blacke can doo. And ſo a long ſpace they fought, while neither vertue, nor fortune ſeemed partiall of either ſide: which ſo tormented the vnquiet hart of *Amphialus*, that he reſolued to ſee a quicke ende: and therefore with the violence of courage, adding ſtrength to his blow, he ſtrake in ſuch wiſe vpon the ſide of the others heade, that his remembrance left that battered lodging: ſo as he was quite from himſelfe, caſting his armes abroade, and redie to fall downe; his ſword likewiſe went out of his hande; but that being faſt by a chaine to his arme, he could not looſe. And *Amphialus* vſed the fa-

uour

uour of occasion, redoubling his blowes: but the horse (weary to be beaten, as well as the master) carried his master away, till he came vnto himselfe: But then who could haue seene him, might well haue discerned shame in his cheekes, and reuenge in his eyes: so as setting his teeth together with rage, he came running vpon *Amphialus*, reaching out his arme, which had gathered vp the sword, meaning with that blow to haue cleaued *Amphialus* in two. But *Amphialus* seeing the blow comming, shunned it with nimble turning his horse aside; wherwith the forsaken Knight ouer-strake himself so, as almost he came downe with his owne strength. But the more hungrie he was of his purpose, the more he was bard the food of it: disdaining the resistance, both of force, and fortune, he returned vpon the spurre againe, and ranne with such violence vpon *Amphialus*, that his horse with the force of the shocke rose vp before, almost ouerturned: which *Amphialus* perceauing, with rayne and spurre put forth his horse; and withall gaue a mightie blow in the descent of his horse, vpon the shoulder of the forsaken Knight; from whence sliding, it fell vpon the necke of his horse, so as horse and man fell to the ground: but he was scarce downe before he was vpon his feete againe, with braue gesture shewing rising of corage, in the falling of fortune.

7 But the curteous *Amphialus* excused himselfe, for hauing (against his will) kild his horse. Excuse thy selfe for viler faults (answered the forsaken Knight) and vse this poore aduantage the best thou canst; for thou shalt quickely finde thou hast neede of more. Thy folly (said *Amphialus*) shall not make me forget my selfe: and therewith (trotting a little aside) alighted from his horse

horſe, becauſe he would not haue fortune come to claime any part of the victory. Which curteous act would haue mollified the noble harte of the forſaken Knight, if any other had done it, beſides the Taylor of his miſtres: but that was a ſufficient deſeazaunce for the firmeſt bonde of good nature; and therfore he was no ſooner alighted, but that he ranne vnto him, re-entring into as cruel a fight, as eye did euer ſee, or thought could reaſonably imagine; farre beyond the reach of weak words to be able to expreſſe it. For what they had done on horſebacke, was but as a morſell to keep their ſtomakes in appetite, in compariſon of that, which now (being themſelues) they did. Nor euer glutton by the chāge of daintie diet could be brought to fetch feeding (when he might haue bene ſatiſfied before) with more earneſtnes, then thoſe (by the change of their maner of fight) fell cleane to a new fight, though any elſe would haue thought they had had their fill alredy. *Amphialus* being the taller man, for the moſt part ſtood with his right legge before, his ſhield at the vttermoſt length of his arme, his ſword hie, but with the point toward his enemy. But whē he ſtrake, which came ſo thick, as if euery blow would ſtriue to be foremoſt, his arme ſeemed ſtill a poſtillion of death. The forſaken Knight ſhewed with like skil, vnlike geſture, keeping himſelfe in continual motion, proportioning the diſtance betweene thē to any thing that *Amphialus* attempted: his eye guided his foote, and his foote conueighed his hand; and ſince nature had made him ſomething the lower of the two, he made art follow, and not ſtriue with nature: ſhunning rather thē warding his blowes; like a cūning maſtiffe, who knowes the ſharpnes of the horne, and ſtrēgth of the Bul, fights low to get his proper aduātage;

anſwering

anſwering mightines with nimblenes, and yet at times imploying his wonderfull force, wherein he was ſeconde to none. In ſumme, the blowes were ſtronge, the thruſts thicke, and the auoydings cunning. But the forſaken Knight (that thought it a degree of being cõquered to be long in conquering) ſtrake ſo mightie a blow, that he made *Amphialus* put knee to the ground, without any humblenes. But when he felt himſelfe ſtriken downe, and ſaw himſelfe ſtriken downe by his riuall, then ſhame ſeemed one arme, and diſdaine another; fury in his eyes, and reuenge in his hart; ſkill and force gaue place, & they tooke the place of ſkil & force: with ſo vnweariable a manner, that the forſaken Knight was alſo driuen to leaue the ſtreame of cunning, and giue himſelfe wholly to be guided by the ſtorme of fury: there being in both (becauſe hate would not ſuffer admiration) extreame diſdaine to finde themſelues ſo matched.

8 What (ſaid *Amphialus* to himſelfe) am I *Amphialus*, before whom ſo many monſters & Gyants haue falne dead, when I onely ſought cauſeleſſe aduentures? and can one Knight now withſtand me in the preſence of *Philoclea*, and fighting for *Philoclea*? or ſince I loſt my liberty, haue I loſt my courage? haue I gotten the hart of a ſlaue, as well as the fortune? If an armie were againſt me in the ſight of *Philoclea*, could it reſiſt me? O beaſt, one man reſiſtes thee; thy ryuall reſiſts thee: or am I indeed *Amphialus*? haue not paſſions kild him, and wretched I (I know not how) ſucceeded into his place? Of the other ſide the forſaken Knight with no leſſe ſpite, fel out with himſelf; Haſt thou brokẽ (ſaid he to himſelfe) the cõmãdemẽt of thy only Princeſſe to come now into her

her preſẽce,& in her preſẽce to proue thy ſelf a coward? Doth *Aſia* and *Ægypt* ſet vp Trophes vnto thee, to be matched here by a traytor? O noble *Barſanes*, how ſhamed will thy ſoule be, that he that ſlew thee, ſhould be reſiſted by this one man? O incomparable *Pyrocles*, more grieued wilt thou be with thy friends ſhame, thẽ with thine owne impriſonment, when thou ſhalt know how little I haue bene able to doo for the deliuerie of thee, and thoſe heauenlie Princeſſes. Am I worthie to be friend to the moſt valourous Prince that euer was entituled valourous, and ſhewe my ſelfe ſo weake a wretch? No, ſhamed *Muſidorus*, worthie for nothing, but to keepe ſheepe, get thee a ſheephooke again, ſince thou canſt vſe a ſword no better.

Thus at times did they, now with one thought, then 9
with another, ſharpen their ouer-ſharpe humors; like the Lion, that beates himſelfe with his owne taile, to make himſelfe the more angrie. Theſe thoughtes indeede not ſtaying, but whetting their angrie ſwordes, which now had put on the apparraile of Crueltie: they bleeding ſo aboundantly, that euery bodie that ſawe them, fainted for them, & yet they fainted not in themſelues: their ſmart being more ſenſible to others eyes, then to their owne feeling: Wrath and Courage barring the common ſenſe from bringing any meſſage of their caſe to the minde: Paine, Wearines, and Weakenes, not daring to make knowen their caſe (though already in the limits of death) in the preſence of ſo violent furie: which filling the veines with rage, in ſtead of bloud, and making the minde miniſter ſpirites to the bodie, a great while held out their fight, like an arrowe ſhotte vpward by the force of the bowe, though by his

owne

owne nature he would goe downward. The forſaken Knight had the more wounds, but *Amphialus* had the ſoarer; which the other (watchinge time and place) had cõningly geuen vnto him. Who euer ſaw a well-mand Galley fight with a tall ſhip, might make vnto himſelfe ſome kind of compariſon of the difference of theſe two Knights; a better couple then which, the world could not bragge of. *Amphialus* ſeemed to excell in ſtrength, the forſaken Knight in nimblenes; and yet did the ones ſtrength excel in nimblenes, and the others nimblenes excell in ſtrength: but now, ſtrength and nimblenes were both gone, and exceſſe of courage only maintayned the fight. Three times had *Amphialus* with his mightie blowes driuen the forſaken Knight to go ſtaggering backwarde, but euery one of thoſe times he requited pain with ſmarte, and ſhame with repulſe. And now, whether he had cauſe, or that ouer-much confidence (an ouer-forward ſcholer of vnconquered Courage) made him think he had cauſe, he begã to perſuade himſelf he had the aduãtage of the combat, though the aduantage he toke himſelfe to haue, was onely that he ſhould be the later to die: which hopes, Hate (as vnſecrete as Loue) could not conceale, but drawing himſelf a little back frõ him, brake out in theſe maner of words.

8 Ah *Amphialus* (ſaid the forſakẽ knight) this third time thou ſhalt not eſcape me, but thy death ſhall ſatisfie thy iniury, & my malice; and pay for the cruelty thou ſhewedſt in killing the noble *Argalus*, & the fair *Parthenia*. In troth (ſaid *Amphialus*) thou art the beſt knight that euer I fought withal, which would make me willing to graũt thee thy life, if thy wit were as good as thy corage; that (beſides other follies) layeſt that to my charge, which moſt

moſt againſt my will was committed. But whether my death be in thy power, or no, let this tel thee; And vpon the worde wayted a blow, which parted his ſhield into two peeces; & deſpiſing the weak reſiſtance of his alredie brokē armor, made a great breach into his hart ſide, as if he would make a paſſage for his loue to get out at.

But paine rather ſeemed to increaſe life, then to weaken life in thoſe champions. For, the forſaken Knight 9
comming in with his right leg, and making it guide the force of the blow, ſtrake *Amphialus* vpon the bellie, ſo horrible a woūd, that his guts came out withall. Which *Amphialus* perceauing (fearing death, onely becauſe it ſhould come with ouerthrow) he ſeemed to coniure all his ſtrength for one moments ſeruice; and ſo, lifting vp his ſword with both hands, hit the forſaken knight vpō the head, a blow, wherewith his ſword brake. But (as if it would do a notable ſeruice before it died) it preuayled ſo, euen in the inſtant of breaking, that the forſaken Knight fell to the ground, quite for that inſtant forgetting both loue and hatred: and *Amphialus* (finding him ſelf alſo in ſuch weaknes, as he loked for ſpeedy death) glad of the victorie, though little hoping to enioy it, puld vp his viſar, meaning with his dagger to giue him death; but in ſtead of death, he gaue him life: for, the aire ſo reuiued his ſpirits, that comming to himſelf, and ſeeing his preſent danger, with a life conquering death, he tooke *Amphialus* by the thigh, & together roſe himſelfe, and ouerturned him. But *Amphialus* ſcrambled vp againe, both now ſo weake indeede, as their motions rather ſeemed the afterdrops to a ſtorme, then any matter of great furie.

But *Amphialus* might repent himſelfe of his wilfull breaking

breaking his good ſword: for, the forſaken Knight (hauing with the extremitie of iuſtly-conceiued hate, and the vnpitifulnes of his owne neere-threatning death, blotted out all complements of courteſie) let flie at him ſo cruelly, that though the blowes were weake, yet weaknes vpon a weakned ſubiect, proued ſuch ſtrēgth, that *Amphialus* hauing attempted in vaine, once or twiſe to cloſe with him, receauing wound vpō wound, ſent his whole burden to ſtrike the earth with falling, ſince he could ſtrike his foe no better in ſtanding: geuing no other tokens of himſelf, then as of a man euen ready to take his oath to be Deathes true ſeruant.

Which when the hardie brothers of *Anaxius* perceaued, not recking law of armes, nor vſe of chiualrie, they flew in to defende their friende, or reuenge their loſſe of him. But they were foorthwith encountred with the two braue cōpanions of the forſaken Knight; whereof the one being all in greene, both armour and furniture, it ſeemed a pleaſant garden, wherein grewe orange trees, which with their golden fruites, cunningly beaten in, & embrodered, greatly enriched the eye-pleaſing colour of greene. In his ſhield was a ſheep, feeding in a pleaſant field, with this word, *Without feare, or enuie.* And therfore was called the Knight of the ſheep. The other Knight was all in milke white, his attiring els, all cutte in ſtarres, which made of cloath of ſiluer, and ſiluer ſpangles, each way ſeemed to caſt many aſpects. His deuice was the very Pole it ſelfe, about which many ſtarres ſtirring, but the place it ſelfe lefte voide. The word was, *The beſt place yet reſerued.* But theſe foure Knights, inheriting the hate of their friends, began a fierce combat: the forſaken Knight himſelfe not able

able to helpe his ſide, but was driuen to ſit him downe, with the extreame faintneſſe of his more & more fainting body. But thoſe valiant couples ſeeking honour by diſhonouring, and to build ſafety vpon ruine, gaue new appetites, to the almoſt glutted eies of the beholders: and now bloud began to put ſweat from the full poſſeſſion of their outſides, no aduantage being yet to be ſeene; onely the Knight of the ſheepe ſeeming moſt deliuer, and affecting moſt all that viewed him, when a company of ſouldiers ſent by *Cecropia*, came out in boates to the Ilande: and all came running to the deſtruction of the three Knights, whereof the one was vtterly vnable to defend himſelfe.

But then did the other two Knights ſhewe their wonderfull courage, and fidelitie. For turning backe to backe, and bothe beſtriding the blacke forſaken Knight (who had fainted ſo long till he had loſt the feeling of faintneſſe) they helde playe againſt the reſt, though the two brothers vnknightly helped them; till *Philanax* (who watchfully attended ſuch traiterous practiſes) ſent likewiſe ouer, both by boate and ſwimming, ſo choiſe a number as did put moſt of the other to the ſworde. Onely the two Brothers, with ſome of the braueſt of them, carrying away the body of *Amphialus*, which they would rather haue died, then haue left behind them. 11

So was the forſaken Knight (layed vpon clokes) carried home to the campe. But his two friends knowing his earneſt deſire not to be knowen, couering him from any bodies eyes, conueyed him to their owne tente: *Baſilius* himſelfe conquering his earneſt deſire to ſee him, with feare to diſpleaſe him, who had fought 12

ſo notably in his quarrell. But Fame ſet the honour vpon his backe, which he would not ſuffer to ſhine in his face: no mans mouth being barrein of prayſes to the noble Knight, that had bettered the moſt eſteemed Knight in the world: euery bodie praying for his life, and thinking that therein they prayed for themſelues. But he him ſelfe, when by the diligent care of friends, and well applied cunning of ſurgeons, he came to renewe againe the league betweene his minde and body, then fell he to a freſhe warre with his owne thoughts, wrongfully condemning his manhood, laying cowardiſe to him ſelfe, whome the impudenteſt backbiter would not ſo haue wrõged. For his courage (vſed to vſe victory as an inheritaunce) could brooke no reſiſtance at any time: but now that he had promiſed him ſelfe, not onely the conqueſt of him, but the ſcaling of the walles, and deliuery of *Pamela*, though he had done beyond al others expectation, yet ſo ſhort was he of his owne; that he hated to looke vpon the Sunne, that had ſeene him do ſo weakely: and ſo much abhorred all viſitation or honour, whereof he thought him ſelfe vnworthy, that he beſought his two noble friends to carrie him away to a caſtle not far of, where he might cure his wounds, and neuer be knowne till he made ſucceſſe excuſe this (as he thought) want in him. They louingly obeyed him, leauing *Baſilius* and all the campe very ſorrie for the parting of theſe three vnknowne Knights, in whoſe proweſſe they had repoſed greateſt truſt of victory.

CHAP.

CHAP. 19.

1 The ſtate of the leaguer, and beleaguered. 2 The agonies of Amphialus. *3 The wit-craft of* Cecropia, *to threaten* Baſilius *with the three Ladies death.* 4 Kalanders *compaſſion.* 5 Philanax-*his counter-counſell.* 6 *The breaking vp the ſiege.*

BVt they being gone, *Baſilius* and *Philanax* gaue good order to the ſtrengthning of the ſiege, fortifying themſelues, ſo as they feared no more any ſuch ſuddaine onſet, as that of *Anaxius*. And they within (by reaſō of *Anaxius* hurt, but eſpecially of *Amphialus*-his) gaue themſelues onely to diligent watch & ward, making no ſallies out, but committing the principall truſt to *Zoilus* and *Lycurgus*. For *Anaxius* was yet forced to keepe his chamber. And as for *Amphialus*, his body had ſuch wounds, and gaue ſuch wounds to his mind, as eaſily it coulde not be determined, whether death or he made the greater haſt one to the other: for when the diligent care of cunning ſurgeons, had brought life to the poſſeſſion of his owne right, Sorrowe and Shame (like two corrupted ſeruaunts) came waiting of it, perſwading nothing but the giuing ouer of it ſelfe to deſtruction. They laide before his eyes his preſent caſe, painting euery piece of it in moſte ougly colours: they ſhewed him his loue wrapped in deſpaire, his fame blotted by ouerthrow; ſo that if before he languiſhed, becauſe he could not obtaine his 1

deſiring, he now lamented becauſe he durſt not deſire the obtaining. Recreant *Amphialus*, (would he ſay to him ſelfe) how dareſt thou intitle thy ſelfe the louer of *Philoclea*, that haſt neither ſhewed thy ſelf a faithfull coward, nor a valiant rebell, but both rebellious and cowardly, which no law cā quite, nor grace haue pitie of? Alas life, what little pleaſure thou dooſt me, to giue me nothing but ſenſe of reproach, and exerciſe of ruine? I would ſweete *Philoclea*, I had died, before thy eies had ſeene my weaknes: & then perchaunce with ſome ſigh thou wouldeſt haue cōfeſſed, thou hadſt loſt a worthy ſeruaunt. But now, caitife that I am, what euer I haue done, ſerues but to builde vp my riuals glory. To theſe ſpeeches he would couple ſuch geſtures of vexation, & would fortifie the geſtures with ſuch effects of furie, as ſometimes offring to teare vp his woūds, ſometimes to refuſe the ſuſtenance of meat, & counſell of phiſitions, that his perplexed mother was driuen to make him by force to be tended, with extreame corſey to her ſelfe, & annoiance to him: till in the end he was contented to promiſe her, he would attempt no violence vpon himſelf, vpon condition he might be troubled by no body, but onely his Phiſitions: his melancholy deteſting all cōpany, ſo as not the very ſurgeons nor ſeruants durſt ſpeak vnto him in doing him ſeruice: only he had praied his mother, as ſhe tendered his life, ſhe would procure him grace; and that without that, ſhe would neuer come at him more.

3 His mother, who had cōfined all her loue only vnto him, ſet only ſuch about him, as were abſolutely at her cōmandement, whom ſhe forbad to let him know any thing that paſſed in the caſtle, till his wounds were cured,

red, but as ſhe from time to time ſhould inſtruct them: ſhe (for her ſelfe) being reſolued, now ſhe had the gouernment of al things in her owne hands, to ſatisfie her ſonnes loue, by their yeelding, or ſatisfie her owne reuenge in their puniſhment. Yet firſt, becauſe he ſhould be the freer frō outward force, ſhe ſent a meſſenger to the campe, to denounce vnto *Baſilius*, that if he did not preſently raiſe his ſiege, ſhe would cauſe the heads of the three Ladies, priſoners, to be cut of before his eies. And to make him the more feare a preſent performance, ſhe cauſed his two daughters & *Zelmane* to be led vnto the wals, where ſhe had made a ſcaffold, eaſie to be ſeene by *Baſilius*: and there cauſed thē to be kept, as ready for the ſlaughter, til anſwere came from *Baſilius*. A ſight full of pittie it was, to ſee thoſe three (all excelling in all thoſe excellencies, wherwith Nature can beautifie any body: *Pamela* giuing ſweetnes to maieſty, *Philoclea* enriching noblenes with humblenes, *Zelmane* ſetting in womanly beautie manlike valour) to be thus ſubiected to the baſeſt iniury of vniuſt Fortune. One might ſee in *Pamela* a willingneſſe to die, rather then to haue life at others diſcretion, though ſometimes a princely diſdaine would ſparkle out of her Princely eies, that it ſhould be in others power to force her to die. In *Philoclea* a prety feare came vp, to endamaske her roſie cheekes: but it was ſuch a feare, as rather ſeemed a kindly childe to her innate humblenes, then any other diſmaiednes: or if ſhe were diſmaied, it was more for *Zelmane*, then for her ſelfe; or if more for her ſelfe, it was becauſe *Zelmane* ſhould looſe her. As for *Zelmane*, as ſhe went with her hands bound (for they durſt not aduenture on her well knowne valour, eſpecially amōg

people which perchãce might be moued by ſuch a ſpectacle to ſome reuolte) ſhe was the true image of ouermaiſtred courage,& of ſpite,that ſees no remedie. For her breaſt ſwelled withall, the bloud burſt out at her noſe, and ſhe looked paler then accuſtomed, with her eies caſt on the ground,with ſuch a grace,as if ſhe were fallen out with the heauens, for ſuffering ſuch an iniury.The lookers on were ſo moued withal,as they miſliked what themſelues did, and yet ſtill did what themſelues miſliked.For ſome,glad to rid themſelues of the dangerous annoyaunce of this ſiege, ſome willing to ſhorten the way to *Amphialus*-his ſucceſſion (whereon they were dependents)ſome, & the greateſt ſome, doing becauſe others did,and ſuffring becauſe none durſt begin to hinder, did in this ſort ſet their hands to this (in their owne conſcience)wicked enterpriſe.

4 But whẽ this meſſage was brought to *Baſilius*,& that this pittifull preparation was a ſufficient letter of credit for him to beleeue it, he called vnto him his chief coũcelors:amõg which,thoſe he chiefly truſted were *Philanax* and *Kalander*(lately come to the campe at *Baſilius* cõmandement, & in him ſelfe wery of his ſolitary life, wanting his ſons preſence, & neuer hauing heard him his beloued gueſtes ſince they parted from him). Now in this doubt what he ſhould do, he willed *Kalander* to giue him his aduiſe: who ſpake much to this purpoſe. You cõmaund me Sir(ſaid he)to ſpeake,rather becauſe you will keepe your wonted graue,& noble manner,to do nothing of importãce without coũcell,then that in this cauſe(which indeed hath but one way)your mind needs to haue any counſell:ſo as my ſpeech ſhall rather be to cõfirme what you haue alredy determined,thẽ to argue

argue againſt any poſſibilitie of other determination. For what ſophiſtical ſcholler can finde any queſtion in this, whether you will haue your incomparable daughters liue, or dye? whether ſince you be here to cauſe their deliuerance, you will make your being here the cauſe of their deſtruction? for nothing can be more vnſenſible, then to thinke what one doth, & to forget the end why it is done. Do therfore as I am ſure you meane to doo, remoue the ſiege, and after ſeeke by practiſe, or other gẽtle meanes, to recouer that which by force you cãnot: & therof is indeed (whẽ it pleaſe you) more coũſel to be takẽ. Once, in extremities the winning of time is the purchaſe of life, & worſe by no meanes then their deaths cã befal vntò you. A mã might vſe more words, if it were to any purpoſe to guild gold, or that I had any cauſe to doubt of your mind: But you are wiſe, & are a father. He ſaid no more, for he durſt not attempt to perſwade the marrying of his daughter to *Amphialus*, but left that to bring in at another conſultation. But *Baſilius* made ſigne to *Philanax*, who ſtãding a while in a maze as inwardly perplexed, at laſt thus deliuered his opiniõ.

If euer I could wiſh my faith vntried, & my counſell vntruſted, it ſhould be at this time, whẽ in truth I muſt cõfeſſe I would be cõtent to purchaſe filẽce with diſcredit. But ſince you cõmand, I obey: onely let me ſay thus much, that I obey not to theſe excellent Ladies father, but to my Prince: & a Prince it is to whõ I giue coũſel. Therefore as to a Prince I ſay, that the graue and (I well know) true-minded counſell of my Lord *Kalander* had come in good time whẽ you firſt tooke armes, before al your ſubiects gate notice of your intention, before ſo much blood was ſpẽt, & before they were driuẽ to ſeek this ſhift for their laſt remedy. But if now, this force you

away, why did you take armes? ſince you might be ſure when euer they were in extremitie they would haue recourſe to this threatning? and for a wiſe man to take in hand that which his enimie may with a word ouerthrow, hath in my conceit great incongruity, & as great not to forethink what his enemy in reaſon wil doo. But they threaten they wil kil your daughters. What if they promiſed you if you remoued your ſiege, they would honorably ſend home your daughters? would you be angled by their promiſes? truly no more ought you be terrified by their threatnings. For yet of the two, promiſe binds faith more then threatning. But indeede a Prince of iudgemēt ought not to conſider what his enimies promiſe, or threaten, but what the promiſers and threatners in reaſō wil do: & the neereſt cōiecture thervnto, is what is beſt for their own behoofe to do. They threatē if you remoue not, they wil kil your daughters, and if you doo remoue, what ſurety haue you, but that they will kil thē, ſince if the purpoſe be to cut off al impediments of *Amphialus*-his ambitiō, the ſame cauſe wil continue when you are away; & ſo much the more encoraged, as the reuenging power is abſent, & they haue the more oportunitie to draw their factious friends about them: but if it be for their ſecurity onely, the ſame cauſe wil bring forth the ſame effect: & for their ſecurity they wil preſerue thē. But it may be ſaid, no man knows what deſperate folkes will do: it is true, and as true that no reaſon nor policie can preuent what deſperate folks wil do: & therfore they are amōg thoſe dangers, which wiſdome is not to reckē. Only let it ſuffice to take away their deſpaire, which may be by granting pardon for what is paſt; ſo as the Ladies may be freely deliuered.

And

And let them that are your ſubiects, truſt you that are their Prince: doo not you ſubiect your ſelfe to truſt them, who are ſo vntruſty as to be manifeſt traitors. For if they finde you ſo baſe-minded, as by their theatning to remoue your force, what indignitie is it, that they would not bring you vnto, ſtill by the ſame threatning? ſince then if Loue ſtir them, loue will keep them from murthering what they loue; and if Ambition prouoke them, ambitious they will be, when you are away, as well as while you are here: take not away your force, which bars not the one, & bridels the other. For as for their ſhewes and words they are but to feare babes, not worthy once to moue a worthy mans conceit; which muſt ſtill cõſider what in reaſõ they are like to do. Their deſpaire I grant you ſhall do wel to preuent, which as it is the laſt of all reſolutions, ſo no man fals into it, while ſo good a way as you may offer, is open vnto thẽ. In ſũ, you are a Prince, & a father of people, who ought with the eye of wiſdome, the hand of fortitude, and the hart of iuſtice to ſet downe all priuate conceits, in compariſon of what for the publike is profitable.

He would haue proceeded on, whẽ *Gynecia* came rũning in amazed for her daughter *Pamela*, but mad for *Zelmane*; & falling at *Baſilius* feet, beſought him to make no delay: vſing ſuch geſtures of cõpaſſiõ inſteed of ſtopped words, that *Baſilius*, otherwiſe enough tender minded, eaſily granted to raiſe the ſiege, which he ſaw dangerous to his daughters: but indeed more carefull for *Zelmane*, by whoſe beſieged perſon, the poore old man was ſtreightly beſieged: ſo as to rid him of the famine of his minde, he went in ſpeed away; diſcharging his ſouldiors: only leauing the authority, as before, in *Philanax* his 6

his hands, he himſelfe went with *Gynecia* to a ſtrong Caſtle of his, where he took coũſell how firſt to deliuer *Zelmane*, whom he called the poore ſtranger, as though onely Law of hoſpitalitie moued him; and for that purpoſe ſent diuers meſſengers to trafficke with *Cecropia*.

CHAP. 20.

[a]The ſweete reſiſtance of the true ſiſters [b] to the ſower aſſaultes of their falſe Aunt. The whipping of [3] Philoclea [5] *and* Pamela. [4]*The patience of both* [6] *and paſsions for their louers.*

1 *Cecropia* by this meanes rid of the preſent daunger of the ſiege (deſiring *Zoilus* and *Lycurgus* to take the care, till their brother recouered, of reuictualling, and furniſhing the Citie, both with men and what els wanted, againſt any new occaſion ſhould vrge them, ſhe her ſelfe diſdaining to harken to *Baſilius*, without he would grant his daughter in mariage to her ſon, which by no means he would be brought vnto) bent all the ſharpeneſſe of her malicious wit, how to bring a comfortable graunt to her ſonne; whereupon ſhe well found no leſſe then his life depended. Therfore for a while ſhe attẽpted all meanes of eloquent praying, and flattering perſwaſion, mingling ſometimes gifts, ſomtimes threatnings, as ſhe had cauſe to hope, that either open force, or vndermining, would beſt winn the caſtle of their Reſolution. And euer as much as ſhe did to *Philoclea*, ſo much did ſhe to *Pamela*, though in manner ſometimes diffe-

ring

ring, as ſhe found fit to leuell at the ones noble height, and the others ſweet lowlineſſe. For though ſhe knew her ſonnes harte had wholly giuen it ſelfe to *Philoclea*, yet ſeeing the equall gifts in *Pamela*, ſhe hoped, a faire grant would recouer the ſorrow of a faire refuſal: cruelly entēding the preſent impoyſoning the one, as ſoone as the others affection were purchaſed.

But in vaine was all her vaine oratory employed. 2
Pamelaes determination was built vpō ſo braue a Rock, that no ſhot of hers could reach vnto it: and *Philoclea* (though humbly ſeated) was ſo inuironed with ſweete riuers of cleere vertue, as could neither be battred, nor vndermined: her witty perſwaſions had wiſe anſweres; her eloquence recompenced with ſweetnes; her threatnings repelled with diſdaine in the one, & patience in the other; her gifts either not accepted, or accepted to obey, but not to bind. So as *Cecropia* in nature violent; cruel, becauſe ambitious; hateful, for old rooted grudge to their mother, & now ſpitefull becauſe ſhe could not preuaile with girles, as ſhe counted them; laſtly, drawne on by her loue to her ſon, & held vp by a tyrannical authoritie, forthwith followed the byas of her own crooked diſpoſition, & doubling and redoubling her threatnings, fel to cōfirme ſome of her threatned effects: firſt withdrawing al cōfort, both of ſeruāts, & ſeruice from thē. But that thoſe excellēt Ladies had bene vſed vnto, cuē at home, & thē foūd in thēſelues how much good the hardnes of educatiō doth to the reſiſtāce of miſery. Then diſhonorably vſing them both in dyet, and lodging, by a contempt to pull downe their thoughts to yeelding. But as before, the conſideration of a priſon had diſgraced al ornamēts, ſo now the ſame cōſideratiō made

made thē attend al diſeaſefulnes. Then ſtil, as ſhe fōund thoſe not preuaile, would ſhe go forward with giuing them terrors, ſometimes with noices of horror, ſometimes with ſuddaine frightings in the night, when the ſolitary darkeneſſe thereof might eaſier aſtoniſh the diſarmed ſenſes. But to all Vertue, and Loue reſiſted, ſtrengthned one by the other, when each found it ſelfe ouer-vehemently aſſaulted. *Cecropia* ſtill ſweetning her fierceneſſes with faire promiſes, if they would promiſe faire; that feeling euill, and ſeing a way far better, their minds might the ſooner be mollified. But they that could not taſte her behauiour, when it was pleaſing, indeed could worſe now, when they had loſt al taſte by her iniuries.

3 She reſoluing all extremities, rather then faile of cōqueſt, purſued on her rugged way: letting no day paſſe, without new and new perplexing the poore Ladies minds, and troubling their bodies: and ſtill ſwelling, the more ſhe was ſtopped, and growing hot with her owne doings, at length, abhominable rage carried her to abſolute tyrānies, ſo that taking with her certaine olde women (of wicked diſpoſitions, and apt for enuie-ſake to be cruel to youth and beautie) with a countenāce impoyſoned with malice, flew to the ſweet *Philoclea*, as if ſo many Kites ſhould come about a white Doue, & matching violent geſtures with miſchieuous threatnings, ſhe hauing a rod in her hād (like a fury that ſhould carry wood to the burning of *Dianas* temple) fel to ſcourge that moſt beautifull body: Loue in vaine holding the ſhield of Beautie againſt her blind cruelty. The Son drew clouds vp to hide his face from ſo pitiful a ſight; & the very ſtone wals did yeeld drops of ſweate

for

for agonie of ſuch a miſchiefe: each ſenſeleſſe thing had ſenſe of pittie; onely they that had ſenſe, were ſenſeles. Vertue rarely found her worldly weakenes more, then by the oppreſſion of that day: and weeping *Cupid* told his weeping mother, that he was ſorie he was not deaf, as well as blind, that he might neuer know ſo lamentable a worke. *Philoclea*, with tearefull eyes, and ſobbing breaſt (as ſoon as her wearines rather then compaſſion, gaue her reſpite) kneeled dowe to *Cecropia*, and making pittie in her face honourable, and torment delightfull, beſought her, ſince ſhe hated her (for what cauſe ſhe tooke God to witneſſe ſhe knew not) that ſhe would at once take away her life, and not pleaſe her ſelf with the tormenting of a poore Gentlewoman. If (ſaid ſhe) the common courſe of hunanitie cannot moue you, nor the hauing me in your owne walles, cannot claime pittie: nor womanly mercie, nor neere alliance, nor remẽbrance (how miſerable ſo euer now) that I am a Princes daughter; yet let the loue (you haue often tolde me) your ſonne beares me, ſo much procure, that for his ſake, one death may be thought inough for me; I haue not liued ſo many yeares, but that one death may be able to conclude them: neither haue my faults, I hope, bene ſo many, but that one death may ſatisfie them. It is no great ſuite to an enemie, when but death is deſired. I craue but that, and as for the graunting your requeſt, know for certaine you loſe your labours, being euery day furtherof-minded from becõming his wife, who vſeth me like a ſlaue. But that in ſtead of getting grace renued againe *Cecropias* fury: ſo that (excellent creature) ſhe was newly again tormented by thoſe helliſh monſters: *Cecropia* vſing no other words, but that

ſhe

ſhe was a proud and vngratefull wench: and that ſhe would teach her to know her owne good, ſince of her ſelfe ſhe would not conceaue it.

4 So with ſilence and patience (like a faire gorgeous armour, hammered vpon by an ilfauoured Smith) ſhe abode their pittiles dealing with her: till, rather reſeruing her for more, then meaning to end, they left her to an vncomfortable leyſure, to conſider with her ſelfe her fortune; both helpleſſe her ſelfe, being a priſoner, and hopeles, ſince *Zelmane* was a priſoner: who therein onely was ſhort of the bottome of miſerie, that ſhe knew not how vnworthilie her Angell, by theſe deuils was abuſed: but wanted (God wot) no ſtings of griefe, when thoſe words did but ſtrike vpon her hart, that *Philoclea* was a captiue, and ſhe not able to ſuccour her. For well ſhe knew the confidence *Philoclea* had in her, and well ſhe knew, *Philoclea* had cauſe to haue confidence: and all troden vnder foot by the wheele of
6 ſenſeleſſe Fortune. Yet if there be that imperious power in the ſoule, as it can deliuer knowledge to another, without bodilie organs; ſo vehement were the workings of their ſpirites, as one mette with other, though themſelues perceaued it not, but only thought it to be the doubling of their owne louing fancies. And that was the onely worldly thing, whereon *Philoclea* reſted her minde, that ſhe knewe ſhe ſhould die beloued of *Zelmane*, and ſhoulde die, rather then be falſe to *Zelmane*. And ſo this moſt daintie Nimphe, eaſing the paine of her minde with thinking of anothers paine; and almoſt forgetting the paine of her bodie, through the paine of her minde, ſhe waſted, euen longing for the concluſion of her tedious tra-

ge-

gedie.

But for a while ſhe was vnuiſited, *Cecropia* employing her time in vſing the like crueltie vpon *Pamela*, her harte growing not onely to deſire the fruite of puniſhing them, but euen to delight in the puniſhing them. But if euer the beames of perfection ſhined through the clowdes of affliction, if euer Vertue tooke a bodie to ſhewe his (els vnconceaueable) beautie, it was in *Pamela*. For when Reaſon taught her there was no reſiſtance, (for to iuſt reſiſtance firſt her harte was enclined) then with ſo heauenly a quietnes, and ſo gracefull a calmenes, did ſhe ſuffer the diuers kindes of torments they vſed to her, that while they vexed her faire bodie, it ſeemed, that ſhe rather directed, then obeyed the vexation. And when *Cecropia* ended, and asked whether her harte woulde yeelde: ſhe a little ſmiled, but ſuch a ſmiling as ſhewed no loue, and yet coulde not but be louelie. And then, Beaſtly woman (ſaide ſhe) followe on, doo what thou wilt, and canſt vpon me: for I know thy power is not vnlimited. Thou maiſt well wracke this fillie bodie, but me thou canſt neuer ouerthrowe. For my part, I will not doo thee the pleaſure to deſire death of thee: but aſſure thy ſelf, both my life and death, ſhall triumph with honour, laying ſhame vpon thy deteſtable tyranny. 5

And ſo, in effect, conquering their doing with her ſuffering, while *Cecropia* tried as many ſorts of paines, as might rather vexe them, then ſpoyle them (for that ſhe would not do while ſhe were in any hope to winne either of them for her ſonne) *Pamela* remained almoſt as much content with triall in her ſelfe, what vertue 4

could

could doo, as grieued with the miſerie wherein ſhe found her ſelfe plunged: only ſometimes her thoughts ſoftned in her, when with open wings they flew to *Muſidorus*. For then ſhe would thinke with her ſelfe, how grieuouſly *Muſidorus* would take this her miſerie; and ſhe, that wept not for her ſelfe, wept yet *Muſidorus*-his teares, which he would weep for her. For gentle Loue did eaſlier yeeld to lamentation, then the conſtancy of vertue would els admitte. Then would ſhe remember the caſe wherein ſhe had left her poore ſhepheard, and ſhe that wiſhed death for her ſelf, feared death for him; and ſhe that condemned in her ſelfe the feeblenes of ſorrow, yet thought it great reaſon to be ſory for his ſorow: & ſhe that long had prayed for the vertuous ioyning themſelues together, now thinking to die herſelf, hartely prayed, that long time their fortunes might be ſeperated. Liue long my *Muſidorus* (would ſhe ſay) and let my name liue in thy mouth; in thy harte my memorie. Liue long, that thou mayſt loue long the chaſt loue of thy dead *Pamela*. Then would ſhe wiſh to her ſelfe, that no other woman might euer poſſeſſe his harte: and yet ſcarcely the wiſh was made a wiſh, when her ſelfe would finde fault with it, as being too vniuſt, that ſo excellent a man ſhould be baniſhed from the comfort of life. Then would ſhe fortifie her reſolution, with bethinking the worſte, taking the counſell of vertue, and comfort of loue.

CHAP. 21.

' Cecropias *indurate tyrannies.* ' *Her deuiſe with the death of one to threaten another.* ' Philoclea *threatned, perſiſteth.* ' *The execution done in ſight of* Philoclea *&* Zelmane. ' Philocleas *ſorrow for her ſiſter.*

So

SO theſe diamonds of the worlde whom Nature had made to be preciouſly ſet in the eyes of her creatures, to be the chiefe workes of her workemanſhip, the chiefe ornaments of the worlde, and Princeſſes of felicitie, by rebellious injury were brought to the vtte moſt diſtres that an enemies hart could wiſh, or a womans ſpite inuent: *Cecropia* dayly in one or other ſorte puniſhing thē, ſtill with her euill torments giuing them feare of worſe, making the feare it ſelfe the ſorrieſt torment of all; that in the end wearie of their bodies they ſhould be content to beſtow them at her appointmēt. But as in labour, the more one doth exerciſe it, the more by the doing one is enhabled to doo; ſtrength growing vpō the worke, ſo as what at firſt would haue ſeemed impoſſible, after growes eaſie: ſo theſe Princeſſes ſecond to none, and far from any ſecond, only to be matched by thēſelues, with the vſe of ſuffering their minds gat the habit of ſuffring ſo, as all feares & terrors were to them but ſummons to a battaile, whereof they knew before hād they would be victorious, & which in the ſuffering was painfull, being ſuffered, was a trophe to it ſelf: whereby *Cecropia* found her ſelf ſtill farder of: for where at firſt ſhe might perchance haue perſwaded them to haue viſited her ſonne, and haue giuen him ſome comforte in his ſickneſſe, drawing neere to the cōfines of Deaths kingdome, now they proteſted, that they would neuer otherwiſe ſpeake to him, then as to the enemy, of moſt vniuſt cruelty towards them, that any time or place could euer make them know.

2 This made the poison swell in her cankred brest, perceiuing that (as in water) the more she grasped the lesse she held: but yet now hauing run so long the way of rigour, it was too late in reason, and too contrary to her passion, to returne to a course of meekenesse. And therefore (taking counsell of one of her olde associates who so far excelled in wickednesse as that she had not onely lost all feeling of conscience, but had gotten a very glory in euill) in the ende they determined, that beating, and other such sharp dealing did not so much pull downe a womans harte, as it bred anger, and that nothing was more enemy to yeelding, then anger; making their tender harts take on the armour of obstinacy: (for thus did their wicked mindes blind to the light of vertue, & onely ied in the night of wickednes interpret of it) & that therfore that was no more to be tried. And for feare of death (which no question would doo most with them) they had bene so often threatened, as they began to be familiarly acquainted with it, and learned to esteeme threatning wordes to be but words. Therefore the last, but best way now was, that the one seing indeede the others death, should perceiue, there was no dallying meant, and then there was no doubt, that a womans soule would do much, rather then leaue so beautifull a body.

3 This being concluded, *Gerropia* went to *Philoclea*, and tolde her, that now she was to come to the last parte of the play for her part, though she found her hard harted obstinacie such, that neither the sweetnesse of louing meanes, nor the force of harde meanes could preuaile with her, yet before she would passe to a further degree of extremity, she had sought to win her sister; in hope, that

that her fortune might be with time satisfied with the loue of so faire a Lady: but finding her also rather more then lesse wilful, she was now minded that one of their deathes should serue for an example to the other, that despising worthy folks was more hurtfull to the despiser, then the despised: that yet because her sonne especially affected her, & that in her owne selfe she was more inclinable to pittie her, thē she had deserued, she would begin with her sister; who that after noone should haue her head cut of before her face; if in the mean time one of them, did not pull out their al-wrought stiches of vnkindnes, she bad her looke for no other, nor longer time thē she told her. There was no assault giuē to the fyers *Philoclea's* mind, that entered so far, as this: for where to all paines and daungers of her selfe, fortune with (his Lieutenant Resolution) had made ready defence; now with the loue she bare her sister, she was driuen to stay, before she determined: but long she staied not, before this reason did shine vnto her, that since in her selfe she preferred death before such a base fellonie, loue did teach her to wish the same to her sister. Therefore crossing her armes, & looking sideward vpon the groūd, Do what you list (said she) with vs: for my part, heauen shall melt before I be remoued. But if you will follow my counsell, for your owne sake (for as for prayers for my sake I haue felt how little they preuaile) let my death first serue for example to win her, who perchaunce is not so resolued against *Amphialus*, and so shall you not onely iustly punish me, who indeede doo hate both you and your sonne) but, if that may mooue you, you shall doo more vertuously in preseruing one most worthy of life, and killing an other

moſt deſirous of death: laſtly in winning her, in ſteed of a peeuiſh vnhappie creature, that I am, you ſhall bleſſe your ſonne with the moſt excellent woman in all praiſe-worthy thinges, that the worlde holdeth. But *Cecropia*, (who had already ſet downe to her ſelfe what ſhe would do) with bitter both termes, & countenaunce, told her, that ſhe ſhould not neede to woo death ouer-egerly: for if her ſiſter going before her did not teach her witt, herſelfe ſhould quickly follow. For ſince they were not to be gotten, there was no way for her ſonnes quiet, but to know, that they were paſt getting. And ſo ſince no intreating, nor threatning might preuayle, ſhe bad her prepare her eies for a new play, which ſhe ſhould ſee within fewe houres in the hall of that caſtle.

4 A place indeed ouerfit for ſo vnfit a matter: for being ſo ſtately made that the bottome of it being euen with the grounde, the roofe reached as hie as any part of the caſtle, at either ende it had conuenient lodgeings. In the one end was (one ſtorie from the ground) *Philocleas* abode, in the other of euen height, *Pamelas*, and *Zelmanes* in a chamber aboue her: but all ſo vaulted of ſtrong, and thickly built ſtone, as one could no way heare the other: each of theſe chambers had a litle windowe to looke into the hall, but becauſe the ſiſters ſhould not haue ſo much comforte, as to looke out to one another, there was (of the outſides) curtaynes drawne, which they could not reach with their hands, ſo barring the reach of their ſight. But when the houre came that the Tragedie ſhould beginne, the curtaynes were withdrawen from before the windowes of *Zelmane*, and of *Philoclea*: a ſufficient challenge to call their

eyes

eyes to defende themſelues in ſuch an incounter. And by and by came in at one ende of the hall, with about a dozen armed ſouldiers a Ladie, led by a couple, with her handes bounde before her: from aboue her eyes to her lippes muffled with a faire kerchiefe, but from her mouth to the ſhoulders all bare: and ſo was led on to a ſcaffold raiſed a good deale from the floore, and all couered with crimſin veluet. But neither *Zelmane*, nor *Philoclea* needed to be tolde, who ſhe was: for the apparell ſhe ware made them too well aſſured, that it was the admirable *Pamela*. Whereunto the rare whiteneſſe of her naked necke gaue ſufficient teſtimonie to their aſtonniſhed ſenſes. But the fayre Ladie being come to the ſcaffold, and then made to kneele downe, and ſo lefte by her vnkinde ſupporters, as it ſeemed that ſhe was about to ſpeake ſomewhat (whereunto *Philoclea*, poore ſoule, earneſtly liſtned, according to her ſpeach euen minded to frame her minde, her harte neuer till then almoſt wauering to ſaue her ſiſters life) before the vnfortunate Ladie could pronounce three wordes, the executioner cutt of the ones ſpeech, and the others attention, with making his ſworde doo his cruell office vpon that beautifull necke. Yet the pittileſſe ſworde had ſuch pittie of ſo pretious an obiect, that at firſt it did but hitte flat long. But litle auailed that, ſince the Ladie falling downe aſtonniſhed withall, the cruell villayne forced the ſworde with another blowe to diuorce the faire marriage of the head and body.

And this was done ſo in an inſtant, that the very act did ouerrun *Philocleas* ſorrow (ſorrow not being able ſo quickly to thunderbolte her harte thorough her

ſenſes, but firſt onely oppreſt her with a ſtorme of amazement) but when her eies ſaw that they did ſee, as condemning themſelues to haue ſeene it, they became weary of their owne power of ſeing: & her ſoule then drinking vp woe with great draughts, ſhe fel downe to deadly traũces: but her waiting iaylors with cruell pitty brought lothed life vnto her; which yet many times tooke his leaue as though he would indeed depart: but when he was ſtaied by force, he kept with him deadly Sorrow, which thus exerciſed her mourning ſpeech. *Pamela* my ſiſter, my ſiſter *Pamela*, woe is me for thee, I would I had died for thee. *Pamela* neuer more ſhall I ſee thee: neuer more ſhall I enioy thy ſweet companie, and wiſe counſell. Alas, thou arte gone to beautifie heauen, and haſte thou lefte me here, who haue nothing good in me, but that I did euer loue thee, and euer will lament thee? Let this day be noted of all vertuous folkes for moſt vnfortunate: let it neuer be mentioned, but among curſes; and curſed be they that did this miſchiefe, and moſt accurſed be mine eyes that behelde it. Sweete *Pamela*; that head is ſtriken of, where onely wiſedome might be ſpoken withall; that bodie is deſtroied, which was the liuing booke of vertue. Deare *Pamela*, how haſte thou lefte me to all wretchedneſſe, and miſerie? Yet while thou liuedſt, in thee I breathed, of thee I hoped. O *Pamela*, how much did I for thy excellencie honour thee, more then my mother, and loue thee more then my ſelfe? Neuer more ſhall I lie with thee: neuer more ſhall we bathe in the pleaſant riuer together: neuer more ſhall I ſee thee in thy ſhephearde apparell. But thou arte gone, and where am I? *Pamela* is dead; and liue I? My

God

God, And with that ſhe fell againe in a ſoune, ſo as it was a great while before they could bring her to her ſelfe againe; but being come to her-ſelfe, Alas (ſaid ſhe) vnkind women, ſince you haue giuen me ſo many deathes, torment me not now with life: for Gods ſake let me goe, and excuſe your hands of more blood. Let me follow my *Pamela*, whom euer I ſought to follow. Alas *Pamela*, they will not let me come to thee. But if they keepe promiſe, I ſhall treade thine owne ſteppes after thee. For to what am I borne (miſerable ſoule) but to be moſt vnhappie in my ſelfe, and yet more vnhappie in others? But ô that a thouſand more miſeries had happened vnto me, ſo thou haddeſt not dyed: *Pamela*, my ſiſter *Pamela*. And ſo, like lamentable *Philomela*, complained ſhe the horrible wrong done to her ſiſter, which if it ſtird not in the wickedly cloſed minds of her tormentors, a pittie of her ſorrow, yet bredde it a wearineſſe of her ſorrow: ſo as onely leauing one to preuent any harme ſhe ſhould doo her ſelfe, the reſt went away, conſulting againe with *Cecropia*, how to make profite of this their late bloodie act.

CHAP. 22.

[2] Cecropias *pollicie to vſe* Zelmanes *interceſsion.* [3] Zelmanes *ſelfe-conflict.* [3] *Her motion to* Philoclea *rather to diſſemble then dye.* [4] Philocleas *reſolution rather to dye then diſſemble.* [5] *At ſight of* Philocleas *head* Zelmanes *extaſies,* [7] *deſperate deſeignes,* [8] *and comfortleſſe complaints.*

1 IN the ende, that woman that vſed moſt to keep company with *Zelmane*, told *Cecropia*, that ſhe founde by many moſt ſenſible proofes in *Zelmane*, that there was neuer woman ſo loued another, as ſhe loued *Philoclea*: which was the cauſe that ſhe (further then the commandement of *Cecropia*) had cauſed *Zelmanes* curtaines to be alſo drawne: becauſe hauing the ſame ſpectacle that *Philoclea* had, ſhe might ſtand in the greater feare for her, whom ſhe loued ſo wel: and that indeed ſhe had hit the needle in that deuiſe: for neuer ſaw ſhe creature ſo aſtoniſhed as *Zelmane*, exceedingly ſory for *Pamela*, but exceedingly exceeding that exceedingnes in feare for *Philoclea*. Therefore her aduice was, ſhe ſhould cauſe *Zelmane* to come and ſpeake with *Philoclea*. For there being ſuch vehemencie of friendſhip between them, it was both likely to moue *Zelmane* to perſwade, and *Philoclea* to be perſwaded. *Cecropia* liked wel of the counſell, and gaue order to the ſame woman to go deale therein with *Zelmane*, and to aſſure her with othe, that *Cecropia* was determined *Philoclea* ſhould paſſe the ſame way that *Pamela* had done, without ſhe did yeeld to ſatiſfie the extremitie of her ſonnes affection: which the woman did, adding thervnto many (as ſhe thought) good reaſons to make *Zelmane* thinke *Amphialus* a fit match for *Philoclea*.

2 But *Zelmane* (who had from time to time vnderſtood the cruell dealing they had vſed to the ſiſters, & now had her own eies wounded with the ſight of ones death) was ſo confuſed withall (her courage ſtill rebelling againſt her wit, deſiring ſtill with force to doo impoſſible

possible matters) that as her desire was stopped with power, so her cõceit was darkned with a mist of desire. For blind Loue,& inuincible valure stil would cry out, that it could not be, *Philoclea* should be in so miserable estate, and she not relieue her: and so while she haled her wit to her courage, she drew it from his owne limits. But now *Philocleas* death (a word able to marshall al his thoughts in order) being come to so short a point either with smal delay to be suffred, or by the giuing her selfe to another to be preuented, she was driuẽ to think, and to desire some leasure of thinking: which the woman granted for that night vnto her. A night that was not halfe so blacke, as her mind; not halfe so silent, as was fit for her musing thoughts. At last, he that would faine haue desperatly lost a thousand liues for her sake, could not finde in his harte, that she should loose any life for her owne sake; and he that despised his owne death in respect of honour, yet could well nye dispense with honor it self in respect of *Philocleas* death: for once the thought could not enter into his harte, nor the breath issue out of his mouth, which could consent to *Philocleas* death for any bargaine. Then how to preuent the next degree to death (which was her being possest by another) was the point of his minds labour: and in that he found no other way, but that *Philoclea* should pretend a yeelding vnto *Cecropias* request; & so by speaking with *Amphialus*, and making faire (but delaying) promises, procure libertie for *Zelmane*; who onely wisht but to come by a sword, not doubting then to destroy them all, and deliuer *Philoclea*: so little did both the mẽ, and their forces seeme in her eyes, looking downe vpon them from the hye toppe of affections tower.

With

3 With that minde therefore (but firſt wel bound) ſhe was brought to *Philoclea*, hauing alredy plotted out in her cõceite, how ſhe would deale with her: & ſo came ſhe with hart and eyes, which did each ſacrifice either to Loue vpon the aultar of Sorrow: and there had ſhe the pleaſing diſpleaſing ſight of *Philoclea*: *Philoclea*, whõ alredie the extreame ſenſe of ſorrow had brought to a dulneſſe therin, her face not without tokens that beautie had bene by many miſeries cruelly battered, & yet ſhewed it moſt the perfection of the beautie, which could remaine vnouerthrowne by ſuch enimies. But whẽ *Zelmane* was ſet downe by her, & the womẽ gone away (becauſe ſhe might be the better perſwaded whẽ no body was by, that had heard her ſay ſhe would not be perſwaded) then began firſt the eyes to ſpeake, and the harts to crie out: Sorrow a while would needes ſpeake his owne language without vſing their tongues to be his interpreters. At laſt *Zelmane* brake ſilence, but ſpake with the onely eloquence of amazement: for all her long methodized oration was inherited onely by ſuch kinde of ſpeeches. Deare Ladie, in extreame neceſſities we muſt not. But alas vnfortunate wretch that I am, that I liue to ſee this day. And I take heauen and earth to witneſſe, that nothing: and with that her breſt ſwelled ſo with ſpite and griefe, that her breath had not leaſure to turne her ſelfe into words. But the ſweet *Philoclea* that had alredie dyed in *Pamela*, and of the other ſide had the heauines of her hart ſomthing quickned in the moſt beloued ſight of *Zelmane*, gheſſed ſomewhat at *Zelmanes* minde; and therefore ſpake vnto her in this ſort. My *Pyrocles* (ſaid ſhe) I know this exceeding comfort of your preſence, is not brought vnto me for any

good

good-will that is owed vnto me: but (as I ſuppoſe) to make you perſwade me to ſaue my life with the ranſome of mine honour: although no bodie ſhould be ſo vnfit a pleader in that cauſe, as your ſelfe, yet perchance you would haue me liue. Your honour? God forbid (ſaid *Zelmane*) that euer, for any cauſe, I ſhould yeeld to any touch of it. But a while to pretend ſome affection, til time, or my libertie might worke ſomthing for your ſeruice: this, if my aſtoniſhed ſenſes would giue me leaue, I would faine haue perſwaded you.

To what purpoſe my *Pyrocles*? (ſaid *Philoclea*) of a 4
miſerable time what gaine is there? hath *Pamelaes* example wrought no more in me? is a captiue life ſo much worth? cā euer it goe out of theſe lips, that I loue any other but *Pyrocles*? ſhal my tongue be ſo falſe a traitor to my hart, as to ſay I loue any other but *Pyrocles*? And why ſhould I do all this? to liue? O *Pamela*, ſiſter *Pamela*, why ſhould I liue? onely for thy ſake *Pyrocles* I would liue: but to thee I know too well I ſhal not liue; and if not to thee, hath thy loue ſo baſe allay, my *Pyrocles*, as to wiſh me to liue? for diſſimulation, my *Pyrocles*, my ſimplicitie is ſuch, that I haue hardly bene able to keepe a ſtraight way; what ſhall I doo in a crooked? But in this caſe there is no meane of diſſimulation, not for the cunningeſt: preſent anſwere is required, and preſent performance vpon the anſwere. Art thou ſo terrible, ô Death? No my *Pyrocles*; and for that I doo thanke thee, and in my ſoule thanke thee; for I confeſſe the loue of thee is heerein my chiefeſt vertue. Trouble me not therefore, deare *Pyrocles*, nor double not my death by tormenting my reſolution: ſince I cannot liue with thee, I wil dye for thee.

Onely

Onely remember me deare *Pyrocles*; and loue the remembrance of me: and if I may craue ſo much of thee, let me be thy laſt loue, for though I be not worthy of thee (who indeed art the worthieſt creature liuing) yet remember that my loue was a worthy loue. But *Pyrocles* was ſo ouercome with ſorrow (which wiſdome & vertue made iuſt in ſo excellent a Ladies caſe, ful of ſo excellēt kindnes) that words were aſhamed to come forth knowing how weake they were to expreſſe his mind, & her merit: and therfore ſo ſtayed in a deadly ſilence, forſaken of hope, & forſaking comfort: till the appointed gardians came in, to ſee the fruits of *Zelmanes* labour: & then *Zelmane* warned by their preſence, fel againe to perſwade, though ſcarcely her ſelfe could tell what; but in ſum, deſirous of delayes. But *Philoclea* ſweetly continuing cōſtant, & in the end puniſhing her importunity with ſilence, *Zelmane* was faine to ende. Yet crauing an other times cōference, ſhe obtained it, & diuers others; till at the laſt *Cecropia* found it was to no purpoſe, and therfore determined to follow her owne way. *Zelmane* yet ſtil deſirous to win (by any meanes) reſpit, euen waſted with ſorrow, & vncertaine, whether in worſe caſe in her preſēce, or abſence, being able to do nothing for *Philocleas* ſuccour, but by ſubmitting the greateſt corage of the earth to fall at the feete of *Cecropia*, and craue ſtay of their ſentence till the vttermoſt was ſeene, what her perſwaſions might doo.

5 *Cecropia* ſeemed much to be moued by her importunitie, ſo as diuers dayes were wonne of painefull life to the excellent *Philoclea*: while *Zelmane* ſuffred ſome hope to cherriſh her mind, eſpecially truſting vpon the helpe of *Muſidorus*, who (ſhe knew) would not be idle in this matter:

matter, till one morning a noise awaked *Zelmane*, from whose ouer-watchfull mind, the tired body had stolne a little sleep: and streight with the first opening of her eyes, Care taking the woonted place, she ranne to the window which looked into the hall (for that way the noise guided her,) and there might she see (the curtaine being left open euer since the last execution) seuen or eight persons in a cluster vpon the scaffold: who by & by retiring themselues, nothing was to be seene there-vpon, but a bason of golde, pitifully enameled with bloud, and in the midst of it, the head of the most beautifull *Philoclea*. The horriblenes of the mischiefe was such, as *Pyrocles* could not at first beleeue his own sen-ses, but bent his woful eyes to discerne it better: where too well he might see it was *Philocleas* selfe, hauing no veile, but beautie, ouer the face, which still appeared to be aliue: so did those eyes shine, euen as they were wont, and they were woont more then any other: and sometimes as they moued, it might well make the be-holder think, that death therin had borowed their beu-tie, and not they any way disgraced by death: so sweet and pearsing a grace they caried with them.

It was not a pitie, it was not an amazement, it was not a sorow which then laid holde on *Pyrocles*, but a wilde furie of desperate agonie, so that he cried out, O tyraunt heauen, traytor earth, blinde prouidence; no iustice, how is this done? how is this suffered? hath this world a gouernment? If it haue, let it poure out all his mischiefes vpon me, and see whether it haue power to make me more wretched then I am. Did she excell for this? haue I prayed for this? abhominable hande that did it; detestable deuil that commaunded it; cursed 6

light

light that beheld it: and if the light be curſed, what are then mine eyes that haue ſeene it? And haue I ſeen *Philocleas* dead, and doo I liue? and haue I liued, not to kill her, but to take of her? and ſtande I ſtill talking? And with that (caried with the madnes of anguiſh, not hauing a nedier way to kill himſelfe) he ranne as hard as euer he could, with his head againſt the wall, with intention to braine himſelf: but the haſte to doo it, made the doing the ſlower. For as he came to giue the blow, his foot tript, ſo as it came not with the full force: yet forcible inough to ſtrike him downe, and withall, to depriue him of his ſenſe, ſo that he lay a while, comforted by the hurt, in that he felte not his diſcomfort.

7 And when he came againe to himſelfe, he heard, or he thought he heard a voice, which cried, Reuēge, Reuenge; whether indeed it were his good Angell, which vſed that voice to ſtay him from vnnaturall murdering of himſelfe; or that his wandering ſpirites lighted vpon that conceite, and by their weakenes (ſubiect to apprehenſions) ſuppoſed they heard it. But that indeed, helped with Vertue, and her valiant ſeruant Anger, ſtopped him from preſent deſtroying himſelfe: yeelding, in reaſon and manhoode, firſt to deſtroy man, woman, and childe, that were any way of kinne to them that were acceſſarie to this crueltie; then to raze the Caſtle, and to builde a ſumptuous monument for her ſiſter, and a moſt ſumptuous for her ſelfe; and then, himſelfe to die vpon her tomb. This determining in himſelfe to do, and to ſeeke all meanes how (for that purpoſe) to get out of priſon: he was content a while to beare the thirſt of death: and yet went he againe to the windowe, to kiſſe the beloued head

with

with his eies, but there saw he nothing but the scaffold, all couered ouer with skarlet, and nothing but solitarie silence, to mourn this mischiefe. But then Sorow hauing dispersde it selfe from his harte, in all his noble partes, it proclaimed his authoritie, in cries, and teares, and with a more gentle dolefulnes, could poure out his inward euill.

Alas (said he) and is that head taken away too, so soone from mine eyes? What, mine eyes, perhappes they enuie the excellencie of your sorrow? Indeede, there is nothing now left to become the eyes of all mā-kind, but teares: and wo be to me, if any exceede me in wofulnes. I do coniure you all, my sences, to accept no obiect, but of Sorow: be ashamed, nay, abhor to thinke of comfort. Vnhappie eyes, you haue seene too much, that euer the light should be welcome to you: vnhappie eares, you shall neuer heare the musicke of Musicke in her voice: vnhappie harte, that hast liued to feel these pangues. Thou hast done thy worst, World, & cursed be thou, and cursed art thou, since to thine owne selfe thou hast done the worst thou couldest doo. Exiled Beautie, let onely now thy beautie be blubbered faces. Widowed Musick, let now thy tunes be rorings, and lamentations. Orphane Vertue, get thee winges, and flie after her into heauen; here is no dwelling place for thee. Why liued I, alas? Alas why loued I? to die wretched, and to be the example of the heauens hate? And hate, & spare not, for your worst blow is striken. Sweet *Philoclea*, thou art gone, and hast caried with thee my loue; & hast thy loue in me, & I wretched mā do liue; I liue, to die cōtinually, till thy reuenge do giue me leaue to dy: & then dy I will, my *Philoclea*, my hart willinglie

8

makes

makes this promiſe to it ſelfe. Surely he did not looke vpon thee, that gaue the cruell blow: for no eye coulde haue abidden to ſee ſuch beautie ouerthrowen by ſuch miſchiefe. Alas, why ſhould they diuide ſuch a head from ſuch a bodie? no other bodye is worthy of that head; no other head is woorthie of that bodye: O yet, if I had taken my laſt leaue, if I might haue taken a holie kiſſe from that dying mouth. Where art thou Hope which promiſeſt neuer to leaue a mā while he liueth? Tell me, what canſt thow hope for? nay tel me, what is there which I would willingly hope after? Wiſhing power (which is accounted infinite) what now is left to wiſh for? She is gone, and gone with her all my hope, all my wiſhing. Loue, be aſhamed to be called Loue: cruell Hate, vnſpeakeable Hate is victorious ouer thee. Who is there now left, that can iuſtifie thy tyrannie, and giue reaſon to thy paſſion? O cruell diuorce of the ſweeteſt mariage that euer was in Nature: *Philoclea* is dead, and dead is with her all goodneſſe, all ſweetneſſe, all excellencie. *Philoclea* is dead, and yet Life is not aſhamed to cōtinue vpon the earth. *Philoclea* is dead: O deadly word, which containeth in it ſelfe the vttermoſt of all misfortunes. But happie worde when thou ſhalt be ſaid of me, and long it ſhall not be, before it be ſaid.

CHAP. 17.

[1] *A Ladies kinde comforts to* Pyrocles *comfortleſſe vnkindneſſe.* [2] *His hardly knowing her.* [3] *Her vnmasking of* Cecropias *fruitleſſe ſophiſtrie.* [4] *Their medley of ſolace and ſorowe.*

Then

THen ſtopping his woordes with ſighes, drowning his ſighes in teares, & drying againe his teares in rage, he would ſitte a while in a wandring muſe, which repreſented nothing but vexations vnto him: then throwing himſelfe ſomtimes vpon the floore, and ſometimes vpon the bedde: then vp againe, till walking was weariſome, and reſt loathſome: and ſo neither ſuffering foode, nor ſleepe to helpe his afflicted nature, all that day and night he did nothing, but weepe *Philoclea*, ſigh *Philoclea*, and crie out *Philoclea*: till as it happened (at that time vpon his bed) towarde the dawning of the day, he heard one ſtirre in his chamber, by the motion of garmẽts; and he with an angry voice asked, Who was there? A poore Gentlewoman (anſwered the partie) that wiſh long life vnto you. And I ſoone death to you (ſaid he) for the horrible curſe you haue giuen me. Certainely (ſaid ſhe) an vnkinde anſwere, and far vnworthy the excellencie of your mind; but not vnſutable to the reſt of your behauiour. For moſt parte of this night I haue hearde you (being let into your chamber, you neuer perceiuing it, ſo was your minde eſtraunged from your ſenſes) and haue hearde nothing of *Zelmane*, in *Zelmane*, nothing but weake waylings, fitter for ſome nurſe of a village, then ſo famous a creature as you are. O God (cried out *Pyrocles*) that thou wert a man that vſeſt theſe wordes vnto me. I tell thee I am ſory: I tell thee I will be ſory in deſpite of thee, and all them that would haue me ioyfull. And yet (replied ſhe) perchaunce *Philoclea* is not

dead, whom you ſo much bemone. I would we were both dead of that condition, ſaid *Pyrocles*. See the folly of your paſſion (ſaid ſhe) as though you ſhould be neerer to her, you being dead, and ſhe aliue; then ſhe being dead, & you aliue: & if ſhe be dead, was ſhe not borne to die? what then do you crie out for? not for her, who muſt haue died one time or other; but for ſome fewe yeares: ſo as it is time, & this world that ſeeme ſo louely things, and not *Philoclea* vnto you. O noble Siſters (cried *Pyrocles*) now you be gone (who were the onely exalters of all womankind) what is left in that ſex, but babling, and buſineſſe? And truly (ſaid ſhe) I will yet a little longer trouble you. Nay, I pray you doo (ſaid *Pyrocles*) for I wiſhe for nothing in my ſhorte life, but miſchiefes, and combers: and I am content you ſhall be one of them. In truth (ſaid ſhe) you would thinke your ſelfe a greatly priuiledged perſon, if ſince the ſtrongeſt buildings, and laſtingeſt monarchies are ſubiect to end, onely your *Philoclea* (becauſe ſhe is yours) ſhould be exempted. But indeede you bemone your ſelfe, who haue loſt a friende: you cannot her, who hath in one act both preſerued her honour, and lefte the miſeries of this worlde. O womans philoſophie, childiſh follie (ſaid *Pyrocles*) as though if I do bemone my ſelfe, I haue not reaſon to doo ſo, hauing loſt more then any Monarchie, nay then my life can be wooith vnto me. Alas (ſaid ſhe) comforte your ſelfe, Nature did not forget her skill, when ſhe had made them: you ſhall find many their ſuperiours, and perchaunce ſuch, as (when your eyes ſhall looke abroad) your ſelfe will like better.

2 But that ſpeech put all good māners out of the conceit

ceit of *Pyrocles*; in ſo much, that leaping out of his bed, he ran to haue ſtriken her: but comming neere her (the morning then winning the field of darkeneſſe) he ſaw, or he thought he ſawe, indeede, the very face of *Philoclea*; the ſame ſweeteneſſe, the ſame grace, the ſame beautie: with which carried into a diuine aſtoniſhment, he fell downe at her feete. Moſt bleſſed Angell (ſaid he) well haſte thou done to take that ſhape, ſince thou wouldeſt ſubmit thy ſelfe to mortall ſenſe; for a more Angelicall forme could not haue bene created for thee. Alas, euen by that excellent beautie, ſo beloued of me, let it be lawfull for me to aske of thee, what is the cauſe, that ſhe, that heauenly creature, whoſe forme you haue taken, ſhould by the heauens be deſtined to ſo vnripe an ende? Why ſhould vniuſtice ſo preuaile? Why was ſhe ſeene to the world, ſo ſoone to be rauiſhed from vs? Why was ſhe not ſuffered to liue, to teach the world perfection? Doo not deceiue thy ſelfe (anſwered ſhe) I am no Angell; I am *Philoclea*, the ſame *Philoclea*, ſo truely louing you, ſo truly beloued of you. If it be ſo (ſaid he) that you are indeede the ſoule of *Philoclea*, you haue done well to keepe your owne figure: for no heauen could haue giuen you a better. Then alas, why haue you taken the paines to leaue your blisfull ſeat to come to this place moſt wretched, to me, who am wretchednes it ſelfe, & not rather obtain for me, that I might come where you are, there eternally to behold, & eternally to loue your beauties? you know (I know) that I deſire nothing but death, which I only ſtay, to be iuſtly reuenged of your vniuſt murtherers. Deare *Pyrocles* (ſaid ſhe) I am thy *Philoclea*, and as yet liuing: not murdred, as you ſuppoſed,

and therefore to be comforted. And with that gaue him her hand. But the ſweet touch of that hande, ſeemed to his aſtraied powers ſo heauenly a thing, that it rather for a while confirmed him in his former beliefe: till ſhe, with vehement proteſtations (and deſire that it might be ſo, helping to perſwade that it was ſo) brought him to yeeld; yet doubtfully to yeelde to this height of al comfort, that *Philoclea* liued: which witneſſing with the teares of ioy, Alas (ſaid he) how ſhall I beleeue mine eies any more? or doo you yet but appeare thus vnto me, to ſtay me from ſome deſperate end? For alas I ſawe the excellent *Pamela* beheaded: I ſaw your head (the head indeede, and chiefe parte of all natures workes) ſtanding in a diſhe of golde, too meane a ſhrine (God wote) for ſuch a relike. How can this be, my onely deare, and you liue? or if this be not ſo, how can I beleeeue mine owne ſenſes? and if I can not beleeue thē, why ſhould I now beleeue theſe bleſſed tidings they bring me?

3 The truth is (ſaid ſhe) my *Pyrocles*, that nether I (as you finde) nor yet my deare ſiſter is dead: although the miſchieuouſly ſuttle *Cecropia* vſed ſlightes to make either of vs thinke ſo of other. For, hauing in vaine attempted the fardeſt of her wicked eloquence, to make eyther of vs yeeld to her ſonne, and ſeeing that neither it, accompanied with great flatteries, and riche preſents, could get any grounde of vs, nor yet the violent way ſhe fell into of crueltie, tormenting our bodies, could preuayle with vs; at laſt, ſhe made either of vs thinke the other dead, and ſo hoped to haue wreſted our mindes to the forgetting of vertue: and firſt ſhe gaue to mine eyes the miſerable ſpectacle of my ſiſters (as

I thought) death: but indeede not my ſiſter: it was onely *Arteſia*, ſhe who ſo cunningly brought vs to this miſery. Truly I am ſory for the poore Gentlewoman, though iuſtly ſhe be puniſhed for her double falſhood: but *Arteſia* muffled ſo, as you could not eaſily diſcerne her; and in my ſiſters apparell (which they had taken from her vnder colour of giuing her other) did they execute: And when I (for thy ſake eſpecially deare *Pyrocles*) could by no force, nor feare be won, they aſſayed the like with my ſiſter, by bringing me downe vnder the ſcaffolde, and (making me thruſt my head vp through a hole they had made therin) they did put about my poore necke a diſhe of gold, whereout they had beaten the bottome, ſo as hauing ſet bloud in it, you ſawe how I played the parte of death (God knowes euen willing to haue done it in earneſt) and ſo had they ſet me, that I reached but on tiptoes to the grounde, ſo as ſcarcely I could breathe, much leſſe ſpeake: And truely if they had kepte me there any whit longer, they had ſtrangled me, in ſteed of beheading me: but then they tooke me away, and ſeeking to ſee their iſſue of this practiſe, they found my noble ſiſter (for the deare loue ſhe vouchſafeth to beare me) ſo grieued withall, that ſhe willed them to doo their vttermoſt crueltie vnto her: for ſhe vowed, neuer to receiue ſuſtenaunce of them, that had bene the cauſers of my murther: and finding both of vs, euen giuen ouer, not like to liue many houres longer, and my ſiſter *Pamela*, rather worſe then my ſelfe, (the ſtrength of her harte worſe bearing thoſe indignities) the good woman *Cecropia* (with the ſame pittie as folkes keepe foule, when they are not fatte inough for

their eating) made vs know her deceipt, & let vs come one to another; with what ioye you can well imagine, who I know feele the like; ſauing that we only thought our ſelues reſerued to miſeries, and therefore fitter for condoling, then congratulating. For my parte, I am fully perſwaded, it is but with a little reſpite, to haue a more feeling ſenſe of the tormentes ſhe prepares for vs. True it is, that one of my guardians would haue me to beleeue, that this proceedes of my gentle couſin *Amphialus:* who hauing hearde ſome inckling that we were euill entreated, had called his mother to his bedſide, from whence he neuer roſe ſince his laſt combat, and beſought, & charged her vpon all the loue ſhe bare him, to vſe vs with all kindneſſe: vowing, with all the imprecations he could imagine, that if euer he vnderſtood for his ſake, that I receiued further hurt then the want of my libertie, he woulde not liue an houre longer. And the good woman ſware to me that he would kill his mother, if he knewe how I had bene dealte with; but that *Cecropia* keepes him from vnderſtanding thinges how they paſſe, onely hauing heard a whiſpering, and my ſelfe named, he had (of aboundaunce, forſooth, of honorable loue) giuen this charge for vs. Whereupon this enlargement of mine was growne: for my parte I know too well their cunning (who leaue no mony vnoffered that may buy mine honour) to beleeue any worde they ſay, but (my deare *Pyrocles*) euen looke for the worſte, and prepare my ſelfe for the ſame. Yet I muſt confeſſe, I was content to robbe from death, and borrowe of my miſery the ſweet comfort of ſeeing my ſweet ſiſter, and moſte ſweete comforte of thee my *Pyrocles*. And ſo hauing leaue,

leaue, I came ſtealing into your chamber: where (O Lord) what a ioy it was vnto me, to heare you ſolemniſe the funerals of the poore *Philoclea*? That I my ſelfe might liue to heare my death bewailed? and by whom? by my deere *Pyrocles*. That I ſaw death was not ſtrong enough to diuide thy loue from me? O my *Pyrocles*, I am too well paide for my paines I haue ſuffred: ioyfull is my woe for ſo noble a cauſe; and welcome be all miſeries, ſince to thee I am ſo welcome. Alas how I pittied to heare thy pittie of me; and yet a great while I could not finde in my hart to interrupt thee, but often had euen pleaſure to weepe with thee: and ſo kindly came forth thy lamentations, that they inforced me to lament to, as if indeed I had beene a looker on, to ſee poore *Philoclea* dye. Til at laſt I ſpake with you, to try whether I could remoue thee frō ſorrow, till I had almoſt procured my ſelfe a beating.

And with that ſhe pretily ſmiled, which, mingled 4
with her teares, one could not tell whether it were a mourning pleaſure, or a delightful ſorrow: but like whē a few Aprill drops are ſcattered by a gentle *Zephyrus* among fine coloured flowers. But *Pyrocles*, who had felt (with ſo ſmal diſtāce of time) in himſelf the ouerthrow both of hope and deſpaire, knew not to what key he ſhould tune his mind, either of ioy, or ſorrow. But finding perfite reaſon in neither, ſuffred himſelfe to be caried by the tide of his imagination, & his imaginations to be raiſed euen by the ſway, which hearing or ſeing, might giue vnto thē: he ſaw her aliue, he was glad to ſee her aliue: he ſaw her weep, he was ſory to ſee her weep: he heard her cōfortable ſpeeches, nothing more gladſome: he hard her prognoſticating her own deſtructiō,

nothing more dolefull. But when he had a little taken breath from the panting motion of ſuch contrarietie in paſſions, he fell to conſider with her of her preſent eſtate, both comforting her, that certainely the worſt of this ſtorme was paſt, ſince alreadie they had done the worſt, which mans wit could imagine: and that if they had determined to haue killed her, they would haue now done it: and alſo earneſtly counſelling her, and inhabling his counſels with vehement prayers, that ſhe would ſo far ſecond the hopes of *Amphialus*, as that ſhe might but procure him liberty; promiſing then as much to her, as the liberalitie of louing corage durſt promiſe to himſelfe.

CHAP. 24.

[1]Amphialus excuſeth. [2]The Princeſſes accuſe. [3]Cecropia ſeeking their death [4]findeth her owne. [5]Amphialus-his death-pangs and ſelfe-killing. [6]The woſull knowledge of it.

1 BVt who would liuely deſcribe the manner of theſe ſpeeches, ſhould paint out the lightſome coulours of affection, ſhaded with the deepeſt ſhadowes of ſorrow, finding them betweene hope and feare, a kind of ſweetenes in teares: til *Philoclea* content to receaue a kiſſe, and but a kiſſe of *Pyrocles*, ſealed vp with mouing lippes, and cloſed them vp in comfort: and her-ſelfe (for the paſſage was left betweene them open) went to her ſiſter: with

with whom she had stayed but a while, fortifying one another (while *Philoclea* tempered *Pamelas* iust disdaine, and *Pamela* ennobled *Philocleas* sweete humblenesse) when *Amphialus* came vnto them: who neuer since he had heard *Philoclea* named, coulde bee quiet in himselfe, although none of them about him (fearing more his mothers violence thē his power) would discouer what had passed: and many messages he sent to know her estate, which brought answere backe, according as it pleased *Cecropia* to indite them, till his hart full of vnfortunate affliction, more and more misgiuing him, hauing impatiently borne the delay of the nights vnfitnesse, this morning he gat vp, and though full of wounds (which not without daunger could suffer such exercise) he apparelled himselfe, and with a countenance, that shewed strength in nothing but in griefe, he came where the sisters were; and weakely kneeling downe, he besought them to pardon him, if they had not bene vsed in that castle according to their worthines, and his duetie; beginning to excuse small matters, poore Gentleman, not knowing in what sort they had bene handled.

But *Pamelaes* hye hart (hauing conceiued mortall 2
hate for the iniurie offred to her and her sister) coulde scarcely abide his sight, much lesse heare out his excuses; but interrupted him with these words. Traitor (said she) to thine owne blood, and false to the profession of so much loue as thou hast vowed, doo not defile our eares with thy excuses; but pursue on thy crueltie, that thou and thy godly mother haue vsed towards vs: for my part, assure thy self, and so do I answere for my sister (whose mind I know) I do not more desire mine owne

safetie

safetie then thy destruction. Amazed with this speech, he turned his eye, ful of humble sorrowfulnesse, to *Philoclea*. And is this (most excellent Ladie) your doome of me also? She, sweete Ladie, sate weeping: for as her most noble kinsman she had euer fauoured him, & loued his loue, though she could not be in loue with his person; and now partly vnkindnes of his wrong, partly pittie of his case, made her sweete minde yeelde some teares, before she could answere; and her answere was no other, but that she had the same cause as her sister had. He replyed no further, but deliuering from his hart two or three (vntaught) sighes, rose, and with most low reuerence went out of their chamber: and streight by threatning torture, learned of one of the women, in what terrible manner those Princesses had bene vsed. But when he heard it, crying out, O God; and then not able to say any more (for his speech went backe to rebounde woe vpon his hart) he needed no iudge to goe vpon him: for no man could euer thinke any otherworthy of greater punishmēt, thē he thought himselfe.

Ful therefore of the horriblest despaire, which a most guiltie conscience could breed, with wild lookes promising some terrible issue, vnderstanding his mother was on the toppe of the leades, he caught one of his seruants swords from him, and none of them daring to stay him, he went vp, carried by furie, in steede of strength; where she was at that time, musing how to goe thorough with this matter, and resoluing to make much of her Neeces in shew, and secreatly to impoison them; thinking since they were not to be wonne, her sonnes loue woulde no otherwise be mitiga-

mitigated.

But when ſhe ſawe him come in with a ſworde drawne, and a looke more terrible then the ſworde, ſhe ſtreight was ſtrickē with the guiltines of her own conſcience: yet the wel known humblenes of her ſon ſomwhat animated her, till he, comming nearer her, and crying to her, Thou damnable creature, onely fit to bring forth ſuch a monſter of vnhappines as I am; ſhe fearing he would haue ſtricken her (though indeed he meant it not, but onely intended to kill himſelfe in her preſence) went backe ſo far, til ere ſhe were aware, ſhe ouerthrew her ſelfe from ouer the Leades, to receaue her deathes kiſſe at the ground: and yet was ſhe not ſo happie as preſently to dye, but that ſhe had time with helliſh agonie to ſee her ſonnes miſchiefe (whom ſhe loued ſo well) before her end; when ſhe confeſt (with moſt deſperate, but not repēting mind) the purpoſe ſhe had to impoiſon the princeſſes, & would then haue had them murthred. But euerie bodie ſeing, and glad to ſee her end, had left obedience to her tyranny. 4

And (if it could be) her ruine increaſed woe in the noble hart of *Amphialus*, who when he ſaw her fal, had his owne rage ſtayed a little with the ſoddennes of her deſtruction. And was I not enough miſerable before (ſaid he) but that before my end I muſt be the death of my mother? who how wicked ſo euer, yet I would ſhe had receaued her puniſhmēt by ſome other. O *Amphialus*, wretched *Amphialus*; thou haſt liued to be the death of thy moſt deere cōpanion & friend *Philoxenus*, and of his father, thy moſt carefull foſterfather. Thou haſt liued to kill a Ladie with thine owne handes, and ſo excellent, and vertuous a Lady, as the faire *Parthenia* 5

was

was: thou haſt liued to ſee thy faithfull *Iſmenus* ſlaine in ſuccouring thee, and thou not able to defende him: thou haſt liued to ſhew thy ſelfe ſuch a coward, as that one vnknowne Knight could ouercome thee in thy Ladies preſence: thou haſt liued to beare armes againſt thy rightfull Prince, thine owne vnckle: Thou haſt liued to be accounted, and iuſtly accounted, a traitor, by the moſt excellent perſons, that this world holdeth: Thou haſt liued to bee the death of her, that gaue thee life. But ah wretched *Amphialus*, thou haſt liued for thy ſake, and by thy authoritie, to haue *Philoclea* tormented: O heauens, in *Amphialus* caſtle, where *Amphialus* commaunded; tormented, tormented? torment of my ſoule, *Philoclea* tormented: and thou haſt had ſuch comfort in thy life, as to liue all this while. Perchance this hande (vſed onely to miſchieuous actes) thinkes it were too good a deede to kill me; or elſe filthy hande, onely woorthy to kill women, thou art afraide to ſtrike a man. Feare not cowardly hand, for thou ſhalt kill but a cowardly traitor: and doo it gladlie; for thou ſhalt kill him, whome *Philoclea* hateth. With that, furiouſly he tare open his doublet, and ſetting the pommell of the ſworde to the grounde, and the point to his breſt, hee fell vpon it. But the ſworde more mercifull then hee to himſelfe, with the ſlipping of the pommell, the point ſwarued, and razed him but vpon the ſide: yet with the fall, his other wounds opened ſo, as hee bledde in ſuch extremitie, that *Charons* boate might verie well be carried in that flood: which yet he ſought to haſten by this meanes. As he opened his dublet, and fell, there fell out *Philocleas*

Ioclea's kniues, which *Cecropia* at the firſt had taken from her, and deliuered to her ſonne; and he had euer worne them next his hart, as the only relique he had of his Saint: now ſeeing them by him, (his ſword being ſo, as weakenes could not well draw it out from his doublette) he tooke the kniues, and pulling one of them out, and many times kiſſing it, and then, firſt with the paſſions of kindnes, and vnkindnes, melting in teares, O deare kniues, you are come in a good time, to reuenge the wrong I haue done you all this while, in keeping you from her bleſſed ſide, and wearing you without your miſtreſſe leaue. Alas, be witnes with me, yet before I die, (and well you may, for you haue layn next my hart) that by my conſent, your excellent miſtreſſe ſhould haue had as much honour, as this poore place could haue brought foorth, for ſo high an excellencie; and now I am condemned to die by her mouth. Alas, other, far other hope would my deſire often haue giuen me: but other euent it hath pleaſed her to lay vpon me. Ah *Philoclea* (with that his teares guſhed out, as though they would ſtriue to ouerflow his bloud) I would yet thou knewеſt how I loue thee. Vnworthie I am, vnhappie I am, falſe I am; but to thee, alas, I am not falſe. But what a traitor am I, any way to excuſe him, whom ſhe condemneth? Since there is nothing left me, wherein I may do her ſeruice, but in puniſhing him, who hath ſo offended her. Deare knife, then doo your noble miſtreſſes commaundement. With that, he ſtabbed himſelfe into diuers places of his breaſt, and throte, vntill thoſe wounds (with the old, freſhly bleeding) brought him to the ſenſeleſſe gate of Death.

By which time, his ſeruants hauing (with feare of 6 his

his furie) abſtained a while from comming vnto him, one of them (preferring duetifull affection before fearfull duetie) came in, and there found him ſwimming in his owne bloud, there giuing a pittiful ſpectacle, where the conqueſt was the conquerors ouerthrow, and ſelfruine the onely triumph of a battaile, fought betweene him, and himſelfe. The time full of danger, the perſon full of worthines, the maner full of horror, did greatlie aſtoniſh all the beholders; ſo as by and by, all the town was full of it, and then of all ages came running vp to ſee the beloued body; euery body thinking, their ſafetie bledde in his woundes, and their honor died in his deſtruction.

CHAP. 25.

[1]Anaxius-his rages for the death[1], Queen Helens *comming for the cure of* Amphialus. *[3]Her complaints ouer him. [4]Her paſport and ſafeconduct, to carrie him to her Chirurgion. [5]The peoples ſorow, [6]ſet downe in a ſong.*

1 BVt when it came, (and quickly it came) to the eares of his proude friende *Anaxius*, (who by that time was growē well of his woūd, but neuer had come abroad, diſdayning to abaſe himſelfe to the companie of any other but of *Amphialus*) he was exceedingly vexed, either with kindnes, or (if a proud hart be not capable therof) with diſdaine, that he, who had the honor to be called the frend of *Anaxius*, ſhould come to ſuch an vnexpected ruine. Therfore, then comming abroad, with a face red in anger, and engrained in pride, with liddes ray-

rayſed vp, and eyes leuelling from toppe to the toe of them that met him, treading, as though he thought to make the earth ſhake vnder him, with his hande vpon his ſword; ſhort ſpeeches, and diſdainfull anſweres, giuing ſtreight order to his two brothers, to goe take the oath of obedience, in his name, of all the ſouldiers, and Citizens in the towne: and withall, to ſweare them to reuenge the death of *Amphialus*, vpon *Baſilius*. He himſelf went to ſee him, calling for all the ſurgeons & phyſicions there; ſpending ſome time in vewing the body, and threatning them all to be hanged, if they did not heale him. But they (taking view of his woundes, and falling down at *Anaxius* feete) aſſured him, that they were mortall, & no poſſible meanes to keep him aboue two dayes aliue: and he ſtood partly in doubt, to kil, or ſaue them, betweene his own furie, and their humblenes. But vowing, with his owne hands to kill the two ſiſters, as cauſers of his friends death: when his brothers came to him, & told him they had done his commaundement, in hauing receaued the oath of allegeance, with no great difficultie: the moſt part terrified by their valure, & force of their ſeruants, & many that had bene forward actors in the rebellion, willing to do any thing, rather then come vnder the ſubiection of *Baſilius* againe; and ſuch fewe as durſt gainſay, being cut of by preſent ſlaughter.

But withall (as the chiefe matter of their comming to him) they told *Anaxius*, that the faire Queen *Helen* was come, with an honorable retinue, to the towne: hūblie deſiring leaue to ſee *Amphialus*, whō ſhe had ſought in many places of the world; & laſtly, being returned into her owne countrie, ſhe heard together of the late ſiege 2

and

and of his combat with the ſtrange Knight, who had dangerouſly hurt him. Wherupon, full of louing care (which ſhe was content euen to publiſh to the world, how vngratefully ſoeuer he dealt with her) ſhe had gotten leaue of *Baſilius*, to come by his frontiers, to cary away *Amphialus* with her, to the excellenteſt ſurgeon then knowen, whom ſhe had in her Countrey, but ſo olde, as not able to trauaile: but had giuen her ſoueraigne annointments, to preſerue his body withal, till he might be brought vnto him: and that *Baſilius* had graunted leaue: either naturall kindnes preuailing ouer all the offences done, or rather glad to make any paſſage, which might leade him out of his countrie, and from his daughters. This diſcourſe *Lycurgus* vnderſtanding of *Helene*, deliuered to his brother, with her vehement deſire to ſee the body, and take her laſt farewell of him. *Anaxius*, though he were fallen out with all womankind (in reſpect of the hate he bare the ſiſters, whom he accounted murtherers of *Amphialus*) yet at his brothers requeſt, graunted her leaue. And ſhe (poore Lady) with grieuous expectation, and languiſhing deſire, caried her faint legs to the place where he lay, ether not breathing, or in all appearance breathing but death.

3 In which pittious plight when ſhe ſaw him, though Sorow had ſet before her minde the pittifulleſt conceit thereof that it could paint, yet the preſent ſight went beyonde all former apprehenſions: ſo that beginning to kneele by the bodie, her ſight ranne from her ſeruice, rather then abide ſuch a ſight; and ſhe fell in a ſoune vpon him, as if ſhe could not chooſe but die of his wounds. But when her breath (aweary to be cloſed

vp

vp in woe) broke the priſon of her faire lippes, and brought memorie (with his ſeruaunt ſenſes) to his naturall office, ſhe yet made the breath conuey theſe dolefull wordes with it. Alas (ſaid ſhe) *Amphialus*, what ſtrange diſeaſes be theſe, that hauing ſought thee ſo long, I ſhould be now ſorie to finde thee? that theſe eyes ſhould looke vpon *Amphialus*, and be grieued withall? that I ſhould haue thee in my power without glory, and embrace thee without comfort? How often haue I bleſt the means that might bring me neer thee? Now, woe worth the cauſe that brings me ſo neer thee. Often, alas, often haſt thou diſdained my teares: but now, my deare *Amphialus*, receiue them: theſe eies can ſerue for nothing elſe, but weepe for thee; ſince thou wouldeſt neuer vouchſafe them thy comforte, yet diſdaine not them thy ſorrowe. I would they had bene more deare vnto thee; for then hadſt thou liued. Woe is me that thy noble harte could loue who hated thee, and hate who loued thee. Alas, why ſhould not my faith to thee couer my other defects, who only ſought to make my Crowne thy foote-ſtoole, my ſelfe thy ſeruaunt? that was all my ambition; and alas thou diſdainedſt it to ſerue them, by whom thy incomparable ſelfe were diſdained. Yet (ô *Philoclea*) whereſoeuer you are, pardon me, if I ſpeake in the bitternes of my ſoule, excellent may you be in all other things (and excellent ſure you are ſince he loued you) your want of pittie, where the fault onely was infiniteneſſe of deſert, cannot be excuſed. I would, O God, I would that you had graunted his deſerued ſuite of marrying you, and that I had bene your ſeruing-maide, to haue made my eſtate the foile of your felicitie, ſo he had liued. How

many weary steps haue I trodden after thee, while my onely complaint was, that thou werte vnkinde? Alas I would now thou werte, to be vnkind. Alas why wouldest thou not cõmaund my seruice, in perswading *Philoclea* to loue thee? who could, or (if euery one could) who would haue recounted thy perfections so well, as I? who with such kindly passions could haue stirred pittie for thee as I? who should haue deliuered not onely the wordes but the teares I had of thee? and so shouldest thou haue exercised thy disdaine in me, and yet vsed my seruice for thee.

4 With that the body mouing somewhat, and giuing a grone full of deaths musicke, she fell vpon his face, & kist him, and with all cried out. O miserable I, that haue onely fauour by miserie: and then, would she haue returned to a fresh careere of complaints, when an aged and wise Gentleman came to her, and besought her, to remember what was fit for her greatnesse, wisdome, & honour: and with al, that it was fitter to shew her loue, in carying the body to her excellent Surgeon, first applying such excellent medicines as she had receiued of him for that purpose, rather then onely shew her selfe a woman-louer in fruitles lamẽtations. She was streight warned with the obedience of an ouerthrowen mind, and therefore leauing some surgeons of her owne to dresse the body, went her selfe to *Amaxius*, & humbling her selfe to him, as lowe as his owne pride could wish, besought him, that since the surgeons there had vtterly giuen him ouer, that he would let her carrie him away in her litter with her, since the worst he could haue should be to die, and to die in her armes that loued him aboue al things; & where he should haue such monu-

monuments erected ouer him, as were fit for her loue, & his worthines: beseeching him withall, since she was in a country of enemies (where she trusted more to *Anaxius* valour, then *Basilius* promise) that he would conuey them safely out of those territories. Her reasons something moued him, but nothing throughly perswaded him, but the last request of his helpe: which he streight promised, warrãting all securitie, as long as that sword had his master aliue. She as happy therein as vnhappines could be (hauing receiued as small cõfort of her owne surgeons as of the others) caused yet the body to be easily conueyed into the litter: all the people then beginning to roare and crie, as though neuer till then they had lost their Lorde. And if the terrour of *Anaxius* had not kept them vnder, they would haue mutinied, rather then suffered his bodie to be caried away.

But *Anaxius* himselfe riding before the litter, with the choyce men of that place, they were affraid euen to crie, though they were readie to crie for feare: but (because that they might doo) euery bodie forced (euen with harming themselues) to doo honour to him: some throwing themselues vpon the grounde, some tearing their clothes, and casting dust vpon their heades, and some euen wounding themselues, and sprinkling their owne bloud in the aire. Among the rest, one accounted good in that kinde, and made the better by the true feeling of sorrowe, roared out a song of Lamentation, which (as well as might be) was gathered vp in this forme.

6 Since that to death is gone the ſhepheard hie,
Whom moſt the ſilly ſhepheards pipe did pryſe,
Your doleſull tunes ſweete Muſes now applie.

And you ô trees (if any liſe there lies
In trees) now through your porous barkes receaue
The ſtraunge reſounde of theſe my cauſefull cries:
And let my breath vpon your braunches leaue,
My breath diſtinguiſh'd into wordes of woe,
That ſo I may ſignes of my ſorrowe leaue.
But if among yourſelues ſome one tree growe,
That apteſt is to figure miſerie,
Let it embaſſage beare your griefes to ſhowe.
The weeping Myrrhe I thinke will not denie
Her helpe to this, this iuſteſt cauſe of plaint.
Your doleſull tunes ſweet Muſes now applie.

And thou poore Earth, whom fortune doth attaint
In Natures name to ſuffer ſuch a harme,
As for to looſe thy gemme, and ſuch a Saincte,
Vpon thy face let coaly Rauens ſwarme:
Let all the Sea thy teares accounted be:
Thy bowels with all killing mettals arme.
Let golde now ruſt, let Diamonds waſte in thee:
Let pearls be wan with woe their damme doth beare:
Thy ſelfe henceforth the light doo neuer ſee.
And you, ô flowers, which ſometimes Princes were,
Till theſe ſtraunge altrings you did hap to trie,
Of Princes looſe your ſelues for tokens reare.
Lilly in mourning blacke thy whitenes die:
O Hiacinthe let Ai be on thee ſtill.
Your doleſull tunes ſweet Muſes now applie.

O Echo

O Echo, all these woods with roaring fill,
And doo not only marke the accents last,
But all, for all reach out my wailefull will:
One Echo to another Echo cast
Sounde of my griefes, and let it neuer ende,
Till that it hath all woods and waters past.
Nay to the heau'ns your iust complaining sende,
And stay the starrs inconstant constant race,
Till that they doo vnto our dolours bende:
And aske the reason of that speciall grace,
That they, which haue no liues, should liue so long,
And vertuous soules so soone should loose their place?
Aske, if in great men good men doo so thronge,
That he for want of elbowe roome must die?
Or if that they be skante, if this be wronge?
Did Wisedome this our wretched time espie
In one true chest to rob all Vertues treasure?
Your dolefull tunes sweete Muses now applie.

And if that any counsell you to measure
Your dolefull tunes, to them still playning say,
To well felte griefe, plainte is the onely pleasure.
O light of Sunne, which is entit'led day,
O well thou doost that thou no longer bidest;
For mourning light her blacke weedes may display.
O Phœbus with good cause thy face thou hidest,
Rather then haue thy all-beholding eye
Fould with this sight, while thou thy chariot guidest.
And well (me thinks) becomes this vaultie skie
A stately tombe to couer him deceased.
Your dolefull tunes sweet Muses now applie.

O Philomela with thy breſt oppreſſed
By ſhame and griefe, helpe, helpe me to lament
Such curſed harmes as cannot be redreſſed.
Or if thy mourning notes be fully ſpent,
Then giue a quiet eare vnto my playning:
For I to teach the world complainte am bent.
You dimmy clowdes, which well employ your ſtayning
This cheereſull aire with your obſcured cheere,
Witneſſe your woſull teares with daily rayning.
And if, ô Sunne, thou euer didſt appeare,
In ſhape, which by mans eye might be perceiued;
Vertue is dead, now ſet thy triumph here.
Now ſet thy triumph in this world, bereaued
Of what was good, where now no good doth lie;
And by thy pompe our loſſe will be conceaued.
O notes of mine your ſelues together tie:
With too much griefe me thinkes you are diſſolued.
Your doleſull tunes ſweete Muſes now applie.

Time euer old, and yonge is ſtill reuolued
Within it ſelfe, and neuer taſteth ende:
But mankind is for aye to nought reſolued.
The filthy ſnake her aged coate can mende,
And getting youth againe, in youth doth flouriſh:
But vnto Man, age euer death doth ſende.
The very trees with grafting we can cheriſh,
So that we can long time produce their time:
But Man which helpeth them, helpleſſe muſt periſh.
Thus, thus the mindes, which ouer all doo clime,
When they by yeares experience get beſt graces,
Muſt finiſh then by deaths deteſted crime.

We

We laſt ſhort while, and build long laſting places:
Ah let vs all againſt ſoule Nature crie:
We Natures workes doo helpe, ſhe vs defaces.
For how can Nature vnto this reply?
That ſhe her child, I ſay, her beſt child killeth?
Your dolefull tunes ſweete Muſes now apply.

Alas, me thinkes, my weakned voice but ſpilleth,
The vehement courſe of this iuſt lamentation:
Me thinkes, my ſound no place with ſorrow filleth.
I know not I, but once in deteſtation
I haue my ſelfe, and all what life containeth,
Since Death on Vertues fort hath made inuaſion.
One word of woe another after traineth:
Ne doo I care how rude be my inuention,
So it be ſeene what ſorrow in me raigneth.
O Elements, by whoſe (men ſay) contention,
Our bodies be in liuing power maintained,
Was this mans death the fruite of your diſſention?
O Phiſickes power, which (ſome ſay) hath reſtrained
Approch of death, alas thou helpeſt meagerly,
When once one is for Atropos diſtrained.
Great be Phyſitions brags, but aid is beggerly,
When rooted moiſture failes, or groweth drie,
They leaue off al, and ſay, death comes too eagerlie.
They are but words therefore that men do buy,
Of any ſince God AEſculapius ceaſed.
Your dolefull tunes ſweete Muſes now applie.

Iuſtice, iuſtice is now (alas) oppreſſed:
Bountifulnes hath made his laſt concluſion:
Goodnes for beſt attire in duſt is dreſſed.

Shepheards bewaile your vttermoſt confuſion;
And ſee by this picture to you preſented,
Death is our home, life is but a deluſion.
For ſee alas, who is from you abſented?
Abſented? nay I ſay for euer baniſhed
From ſuch as were to dye for him contented?
Out of our ſight in turne of hand is vaniſhed
Shepherd of ſhepherds, whoſe well ſetled order
Priuate with welth, publike with quiet garniſhed.
While he did liue, farre, farre was all diſorder;
Example more preuailing then direction,
Far was homeſtriſe, and far was foe from border.
His life a law, his looke a full correction:
As in his health we healthfull were preſerued,
So in his ſickneſſe grew our ſure infection.
His death our death. But ah; my Muſe hath ſwarued,
From ſuch deepe plaint as ſhould ſuch woes deſcrie,
Which he of vs for euer hath deſerued.
The ſtile of heauie hart can neuer flie
So high, as ſhould make ſuch a paine notorious:
Ceaſe Muſe therfore: thy dart ô Death applie;
And farewell Prince, whom goodneſſe hath made glorious.

CHAP.

CHAP. 26.

[1] *The publike griefe amplified.* [2] Anaxius *death-threatning to the Princeſſes.* [3] *Their reſolutenes in it.* [4] *His returne, and ſtop.* [5] Zelmanes *braue challenge vnto him* [6] *ſcorned by him.* [7] *His loue to* Pamela *ſcorned by her.* [8] *His brothers braue loues haue as meane ſucceſſe.*

THe general conſort of al ſuch numbers mourning, perfourmed ſo the naturall times of ſorrow; that euen to them (if any ſuch were) that felt not theloſſe,yet others grief taught them griefe; hauing before their compaſſionate ſenſe ſo paſſionate a ſpectacle,of a young man, of great beautie, beautified with great honour, honored by great valure, made of ineſtimable valure, by the noble vſing of it, to lye there languiſhing, vnder the arreſt of death, and a death, where the manner could be no comfort to the diſcomfortablenes of the matter. But when the bodie was carried thorough the gate, and the people (ſauing ſuch as were appointed) not ſuffred to goe further,then was ſuch an vniuerſal crie,as if they had all had but one life,and all receaued but one blow. 1

Which ſo moued *Anaxius* to conſider the loſſe of his friend, that (his minde apter to reuenge, then tenderneſſe) he preſently giuing order to his brother to keepe the priſoners ſafe, and vnuiſited,till his retourne from cõueying *Helen*, he ſent a meſſenger to the ſiſters, to tel them this curteous meſſage: that at his retourne, with 2

with his owne hands, he would cut off their heads, and ſend them for tokens to their father.

3 This meſſage was brought vnto the ſiſters, as they ſate at that time together with *Zelmane*, conferring how to carrie themſelues, hauing heard of the death of *Amphialus*. And as no expectation of death is ſo painfull, as where the reſolution is hindred by the intermixing of hopes, ſo did this new alarum, though not remoue, yet moue ſomwhat the cõſtancy of their minds, which were ſo vnconſtantly dealt with. But within a while, the excellent *Pamela* had brought her minde againe to his old acquaintance: and then, as carefull for her ſiſter (whom moſt deerely ſhe loued) Siſter (ſaid ſhe) you ſee how many acts our Tragedy hath: Fortune is not yet a wearie of vexing vs: but what? A ſhippe is not counted ſtrong for byding one ſtorme? It is but the ſame trumpet of death, which now perhaps giues the laſt ſounde: and let vs make that profite of our former miſeries, that in them we learned to dye willingly. Truely ſaid *Philoclea*, deare ſiſter, I was ſo beaten with the euils of life, that though I had not vertue enough to deſpiſe the ſweetneſſe of it, yet my weakneſſe bredde that ſtrength, to be wearie of the paines of it: onely I muſt confeſſe, that little hope, which by theſe late accidents was awaked in me, was at the firſt angrie withall. But euen in the darkeneſſe of that horrour, I ſee a light of comfort appeare; and how can I treade amiſſe, that ſee *Pamelas* ſteppes? I would onely (O that my wiſh might take place) that my ſchoole-Miſtres might liue, to ſee me ſay my leſſon truely. Were that a life, my *Philoclea*? ſaid *Pamela*. No, no, (ſaid ſhe) let it come, and put on his worſt face: for at the worſt it is but

but a bug-beare. Ioy is it to me to ſee you ſo well reſolued; and ſince the world will not haue vs, let it loſe vs. Onely (with that ſhe ſtayed a little, and ſight) onely my *Philoclea*, (then ſhe bowed downe, and whiſpered in her eare) onely *Muſidorus*, my ſhepheard, comes betweene me and death, and makes me thinke I ſhould not dye, becauſe I know he would not I ſhould dye. With that *Philoclea* ſighed alſo, ſaying no more, but looking vpon *Zelmane*: who was walking vp & downe the chamber, hauing heard this meſſage from *Anaxius*, and hauing in times paſt heard of his nature, thought him like enough to performe it, which winded her againe into the former maze of perplexitie. Yet debating with her ſelfe of the manner how to preuent it, ſhe continued her muſing humour, little ſaying, or indeed, little finding in her hart to ſay, in a caſe of ſuch extremitie, where peremptorily death was threatned: and ſo ſtayed they; hauing yet that comfort, that they might tarrie togither. *Pamela* nobly, *Philoclea* ſweetly, and *Zelmane* ſadly, and deſperately none of them entertaining ſleepe, which they thought ſhould ſhortly begin, neuer to awake.

But *Anaxius* came home, hauing ſafely conducted 4
Helen: and ſafely he might wel do it: For though many of *Baſilius* Knights would haue attempted ſomething vpon *Anaxius*, by that meanes to deliuer the Ladies, yet *Philanax*, hauing receiued his maſters commãdement, & knowing his word was giuẽ, would not cõſent vnto it. And the black-Knight (who by thẽ was able to carie abroad his woũds) did not know therof; but was bringing forces, by force to deliuer his Lady. So as *Anaxius*, interpreting it rather feare, then faith, and making

euen

euen chance an argument of his vertue, returned: and as ſoone as he was returned, with a felon hart calling his brothers vp with him, he went into the chamber, where they were all three togither; with full intention to kill the ſiſters with his owne hands, and ſend their heads for tokens to their father: Though his brothers (who were otherwiſe inclined) diſſwaded him: but his reuerence ſtayed their perſwaſions. But when he was come into the chamber, with the very words of cholerike threatning climing vp his throate, his eies firſt lighted vpon *Pamela*; who hearing he was comming, and looking for death, thought ſhe would keepe her owne maieſtie in welcomming it; but the beames thereof ſo ſtrake his eyes, with ſuch a counterbuffe vnto his pride, that if his anger could not ſo quickly loue, nor his pride ſo eaſily honor, yet both were forced to finde a worthineſſe.

5 Which while it bred a pauſe in him, *Zelmane* (who had ready in her mind both what and how to ſay) ſtept out vnto him, & with a reſolute ſtayednes (void either of anger, kindnes, diſdaine, or humbleneſſe) ſpake in this ſort. *Anaxius* (ſaid ſhe) if *Fame* haue not bene ouerpartiall to thee, thou art a man of exceeding valour. Therefore I doo call thee euen before that vertue, and will make it the iudge betweene vs. And now I doo affirme, that to the eternall blot of all the faire actes that thou haſt done, thou doeſt weakly, in ſeeking without daunger to reuenge his death, whoſe life with daunger thou mightſt perhaps haue preſerued: thou dooſt cowardly, in going about by the death of theſe excellent Ladies, to preuent the iuſt puniſhmēt, that hereafter they by the powers, which they better then their father

ther, or any other could make, might lay vpon thee; and dooſt moſt baſely, in once preſenting thy ſelfe as an executioner; a vile office vpon men, and in a iuſt cauſe: beyond the degree of any vile worde, in ſo vniuſt a cauſe, and vpon Ladies, and ſuch Ladies. And therefore, as a hangman, I ſay, thou art vnworthy to be counted a Knight, or to be admitted into the companie of Knights. Neither for what, I ſay, will I alleadge other reaſons, of wiſdome, or iuſtice, to prooue my ſpeech, becauſe I know thou dooſt diſdaine to be tied to their rules: but euen in thine owne vertue (whereof thou ſo much glorieſt) I will make my triall: and therefore defie thee, by the death of one of vs two, to proue, or diſproue theſe reproaches. Chooſe thee what armes thou likeſt, I onely demaund, that theſe Ladies (whom I defend) may in liberty ſee the combat.

When *Zelmane* began her ſpeech, the excellency of her beautie, and grace, made him a little content to heare. Beſides that, a new leſſon he had read in *Pamela*, had already taught him ſome regard. But when ſhe entered into brauerie of ſpeech, he thought at firſt, a mad, and railing humor poſſeſt her; till, finding the ſpeeches hold well together, and at length come to flatte challenge of combat; he ſtood leaning back with his bodie and head, ſometimes with bent browes looking vpon the one ſide of her, ſometimes of the other, beyonde maruell maruailing, that he, who had neuer heard ſuch ſpeeches from any Knight, ſhould be thus rebuffed by a woman; and that maruell made him heare out her ſpeech: which ended, he turned his head to his brother *Zoilus*, and ſaid nothing, but onely lifting vp his eyes, ſmiled. But *Zelmane* finding his minde, *Anaxius* 6

(ſaid

(said she) perchaunce thou disdaynest to answere me, because as a woman, thou thinkest me not fitte to be fought withall. But I tell thee, that I haue bene trayned vp in martial matters, with so good successe, that I haue many times ouercome better Knightes then thy selfe: and am well knowen to be equall in feates of armes, to the famous *Pyrocles*, who slewe thy valiaunt Vncle, the Giant *Euardes*. The remembraunce of his Vncles death something netled him, so as he answered thus.

Indeed (saide he) any woman may be as valiaunt as that coward, and traytorly boy, who slewe my Vncle trayterously, and after ranne from me in the plaine field. Fiue thousand such could not haue ouercome *Euardes*, but by falshood. But I sought him all ouer *Asia*, following him still from one of his cony-holes to another: till, comming into this Countrie, I heard of my friendes being besieged, and so came to blowe away the wretches that troubled him. But whersoeuer the miserable boy flie, heauen, nor hell, shall keep his harte from being torne by these handes. Thou lyest in thy throate (said *Zelmane*) that boye, where euer he went, did so noble actes, as thy harte (as proude as it is) dares not thinke of, much lesse performe. But to please thee the better with my presence, I tell thee, no creature can be neerer of kinne to him, then my selfe: and so well we loue, that he woulde not be sorrier for his owne death, then for mine: I being begotten by his father, of an Amazon Ladie. And therefore, thou canst not deuise to reuenge thy selfe more vpon him, then by killing me: which, if thou dareste doo manfullie, doo it; otherwise, if thou harme these incomparable Ladies, or

my

my ſelfe, without daring to fight with me, I proteſt before theſe Knightes, and before heauen, and earth, (that will reueale thy ſhame) that thou art the beggerlieſt daſtardly villaine, that diſhonoureth the earth with his ſteppes: and if thou letteſt me ouer-liue them, ſo will I blaze thee. But all this could not moue *Anaxius*, but that he onely ſaid, Euill ſhould it become the terror of the world, to fight, much leſſe to ſkolde with thee.

But (ſaid he) for the death of theſe ſame (pointing to the Princeſſes) of my grace, I giue them life. And withall, going to *Pamela*, and offring to take her by the chin, And as for you, Minion (ſaid he) yeeld but gently to my will, and you ſhall not only liue, but liue ſo happely, He would haue ſaid further, whē *Pamela*, diſpleaſed both with words, matter, and maner, putting him away with her faire hand, Proud beaſt (ſaid ſhe) yet thou plaieſt worſe thy Comedy, then thy Tragedy. For my part, aſſure thy ſelfe, ſince my deſtiny is ſuch, that at ech moment my life & death ſtand in equall balance, I had rather haue thee, & think thee far fitter to be my hangman, then my huſband. Pride & anger, would faine haue cruelly reuēged ſo bitter an anſwer, but alredy *Cupia* had begun to make it his ſport, to pull his plumes: ſo that, vnuſed to away of courteſie, and put out of his byas of pride, he haſtily went away, grumbling to himſelfe, betwene threatning & wiſhing; leauing his brothers with thē: the elder of whom, *Lycurgus*, liked *Philoclea*, & *Zoilus* would nedes loue *Zelmane*, or at leſt, entertain themſelues with making thē beleeue ſo. *Lycurgus* more braggard, & nere his brothers humor, begā, with ſetting foorth their bloud, their deedes, how many they 7 3

they had despised, of most excellent womē; how much they were boūd to them, that would seek that of them. In summe, in all his speeches, more like the bestower, then the desirer of felicitie. Whom it was an excellent pastime (to those that would delight in the play of vertue) to see, with what a wittie ignorance she would not vnderstand: and how, acknowledging his perfections, she would make, that one of his perfections, not to be iniurious to Ladies. But when he knew not how to replie, then would he fall to touching and toying, still vewing his graces in no glasse but self-liking. To which, *Philocleas* shamefastnes, and humblenes, were as strong resisters, as choller, and disdaine. For though she yeelded not, he thought she was to be ouercome: and that thought a while stayed him from further violence. But *Zelmane* had eye to his behauiour, and set in her memorie, vpon the score of Reuenge, while she her selfe was no lesse attempted by *Zoilus*; who lesse full of bragges, was forwardest in offering (indeed) dishonourable violence.

CHAP. 27.

[1] Zelmanes *perswasions to temporize, and referre them to* Basilius. [2] Anaxius-*his embassage to treate the mariage*. [3] Basilius *recourse to a newe Oracle*, [4] *and his negatiue thereon*. [5] *The flattering relation of his* Mercurie. [6] *The brothers course to resist force without, and vse force within.*

But

BVt when after their fruitleſſe labours they had gone away, called by their brother, (who began to be perplexed betweene new conceaued deſires, and diſdaine, to be diſdained) *Zelmane* (who with moſt aſſured quietneſſe of iudgement looked into their preſent eſtate) earneſtly perſwaded the two ſiſters, that to auoide the miſchiefes of prowde outrage, they would onely ſo farre ſute their behauiour to their eſtates, as they might winne time; which as it could not bring them to worſe caſe then they were', ſo it might bring forth inexpected relief. And why (ſaid *Pamela*) ſhal we any longer flatter aduerſity? Why ſhould we delight to make our ſelues any longer balls to iniurious *Fortune*, ſince our owne kinne are content traitorouſly to abuſe vs? Certainely, in miſhap it may be ſome comforte to vs, that we are lighted in theſe fellowes handes, who yet will keepe vs from hauing cauſe of being miſerable by our friends meanes. Nothing grieues me more, then that you, noble Ladie *Zelmane* (to whome the worlde might haue made vs able to doo honour) ſhoulde receaue onely hurte by the contagion of our miſerie. As for me, and my ſiſter, vndoubtedly it becomes our birth to thinke of dying nobly, while we haue done, or ſuffered nothing, which might make our ſoule aſhamed at the parture from theſe bodies. Hope is the fawning traitour of the minde, while vnder colour of friendſhip, it robbes it of his chiefe force of reſolution. Vertuous and faire 1

Ladie (ſaid *Zelmane*) what you ſay is true; and that truth may well make vp a part in the harmonie of your noble thoughts. But yet the time (which ought alwaies to be one) is not tuned for it; while that may bring foorth any good, doo not barre your ſelfe thereof: for then would be the time to die nobly, when you
» cã not liue nobly. Then ſo earneſtly ſhe perſuaded with them both, to referre themſelues to their fathers conſent (in obtayning whereof they knewe ſome while would be ſpent) and by that meanes to temper the mindes of their prowde woers; that in the ende *Pamela* yeelded to her, becauſe ſhe ſpake reaſon; and *Philoclea* yeelded to her reaſon, becauſe ſhe ſpake it.

2 And ſo when they were againe ſollicited in that little pleaſing petition, *Pamela* forced her ſelfe to make anſwere to *Anaxius*, that if her father gaue his conſent ſhe would make her ſelfe belieue, that ſuch was the heauenly determination, ſince ſhe had no meanes to auoide it. *Anaxius* (who was the moſt franke promiſer to him ſelfe of ſucceſſe) nothing doubted of *Baſilius* conſent, but rather aſſured him ſelfe, he would be his oratour in that matter: And therefore he choſe out an officious ſeruaunt (whome he eſteemed very wiſe, becauſe he neuer found him but iuſt of his opinion) and willed him to be his embaſſadour to *Baſilius*, and to make him knowe, that if he meant to haue his daughter both ſafe and happie, and deſired him ſelfe to haue ſuch a ſonne in lawe, as would not onely protect him in his quiet courſe, but (if he liſted to accept it) would giue him the monarchy of the worlde, that then he ſhould receaue *Anaxius*, who neuer before knewe what it was to pray any thing. That if he did not,

not, he would make him know, that the power of *Anaxius* was in euery thing beyonde his will, and yet his will not to be resisted by any other power. His seruaunt with smiling and caste-vp looke, desired God to make his memorie able to containe the treasure of that wise speach: and therefore besought him to repeate it againe, that by the oftener hearing it, his mind might be the better acquainted with the diuinenesse therof, and that being gratiously granted, he then doubted not by carying with him in his conceit, the grace wherewith *Anaxius* spake it, to persuade rocky minds to their owne harme: so little doubted he to win *Basilius* to that, which he thought would make him thinke the heauens opened, when he harde but the proffer thereof. *Anaxius* grauely allowed the probabilitie of his coniecture, and therefore sent him away, promising him he should haue the bringing vp of his second sonne by *Pamela*.

The messenger with speede perfourmed his Lords commaundement to *Basilius*, who by nature quiet, and by superstition made doubtfull, was lothe to take any matter of armes in hand, wherin already he had found so slowe succesſe; though *Philanax* vehemently vrged him therunto, making him see that his retiring back did encourage iniuries. But *Basilius* betwixt the feare of *Anaxius* might, the passiō of his loue, & iealousie of his estate, was so perplexed, that not able to determine, he tooke the cōmon course of mē, to flie only thē to deuotiō, whē they want resolutiō: so detaining the messēger with delaies, he deferred the directing of his course to the coūsell of *Apollo*, which because himself at that time 3

could not well go to require, he entruſted the matter to his beſt truſted *Philanax*: who (as one in whom obedience was a ſufficient reaſon vnto him) wente with diligence to *Delphos*, where being entred into the ſecrete place of the temple, and hauing performed the ſacrifices vſuall, the ſpirite that poſſeſt the propheſying woman, with a ſacred fury, attended not his demaund, but as if it would argue him of incredulitie, tolde him, not in darke wonted ſpeeches, but plainely to be vnderſtood, what he came for, and that he ſhould returne to *Baſilius*, and will him to denie his daughters to *Anaxius* and his brothers, for that they were reſerued for ſuch as were better beloued of the gods. That he ſhould not doubte, for they ſhould returne vnto him ſafely and ſpeedily. And that he ſhould keepe on his ſolitary courſe, till bothe *Philanax* and *Baſilius* fully agreed in the vnderſtanding of the former pro-
» phecie: withall, commaunding *Philanax* from thence forward to giue tribute, but not oblation, to humane wiſedome.

4 *Philanax* then finding that reaſon cannot ſhewe it
» ſelf more reaſonable, then to leaue reaſoning in things aboue reaſon, returnes to his Lorde, and like one that preferred truth before the maintaining of an opinion, hidde nothing from him, nor from thence foorth durſte any more diſſwade him, from that which he founde by the celeſtiall prouidence directed; but he him ſelfe looking to repayre the gouernment as much as in ſo broken an eſtate by ciuill diſſention he might, and fortifying with notable arte, bothe the lodges, ſo as they were almoſt made vnaprochable, he lefte *Ba-*

ſilius

filius to bemone the abſence of his daughters, and to bewayle the impriſonment of *Zelmane*: yet wholy giuen holily to obey the Oracle, he gaue a reſolute negatiue vnto the meſſenger of *Anaxius*, who all this while had waited for it, yet in good termes deſiring him to ſhewe him ſelfe, in reſpect of his birth and profeſſion, ſo Princely a Knight, as without forcing him to ſeeke the way of force, to deliuer in noble ſorte thoſe Ladies vnto him, and ſo ſhould the iniurie haue bene in *Amphialus*, and the benefite in him.

The meſſenger went backe with this anſwere, yet 5
hauing euer vſed to ſugre any thing which his Maiſter was to receaue, he tolde him, that when *Baſilius* firſt vnderſtood his deſires, he did ouerreach ſo farre all his moſt hopefull expectations, that he thought it were too great a boldneſſe to harken to ſuch a man, in whome the heauens had ſuch intereſt, without asking the Gods counſell, and therefore had ſent his principall counſailour to *Delphos*, who although he kepte the matter neuer ſo ſecrete, yet his diligence, inſpired by *Anaxius* his priuiledge ouer all worldly thinges, had founde out the ſecrete, which was, that he ſhould not preſume to marrie his daughters, to one who already was enrolled among the demie-Gods, and yet much leſſe he ſhould dare the attempting to take them out of his hands.

Anaxius, who till then had made Fortune his crea- 6
tor, and Force his God, nowe beganne to finde an other wiſedome to be aboue, that iudged ſo rightly of him: and where in this time of his ſeruauntes wayting for *Baſilius* reſolution, he and his brothers had

courted their Ladies, as whome they vouchſafed to haue for their wiues, he reſolued now to dally no longer in delayes, but to make violence his Oratour, ſince he had found perſuaſions had gotten nothing but anſweres. Which intention he opened to his brothers, who hauing all this while wanted nothing to take that way, but his authoritie, gaue ſpurres to his running, and, vnworthy men, neither feeling vertue in themſelues, nor tendring it in others, they were headlong to make that euill conſorte of loue and force, when *Anaxius* had worde, that from the Tower there were deſcried ſome companies of armed men, marching towardes the towne; wherefore he gaue preſente order to his ſeruauntes, and ſouldiers, to goe to the gates and walles, leauing none within but himſelfe, and his brothers: his thoughts then ſo full of their intended pray, that *Mars*-his lowdeſt trumpet could ſcarcely haue awaked him.

CHAP. 28.

[1] Zoilus *the meſſenger,* [2] *and firſt offerer of force,* [3] *is forced to flie, and die.* [4] Lycurgus *pointed to kill,* [5] *is fought withal,* [6] *foiled,* [7] *& killed.* [8] Anaxius *the* Reuenger *with* Pyrocles *the* Puniſher *braue, and brauely combatted.*

1 BVt while he was directing what he would haue done, his yongeſt brother *Zoilus*, glad that he had the commiſſion, went in the name of *Anaxius*, to tel the ſiſters, that ſince he had anſwere from their father, that he and

and his brother *Licurgus*, ſhould haue them in what ſort it pleaſed them, that they would now graunt them no longer time, but preſently to determine, whether they thought it more honorable comfort to be compelled, or perſwaded. *Pamela* made him anſwere, that in a matter whereon the whole ſtate of her life depended, and wherin ſhe had euer anſwered, ſhe would not lead, but follow her parents pleaſure; ſhe thought it reaſon ſhe ſhould, either by letter, or particular meſſēger vnderſtād ſomthing from thēſelues, & not haue her be led bound to the report of their partiall ſeruants, & therefore, as to their words, ſhe & her ſiſter, had euer a ſimple & true reſolution, ſo againſt their vniuſt force, God, they hoped, would either arme their liues, or take away their liues.

Wel Ladies (ſaid he) I wil leaue my brothers, who by & by wil come vnto you, to be their own ambaſſadors, for my part, you muſt now do my ſelf ſeruice, and with that turning vp his muſtuchoes, and marching as if he would begin a pauen, he went toward *Zelmane*. But *Zelmane* (hauing heard all this while of the meſſengers, being with *Baſilius*, much to do to keepe thoſe excellent Ladies from ſeeking by the paſport of death, to eſcape thoſe baſe dangers wherevnto they found themſelues ſubiect) ſtill hoping that *Muſidorus* would finde ſome meanes to deliuer them; and therefore had often both by her owne example, & comfortable reaſons, perſwaded thē to ouerpaſſe many inſolent indignities of their proud ſutors, who thought it was a ſufficient fauour not to doo the vttermoſt iniurie; now come againe to the ſtreight ſhe moſt feared for them, either of death or diſhonor, if heroicall courage would haue let her, ſhe had beene beyonde herſelfe amazed, but that 2

yet held vp her wit, to attend the vttermoſt occaſion, which euē then brought his hairie forehead vnto her: for *Zoilus* ſmacking his lippes, as for the Prologue of a kiſſe, and ſomething aduancing himſelfe, Darling (ſaid he) let thy hart be full of ioy, and let thy faire eies be of counſel with it, for this day thou ſhalt haue *Zoilus*, whō many haue lōged for; but none ſhall haue him, but *Zelmane*. And oh, how much glory I haue to think what a race will be betwene vs. The world, by the heauens, the world will be too litle for them: And with that, he would haue put his arme about her necke, but ſhe, withdrawing her ſelfe from him, My Lord (ſaid ſhe) much good may your thoughts do you, but that I may not diſſemble with you, my natiuitie being caſt by one that neuer failed in any of his prognoſtications, I haue bene aſſured, that I ſhould neuer be apt to beare children. But ſince you wil honor me with ſo hie fauor, I muſt onely deſire that I may performe a vow which I made among my coūtriwomen, the famous *Amazons*, that I would neuer marrie nōne, but ſuch one as was able to withſtand me in Armes: therfore, before I make mine own deſire ſeruiceable to yours, you muſt vouchſafe to lend me armor and weapons, that at leaſt, with a blow or two of the ſword, I may not finde my ſelfe periured to my ſelfe. But *Zoilus* (but laughing with a hartie lowdnes) went by force to embrace her; making no other anſwere, but ſince ſhe had a minde to trie his Knighthood, ſhe ſhould quickly know what a man of armes he was: and ſo, without reuerence to the Ladies, began to ſtruggle with her.

But in *Zelmane* then Diſdaine became wiſdome, & Anger gaue occaſion. For abiding no longer aboad in

the

the matter, ſhe that had not put off, though ſhe had diſguiſed, *Pyrocles*, being farre fuller of ſtrong nimblenes, tript vp his feete, ſo that he fel down at hers. And withall (meaning to purſue what ſhe had begun) puld out his ſword, which he ware about him: but before ſhe could ſtrike him withall, he gat vp, and ranne to a faire chamber, where he had left his two brethrē, preparing themſelues to come downe to their miſtreſſes. But ſhe followed at his heeles, & euē as he came to throw himſelf into their arms for ſuccor, ſhe hit him with his own ſword, ſuch a blow vpō the waſt, that ſhe almoſt cut him a ſūder: once, ſhe ſundred his ſoule frō his body, ſēding it to *Proſerpina*, an angry Goddeſſe againſt rauiſhers.

But *Anaxius*, ſeing before his eyes the miſerable end 4
of his brother, fuller of deſpite thē wrath, & yet fuller of wrath then ſorow, looking with a wofull eye vpon his brother *Lycurgus*, Brother, ſaid he, chaſtice this vile creature, while I go down, & take order leſt further miſchief ariſe: & ſo went down to the Ladies, whom he viſited, doubting there had bene ſome further practiſe thē yet he conceiued. But finding thē only ſtrong in pacience, he went & lockt a great Iron gate, by which onely any body might mounte to that part of the Caſtle, rather to conceale the ſhame of his brother, ſlaine by a woman, then for doubt of any other anoyance, and thē went vp to receaue ſome comfort of the execution, he was ſure his brother had done of *Zelmane*.

But *Zelmane* no ſooner ſaw thoſe brothers, of whom 5
Reaſō aſſured her ſhe was to expect reuēge, but that ſhe lept to a target, as one that well knew the firſt marke of valure to be defence. And thē accepting the oportunitie of *Anaxius* going away, ſhe waited not the pleaſure

of

of *Lycurgus*, but without any words (which ſhe euer thought vaine, whē reſolutiō tooke the place of perſwaſion) gaue her owne hart the contentment to be the aſſailor. *Lycurgus*, who was in the diſpoſitiō of his nature hazardouſe, & by the luckie paſſing through many dangers, growne confident in himſelfe, went toward her, rather as to ſpoile, then to fight, ſo farre from feare, that his aſſuredneſſe diſdained to hope. But whē her ſword made demonſtrations aboue al flattery of argumēts, & that he found ſhe preſt ſo vpon him, as ſhewed that her courage ſprang not from blind deſpair, but was garded both with cunning & ſtrength: ſelf-loue thē firſt in him diuided it ſelfe frō vain-glory, & made him find that the world of worthines had not his whole globe cōpriſed in his breſt, but that it was neceſſary to haue ſtrong reſiſtāce againſt ſo ſtrong aſſailing. And ſo between thē, for a few blowes, *Mars* himſelf might haue bin delighted to looke on. But *Zelmane*, who knew that in her caſe, ſlowneſſe of victory was little better thē ruine, with the bellowes of hate, blew the fire of courage, and he ſtriking a maine blow at her head, ſhe warded it with the ſhield, but ſo warded, that the ſhield was cut in two pieces, while it protected her, & withall ſhe ran in to him, and thruſting at his breſt, which he put by with his target, as he was lifting vp his ſword to ſtrike again, ſhe let fall the piece of her ſhield, and with her left hand catching his ſword of the inſide of the pōmel, with nimble & ſtrong ſleight, ſhe had gottē his ſword out of his hand before his ſence could cōuey to his imaginatiō, what was to be
6 doubted. And hauing now two ſwords againſt one ſhield, meaning not fooliſhly to be vngratefull to good fortune, while he was no more amazed with his being vnweapned, then with the ſuddainnes therof, ſhe gaue him

him ſuch a woũd vpõ his head, in deſpite of the ſhields ouer-weak reſiſtãce, that withal he fel to the groũd, aſtoniſhed with the paine, & agaſt with feare. But ſeing *Zelmane* ready to cõclude her victory in his death, bowing vp his head to her, with a countenance that had forgotten al pride, Enough excellent Lady, ſaid he, the honor is yours: Wherof you ſhall want the beſt witnes, if you kil me. As you haue takẽ frõ men the glory of mãhood, returne ſo now againe to your owne ſex, for mercy. I wil redeeme my life of you with no ſmal ſeruices, for I will vndertake to make my brother obey all your commãdements. Grant life I beſeech you, for your own honor, and for the perſons ſake that you loue beſt.

Zelmane repreſt a while her great hart, either diſdaining to be cruell, or pitiful, & therfore not cruell: & now the image of humane condition, begã to be an Orator vnto her of compaſſiõ, whẽ ſhe ſaw, as he lifted vp his armes with a ſuppliãts grace, about one of thẽ, vnhappily, tied a garter with a Iewel, which (giuẽ to *Pyrocles* by his aunt of *Theſſalia*, & greatly eſteemed by him) he had preſẽted to *Philoclea*, & with inward rage promiſing extream hatred, had ſeene *Lycurgus* with a proud force, & not with out ſome hurt vnto her, pull away frõ *Philoclea*, becauſe at entreatie ſhe would not giue it him. But the ſight of that was like a cyphar, ſignifying all the iniuries which *Philoclea* had of him ſuffred, & that remẽbrance feeding vpõ wrath, trod down al cõceits of mercy. And therfore ſaying no more, but, No villaine, dye: It is *Philoclea* that ſẽds thee this tokẽ for thy loue. With that ſhe made her ſword drink the blood of his hart, though he wreſting his body, & with a coũtenãce prepared to excuſe, wold fain haue delaied the receiuing of deaths ambaſſadors. 7

But neither that ſtaied *Zelmanes* hand, nor yet *Anaxius* 8

cric

erie vnto her, who hauing made faſt the Iron gate, euen then came to the top of the ſtaires, when, contrarie to all his imaginations, he ſaw his brother lie at *Zelmanes* mercie. Therefore crying, promiſing, and threatning to her to hold her hand: the laſt grone of his brother was the onely anſwere he could get to his vnreſpected eloquence. But then Pittie would faine haue drawne teares, which Furie in their ſpring dried; and Anger would faine haue ſpoken, but that Diſdaine ſealed vp his lippes; but in his hart he blaſphemed heauen, that it could haue ſuch a power ouer him; no leſſe aſhamed of the victorie he ſhould haue of her, then of his brothers ouerthrow: and no more ſpited, that it was yet vnreuenged, then that the reuenge ſhould be no greater, then a womans deſtruction. Therefore with no ſpeach, but ſuch a groning crie, as often is the language of ſorowfull anger, he came running at *Zelmane*, vſe of fighting then ſeruing in ſteed of patient cõſideration what to doo. Guided wherewith, though he did not with knowledge, yet did he according to knowledge, preſſing vpon *Zelmane* in ſuch a wel defended manner, that in all the combats that euer ſhe had fought, ſhe had neuer more need of quicke ſenſes, & ready vertue. For being one of the greateſt men of ſtature then liuing, as he did fully anſwere that ſtature in greatneſſe of might, ſo did he exceed both in greatnes of courage, which with a coũtenãce formed by the nature both of his mind & body, to an almoſt horrible fiercenes, was able to haue carried feare to any mind, that was not priuie to it ſelfe of a true & cõſtant worthines. But *Pyrocles*, whoſe ſoule might well be ſeparated frõ his body, but neuer alienated frõ the remembring what was comely, if at the firſt

he

he did a little apprehend the dangerousnes of his aduersarie, whom once before he had something tried, & now perfectly saw, as the very picture of forcible furie: yet was that apprehension quickly stayed in him, rather strengthning, then weakning his vertue by that wrestling; like wine, growing the strōger by being moued. So that they both, prepared in harts, and able in hands, did honor solitarines there with such a combat, as might haue demaunded, as a right of fortune, whole armies of beholders. But no beholders needed there, where manhood blew the trumpet, & satisfaction did whette, as much as glorie. There was strength against nimblenes; rage, against resolution; fury, against vertue; confidence, against courage; pride, against nobleneſſe: loue, in both, breeding mutual hatred, & desire of reuēging the iniurie of his brothers slaughter, to *Anaxius*, being like *Philocleas* captiuity to *Pyrocles*. Who had seen the one, would haue thought nothing could haue resisted; who had marked the other, would haue marueiled that the other had so long resisted. But like two contrarie tides, either of which are able to carry worldes of shippes, and men vpon them, with such swiftnes, as nothing seemes able to withstand them: yet meeting one another, with mingling their watrie forces, and strugling together, it is long to say whether streame gets the victorie: So betweene these, if *Pallas* had bene there, she could scarcely haue tolde, whether she had nurced better in the feates of armes. The Irish greyhound, against the English mastiffe; the sword-fish, against the whale; the Rhinoceros, against the elephāt, might be models, & but models of this cōbat. *Anaxius* was better armed defensiuely: for (beside a strong caske braue-

brauely couered, wherwith he couerd his head) he had a huge shield, such perchance, as *Achilles* shewed to the pale walles of Troy, wherewithall that body was couered. But *Pyrocles*, vtterly vnarmed for defence, to offend had the aduantage: for, in either hand he had a sword, & with both hands nimbly performed that office. And according as they were diuersly furnished, so did they differ in the manner of fighting. For *Anaxius* most by warding, and *Pyrocles* oftnest by auoyding, resisted the aduersaries assault. Both hastie to end, yet both often staying for aduantage. Time, distance, & motiō custom made them so perfect in, that as if they had bene felow Counsellers, and not enemies, each knewe the others minde, and knew how to preuent it. So as their strēgth fayled them sooner then their skill, and yet their breath fayled them sooner then their strength. And breathles indeed they grew, before either could complaine of any losse of bloud.

CHAP. 29.

The Combattants first breathing, reencounter, and

1 SO consenting by the mediation of necessitie, to a breathing time of truce, being withdrawen a little one from the other; *Anaxius* stood leaning vpon his sworde, with his grym eye, so setled vpon *Zelmane*, as is wont to be the look of an earnest thought. Which *Zelmane* marking, &, according to the *Pyroclean* nature, fuller of gay brauerie in the midst, then

then in the beginning of dãger; What is it (ſaid ſhe) *Anaxius*, that thou ſo deeply muſeſt on? Dooth thy brothers exãple make thee thinke of thy fault paſt, or of thy cõming puniſhmẽt? I think (ſaid he) what ſpiteful God it ſhould be, who, enuying my glory, hath brought me to ſuch a wayward caſe, that neither thy death can be a reuenge, nor thy ouerthrow a victorie. Thou dooſt well indeede (ſaide *Zelmane*) to impute thy caſe to the heauenly prouidence, which will haue thy pride find it ſelfe (euen in that whereof thou art moſt proud) puniſhed by the weake ſex, which thou moſt contemneſt.

But then, hauing ſufficiently reſted themſelues, they renewed againe their combatte, farre more terribly then before: like nimble vaulters, who at the firſt and ſecond leape, doo but ſtirre, and (as it were) awake the fierie and aërie partes, which after in the other leapes, they doo with more excellencie exerciſe. For in this pauſing, ech had brought to his thoughts the maner of the others fighting, and the aduantages, which by that, and by the qualitie of their weapons, they might work themſelues; and ſo againe repeated the leſſon they had ſaid before, more perfectly, by the vſing of it. *Anaxius* oftner vſed blowes, his huge force (as it were) more delighting therein, and the large protection of his ſhield, animating him vnto it. *Pyrocles*, of a more fine, and deliuer ſtrength, watching his time when to giue fitte thruſtes; as, with the quick obeying of his bodie, to his eyes quicke commaundement, he ſhunned any harme *Anaxius* could do to him: ſo would he ſoon haue made an end of *Anaxius*, if he had not foũd him a mã of 2

won-

wonderful,& almoſt matchleſſe excellẽcy in matters of armes. *Pyrocles* vſed diuers faynings,to bring *Anaxius* on, into ſome inconuenience. But *Anaxius* keeping a ſound maner of fighting,neuer offered,but ſeeing faire cauſe, & then followed it with wel-gouerned violence. Thus ſpent they a great time,ſtriuing to doo, and with ſtriuing to doo, wearying themſelues,more then with the very doing. *Anaxius* finding *Zelmane* ſo neere vnto him, that with little motion he might reach her, knitting all his ſtrength together, at that time mainly foyned at her face. But *Zelmane* ſtrongly putting it by with her right hande ſword, comming in with her left foote, and hande, woulde haue giuen him a ſharpe viſitation to his right ſide, but that he was faine to leape away. Whereat aſhamed, (as hauing neuer done ſo much before in his life)

* * *